THE WORKS OF JOHN OWEN, D.D.

EDITED BY THE REV. WILLIAM H. GOOLD, EDINBURGH.

VOL. XVI.

NEW YORK: ROBERT CARTER & BROTHERS, 285 BROADWAY.

M.DCCC.LIII.
CONTENTS OF VOL. XVI.

THE TRUE NATURE OF A GOSPEL CHURCH.

CONTENTS.

OF MARRYING AFTER DIVORCE.

Prefatory Note by the Editor, ...................... 240
Of Marrying after Divorce in case of Adultery, ........ 254

OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.

Prefatory Note by the Editor, ...................... 240
Of Infant Baptism, .................................... 258
A Vindication of two passages in Irenæus against the exceptions of Mr Tombs, 263
Of Dipping, ............................................. 266

REFLECTIONS ON A SLANDEROUS LIBEL.

Prefatory Note by the Editor, ...................... 270
Reflections on a Slanderous Libel .................. 271

[THREE TREATISES CONCERNING THE SCRIPTURES.]

Prefatory Note by the Editor, ...................... 282
The Epistle Dedicatory, ............................... 283

OF THE DIVINE ORIGINAL OF THE SCRIPTURES.

Prefatory Note by the Editor, ...................... 296

Chap. I.—The divine original of the Scripture the sole foundation of its authority—The original of the Old Testament—The peculiar manner of the revelation of the word—The written word, as written, preserved by the providence of God—Cappellus’ opinion about various lections considered—The Scripture not Ἰδιά ἀναφερομένα—The true meaning of that expression—Entirely from God, to the least tittle—Of the Scriptures of the New Testament, and their peculiar prerogative, .......... 297

II.—The main question proposed to consideration—How we may know assuredly the Scripture to be the word of God—The Scripture to be received by divine faith—The authority of God the foundation—The way whereby that authority is evidenced or made known—The various ways of God’s revealing himself and his mind—1. By his works; 2. By the light of nature; 3. By his word—All of these evince themselves to be from him, his word especially, .......... 306

III.—Arguments of two sorts—Inartificial arguments, by way of testimony to the truth—To whom these arguments are valid—Of Ἀιτωμάτων—The rejection of a plea of Ἀιτωμάτων, wherein it consists—Of miracles, their efficacy to beget faith compared with the word, .......... 313

IV.—Innate arguments in the Scripture of its divine original and authority—Its self-evidencing efficacy—All light manifests itself—The Scripture light—Spiritual light evidential—Consectaries from the premises laid down—What the self-evidencing light of the Scripture peculiarly is—Inter self-evidencing—The Scripture the power of God, and powerful—How this power exerts itself—The whole question resolved, .......... 318

V.—Of the testimony of the Spirit—Traditions—Miracles, .......... 325

VI.—Consequential considerations, for the confirmation of the divine authority of the Scripture, .......... 337
INTENSITY AND PURITY OF THE HEBREW AND GREEK TEXT.

II. — Of the purity of the originals — The αὐτογράφα of the Scripture lost — That of Moses, how and how preserved — Of the book found by Hilkiah — Of the αὐτογράφα of the New Testament — Of the first copies of the originals — The scribes of those copies not Sīvētēs — What is ascribed to them — The great and incomparable care of the scribes of it — The whole word of God, in every tittle of it, preserved entire in the copies of the original extant — Heads of arguments to that purpose — What various lections are granted in the original of the Old and New Testaments — Sundry considerations concerning them, manifesting them to be of no importance — That the Jews have not corrupted the text — The most probable instances considered.

III. — Of various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament.

IV. — General premises — Opinions prejudicial to the authority of the originals in the Prolegomena enumerated — The just consequences of these premises — Others engaged in these opinions — Of Cappellus — Of Origen, Ximenes, Arias Montanus’ editions of the Bible.

V. — The original of the points proposed to consideration in particular — The importance of the points to the right understanding of the Scripture — The testimony of Morinus, Junius, Johannes Isaac, Cevallerius, and others — The use made by the Papists of the opinion of the novelty of the points — The importance of the points further manifested — The extreme danger of making the Hebrew punctuation arbitrary — That danger evinced by instance — No relief against that danger on the grounds of the opinion considered — The authors of the Hebrew punctuation according to the Prolegomena; who and what — Morinus’ folly — The improbability of this pretence — The state of the Jews, the supposed inventors of the points, after the destruction of the temple — Two attempts made by them to restore their religion: the first under Barchochab, with its issue; the second under R. Judah, with its issue — The rise and foundation of the Talmuds — The state of the Jews upon and after the writing of the Talmuds — Their rancour against Christ — Who the Tiberian Masoretes were, that are the supposed authors of the Hebrew punctuation; their description — That figment rejected — The late testimony of Dr Lightfoot to this purpose — The rise of the opinion of the novelty of the points — Of Elias Levi — The value of his testimony in this case — Of the validity of the testimony of the Jewish Rabbins — Some considerations about the antiquity of the points — the first, from the nature of the punctuation itself, in reference unto grammatical rules; [the second] from the Chaldee paraphrase, and integrity of the Scripture as now pointed.

VI. — Arguments for the novelty of the Hebrew points proposed to consideration — The argument from the Samaritan letters considered and answered — Of the copy of the law preserved in the synagogues without points — The testimony of Elias Levi and Aben Ezra considered — Of the silence of the Mishna, Talmud, and Gemara, about the points — Of the Keri and Kethib — Of the number of the points — Of the ancient translations, Greek, Chaldee, Syriac — Of Jerome — The new argument of Morinus in this cause — The conclusion, about the necessity of the points.

VII. — Of the וְיָפָה, † their nature and original — The difference is in the consonants — Morinus’ vain charge on Arias Montanus — The senses of both consistent — Of the great congregation — The spring and rise of these various readings — The judgment of the Prolegomena about them — Their order given twice over in the Appendix — The rise assigned to them considered — Of Cappellus, his opinion, and the danger of it.
VIII.—Of gathering various lections by the help of translations—The proper use and benefit of translations—Their new pretended use—The state of the originals on this new pretence—Of the remedy tendered to the relief of that state—No copies of old differing in the least from those we now enjoy, inferred from the testimony of our Saviour—No testimony, new or old, to that purpose—Requisites unto good translations—Of the translations in the Biblia Polyglotta—Of the Arabic—Of the Syriac—Of the Samaritan Pentateuch—Of the Chaldee Paraphrase—Of the Vulgar Latin—Of the Septuagint—Of the translations of the New Testament—Of the Persian—Of the Ethiopian—The value of these translations as to the work in hand—Of the supposition of gross corruption in the originals—Of various lections out of Grotius—Of the Appendix in general.

PRO SAGRIS SCRIPTURIS EXERCITATIONES ADVERSUS FANATICOS.

Prefatory Note by the Editor,
Ad lectorem admonitio,
Questio I.—An sacra Scriptura sit ac vere dicatur verbum Dei?
Exercit. II.—De Scripturarum interpretatione,
Exercit. III.—De perfectione Scripturae,
Exercit. IV.—De lumine interno,

POEMA.

Prefatory Note by the Editor,
Dedication,
Ad Protectorem,

ORATIONES VI.

Prefatory Note by the Editor
Oratio I.
Oratio II.
Oratio III.
Oratio IV.
Oratio V.
Oratio VI.

INDICES.

I.—Index to the Life of Owen,
II.—Index to the Notes by the Editor,
III.—Index to the Works of Owen, according to the arrangement of the volumes in the present edition,
IV.—Index to the Works of Owen in their alphabetical order—List of Owen's Prefaces to Works of other Authors,
V.—Index to Principal Subjects and Occasional Topics,
VI.—Index to the Principal Words and Phrases in other Languages Cited or Explained:—1. Hebrew, Chaldee, or Rabbinical; 2. Greek; 3. Latin,
VII.—Index to Passages of Scripture Explained,
VIII.—Index of References to Authors, Opinions, Councils, and Sayings,
THE TRUE NATURE

OF

A GOSPEL CHURCH AND ITS GOVERNMENT.

[THE SECOND PART.]

WHEREIN THESE FOLLOWING PARTICULARS ARE DISTINCTLY HANDLED:—

I. THE SUBJECT-MATTER OF THE CHURCH.
II. THE FORMAL CAUSE OF A PARTICULAR CHURCH.
III. OF THE POLITY, RULE, OR DISCIPLINE OF THE CHURCH IN GENERAL.
IV. THE OFFICERS OF THE CHURCH.
V. THE DUTY OF PASTORS OF CHURCHES.
VI. THE OFFICE OF TEACHERS IN THE CHURCH.
VII. OF THE RULE OF THE CHURCH, OR OF RULING ELDERS.
VIII. THE NATURE OF CHURCH POLITY OR RULE, WITH THE DUTY OF ELDERS.
IX. OF DEACONS.
X. OF EXCOMMUNICATION.
XI. OF THE COMMUNION OF CHURCHES.

M.DC.LXXXIX.
On the ground of some statements in the following treatise, which was published in 1689, it has been gravely argued that the author returned to the Presbyterianism of his early days before he died. In the "Inquiry concerning Evangelical Churches," (see vol. x.), which forms the first part of this work, Owen states that he would "neither examine nor oppose the opinion" in favour of "a national church-state, arising from an association of the officers of particular churches, in several degrees, which they call classical and provincial."—P. 262. He declares, in his answer to Stillingfleet, that had there been any Presbyterian government established at the Restoration "without a rigorous imposition of every thing supposed by any to belong thereto," Presbyterians and Independents "would have been both to blame" if they had continued in a state of separation from each other. "If it shall be asked, then," he proceeds, "why they did not formerly agree in the Assembly? I answer,—(1) I was none of them, and cannot tell; (2) They did agree in my judgment well enough, if they could have thought so; and further I am not concerned in the difference."—P. 433. The author of the anonymous memoir prefixed to Marshall's edition of his Sermons remarks, "He was of so healing a temper, that I heard him say before a person of quality and others, that he could readily join with Presbyterian as it was exercised in Scotland." In his MSS. Analects, under date 1716, the historian Wodrow records the following statement: "Mr George Redpath told me two or three years ago, when in Edinburgh, that he visited Dr Owen on his deathbed, and Presbytery and Episcopacy came to be discoursed of; and the Doctor said how he had seen his mistake as to the Independent way, and declared to him a day or two before his death, that, after his utmost search into the Scriptures and antiquity, he was now satisfied that Presbytery was the way Christ had appointed in his new testament church." If we add, that on the subject of the ruling elder (see chapter vii. of the following treatise) the views of Owen are in perfect harmony with Presbyterianism, and that, under certain qualifications, he contends for the lawfulness and authority of synods, we exhaust the evidence that in his last days he was more of a Presbyterian than an Independent.

Mr Orme admits that "he seems to contend for a distinct office of ruling elder, or for elders who are called to rule and not to teach;" but he argues that it was a view which could not be reconciled with his other sentiments, and that it differs from the Presbyterian scheme, according to which pastor and elder "are offices so distinct that the ministers alone are considered as mere pastors, and the elders as mere laymen." But Presbyterians really do not hold that elders are laymen, or that there is any difference in respect of office between the minister and ruling elder, although their functions vary, rule being common to both, while teaching is the duty of the pastor; and on this point Owen was no more chargeable with inconsistency as an independent than other eminent men of the same denomination,—Thomas Hooker, Cotton Mather, and Timothy Dwight,—who contend for the office of the ruling elder. Some Presbyterians would homologate explicitly the exposition which our author gives of the nature and objects of synodical action; but here his agreement with Presbyterian principles is, on the whole, not so clear and decided as in the case of the ruling elder. He objects to synods determining articles of faith, and issuing orders and decrees on their own authority; but asserts their "authority" to "declare the mind of God to him a day or two before his death, that, after his utmost search into the Scriptures and antiquity, he was now satisfied that Presbytery was the way Christ had appointed in his new testament church." If we add, that on the subject of the ruling elder (see chapter vii. of the following treatise) the views of Owen are in perfect harmony with Presbyterianism, and that, under certain qualifications, he contends for the lawfulness and authority of synods, we exhaust the evidence that in his last days he was more of a Presbyterian than an Independent.

That he should differ from both parties on some points is not surprising when we mark how carefully he has thought out his own views from Scripture, giving a freshness and originality of colouring to his treatises on church-government which render them to the present day peculiarly interesting and worthy of consultation. It is only, however, by a process of torture to which no man's language should be subjected that Owen can be claimed as a Presbyterian. We may gladly accept his decision on some points,—not as confounding Presbyterianism so much as affording room for the hope that, on matters of polity, evangelical churches may yet be united in common action and under the same forms. But the opinions of Owen can only be understood by reading the former part of this treatise in connection with this which follows, and "which," says Chauncey, "he esteemed as his legacy to the church of Christ." In the latter part there is no recantation of the principle so copiously urged in the former, that "the visible church-state which Christ hath instituted under the new testament consists in an especial society or community of his people, that for two centuries together and the whole time there is no mention of "any other organical, visibly professing church, but only that which is parochial or congregational." That Owen might deem it possible to accomplish and secure all the ends of congregational duty under the system of Presbytery may be true; but that, in regard to the spirit and substance of the ecclesiastical system for which he pleaded, he was a Congregationalist, it would be hardlihood to question. To the story of Redpath must be opposed the assertion of Chauncey, by whom this treatise was edited, that it was corrected by Owen immediately before his death. Both understand a change of view so complete as is represented, he was not the man to quit the world in a spirit of dishonourable reticence, but would have frankly avowed to what extent his previous convictions had been modified or abandoned.

Edmund Elys, son of a clergyman in Devonshire, author of some Latin productions in prose and poetry, replied to this work in 1699, by the publication of "Animalversions upon some passages in a book entitled 'The True Nature of a Gospel Church, etc.'"—Ed.
THE PREFACE TO THE READER.

The church of Christ, according as it is represented unto us, or described by the Holy Spirit of God, in the Old and New Testament, hath but a twofold consideration,—as catholic and mystical, or as visible and organized in particular congregations. The catholic church is the whole mystical body of Christ, consisting of all the elect which are purchased and redeemed by his blood, whether already called or uncalled, militant or triumphant; and this is the church that God gave him to be head unto, which is his body and his fulness, and, by union with him, Christ mystical, Eph. i. 22, 23; and this is that πνευματικος (the only word most fully expressing the catholic church used in Scripture), "the church of the first-born, whose names are written in heaven," Heb. xii. 23, that is, in the Lamb's book of life; and they shall all appear one day gathered together to their Head, in the perfection and fulness of the New Jerusalem state, where they will make a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but holy and without blemish. The day of grace which the saints have passed in the respective ages of the church was but the day of its espousals, wherein the bride hath made herself ready; but then will be her full married state unto Christ, then will be the perfection not only of every particular member of Christ, but of the whole body of Christ, called "a perfect man," and "the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ," to which we are called, edifying and building up by the ministry and ordinances of Christ, whilst we are "in via," in our passage unto this country, a city with a more durable fixed foundation, which we seek.

In order, therefore, unto the completing this great and mystical body, Christ hath his particular visible churches and assemblies in this world; wherein he hath ordained ordinances and appointed officers for the forementioned glorious ends and purposes.

There is no other sort of visible church of Christ organized, the subject of the aforesaid institutions spoken of, but a particular church or congregation (either in the Old or New Testament), where all the members thereof do ordinarily meet together in one place to hold communion one with another in some one or more great ordinances of Christ. The first churches were economic, when the worship of God was solemnly performed in the large families of the antediluvian and post-diluvian patriarchs, where, no doubt, all frequently assembled to the sacrifices as then offered, and other parts of worship then in use.

After the descent of a numerous progeny from Abraham's loins, God takes them to himself in one visible body, a national but congregational church, into which he forms them four hundred and thirty years after the promise, in the wilderness; and although all Abraham's natural posterity, according to the external part of the promise made to him, were taken into visible church fellowship, so that it became a national church, yet it was such a national church always, in the wilderness and in the Holy Land, as was congregational, for it was but one congregation during the tabernacle or temple state, first or second. They were always bound to assemble at the tabernacle or temple thrice at least every year; hence the tabernacle was still called "The tabernacle of the congregation." They were to have but one
altar for burnt-offerings and sacrifices; what others were at any time elsewhere, called "high places," were condemned by God as sin.

Lastly, When Christ had divorced this people, abolished their Mosaical constitution by breaking their staff of beauty and their staff of bands, he erects his gospel church, calls in disciples by his ministry, forms them into a body, furnisheth them with officers and ordinances, and after he had suffered, rose again, and continued here forty days,—in which time he frequently appeared to them and acquainted them with his will,—ascends unto his Father, sends his Spirit in a plentiful manner at Pentecost, whereby most of them were furnished with all necessary miraculous gifts, to the promoting the glory and interest of Christ among Jews and Gentiles.

Hence the whole evangelical ministry was first placed in the church of Jerusalem (so far as extraordinary, or such a part of it as was [not] to descend to churches of after ages); neither were they placed as abiding or standing officers in any other church, as we find. In this church they acted as the elders thereof; and from this church they were, it is very likely, solemnly sent, by fasting and prayer, to the exercise of their apostolic function in preaching, healing, and working miracles, gathering churches, and settling officers in them, even so as Paul and Barnabas were sent forth by the church of Antioch.

Their distinguishing apostolic office and charge (from which the evangelist differed but little) was to take care of all the churches,—not to sit down as standing pastors to all or any particular congregation, but at the first planting to gather, to direct, and confirm them, in practice of their doctrine, fellowship, breaking of bread, and in prayer. Wherefore this apostolic care committed to them proves nothing either of the catholic authority claimed by an œcumenic pastor, or that charge of many congregations claimed by diocesan bishops.

Whence it is most evident that all church-officers, so far as they had any pastoral or episcopal office, were given to a particular congregation as the ἀπόστολος διηκόνος. We read of no pastors of many congregations, nor of any church made up of many congregations, to which officers were annexed, nor of any representative church, as some would have.

That apostolic power did descend to successors we utterly deny, it being not derivable; for none after them could say they had been eye-witnesses of our Lord before or after his resurrection, none since so qualified by an extraordinary measure of the Spirit for preaching and working miracles, and none but the pope challenges such an extensive care for and power over all churches. That which descends from them to the ordinary ministry is a commission to preach and baptize: and why not to head, it being always, in the commission that Christ gave, a pastoral relation or presbytership which was included in their apostleship, and exercised toward the church of Jerusalem? Such presbytership John and Peter both had. Hence there remains no other successors "jure" to the apostles but ordinary pastors and teachers.

These are relative officers, and are always in and to some particular congregations; we know of no catholic visible church that any pastors are ordained to.

1. The Scripture speaks of no church as catholic visible. 2. The thing itself is but a chimera of some men's brains, it is not "in rerum natura;" for if a catholic visible church be all the churches that I see at a time, I am not capable of seeing many more than what can assemble in one place. And if it be meant of all the churches actually in being, how are they visible to me? where can they be seen in one place? I may as well call all the cities and corporations in the world the catholic visible city or corporation, which all rational men would call nonsense. Besides, if all organized churches could be got together, it is not catholic in respect of saints militant, much less of triumphant; for many are no church members that are Christ's members, and many visible members are no true members.
of Christ Jesus. Where is any such church capable of communion in all ordainances in one place? and the Scripture speaks of no other organized visible church.

Again: to a catholic visible church constituted should be a catholic visible pastor or pastors; for as the church is, such is the pastor and officers. To the mystical church Christ is the mystical head and pastor; he is called "The chief Pastor," 1 Pet. v. 4; and "The Shepherd of our souls," chap. ii. 25. Hence the uncalled are his sheep, as John x. 16. But to all visible churches Christ hath appointed a visible pastor or pastors; and where is the pastor of the catholic visible church? he is not to be found, unless it suffice us to take him from Rome. To say that all individual pastors are pastors to the catholic church is either to say that they are invested with as much pastoral power and charge in one church as in another, and then they are indefinite pastors, and therefore all pastors have mutual power in each other's churches; and so John may come into Thomas' church and exercise all parts of jurisdiction there, and Thomas into John's; or a minister to the catholic church hath an universal catholic power over the catholic church,—if so, the power and charge which every ordinary pastor hath is apostolic; or, lastly, he is invested with an arbitrary power, at least as to the taking up a particular charge where he pleaseth, with a "non obstante" to the suffrages of the people, for if he hath an office whereby he is equally related to all churches, it is at his liberty, by virtue of this office, to take [himself] where he pleaseth.

But every church-officer under Christ is a visible relate, and the correlate must be such, whence the church must be visible to which he is an officer. It is absurd to say a man is a visible husband to an invisible wife; the relate and correlate must be "ejusdem nature." It is true, Christ is related to the church as mystical head, but it is in respect of the church in its mystical nature, for Christ hath substituted no mystical officers in his church.

There is a great deal of difference between the mystical and external visible church, though the latter is founded upon it and for the sake of it. It is founded upon it as taking its true spiritual original from it, deriving vital spirits from it by a mystical union to and communion with Christ and his members;—and it is for the sake of it; all external visible assemblies, ministers, ordinances, are for the sake of the mystical body of Christ, for calling in the elect, and the edifying of them to that full measure of stature they are designed unto.

But the different consideration lies in these things,—

That the mystical church doth never fail, neither is diminished by any shocks of temptation or suffering that, in their visible profession, any of them undergo; whereas visible churches are often broken, scattered, yea, unchurched, and many members fail of the grace of God by final apostasy. Likewise Christ's mystical church is many times preserved in that state only, or mostly, when Christ hath not a visible organized church, according to institution, to be found on the face of the earth. So it was with his church often under the old testament dispensation: as in Egypt; in the days of the judges, when the ark was carried away by the Philistines; in the days of Manasseh and other wicked kings; and especially in Babylon. In such times the faithful ones were preserved without the true sacrifices, the teaching priest, and the law. So hath it been in the days of the new testament, in divers places, under the draconic heathen persecutions, and afterward in the wilderness state of the church, under the antichristian usurpations and false worship. Which mystical state is the place prepared of God to hide the seed of the woman in from the dragon's rage for the space of one thousand two hundred and sixty days.

Again: unto this mystical church is only essentially necessary a mystical union unto the Lord Jesus Christ, by the gift of the Father, acceptation and covenant-undertaking of the Son: the powerful and efficacious work of the Spirit of the
Father and the Son working true saving faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, and sincere love to him and all his true members; whereby, as they have a firm and unshaken union, so they have a spiritual communion, though without those desirable enjoyments of external church privileges and means of grace which they are providentially often hindered from, visible churches being but Christ's tents and tabernacles, which he sometimes setteth up and sometimes takes down and removes at his pleasure, as he sees best for his glory in the world.

But of these he hath a special regard, as to their foundation, matter, constitution, and order. He gives forth an exact pattern from mount Zion, as of that typical tabernacle from mount Sinai of old.

1. The foundation part of a visible church is the credible profession of faith and holiness, wherein the Lord Jesus Christ is the corner-stone, Eph. ii. 20; Matt. xvi. 18. This profession is the foundation, but not the church itself. It is not articles of faith, or profession of them in particular individual persons, that make an organized visible church. We are the "household of faith, built upon the foundation," etc. 2. It is men and women, not doctrine, that are the matter of a church, and these professing the faith and practising holiness. The members of churches are always called in the New Testament, "saints, faithful, believers." They were such that were added to the churches. Neither is every believer so, as such, but as a professing believer; for a man must appear to be fit matter of a visible church before he can challenge church privileges or they can be allowed him. 3. It is not many professing believers that make a particular church; for though they are fit matter for a church, yet they have not the form of a church without a mutual agreement and combination (explicit, or at least implicit), whereby they become, by virtue of Christ's charter, a spiritual corporation, and are called a "city, household, house," being united together by joints and bands, not only by internal bonds of the Spirit, but external. The bonds of union must be visible, as the house is by profession.

This is a society that Christ hath given power to, to choose a pastor and other officers of Christ's institution, and enjoy all ordinances, the word, sacraments, and prayer, as Christ hath appointed.

Hence a visible church must needs be a separate congregation; separation is a proper and inseparable adjunct thereof. The apostle speaks of church-membership, 2 Cor. vi. 14, "Be not unequally yoked together," ἰσοκράτεις, yoked with those of another kind (the ploughing with an ox and ass together being forbidden under the law), "with unbelievers," ἀπιστοὶ,—that is, visible unbelievers of any sort or kind: "for what participation, μετ' αὐτῶν, hath righteousness with unrighteousness? what communion, communion or fellowship, hath light with darkness?" Verse 15, "Τί δὲ συνεκτυμόησιν, What harmony hath Christ with Belial?" men of corrupt lives and conversation; "or what part μετὰ πιστῶν μετὰ ἀπιστῶν, hath a believer," that is, a visible believer, "with an unbeliever?" It ought not to be rendered "infidel," but it was done by our translators to put a blind upon this place as to its true intention, and to countenance parish communion; for why did they not here, verse 14, and everywhere else, render ἀπιστοῖς, "an infidel?" Verse 16, "Τί δὲ συνηκτυμάθησιν αἱ θείαι μετὰ ἐθικά, What consistency hath the temple of God," that is, the gospel church, "with idols?" etc. I take this place to be a full proof of what is before spoken,—that a gospel church is a company of faithful professing people, walking together by mutual consent or federation to the Lord Jesus Christ and one to another, in subjection to and practice of all his gospel precepts and commands, whereby they are separate from all persons and things manifestly contrary or disagreeing thereunto.

Hence, as it is separate from all such impurities as are without, so Christ hath furnished it with sufficient power and means to keep itself pure, and therefore hath provided ordinances and ministers for that end and purpose; for the great
end of church-edification cannot be obtained without purity be also maintained in
doctrine and fellowship.

Purity cannot be maintained without order. A disorderly society will corrupt
within itself; for by disorder it is divided. By divisions the joints and bands are
broken, not only of love and affection, but of visible conjunction; so that, roots of
bitterness and sensual separation arising, many are defiled.

It is true, there may be a kind of peace and agreement in a society that is a
stranger to gospel order; when men agree together to walk according to a false
rule, or in a supine and negligent observation of the true rule. There may be a
common connivance at each one to walk as he listeth; but this is not order, but dis-
order by consent. Besides, a church may, for the most part, walk in order when
there are breaches and divisions. Some do agree to walk according to the rule,
when others will deviate from it. It is orderly to endeavour to reduce those that
walk not orderly, though such just undertakings seem sometimes grounds of dis-
turbance and causes of convulsion in the whole body, threatening even its break-
ing in pieces; but yet this must be done to preserve the whole.

The word translated "order," Col. ii. 6, ἀρματικῶς, is a military word; it is the
order of soldiers in a band, keeping rank and file, where every one keeps his place,
follows his leader, observes the word of command, and his right-hand man. Hence
the apostle joyst to see their close order and steadfastness in the faith, their firm-
ness, valour, and resolution, in fighting the good fight of faith; and the order in so
doing, not only in watching as single professors, but in marching orderly together,
as an army with banners. There is nothing more comely than a church walking
in order; when every one keeps his place, knows and practiseth his duty according
to the rule, each submitting to the other in the performance of duty; when the
elders know their places, and the people theirs. Christ hath been more faithful
than Moses, and therefore hath not left his churches without sufficient rules to
walk by.

That order may be in a church of Christ, the rules of the gospel must be known,
and that by officers and people. They that are altogether ignorant of the rule, or
negligent in attending it, or doubtful, and therefore always contending about it,
will never walk according to it. Hence it is the great duty of ministers to study
order well, and acquaint the people with it. It is greatly to be bewailed that so
few divines bend their studies that way. They content themselves only with
studying and preaching the truths that concern faith in the Lord Jesus, and the
mere moral part of holiness; but as to gospel churches or instituted worship, they
generally in their doctrine and practice let it alone, and administer sacraments as
indefinitely as they preach, and care not to stand related to one people more than
another, any further than maintained by them. Likewise many good people are
as great strangers to gospel churches and order, and, as their ministers, have a
great averseness to both, and look upon it as schism and faction. And this is the
great reason of the readiness of both to comply with rules of men for making
churches (canons established by human laws), being carried away (if they would
speak the truth) by corrupt, Erastian principles, that Christ hath left the church
to be altogether guided and governed by laws of magistratic sanction. Reforma-
tion from the gross, idolatrous part of antichristianism was engaged in with some
heroic courage and resolution; but the coldness and indifference of Protestants to
any farther progress almost ever since is not a little to be lamented. Many think
it enough that the foundation of the house is laid in purity of doctrine (and it is
well if that were not rather written in the books than preached in pulpits at this
day), but how little do they care to set their hands to building the house! Sure
a great matter it is, from that spiritual slothfulness that many are fallen under, as
likewise from being ready to sink under the great discouragements laid before them
by the adversaries of Judah, when they find the children of the spiritual captivity
are about to build a gospel church unto the Lord. And how long hath this great work ceased? And will the Lord's ministers and people yet say, "The time is not come, the time that the Lord's house should be built?" Is it time to build our own houses, and not the house of the Lord? Surely it is time to build; for we understand by books the number of years whereof the word of the Lord came to Daniel the prophet, and to John the beloved disciple and new testament prophet, that he would accomplish twelve hundred and sixty years in the desolation of our Jerusalem and the court which is without the temple, namely, the generality of visible professors, and the external part of worship, which hath been so long trod down by Gentilism. Wherefore, "Consider your ways. Go up to the mountain, and bring wood, and build the house; and I will take pleasure in it, and I will be glorified, saith the Lord," Hag. i. 8. Men, it may be, have thought they have got, or at least saved, by not troubling themselves with the care, charge, and trouble of gathering churches and walking in gospel order; but God saith, "Ye looked for much, and, lo, it came to little; and when ye brought it home, I did blow upon it. Why? saith the Lord of hosts. Because of mine house that is waste, and ye run every man unto his own house," verse 9. I doubt not but the time is nigh at hand that the gospel temple must be built with greater splendour and glory than ever Solomon's or Zerubbabel's was; and though it seems to be a great mountain of difficulties, yet it shall become a plain before Him that is exalted far above all principalities and powers; and as he hath laid the foundation thereof in the oppressed state of his people, so his hands shall finish it, and bring forth the headstone thereof with shouting in the New Jerusalem state, crying now, "Grace, grace," but then, "Glory, glory to it."

This hastening glory we should endeavour to meet and fetch in by earnest prayers and faithful endeavours to promote the great work of our day. The pattern is of late years given forth with much clearness by models such as God hath set up in this latter age in the wilderness, and sheltered by "cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night; for upon all the glory hath been a defence," yea, and it hath been "a tabernacle for a shadow in the daytime from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from the storm and from the rain." Neither have we been left to act by the examples or traditions of men. We have had a full manifestation of the revealed mind and will of Christ, with the greatest evidence and conviction, God having in these latter times raised up many most eminent instruments for direction and encouragement unto his people, which he furnished accordingly with great qualifications to this end and purpose, that the true original, nature, institution, and order, of evangelical churches might be known, distinguished, prized, and adhered to, by all that know the name of Christ, and would be followers of him as his disciples, in obedience to all his revealed mind and will; amongst which faithful and renowned servants of Christ the late author of this most useful and practical treatise hath approved himself to be one of the chief. I need say nothing of his steadfast piety, universal learning, indefatigable labours, in incessant vindication of the doctrines of the gospel (of greatest weight) against all oppositions made thereto by men of corrupt minds. His surviving works will always be bespeaking his honourable remembrance amongst all impartial lovers of the truth. They that were acquainted with him, knew how much the state and standing of the churches of Christ under the late sufferings and strugglings for reformation were laid to heart by him, and therefore how he put forth his utmost strength to assist, aid, comfort, and support the sinking spirits of the poor saints and people of God, even wearied out with long and repeated persecutions. It is to be observed that this ensuing treatise was occasioned by one of the last and most vigorous assaults made upon separate and congregational churches by a pen dipped in the gall of that persecuting spirit under which God's people groaned throughout this land. He then wrote an elaborate account
of evangelical churches, their original, institution, etc., with a vindication of them from the charges laid in against them by the author of "The Unreasonableness of Separation." This he lived to print, and promised to handle the subject more particularly; which is here performed. He lived to finish it under his great bodily infirmities, whereby he saw himself hastening to the end of his race; yet so great was his love to Christ, that whilst he had life and breath he drew not back his hand from his service. This work he finished, with others, through the gracious support and assistance of divine power, and corrected the copy before his departure. So that, reader, thou mayst be assured that what thou hast here wrote were penned with any other design than to advance the glory and interest of Christ in the world, and that they were not matters of great weight on his own spirit. And upon the perusal that I have had of these papers, I cannot but recommend them to all diligent inquirers after the true nature, way, order, and practice, of evangelical churches, as a true and faithful account, according to what understanding the professors thereof, for the most part, have had and practised. Whoever is otherwise minded, he hath the liberty of his own light and conscience. Lastly, whereas many serious professors of the faith of the Lord Jesus, it may be well grounded in the main saving truths of the gospel, are yet much to seek of these necessary truths for want of good information therein, and therefore walk not up to all the revealed mind of Christ, as they sincerely desire, let such, with unprejudiced minds, read and consider what is here offered to them, and receive nothing upon human authority, follow no man in judgment or practice any farther than he is a follower of Christ. And this is all the request of him 1 is a lover of all them that love the Lord Jesus Christ. J. C.1

THE TRUE NATURE OF A GOSPEL CHURCH
AND ITS GOVERNMENT.

CHAPTER I.

The subject-matter of the church.

The church may be considered either as unto its essence, constitution, and being, or as unto its power and order, when it is organized. As unto its essence and being, its constituent parts are its matter and form. These we must inquire into.

By the matter of the church, we understand the persons whereof the church doth consist, with their qualifications; and by its form, the reason, cause, and way of that kind of relation among them which gives them the being of a church, and therewithal an interest in all that belongs unto a church, either privilege or power, as such.

Our first inquiry being concerning what sort of persons our Lord Jesus Christ requireth and admitteth to be the visible subjects of his kingdom, we are to be regulated in our determination by respect unto his honour, glory, and the holiness of his rule. To reckon such persons to be subjects of Christ, members of his body, such as he requires and owns (for others are not so), who would not be tolerated, at least not approved, in a well-governed kingdom or commonwealth of the world, is highly dishonourable unto him, Ps. xv. 1–5, xxiv. 3, 4, xciii. 5; 2 Cor. viii. 23; Eph. v. 27. But it is so come to pass, that let men be never so notoriously and flagitiously wicked, until they become pests of the earth, yet are they esteemed to belong to the church of Christ; and not only so, but it is thought little less than schism to forbid them the communion of the church in all its sacred privileges. Howbeit, the Scripture doth in general represent the kingdom or church of Christ to consist of persons called saints, separated from the world, with many other things of an alike nature, as we shall see immediately. And if the honour of Christ were of such weight with us as it ought to be,—if we understood aright the nature and ends of his kingdom, and that the peculiar glory of it above all the kingdoms in the world consists in the holiness of its subjects, such a holiness as the world in its wisdom knoweth not,
—we would duly consider whom we avow to belong thereunto. Those who know aught of these things will not profess that persons openly profane, vicious, sensual, wicked, and ignorant, are approved and owned of Christ as the subjects of his kingdom, or that it is his will that we should receive them into the communion of the church, 2 Tim. iii. 1–5. But an old opinion of the unlawfulness of separation from a church on the account of the mixture of wicked men in it is made a scare-crow to frighten men from attempting the reformation of the greatest evils, and a covert for the composing churches of such members only.

Some things, therefore, are to be premised unto what shall be offered unto the right stating of this inquiry; as,—

1. That if there be no more required of any, as unto personal qualifications, in a visible, uncontrollable profession, to constitute them subjects of Christ's kingdom and members of his church, Ezek. xxii. 26, but what is required by the most righteous and severe laws of men to constitute a good subject or citizen, the distinction between his visible kingdom and the kingdoms of the world, as unto the principal causes of it, is utterly lost. Now, all negative qualifications, as, that men are not oppressors, drunkards, revilers, swearers, adulterers, etc., are required hereunto; but yet it is so fallen out that generally more is required to constitute such a citizen as shall represent the righteous laws he liveth under than to constitute a member of the church of Christ.

2. That whereas regeneration is expressly required in the gospel to give a right and privilege unto an entrance into the church or kingdom of Christ, John iii. 3, Tit. iii. 3–5, whereby that kingdom of his is distinguished from all other kingdoms in and of the world, unto an interest wherein never any such thing was required, it must of necessity be something better, more excellent and sublime, than any thing the laws and polities of men pretend unto or prescribe. Wherefore it cannot consist in any outward rite, easy to be observed by the worst and vilest of men. Besides, the Scripture gives us a description of it in opposition unto its consisting in any such rite, 1 Pet. iii. 21; and many things required unto good citizens are far better than the mere observation of such a rite.

3. Of this regeneration baptism is the symbol, the sign, the expression, and representation, John iii. 5; Acts ii. 38; 1 Pet. iii. 21. Wherefore, unto those who are in a due manner partakers of it, it giveth all the external rights and privileges which belong unto them that are regenerate, until they come unto such seasons wherein the personal performance of those duties whereon the continuation of the estate of visible regeneration doth depend is required of them. Herein if they fail, they lose all privilege and benefit by their baptism.
So speaks the apostle in the case of circumcision under the law: Rom. ii. 25, "For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law; but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision." It is so in the case of baptism. Verily it profiteth, if a man stand unto the terms of the covenant which is tendered therein between God and his soul, for it will give him a right unto all the outward privileges of a regenerate state; but if he do not, as in the sight of God, his baptism is no baptism, as unto the real communication of grace and acceptance with him, Phil. iii. 18, 19; Tit. i. 15, 16. So, in the sight of the church, it is no baptism, as unto a participation of the external rights and privileges of a regenerate state.

4. God alone is judge concerning this regeneration, as unto its internal, real principle and state in the souls of men, Acts xv. 8, Rev. ii. 23, wherein the participation of all the spiritual advantages of the covenant of grace doth depend. The church is judge of its evidences and fruits in their external demonstration, as unto a participation of the outward privileges of a regenerate state, and no farther, Acts viii. 13. And we shall hereon briefly declare what belongs unto the forming of a right judgment herein, and who are to be esteemed fit members of any gospel church-state, or have a right so to be:—

1. Such as from whom we are obliged to withdraw or withhold communion can be no part of the matter constituent of a church, or are not meet members for the first constitution of it, 1 Cor. vi. 9-11; Phil. iii. 18, 19; 2 Thess. iii. 6; 2 Tim. iii. 5; Rom. ix. 6, 7; Tit. i. 16. But such are all habitual sinners, those who, having prevalent habits and inclinations unto sins of any kind unmortified, do walk according unto them. Such are profane swearers, drunkards, fornicators, covetous, oppressors, and the like, "who shall not inherit the kingdom of God," 1 Cor. vi. 9-11; Phil. iii. 18, 19; 2 Thess. iii. 6; 2 Tim. iii. 5. As a man living and dying in any known sin, that is, habitually, without repentance, cannot be saved, so a man known to live in sin cannot regularly be received into any church. To compose churches of habitual sinners, and that either as unto sins of commission or sins of omission, is not to erect temples to Christ, but chapels unto the devil.

2. Such as, being in the fellowship of the church, are to be admonished of any scandalous sin, which if they repent not of they are to be cast out of the church, are not meet members for the original constitution of a church, Matt. xviii. 15-18; 1 Cor. v. 11. This is the state of them who abide obstinate in any known sin, whereby they have given offence unto others, without a professed repentance thereof, although they have not lived in it habitually.

3. They are to be such as visibly answer the description given of
gospel churches in the Scripture, so as the titles assigned therein unto the members of such churches may on good grounds be appropriated unto them. To compose churches of such persons as do not visibly answer the character given of what they were of old, and what they were always to be by virtue of the law of Christ or gospel constitution, is not church edification but destruction. And those who look on the things spoken of all church-members of old, as that they were saints by calling, lively stones in the house of God, justified and sanctified, separated from the world, etc., as those which were in them, and did indeed belong unto them, but even deride the necessity of the same things in present church-members, or the application of them unto those who are so, are themselves no small part of that woful degeneracy which Christian religion is fallen under. Let it then be considered what is spoken of the church of the Jews in their dedication unto God, as unto their typical holiness, with the application of it unto Christian churches in real holiness, 1 Pet. ii. 5, 9, with the description given of them constantly in the Scripture, as faithful, holy, believing, as the house of God, as his temple wherein he dwells by his Spirit, as the body of Christ united and compacted by the communication of the Spirit unto them, as also what is said concerning their ways, walkings, and duties, and it will be uncontrollably evident of what sort our church-members ought to be. Nor are those of any other sort able to discharge the duties which are incumbent on all church-members, nor to use the privileges they are intrusted withal. Wherefore, I say, to suppose churches regularly to consist of such persons, for the greater part of them, as no way answer the description given of church-members in their original institution, nor capable to discharge the duties prescribed unto them, but giving evidence of habits and actions inconsistent therewithal, is not only to disturb all church-order, but utterly to overthrow the ends and being of churches. Nor is there any thing more scandalous unto Christian religion than what Bellarmine affirms to be the judgment of the Papists, in opposition unto all others, namely, "That no internal virtue or grace is required unto the constitution of a church in its members," De Eccles. lib. iii. cap. ii.

4. They must be such as do make an open profession of the subject of their souls and consciences unto the authority of Christ in the gospel, and their readiness to yield obedience unto all his commands, Rom. x. 10; 2 Cor. viii. 5, ix. 13; Matt. x. 32, 33; Luke ix. 26; 2 Tim. ii. 12; Rom. xv. 9; John xii. 42; 1 John iv. 2, 3, 15. This, I suppose, will not be denied; for not only doth the Scripture make this profession necessary unto the participation of any benefit or privilege of the gospel, but the nature of the things themselves requires indispensably that so it should be: for nothing can be
more unreasonable than that men should be taken into the privileges attending obedience unto the laws and commands of Christ, without avowing or professing that obedience. Wherefore our inquiry is only [about] what is required unto such a profession as may render men meet to be members of a church, and give them a right thereunto; for to suppose such a confession of Christian religion to be compliant with the gospel which is made by many who openly live in sin, "being disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate," is to renounce the gospel itself. Christ is not the high priest of such a profession. I shall therefore declare briefly what is necessary unto this profession, that all may know what it is which is required unto the entrance of any into our churches, wherein our practice hath been sufficiently traduced:—

(1.) There is required unto it a competent knowledge of the doctrines and mystery of the gospel, especially concerning the person and offices of Christ. The confession hereof was the ground whereon he granted the keys of the kingdom of heaven, or all church-power, unto believers, Matt. xvi. 15–19. The first instruction which he gave unto his apostles was that they should teach men, by the preaching of the gospel, in the knowledge of the truth revealed by him. The knowledge required in the members of the Judaical church, that they might be translated into the Christian, was principally, if not solely, that of his person, and the acknowledgment of him to be the true Messiah, the Son of God; for as on their unbelief thereof their eternal ruin did depend, as he told them, "If ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins," so the confession of him was sufficient on their part unto their admission into the gospel church-state. And the reasons of it are apparent. With others, an instruction in all the mysteries of religion, especially in those that are fundamental, is necessary unto the profession we inquire after. So Justin Martyr tells us what pains they took in those primitive times to instruct those in the mysteries of religion who, upon a general conviction of its truth, were willing to adhere unto the profession of it. And what was their judgment herein is sufficiently known from the keeping a multitude in the state of catechumens before they would admit them into the fellowship of the church. They are not therefore to be blamed, they do but discharge their duty, who refuse to receive into church-communion such as are ignorant of the fundamental doctrines and mysteries of the gospel, or if they have learned any thing of them from a form of words, yet really understand nothing of them. The promiscuous driving of all sorts of persons who have been baptized in their infancy unto a participation of all church-privileges is a profanation of the holy institutions of Christ. This knowledge, therefore, belonging unto profession is itself to be professed.
(2.) There is required unto it a professed subjection of soul and conscience unto the authority of Christ in the church, Matt. xxviii. 18–20; 2 Cor. viii. 5. This in general is performed by all that are baptized when they are adult, as being by their own actual consent baptized in the name of Christ; and it is required of all them who are baptized in their infancy, when they are able with faith and understanding to profess their consent unto and abiding in that covenant whereinto they were initiated.

(3.) An instruction in and consent unto the doctrine of self-denial and bearing of the cross, in a particular manner; for this is made indispensably necessary by our Saviour himself unto all that will be his disciples, Matt. x. 37–39; Mark viii. 34, 38; Luke ix. 23; Phil. iii. 18; Acts iv. 10, 11, 20, xxiv. 14. And it hath been a great disadvantage unto the glory of Christian religion that men have not been more and better instructed therein. It is commonly thought that whoever will may be a Christian at an easy rate,—it will cost him nothing. But the gospel gives us another account of these things; for it not only warns us that reproaches, hatred, sufferings of all sorts, oftimes to death itself, are the common lot of all its professors who will live godly in Christ Jesus, but also requires that at our initiation into the profession of it, we consider aright the dread of them all, and engage cheerfully to undergo them. Hence, in the primitive times, whilst all sorts of miseries were continually presented unto them who embraced the Christian religion, their willing engagement to undergo them who were converted was a firm evidence of the sincerity of their faith, as it ought to be unto us also in times of difficulty and persecution. Some may suppose that the faith and confession of this doctrine of self-denial and readiness for the cross is of use only in time of persecution, and so doth not belong unto them who have continually the countenance and favour of public authority. I say, it is, at least as they judge, well for them; with others it is not so, whose outward state makes the public avowing of this duty indispensably necessary unto them. And I may add it as my own thoughts (though they are not my own alone), that notwithstanding all the countenance that is given unto any church by the public magistracy, yet whilst we are in this world, those who will faithfully discharge their duty, as ministers of the gospel especially, shall have need to be prepared for sufferings. To escape sufferings, and enjoy worldly advantages by sinful compliances, or bearing with men in their sins, is no gospel direction.

(4.) Conviction and confession of sin, with the way of deliverance by Jesus Christ, is that "answer of a good conscience" that is required in the baptism of them that are adult, 1 Pet. iii. 21.

(5.) Unto this profession is required the constant performance of all known duties of religion, both of piety in the public and private
worship of God, as also of charity with respect unto others, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20. "Show me thy faith by thy works," James ii. 18.

(6.) A careful abstinence from all known sins, giving scandal or offence either unto the world or unto the church of God, 1 Cor. x. 32; Phil. i. 10.

And the gospel requires that this confession be made ("with the mouth confession is made unto salvation") against,—(1.) Fear; (2.) Shame; (3.) The course of the world; (4.) The opposition of all enemies whatever.

Hence it appears that there are none excluded from an entrance into the church-state but such as are either,—(1.) Grossly ignorant; or, (2.) Persecutors or reproachers of those that are good, or of the ways of God wherein they walk; or, (3.) Idolaters; or, (4.) Men scandalous in their lives, in the commission of sins or omission of duties, through vicious habits or inclinations; or, (5.) Such as would partake of gospel privileges and ordinances, yet openly avow that they will not submit unto the law and commands of Christ in the gospel; concerning whom and the like the Scripture rule is peremptory, "From such turn away."

And herein we are remote from exceeding the example and care of the primitive churches; yea, there are but few, if any, that arrive unto it. Their endeavour was to preach unto all they could, and they rejoiced in the multitudes that came to hear the word; but if any did essay to join themselves unto the church, their diligence in their examination and instruction, their severe inquiries into their conversation, their disposing of them for a long time into a state of expectation for their trial, before their admittance, were remarkable; and some of the ancients complain that the promiscuous admittance of all sorts of persons that would profess the Christian religion into church-membership, which took place afterward, ruined all the beauty, order, and discipline of the church.

The things ascribed unto those who are to be esteemed the proper subject-matter of a visible church are such as, in the judgment of charity, entitle them unto all the appellations of "saints, called, sanctified,"—that is, visibly and by profession,—which are given unto the members of all the churches in the New Testament, and which must be answered in those who are admitted into that privilege, if we do not wholly neglect our only patterns. By these things, although they should any of them not be real living members of the mystical body of Christ, unto whom he is a head of spiritual and vital influence, yet are they meet members of that body of Christ unto which he is a head of rule and government, as also meet to be esteemed subjects of his kingdom; and none are excluded but such as concerning whom rules are given either to withdraw from them or to cast them out of church-society, or are expressly excluded by
God himself from any share in the privileges of his covenant, Ps. 1. 16, 17.

Divines of all sorts do dispute, from the Scripture and the testimonies of the ancients, that hypocrites and persons unregenerate may be true members of visible churches; and it is a matter very easy to be proved, nor do I know any by whom it is denied: but the only question is, that whereas, undoubtedly, profession is necessary unto all church-communion, whether, if men do profess themselves hypocrites in state and unregenerate in mind, that profession do sufficiently qualify them for church-communion; and whereas there is a double profession, one by words, the other by works, as the apostle declares, Tit. i. 16, whether the latter be not as interpretative of the mind and state of men as the former. Other contest we have with none in this matter.

Bellarmine, De Eccles. lib. iii. cap. ii., gives an account out of Augustine, and that truly, from Brevis. Collat. Col. 3, of the state of the church. "It doth," saith he, "consist of a soul and body. The soul is the internal graces of the Spirit; the body is the profession of them, with the sacraments. All true believers making profession belong to the soul and body of the church. Some (as believing catechumens) belong to the soul, but not to the body; others are of the body, but not of the soul,—namely, such as have no internal grace or true faith,—and they are like the hair, or the nails, or evil humours in the body." And thereunto adds, that his definition of the church compriseth this last sort only; which is all one as if we should define a man to be a thing constituted and made up of hair, nails, and ill humours: and let others take heed that they have no such churches.

There is nothing more certain in matter of fact than that evangelical churches, at their first constitution, were made up and did consist of such members as we have described, and no others; nor is there one word in the whole Scripture intimating any concession or permission of Christ to receive into his church those who are not so qualified. Others have nothing to plead for themselves but possession; which, being "malefidei," ill obtained and ill continued, will afford them no real advantage when the time of trial shall come. Wherefore it is certain that such they ought to be. No man, as I suppose, is come unto that profligate sense of spiritual things as to deny that the members of the church ought to be visibly holy: for if so, they may affirm that all the promises and privileges made and granted to the church do belong unto them who visibly live and die in their sins; which is to overthrow the gospel. And if they ought so to be, and were so at first, when they are not so openly and visibly, there is a declension from the original constitution of churches, and a sinful deviation in them from the rule of Christ.
This original constitution of churches, with respect unto their members, was, for the substance of it, as we observed, preferred in the primitive times, whilst persecution from without was continued and discipline preserved within. I have in part declared before what great care and circumspection the church then used in the admission of any into their fellowship and order, and what trial they were to undergo before they were received; and it is known also with what severe discipline they watched over the faith, walking, conversation, and manners of all their members. Indeed, such was their care and diligence herein that there is scarce left, in some churches at present, the least resemblance or appearance of what was their state and manner of rule. Wherefore some think it meet to ascend no higher in the imitation of the primitive churches than the times of the Christian emperors, when all things began to rush into the fatal apostasy, which I shall here speak a little farther unto; for,—

Upon the Roman emperors’ embracing Christian religion, whereby not only outward peace and tranquillity was secured unto the church, but the profession of Christian religion was countenanced, encouraged, honoured, and rewarded, the rule, care, and diligence of the churches, about the admission of members, were in a great measure relinquished and forsaken. The rulers of the church began to think that the glory of it consisted in its numbers, finding both their own power, veneration, and revenue increased thereby. In a short time, the inhabitants of whole cities and provinces, upon a bare, outward profession, were admitted into churches. And then began the outward court,—that is, all that which belongs unto the outward worship and order of the church,—to be trampled on by the Gentiles, not kept any more to the measure of Scripture rule, which thenceforth was applied only to the temple of God and them that worshipped therein: for this corruption of the church, as to the matter of it, was the occasion and means of introducing all that corruption in doctrine, worship, order, and rule, which ensued, and ended in the great apostasy; for whatever belonged unto any of these things, especially those that consist in practice, were accommodated unto the state of the members of the churches. And such they were as stood in need of superstitious rites to be mixed with their worship, as not understanding the power and glory of that which is spiritual; such as no interest in church-order could be committed unto, seeing they were not qualified to bear any share in it; such as stood in need of a rule over them with grandeur and power, like unto that among the Gentiles. Wherefore, the accommodation of all church concerns unto the state and condition of such corrupt members as churches were filled with, and at length made up of, proved the ruin of the church in all its order and beauty.

But so it fell out, that in the protestant reformation of the church
very little regard was had thereunto. Those great and worthy persons who were called unto that work did set themselves principally, yea, solely, for the most part, against the false doctrine and idolatrous worship of the church of Rome, as judging that if they were removed and taken away, the people, by the efficacy of truth and order of worship, would be retrieved from the evil of their ways, and primitive holiness be again reduced among them; for they thought it was the doctrine and worship of that church which had filled the people with darkness and corrupted their conversations. Nor did they absolutely judge amiss therein: for although they were themselves at first introduced in compliance with the ignorance and wickedness of the people, yet they were suited to promote them as well as to countenance them; which they did effectually. Hence it came to pass that the reformation of the church, as unto the matter of it, or the purity and holiness of its members, was not in the least attempted, until Calvin set up his discipline at Geneva; which hath filled the world with clamours against him from that day to this. In most other places, churches, in the matter of them, continued the same as they were in the Papacy, and in many places as bad in their lives as when they were Papists.

But this method was designed, in the holy, wise providence of God, for the good and advantage of the church, in a progressive reformation, as it had made a gradual progress into its decay; for had the reformers, in the first place, set themselves to remove out of the church such as were unmeet for its communion, or to have gathered out of them such as were meet members of the church, according to its original institution, it would, through the paucity of the number of those who could have complied with the design, have greatly obstructed, if not utterly defeated, their endeavour for the reformation of doctrine and worship. This was that which, in the preaching of the gospel and the profession of it, God hath since made effectual, in these nations especially, and in other places, to turn multitudes "from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto himself, translating them into the kingdom of his dear Son." Hereby way is made for a necessary addition unto the work of reformation, if not to the closing of it, which could not at first be attained unto nor well attempted,—namely, the reduction of churches, as unto their matter, or the members of them, unto the primitive institution.

The sum of what is designed in this discourse is this only:—We desire no more to constitute church-members, and we can desire no less, than what, in the judgment of charity, may comply with the union that is between Christ the head and the church, 1 Cor. xii. 27, Eph. ii. 22, 1 Cor. iii. 16, 17, 2 Cor. viii. 5, 1 Thess. i. 1, 2, etc.; than may, in the same judgment, answer the way of the beginning and increase of the church, according unto the will of God, who adds unto
the church such as shall be saved, Acts ii. 47, the rule of our receiving of them being because he hath received them, Rom. xiv. 1-3; than may answer that profession of faith which was the foundation of the church, which was not what flesh and blood, but what God himself revealed, Matt. xvi. 16, 17, and not such as have a form of godliness, but deny the power thereof, 2 Tim. iii. 5. We acknowledge that many church-members are not what they ought to be, but that many hypocrites may be among them; that the judgment which is passed on the confession and profession of them that are to be admitted into churches is charitable, proceeding on evidence of moral probability, not determining the reality of the things themselves; that there are sundry measures of light, knowledge, experience, and abilities and readiness of mind, in those that are to be admitted, all whose circumstances are duly to be considered, with indulgence unto their weakness; and if the Scripture will allow us any further latitude, we are ready to embrace it.

Our present inquiry yet remaining on these considerations is, What is our duty in point of communion with such churches as are made up or composed of members visibly unholy, or such as comply not with the qualifications that are, by the rules of the gospel, indispensably required to give unto any a regular entrance into the church, with a participation of its privileges; for it is in vain to expect that such churches will reform themselves by any act, duty, or power of their own, seeing the generality of them are justly supposed averse from and enemies unto any such work. I answer, therefore,—

1. It must be remembered that communion with particular churches is to be regulated absolutely by edification. No man is or can be obliged to abide in or confine himself unto the communion of any particular church any longer than it is for his edification. And this liberty is allowed unto all persons by the church of England; for allow a man to be born in such a parish, to be baptized in it, and there educated, yet if at any time he judge that the ministry of the parish is not useful unto his edification, he may withdraw from the communion in that parish by the removal of his habitation, it may be to the next door. Wherefore,—

2. If the corruption of a church, as to the matter of it, be such as that,—

(1.) It is inconsistent with and overthroweth all that communion that ought to be among the members of the same church, in love without dissimulation (whereof we shall treat afterward);

(2.) If the scandals and offences which must of necessity abound in such churches be really obstructive of edification;

(3.) If the ways and walking of the generality of their members be dishonourable unto the gospel and the profession of it, giving no representation of the holiness of Christ or his doctrine;
(4.) If such churches do not, can not, will not reform themselves: then,—

It is the duty of every man who takes care of his own present edification and the future salvation of his soul peaceably to withdraw from the communion of such churches, and to join in such others where all the ends of church-societies may in some measure be obtained. Men may not only do so, because all obligation unto the use of means for the attaining of such an end doth cease when the means are not suited thereunto, but obstructive of its attainment, but also because the giving of a testimony hereby against the declension from the rule of Christ in the institution of churches, and the dishonour that by this means is inflicted on the gospel, is necessary unto all that desire to acquit themselves as loyal subjects unto their Lord and King. And it cannot be questioned, by any who understand the nature, use, and end of evangelical churches, but that a relinquishment of the rule of the gospel in any of them, as unto the practice of holiness, is as just a cause of withdrawing communion from them as their forsaking the same rule in doctrine and worship.

It may be some will judge that sundry inconveniencies will ensue on this assertion, when any have a mind to practise according unto it; but when the matter of fact supposed is such as is capable of an uncontrollable evidence, no inconvenience can ensue on the practice directed unto, any way to be compared unto the mischief of obliging believers to abide always in such societies, to the ruin of their souls.

Two things may be yet inquired into, that relate unto this part of the state of evangelical churches; as,—

1. Whether a church may not, ought not, to take under its conduct, inspection, and rule, such as are not yet meet to be received into full communion, such as are the children and servants of those who are complete members of the church? Ans. No doubt the church, in its officers, may and ought so to do, and it is a great evil when it is neglected. For,—(1.) They are to take care of parents and masters as such, and as unto the discharge of their duty in their families; which without an inspection into the condition of their children and servants, they cannot do. (2.) Households were constantly reckoned unto the church when the heads of the families were entered into covenant, Luke xix. 9; Acts xvi. 15; Rom. xvi. 10, 11; 1 Cor. i. 16; 2 Tim. iv. 19. (3.) Children do belong unto and have an interest in their parents' covenant; not only in the promise of it, which gives them right unto baptism, but in the profession of it in the church covenant, which gives them a right unto all the privileges of the church whereof they are capable, until they voluntarily relinquish their claim unto them. (4.) Baptizing the children of church members, giving them thereby an admission into the visible catholic church, puts an obligation on the officers of the church to take care,
The kingdom belon;
ing the foreigners ral families be unto there commonwealth, of conversion and edification in the ministry of the church, ordinarily the continuation of the church is to depend on the addition of members out of the families already incorporated in it. The church is not to be like the kingdom of the Mamalukes, wherein there was no regard unto natural successors, but it was continually made up of strangers and foreigners incorporated into it; nor like the beginning of the Roman commonwealth, which, consisting of men only, was like to have been the matter of one age alone.

The duty of the church towards this sort of persons consists,—

(1.) In prayer for them; (2.) Catechetical instruction of them according unto their capacities; (3.) Advice to their parents concerning them; (4.) Visiting of them in the families whereunto they do belong; (5.) Encouragement of them, or admonition, according as there is occasion; (6.) Direction [of them] for a due preparation unto the joining themselves unto the church in full communion; (7.) Exclusion of them from a claim unto the participation of the especial privileges of the church, where they render themselves visibly unmeet for them and unworthy of them.

The neglect of this duty brings inconceivable prejudice unto churches, and if continued in will prove their ruin; for they are not to be preserved, propagated, and continued, at the easy rate of a constant supply by the carnal baptized posterity of those who do at any time, justly or unjustly, belong unto them, but they are to prepare a meet supply of members by all the spiritual means whose administration they are intrusted withal. And, besides, one end of churches is to preserve the covenant of God in the families once graciously taken thereinto. The neglect, therefore, herein is carefully to be watched against. And it doth arise,—(1.) From an ignorance of the duty in most that are concerned in it. (2.) From the paucity of officers in most churches, both teaching and ruling, who are to attend unto it. (3.) The want of a teacher or catechist in every church, who should attend only unto the instruction of this sort of persons. (4.) Want of a sense of their duty in parents and masters,—

[1.] In not valuing aright the great privilege of having their children and servants under the inspection, care, and blessing of the church; [2.] In not instilling into them a sense of it, with the duties that are expected from them on the account of their relation unto the church; [3.] In not bringing them duly into the church assem-
blies; [4.] In not preparing and disposing them unto an actual entrance into full communion with the church; [5.] In not advising with the elders of the church about them; and, [6.] Especially by an indulgence unto that loose and careless kind of education, in conformity unto the world, which generally prevails. Hence it is that most of them, on various accounts and occasions, drop off here and there from the communion of the church and all relation thereunto, without the least respect unto them or inquiry after them, churches being supplied by such as are occasionally converted in them.

Where churches are complete in the kind and number of their officers, sufficient to attend unto all the duties and occasions of them; where whole families, in the conjunction of the heads of them unto the church, are dedicated unto God, according unto the several capacities of those whereof they do consist; where the design of the church is to provide for its own successive continuation, in the preservation of the interest of God's covenant in the families taken thereinto; where parents esteem themselves accountable unto God and the church as unto the relation of their children thereunto,—there is provision for church-order, usefulness, and beauty, beyond what is usually to be observed.

2. The especial duty of the church in admission of members in the time of great persecution may be a little inquired into. And,—(1.) It is evident that, in the apostolical and primitive times, the churches were exceeding careful not to admit into their society such as by whom they might be betrayed unto the rage of their persecuting adversaries; yet, notwithstanding all their care, they could seldom avoid it, but that when persecution grew severe some or other would fall from them, either out of fear, with the power of temptation, or by a discovery of their latent hypocrisy and unbelief, unto their great trial and distress. However, they were not so scrupulous herein, with respect unto their own safety, as to exclude such as gave a tolerable account of their sincerity, but, in the discharge of their duty, committed themselves unto the care of Jesus Christ. And this is the rule whereby we ought to walk on such occasions. Wherefore, (2.) On supposition of the establishment of idolatry and persecution here, or in any place, as it was of old, under first the pagan, and afterward the antichristian tyranny, the church is obliged to receive into its care and communion all such as,—[1.] Flee from idols, and are ready to confirm their testimony against them with suffering; [2.] Make profession of the truth of the gospel of the doctrine of Christ, especially as unto his person and offices; are, [3.] Free from scandalous sins; and, [4.] Are willing to give up themselves unto the rule of Christ in the church, and a subjection unto all his ordinances and institutions therein: for in such a season, these things are so full an indication of sincerity as that, in the judg-
ment of charity, they render men meet to be members of the visible church. And if any of this sort of persons, through the severity of the church in their non-admission of them, should be cast on a conjunction in superstitious and idolatrous worship, or be otherwise exposed unto temptations and discouragements prejudicial unto their souls, I know not how such a church can answer the refusal of them unto the great and universal Pastor of the whole flock.

CHAPTER II.

Of the formal cause of a particular church.

The way or means whereby such persons as are described in the foregoing chapter may become a church, or enter into a church-state, is by mutual confederation or solemn agreement for the performance of all the duties which the Lord Christ hath prescribed unto his disciples in such churches, and in order to the exercise of the power wherewith they are intrusted according unto the rule of the word.

For the most part, the churches that are in the world at present know not how they came so to be, continuing only in that state which they have received by tradition from their fathers. Few there are who think that any act or duty of their own is required to instate them in church order and relation. And it is acknowledged that there is a difference between the continuation of a church and its first erection; yet that that continuation may be regular, it is required that its first congregating (for the church is a congregation) was so, as also that the force and efficacy of it be still continued. Wherefore the causes of that first gathering must be inquired into.

The churches mentioned in the New Testament, planted or gathered by the apostles, were particular churches, as hath been proved. These churches did consist each of them of many members; who were so members of one of them as that they were not members of another. The saints of the church of Corinth were not members of the church at Philippi. And the inquiry is, how those believers in one place and the other became to be a church, and that distinct from all others? The Scripture affirm's in general that they gave up themselves unto the Lord and unto the apostles, who guided them in these affairs, by the will of God, 2 Cor. viii. 5; and that other believers were added unto the church, Acts ii. 47.

That it is the will and command of our Lord Jesus Christ that all his disciples should be joined in such societies, for the duties and ends of them prescribed and limited by himself, hath been proved sufficiently before. All that are disciple by the word are to be taught to do and observe all his commands, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.
This could originally be no otherwise done but by their own actual, express, voluntary consent. There are sundry things which concur as remote causes, or pre-requisite conditions, unto this conjunction of believers in a particular church, and without which it cannot be; such are baptism, profession of the Christian faith, convenient cohabitation, resorting to the preaching of the word in the same place: but neither any of these distinctly or separately, nor all of them in conjunction, are or can be the constitutive form of a particular church; for it is evident that they may all be, and yet no such church-state ensue. They cannot all together engage unto those duties nor communicate those powers which appertain unto this state.

Were there no other order in particular churches, no other discipline to be exercised in them, nor rule over them, no other duties, no other ends assigned unto them, but what are generally owned and practised in parochial assemblies, the preaching of the word within such a precinct of cohabitation, determined by civil authority, might constitute a church. But if a church be such a society as is intrusted in itself with sundry powers and privileges depending on sundry duties prescribed unto it; if it constitute new relations between persons that neither naturally nor morally were before so related, as marriage doth between husband and wife; if it require new mutual duties and give new mutual rights among themselves, not required of them either as unto their matter or as unto their manner before,—it is vain to imagine that this state can arise from or have any other formal cause but the joint consent and virtual confederation of those concerned unto these ends: for there is none of them can have any other foundation; they are all of them resolved into the wills of men, bringing themselves under an obligation unto them by their voluntary consent. I say, unto the wills of men, as their formal cause; the supreme efficient cause of them all being the will, law, and constitution of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Thus it is in all societies, in all relations that are not merely natural (such as between parents and children, wherein the necessity of powers and mutual duties is predetermined by a superior law, even that of nature), wherein powers, privileges, and mutual duties, are established, as belonging unto that society. Nor, after its first institution, can any one be incorporated into it, but by his own consent and engagement to observe the laws of it: nor, if the nature and duties of churches were acknowledged, could there be any contest in this matter; for the things ensuing are clear and evident:—

1. The Lord Christ, by his authority, hath appointed and instituted this church-state, as that there should be such churches; as we have proved before.

2. That, by his word or law, he hath granted powers and pri-
villeges unto this church, and prescribed duties unto all belonging unto it; wherein they can have no concernment who are not incorporated into such a church.

3. That therefore he doth require and command all his disciples to join themselves in such church-relations as we have proved, warranting them so to do by his word and command. Wherefore,—

4. This joining of themselves, whereon depend all their interest in church powers and privileges, all their obligation unto church duties, is a voluntary act of the obedience of faith unto the authority of Christ; nor can it be any thing else.

5. Herein do they give themselves unto the Lord and to one another, by their officers, in a peculiar manner, according to the will of God, 2 Cor. viii. 5.

6. To “give ourselves unto the Lord,”—that is, unto the Lord Jesus Christ,—is expressly to engage to do and observe all that he hath appointed and commanded in the church, as that phrase everywhere signifieth in the Scripture; as also “joining ourselves unto God,” which is the same.

7. This resignation of ourselves unto the will, power, and authority of Christ, with an express engagement made unto him of doing and observing all his commands, hath the nature of a covenant on our part; and it hath so on his, by virtue of the promise of his especial presence annexed unto this engagement on our part, Matt. xxviii. 18–20.

8. For whereas there are three things required unto a covenant between God and man,—(1.) That it be of God's appointment and institution; (2.) That upon a prescription of duties there be a solemn engagement unto their performance on the part of men; (3.) That there be especial promises of God annexed thereunto, in which consists the matter of confederation, whereof mutual express restipulation is the form,—they all concur herein.

9. This covenant which we intend is not the covenant of grace absolutely considered; nor are all the duties belonging unto that covenant prescribed in it, but the principal of them, as faith, repentance, and the like, are presupposed unto it; nor hath it annexed unto it all the promises and privileges of the new covenant absolutely considered: but it is that which is prescribed as a gospel duty in the covenant of grace, whereunto do belong all the duties of evangelical worship, all the powers and privileges of the church, by virtue of the especial promise of the peculiar presence of Christ in such a church.

10. Whereas, therefore, in the constitution of a church, believers do give up themselves unto the Lord, and are bound solemnly to engage themselves to do and observe all the things which Christ hath commanded to be done and observed in that state, whereon he hath promised to be present with them and among them in an espe-
cial manner,—which presence of his doth interest them in all the rights, powers, and privileges of the church,—their so doing hath the nature of a divine covenant included in it; which is the formal cause of their church-state and being.

11. Besides, as we have proved before, there are many mutual duties required of all which join in church-societies, and powers to be exercised and submitted unto, whereunto none can be obliged without their own consent. They must give up themselves unto one another, by the will of God; that is, they must agree, consent, and engage among themselves, to observe all those mutual duties, to use all those privileges, and to exercise all those powers, which the Lord Christ hath prescribed and granted unto his church. See Jer. I. 4, 5.

12. This completes the confederation intended, which is the formal cause of the church, and without which, either expressly or virtually performed, there can be no church-state.

13. Indeed, herein most men deceive themselves, and think they do not that, and that it ought to be done, and dispute against it as unlawful or unnecessary, which for the substance of it they do themselves, and would condemn themselves in their own consciences if they did it not. For unto what end do they join themselves unto parochial churches and assemblies? to what end do they require all professors of the protestant religion so to do, declaring it to be their duty by penalties annexed unto its neglect? Is it not that they might yield obedience unto Christ in their so doing? is it not to profess that they will do and observe all whatsoever he commands them? is it not to do it in that society, in those assemblies, whereunto they do belong? is there not therein virtually a mutual agreement and engagement among them unto all those ends? It must be so with them who do not in all things in religion fight uncertainly, as men beating the air.

14. Now, whereas these things are, in themselves and for the substance of them, known gospel duties, which all believers are indispensably obliged unto, the more express our engagement is concerning them, the more do we glorify Christ in our profession, and the greater sense of our duty will abide on our consciences, and the greater encouragement be given unto the performance of mutual duties, as also the more evident will the warranty be for the exercise of church-power. Yet do I not deny the being of churches unto those societies wherein these things are virtually only observed, especially in churches of some continuance, wherein there is at least an implicit consent unto the first covenant constitution.

15. The Lord Christ having instituted and appointed officers, rulers, or leaders, in his church (as we shall see in the next place), to look unto the discharge of all church-duties among the members
OF THE FORMAL CAUSE OF A PARTICULAR CHURCH. 29

of it, to administer and dispense all its privileges, and to exercise all its authority, the consent and engagement insisted on is expressly required unto the constitution of this order and the preservation of it; for without this no believer can be brought into that relation unto another as his pastor, guide, overseer, ruler, unto the ends mentioned, wherein he must be subject unto him, [and] partake of all ordinances of divine worship administered by him with authority, in obedience unto the will of Christ. "They gave their own selves to us," saith the apostle, "by the will of God."

16. Wherefore the formal cause of a church consisteth in an obediential act of believers, in such numbers as may be useful unto the ends of church-edification, jointly giving up themselves unto the Lord Jesus Christ, to do and observe all his commands, resting on the promise of his especial presence thereon, giving and communicating, by his law, all the rights, powers, and privileges of his church unto them; and in a mutual agreement among themselves jointly to perform all the duties required of them in that state, with an especial subjection unto the spiritual authority of rules and rulers appointed by Christ in that state.

17. There is nothing herein which any man who hath a conscientious sense of his duty, in a professed subjection unto the gospel, can question, for the substance of it, whether it be according to the mind of Christ or no; and whereas the nature and essential properties of a divine covenant are contained in it, as such it is a foundation of any church-state.

18. Thus under the old testament, when God would take the posterity of Abraham into a new, peculiar church-state, he did it by a solemn covenant. Herein, as he prescribed all the duties of his worship to them, and made them many blessed promises of his presence, with powers and privileges innumerable, so the people solemnly covenanted and engaged with him that they would do and observe all that he had commanded them; whereby they coalesced into that church-state which abode unto the time of reformation. This covenant is at large declared, Exod. xxiv.: for the covenant which God made there with the people, and they with him, was not the covenant of grace under a legal dispensation, for that was established unto the seed of Abraham four hundred years before, in the promise with the seal of circumcision; nor was it the covenant of works under a gospel dispensation, for God never renewed that covenant under any consideration whatever; but it was a peculiar covenant which God then made with them, and had not made with their fathers, Deut. v. 2, 3, whereby they were raised and erected into a church-state, wherein they were intrusted with all the privileges and enjoined all the duties which God had annexed thereunto. This covenant was the sole formal cause of their church-
state, which they are charged so often to have broken, and which they so often solemnly renewed unto God.

19. This was that covenant which was to be abolished, whereon the church-state that was built thereon was utterly taken away; for hereon the Hebrews ceased to be the peculiar church of God, because the covenant whereby they were made so was abolished and taken away, as the apostle disputes at large, Heb. vii.—ix. The covenant of grace in the promise will still continue unto the true seed of Abraham, Acts ii. 38, 39; but the church-covenant was utterly taken away.

20. Upon the removal, therefore, of this covenant, and the church-state founded thereon, all duties of worship and church-privileges were also taken away (the things substituted in their room being totally of another kind). But the covenant of grace, as made with Abraham, being continued and transferred unto the gospel worshippers, the sign or token of it given unto him is changed, and another substituted in the room thereof. But whereas the privileges of this church-covenant were in themselves carnal only, and no way spiritual but as they were typical, and the duties prescribed in it were burdensome, yea, a yoke intolerable, the apostle declares in the same place that the new church-state, whereinto we are called by the gospel, hath no duties belonging unto it but such as are spiritual and easy, but withal hath such holy and eminent privileges as the church could no way enjoy by virtue of the first church-covenant, nor could believers be made partakers of them before that covenant was abolished. Wherefore,—

21. The same way for the erection of a church-state for the participation of the more excellent privileges of the gospel, and performance of the duties of it, for the substance of it, must still be continued; for the constitution of such a society as a church is, intrusted with powers and privileges by a covenant or mutual consent, with an engagement unto the performance of the duties belonging unto it, hath its foundation in the light of nature, so far as it hath any thing in common with other voluntary relations and societies, was instituted by God himself as the way and means of erecting the church-state of the old testament, and consisteth in the performance of such duties as are expressly required of all believers.

CHAPTER III.

Of the polity, rule, or discipline of the church in general.

I. The things last treated of concern the essence of the church, or the essential constituent parts of it, according unto the appoint-
ment of Christ. It remains, in the next place, that we should treat of it as it is _organical_, or a body corporate, a spiritually _political_ society, for the exercise of the powers wherewith it is intrusted by Christ, and the due performance of the duties which he requires. Now, whereas it is brought into this estate by the setting, fixing, or placing _officers_ in it, method would require that we should first treat of them, their nature, names, power, and the ways of coming unto their _offices_; but whereas all things concerning them are founded in the grant of power unto the church itself, and the institution of polity and rule therein by Jesus Christ, I shall first treat somewhat thereof in general.

That which we intend, on various considerations and in divers respects, is called the power or authority, the polity, the rule, the government, and the discipline of the church. The _formal nature_ of it is its authority or power; its _polity_ is skill and wisdom to act that power unto its proper ends; its _rule_ is the actual exercise of that power, according unto that skill and wisdom; its _government_ is the exercise and application of that authority, according unto that skill, towards those that are its proper objects; and it is called its _discipline_ principally with respect unto its end. Yet is it not material whether these things are thus accurately distinguished; the same thing is intended in them all, which I shall call _the rule of the church_.

II. The rule of the church is, in general, the _exercise of the power or authority of Jesus Christ, given unto it, according unto the laws and directions prescribed by himself, unto its edification_. This power in _actu primo_, or fundamentally, is in the church itself; in _actu secundo_, or its exercise, in them that are especially called thereunto. Whether that which is now called the rule of the church by some, being a plain secular dominion, have any affinity hereunto, is justly doubted. That it is in itself the acting of the authority of Christ, wherein the power of men is ministerial only, is evident: for,—1. All this authority in and over the church is vested in him alone; 2. It is over the souls and consciences of men only, which no authority can reach but his, and that as it is his; whereof we shall treat more afterward.

The sole end of the ministerial exercise of this power and rule, by virtue thereof, unto the church, is the edification of itself, Rom. xv. 1–3; 2 Cor. x. 8, xiii. 10; Eph. iv. 14, 15.

III. This is the especial nature and especial end of all power granted by Jesus Christ unto the church, namely, a _ministry unto edification_, in opposition unto all the ends whereunto it hath been abused; for it hath been so unto the usurpation of a dominion over the persons and consciences of the disciples of Christ, accompanied with secular grandeur, wealth, and power. The Lord Christ never
made a grant of any authority for any such ends, yea, they are expressly forbidden by him, Luke xxii. 25, 26; Matt. xx. 25–28, "Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister."

All the pleas of the Romanists are utterly insufficient to secure their papal domination from this sword of the mouth of the Lord Jesus; for whereas their utmost pretence and defence consists in this, that it is not dominion and power absolutely that is forbidden, but the unlawful, tyrannical, oppressive exercise of power, such as was in use among the princes of the Gentiles, never was there any dominion in the world, no, not among the Gentiles, more cruel, oppressive, and bloody than that of the pope's hath been. But it is evident that our Lord Jesus Christ doth not in the least reflect on the rule or government of the kings and princes of the Gentiles, which was good and gracious; yea, he speaks of them in an especial manner whom their subjects, for their moderate and equal rule, with their usefulness unto their countries, called συνεργίαι, or "benefactors." Their rule, as unto the kind and administration of it in the kingdoms of the world, he approves of. And such a power or pre-eminence it was,—namely, good and just in itself, not tyrannical and oppressive,—that the two disciples desired in his kingdom; which gave occasion unto this declaration of the nature of his kingdom and the rule thereof. For in this power or dominion two things may be considered:—1. The exercise of it over the persons, goods, and lives of men, by courts, coercive jurisdictions, processes of law, and external force in punishments; 2. The state, grandeur, pre-eminence, wealth, exaltation above others, which are necessary unto the maintenance of their authority and power. Both these, in the least participation of them, in the least degree whatever, are forbidden by our Saviour to be admitted in his kingdom, or to have any place therein, on what pretence soever. He will have nothing of lordship, domination, pre-eminence in lordly power, in his church. No courts, no coercive jurisdictions, no exercise of any human authority, doth he allow therein; for by these means do the princes of the Gentiles, those that are the benefactors of their countries, rule among them. And this is most evident from what, in opposition hereunto, he prescribes unto his own disciples, the greatest, the best in office, grace, and gifts, namely, a ministry only to be discharged in the way of service. How well this great command and direction of our Lord Jesus Christ hath been, and is, complied withal by those who have taken on them to be rulers in the church is sufficiently known.
Wherefore there is no rule of the church but what is ministerial, consisting in an authoritative declaration and application of the commands and will of Christ unto the souls of men; wherein those who exercise it are servants unto the church for its edification, for Jesus' sake, 2 Cor. iv. 5.

It hence follows that the introduction of human authority into the rule of the church of Christ, in any kind, destroyeth the nature of it, and makes his kingdom to be of this world, and some of his disciples to be, in their measure, like the princes of the Gentiles; nor is it, oftentimes, from themselves that they are not more like them than they are. The church is the house of Christ, his family, his kingdom. To act any power, in its rule, which is not his, which derives not from him, which is not communicated by his legal grant; or to act any power by ways, processes, rules, and laws, not of his appointment,—is an invasion of his right and dominion. It can no otherwise be, if the church be his family, his house, his kingdom; for what father would endure that any power should be exercised in his family, as to the disposal of his children and estate, but his own? what earthly prince will bear with such an intrusion into his rights and dominion? Foreign papal power is severely excluded here in England, because it intrenches on the rights of the crown, by the exercise of an authority and jurisdiction not derived from the king, according unto the law of the land; and we should do well to take care that at the same time we do not encroach upon the dominion of Christ by the exercise of an authority not derived from him, or by laws and rules not enacted by him, but more foreign unto his kingdom than the canon law or the pope's rule is unto the laws of this nation, lest we fall under the statute of praemunire, Matt. xx. 25–28. The power of rule in the church, then, is nothing but a right to yield obedience unto the commands of Christ, in such a way, by such rules, and for such ends, as wherein and whereby his authority is to be acted.

The persons concerned in this rule of the church, both those that rule and those that are to be ruled, as unto all their civil and political concerns in this world, are subject unto the civil government of the kingdoms and places wherein they inhabit, and there are sundry things which concern the outward state and condition of the church that are at the disposal of the governors of this world; but whereas the power to be exercised in the church is merely spiritual as unto its objects, which are the consciences of men, and as unto its ends, which are the tendency of their souls unto God, their spiritual obedience in Christ, and eternal life, it is a frenzy to dream of any other power or authority in this rule but that of Christ alone.

To sum up this discourse: If the rulers of the church, the greatest of them, have only a ministerial power committed unto them, and are precisely limited thereunto; if in the exercise thereof they are...
servants of the church unto its edification; if all lordly domination, in an exaltation above the church or the members of it in dignity and authority of this world, and the exercise of power by external, coercive jurisdiction, be forbidden unto them; if the whole power and rule of the church be spiritual and not carnal, mighty through God and not through the laws of men, and be to be exercised by spiritual means for spiritual ends only,—it is apparent how it hath been lost in or cast out of the world, for the introduction of a lordly domination, a secular, coercive jurisdiction, with laws and powers no way derived from Christ, in the room thereof. Neither is it possible for any man alive to reconcile the present government of some churches, either as unto the officers who have the administration of that rule, or the rules and laws whereby they act and proceed, or the powers which they exercise, or the jurisdiction which they claim, or the manner of their proceeding in its administration, unto any tolerable consistency with the principles, rules, and laws of the government of the church given by Christ himself. And this alone is a sufficient reason why those who endeavour to preserve their loyalty entire unto Jesus Christ should, in their own practice, seek after the reduction of the rule of the church unto his commands and appointments. In the public disposals of nations we have no concernment.

IV. Whereas, therefore, there is a power and authority for its rule unto edification given and committed by the Lord Christ unto his church, I shall proceed to inquire how this power is communicated, what it is, and to whom it is granted; which shall be declared in the ensuing observations:

1. There was an extraordinary church-power committed by the Lord Jesus Christ unto his apostles, who in their own persons were the first and only subject of it. It was not granted unto the church, by it to be communicated unto them, according unto any rules prescribed thereunto; for their office, as it was apostolical, was antecedent unto the existence of any gospel church-state, properly so called, neither had any church the least concurrence or influence into their call or mission. Howbeit, when there was a church-state, the churches being called and gathered by their ministry, they were given unto the church, and placed in the church for the exercise of all office with power, unto their edification, according to the rules and laws of their constitution, Acts i. 14, 15, etc., vi. 1–4; 1 Cor. iii. 22, xii. 28; Eph. iv. 11–15.

2. This power is ceased in the church. It is so, not by virtue of any law or constitution of Christ, but by a cessation of those actions whence it did flow and whereon it did depend. For unto this apostolical office and power there were required,—(1) An immediate personal call from Christ himself; (2) A commission equally extensive unto all nations, for their conversion, and unto all churches
equally, for their edification; (3.) An authority in all churches, comprehensive of all that power which is, in the ordinary constitution of them, distributed among many; (4.) A collation of extraordinary gifts, as of infallibility in teaching, of working miracles, speaking with tongues, and the like. Whereas, therefore, all these things do cease, and the Lord Christ doth not act in the same manner towards any, this office and power doth absolutely cease. For any to pretend themselves to be successors unto these apostles, as some with a strange confidence and impertinency have done, is to plead that they are personally and immediately called by Christ unto their office, that they have authority with respect unto all nations and all churches, and are endued with a spirit of infallibility and a power of working miracles; whereof outward pomp and ostentation are no sufficient evidences: and certainly when some of them consider one another, and talk of being the apostles' successors, it is but "Aruspex aruspicem." 1

3. Least of all, in the ordinary state of the church, and the continuation thereof, hath the Lord Christ appointed a vicar, or rather, as is pretended, a successor, with a plenitude of all church-power, to be by him parcelled out unto others. This is that which hath overthrown all church rule and order, introducing Luciferian pride and antichristian tyranny in their room. And whereas the only way of Christ's acting his authority over the churches, and of communicating authority unto them, to be acted by them in his name, is by his word and Spirit, which he hath given to continue in his church unto that end unto the consummation of all things, the pope of Rome placing himself in his stead for these ends, doth thereby "sit in the temple of God, and show himself to be God." But this is sufficiently confuted among all sober Christians; and those who embrace it may be left to contend with the Mohammedans, who affirm that Jesus left John the Baptist to be his successor, as Ali succeeded unto Mohammed.

4. All those by whom the ordinary rule of the church is to be exercised unto its edification are, as unto their office and power, given unto the church, set or placed in it, not as "lords of their faith, but as helpers of their joy," 1 Cor. ii. 3, iii. 21-23; 2 Cor. i. 24; Eph. iv. 11-15; 1 Pet. v. 1, 2: for the church is the spouse of Christ, the Lamb's wife, and, by virtue of that relation, the enfeofment into this power is her due and dowry. All particular persons are but her servants for Christ's sake; for though some of them be stewards, and set over all their fellow-servants, yet he hath not given them the trust of power to rule his spouse at their own will, and to grant what they please unto her.

1 An allusion to a saying of Cicero respecting soothsayers: "Mirabile videtur quod non rideat aruspex cum aruspicem viderit."—De Nat. Deor. lib. i. cap. xxvi.; and De Divina lib. ii. cap. xxiv.—Ed.
5. But as this whole church-power is committed unto the whole church by Christ, so all that are called unto the peculiar exercise of any part of it, by virtue of office-authority, do receive that authority from him by the only way of the communication of it,—namely, by his word and Spirit, through the ministry of the church; whereof we shall treat afterward.

V. These things being thus premised in general concerning church-power, we must treat yet particularly of the communication of it from Christ, and of its distribution as unto its residence in the church:—

1. Every individual believer hath power or right given unto him, upon his believing, to become a son of God, John i. 12. Hereby, as such, he hath a right and title radically and originally unto, with an interest in, all church-privileges, to be actually possessed and used according to the rules by him prescribed; for he that is a son of God hath a right unto all the privileges and advantages of the family of God, as well as he is obliged unto all the duties of it. Herein lies the foundation of all right unto church-power; for both it and all that belongs unto it are a part of the purchased inheritance, whereunto right is granted by adoption. Wherefore the first, original grant of all church power and privileges is made unto believers as such. Theirs it is, with these two limitations:—(1.) That as such only they cannot exercise any church-power but upon their due observation of all rules and duties given unto this end; such are joint confession and confederation. (2.) That each individual do actually participate therein, according to the especial rules of the church, which peculiarly respects women that do believe.

2. Wherever there are “two or three” of these believers (the smallest number), right or power is granted unto them actually to meet together in the name of Christ for their mutual edification; whereunto he hath promised his presence among them, Matt. xviii. 19, 20. To meet and to do any thing in the name of Christ, as to exhort, instruct, and admonish one another, or to pray together, as verse 19, there is an especial right or power required thereunto. This is granted by Jesus Christ unto the least number of consenting believers. And this is a second preparation unto the communication of church-power. Unto the former faith only is required; unto this, profession, with mutual consent unto and agreement in the evangelical duties mentioned, are to be added.

3. Where the number of believers is increased so as that they are sufficient, as unto their number, to observe and perform all church-duties in the way and manner prescribed for their performance, they have right and power granted unto them to make a joint solemn confession of their faith, especially as unto the person of Christ and his mediation, Matt. xvi. 16–18; as also to give up themselves unto him and to one another, in a holy agreement or confederation to do
and observe all things whatever that he hath commanded. Hereon, by virtue of his laws in his institutions and commands, he gives them power to do all things in their order which he grants unto his church, and instates them in all the rights and privileges thereof. These believers, I say, thus congregated into a church-state, have immediately, by virtue thereof, power to take care that all things be done among them as by the Lord Christ they are commanded to be done in and by his church.

This, therefore, is the church essential and homogeneal, unto which the Lord Christ hath granted all that church-power which we inquire after, made it the seat of all ordinances of his worship, and the tabernacle wherein he will dwell; nor, since the ceasing of extraordinary officers, is there any other way possible for the congregating of any church than what doth virtually include the things we have mentioned.

4. But yet this church-state is not complete, nor are the ends of its institution attainable in this state, for the Lord Christ hath appointed such things in and unto it which in this state it cannot observe; for he hath given authority unto his church, to be exercised both in its rule and in the administration of his solemn ordinances of worship. The things before mentioned are all of them acts of right and power, but not of authority.

5. Wherefore the Lord Christ hath ordained offices, and appointed officers to be established in the church, Eph. iv. 11–15. Unto these is all church authority granted; for all authority is an act of office-power, which is that which gives unto what is performed by the officers of the church the formal nature of authority.

6. Therefore unto the church, in the state before described, right and power is granted by Christ to call, choose, appoint, and set apart, persons made meet for the work of the offices appointed by him, in the ways and by the means appointed by him. Nor is there any other way whereby ordinary officers may be fixed in the church, as we have proved before, and shall farther confirm afterward.

That which hereon we must inquire into is, How, or by what means, or by what acts of his sovereign power, the Lord Christ doth communicate office-power, and therewith the office itself, unto any persons, wherein their authority is directly from him; and what are the acts or duties of the church in the collation of this authority.

The acts of Christ herein may be reduced unto these heads:—

1. He hath instituted and appointed the offices themselves, and made a grant of them unto the church, for its edification; as also, he hath determined and limited the powers and duties of the officers. It is not in the power of any, or of all the churches in the world, to appoint any office or officer in the church that Christ hath not appointed; and where there are any such, they can have no church-authority,
properly so called, for that entirely ariseth from, and is resolved into, the institution of the office by Christ himself. And hence, in the first place, all the authority of officers in the church proceeds from the authority of Christ in the institution of the office itself; for that which gives being unto any thing gives it also its essential properties.

2. By virtue of his relation unto the church as its head, of his kingly power over it and care of it, whereon the continuation and edification of the church in this world do depend, wherever he hath a church called, he furnisheth some persons with such gifts, abilities, and endowments as are necessary to the discharge of such offices, in the powers, works, and duties of them; for it is most unquestionably evident, both in the nature of the thing itself and in his institution, that there are some especial abilities and qualifications required to the discharge of every church-office. Wherefore, where the Lord Christ doth not communicate of these abilities in such a measure as by virtue of them church-order may be observed, church-power exercised, and all church-ordinances administered according to his mind, unto the edification of the church, it is no more in the power of men to constitute officers than to erect and create an office in the church, Eph.iv.11-15; 1 Cor. xii. 4-10, etc.; Rom. xii. 6-8.

This collation of spiritual gifts and abilities for office by Jesus Christ unto any doth not immediately constitute all those, or any of them, officers in the church, on whom they are collated, without the observation of that method and order which he hath appointed in the church for the communication of office-power; yet is it so prerequisite thereunto, that no person not made partaker of them in the measure before mentioned can, by virtue of any outward rite, order, or power, be really vested in the ministry.

3. This communication of office-power on the part of Christ consists in his institution and appointment of the way and means whereby persons gifted and qualified by himself ought to be actually admitted into their offices, so as to administer the powers and perform the duties of them; for the way of their call and ordination, whereof we shall speak afterward, is efficacious unto this end of communicating office-power merely from his institution and appointment of it, and what is not so can have no causal influence into the communication of this power. For although sundry things belonging hereunto are directed by the light of nature, as it is that where one man is set over others in power and authority, which before he had no natural right unto, it should be by their own consent and choice; and some things are of a moral nature, as that especial prayer be used in and about affairs that need especial divine assistance and favour; and there may be some circumstances of outward actions herein not to be determined but by the rule of reason on the present posture of occasions,—yet nothing hath any causal influence into the
communication of office-power but what is of the institution and appointment of Christ. By virtue hereof, all that are called unto this office do derive all their power and authority from him alone.

4. He hath hereon given commands unto the whole church to submit themselves unto the authority of these officers in the discharge of their office, who are so appointed, so prepared or qualified, so called by himself, and to obey them in all things, according unto the limitations which himself also hath given unto the power and authority of such officers; for they who are called unto rule and authority in the church by virtue of their office are not thereon admitted unto an unlimited power, to be exercised at their pleasure in a lordly or despoticall manner, but their power is stated, bounded, limited, and confined, as to the objects of it, its acts, its manner of administration, its ends, and as unto all things wherein it is concerned. The swelling over these banks by ambition, the breaking up of these bounds by pride and love of domination, by the introduction of a power over the persons of men in their outward concerus, exercised in a legal, coercive, lordly manner, are sufficient to make a forfeiture of all church-power in them who are guilty of them. But after that some men saw it fit to transgress the bounds of power and authority prescribed and limited unto them by the Lord Christ,—which was really exclusive of lordship, dominion, and all elation above their brethren, leaving them servants to the church for Christ’s sake,—they began to prescribe bounds unto themselves, such as were suited unto their interest, which they called rules or canons, and never left enlarging them at their pleasure until they instated the most absolute tyranny in and over the church that ever was in the world.

By these ways and means doth the Lord Christ communicate office-power unto them that are called thereunto; whereon they become not the officers or ministers of men, no, not of the church, as unto the actings and exercise of their authority, but only as the good and edification of the church is the end of it, but the officers and ministers of Christ himself.

It is hence evident, that, in the communication of church-power in office unto any persons called thereunto, the work and duty of the church consists formally in acts of obedience unto the commands of Christ. Hence it doth not give unto such officers a power or authority that was formally and actually in the body of the community by virtue of any grant or law of Christ, so as that they should receive and act the power of the church by virtue of a delegation from them; but only they design, choose, and set apart the individual persons, who thereon are intrusted with office-power by Christ himself, according as was before declared. This is the power and right given unto the church, essentially considered, with respect unto their officers,—namely, to design, call, choose, and set apart, the per-
sons, by the ways of Christ’s appointment, unto those offices whereunto, by his laws, he hath annexed church power and authority.

We need not, therefore, trouble ourselves with the disputes about the first subject of church-power, or any part of it; for it is a certain rule, that, in the performance of all duties which the Lord Christ requires, either of the whole church or of any in the church, especially of the officers, they are the first subject of the power needful unto such duties who are immediately called unto them. Hereby all things come to be done in the name and authority of Christ; for the power of the church is nothing but a right to perform church-duties in obedience unto the commands of Christ and according unto his mind. Wherefore all church-power is originally given unto the church essentially considered, which hath a double exercise;—first, in the call or choosing of officers; secondly, in their voluntary acting with them and under them in all duties of rule. 1. All authority in the church is committed by Christ unto the officers or rulers of it, as unto all acts and duties whereunto office-power is required; and, 2. Every individual person hath the liberty of his own judgment as unto his own consent or dissent in what he is himself concerned.

That this power, under the name of “the keys of the kingdom of heaven,” was originally granted unto the whole professing church of believers, and that it is utterly impossible it should reside in any other, who is subject unto death, or if so, be renewed upon any occasional intermission, is so fully proved by all Protestant writers against the Papists that it needs not on this occasion be again insisted on.

VI. These things have been spoken concerning the polity of the church in general, as it is taken objectively for the constitution of its state and the laws of its rule. We are in the next place to consider it subjectively, as it is a power or faculty of the minds of men unto whom the rule of the church is committed; and in this sense it is the wisdom or understanding of the officers of the church to exercise the government in it appointed by Jesus Christ, or to rule it according to his laws and constitutions. Or,

This wisdom is a spiritual gift, 1 Cor. xii. 8, whereby the officers of the church are enabled to make a due application of all the rules and laws of Christ, unto the edification of the church and all the members of it.

Unto the attaining of this wisdom are required,—1. Fervent prayer for it, James i. 5. 2. Diligent study of the Scripture, to find out and understand the rules given by Christ unto this purpose, Ezra vii. 10; 2 Tim. ii. 1, 15. 3. Humble waiting on God for the revelation of all that it is to be exercised about, Ezek. xliii. 11. 4. A conscientious exercise of the skill which they have received; talents traded with duly will increase. 5. A continual sense of the account
which is to be given of the discharge of this great trust, being called
to rule in the house of God, Heb. xiii. 17.

How much this wisdom hath been neglected in church-govern-
ment, yea, how much it is despised in the world, is evident unto all.
It is skill in the canon law, in the proceedings of vexatious courts,
with the learning, subtility, and arts, which are required thereunto,
that is looked on as the only skill to be exercised in the government
of the church. Without this a man is esteemed no way meet to
be employed in any part of the church-government; and according
as any do arrive unto a dexterity in this polity, they are esteemed
eminently useful. But these things belong not at all unto the go-
vernment of the church appointed by Christ; nor can any sober
man think in his conscience that so they do. What is the use of
this art and trade as unto political ends we inquire not. Nor is the
true wisdom required unto this end, with the means of attaining of
it, more despised, more neglected, by any sort of men in the world,
than by those whose pretences unto ecclesiastical rule and authority
would make it most necessary unto them.

Two things follow on the supposition laid down:—

1. That the wisdom intended is not promised unto all the mem-
ers of the church in general, nor are they required to seek for it
by the ways and means of attaining it before laid down, but respect
is had herein only unto the officers of the church. Hereon de-
pendeth the equity of the obedience of the people unto their rulers;
for wisdom for rule is peculiarly granted unto them, and their duty
it is to seek after it in a peculiar manner. Wherefore those who,
on every occasion, are ready to advance their own wisdom and un-
derstanding in the affairs and proceedings of the church against the
wisdom of the officers of it are proud and disorderly.

I speak not this to give any countenance unto the outcries of
some, that all sorts of men will suppose themselves wiser than their
rulers, and to know what belongs unto the government of the church
better than they; whereas the government which they exercise be-
longs not at all unto the rule of the church, determined and limited
in the Scripture, as the meanest Christian can easily discern; nor is
it pretended by themselves so to do; for they say that the Lord
Christ hath prescribed nothing herein, but left it unto the will and
wisdom of the church to order all things as they see necessary, which
church they are. Wherefore, if that will please them, it shall be
granted, that in skill for the management of ecclesiastical affairs
according to the canon law, with such other rules of the same kind
as they have framed, and in the legal proceedings of ecclesiastical
courts, as they are called, there are none of the people that are equal
unto them or will contend with them.

2. It hence also follows that those who are called unto rule in the
church of Christ should diligently endeavour the attaining of and increasing in this wisdom, giving evidence thereof on all occasions, that the church may safely acquiesce in their rule. But hereunto so many things do belong as cannot in this place be meetly treated of; somewhat that appertains to them shall afterward be considered.

CHAPTER IV.

The officers of the church.

The church is considered either as it is essential, with respect unto its nature and being, or as it is organical, with respect unto its order. The constituent causes and parts of the church, as unto its essence and being, are its institution, matter, and form, whereof we have treated.

Its order as it is organical is founded in that communication of power unto it from Christ which was insisted on in the foregoing chapter.

The organizing of a church is the placing or implanting in it those officers which the Lord Jesus Christ hath appointed to act and exercise his authority therein. For the rule and government of the church are the exertion of the authority of Christ in the hands of them unto whom it is committed, that is, the officers of it; not that all officers are called to rule, but that none are called to rule that are not so.

The officers of the church in general are of two sorts, "bishops and deacons," Phil. i. 1; and their work is distributed into "prophecy and ministry," Rom. xii. 6, 7.

The bishops or elders are of two sorts:—1. Such as have authority to teach and administer the sacraments, which is commonly called the power of order; and also of ruling, which is called a power of jurisdiction, corruptly: and, 2. Some have only power for rule; of which sort there are some in all the churches in the world.

Those of the first sort are distinguished into pastors and teachers.

The distinction between the elders themselves is not like that between elders and deacons, which is as unto the whole kind or nature of the office, but only with respect unto work and order, whereof we shall treat distinctly.

The first sort of officers in the church are bishops or elders, concerning whom there have been mighty contentions in the late ages of the church. The principles we have hitherto proceeded on discharge us from any especial interest or concernment in this controversy; for if there be no church of divine or apostolical constitution, none in
being in the second or third century, but only a particular congrega-
tion, the foundation of that contest, which is about pre-eminence and
power in the same person over many churches, falls to the ground.
Indeed, strife about power, superiority, and jurisdiction over one
another, amongst those who pretend to be ministers of the gospel, is
full of scandal. It started early in the church, was extinguished by
the Lord Christ in his apostles, rebuked by the apostles in all others,
Matt. xviii. 1-4, xxiii. 8-11; Luke xxii. 24-26; 1 Pet. v. 1-5; 2 John
9, 10; yet, through the pride, ambition, and avarice of men, it hath
grown to be the stain and shame of the church in most ages: for
neither the sense of the authority of Christ forbidding such ambitious
designings, nor the proposal of his own example in this particular
case, nor the experience of their own insufficiency for the least part
of the work of the gospel ministry, have been able to restrain the
minds of men from coveting after and contending for a prerogative
in church-power over others; for though this ambition, and all the
fruits or rewards of it, are laid under a severe interdict by our Lord
Jesus Christ, yet when men (like Achan) saw "the wedge of gold and
the goodly Babylonish garment" that they thought to be in power,
domination, and wealth, they coveted them and took them, to the
great disturbance of the church of God.
If men would but a little seriously consider what there is in that
care of souls, even of all them over whom they pretend church power,
rule, or jurisdiction, and what it is to give an account concerning
them before the judgment-seat of Christ, it may be it would abate of
their earnestness in contending for the enlargement of their cures.
The claim of episcopacy, as consisting in a rank of persons distinct
from the office of presbyters, is managed with great variety. It is
not agreed whether they are distinct in order above them, or only
as unto a certain degree among them of the same order. It is not
determined what doth constitute that pretended distinct order, nor
wherein that degree of pre-eminence in the same order doth con-
sist, nor what basis it stands upon. It is not agreed whether this
order of bishops hath any church-power appropriated unto it, so
as to be acted singly by themselves alone, without the concurrence
of the presbyters, or how far that concurrence is necessary in all
acts of church order or power. There are no bounds or limits of
the dioceses which they claim the rule in and over, as churches
whereunto they are peculiarly related, derived either from divine
institution or tradition, or general rules of reason respecting both
or either of them, or from the consideration of gifts and abilities,
or any thing else wherein church-order or edification is concerned.
Those who plead for diocesan episcopacy will not proceed any farther
but only that there is, and ought to be, a superiority in bishops over
presbyters in order or degree; but whether this must be over pres-
byters in one church only, or in many distinct churches,—whether it
must be such as not only hinders them utterly from the discharge
of any of the duties of the pastoral office towards the most of them
whom they esteem their flocks, and necessitates them unto a rule by
unscriptural church officers, laws, and power,—they suppose doth not
belong unto their cause, whereas, indeed, the weight and moment of
it doth lie in and depend on these things. Innumerable other un-
certainties, differences, and variances there are about this singular
episcopacy, which we are not at present concerned to inquire into,
nor shall I insist on any of those which have been already mentioned.

But yet, because it is necessary unto the clearing of the evangeli-
cal pastoral office, which is now under consideration, unto what hath
been pleaded before about the non-institution of any churches be-
yond particular congregations, which is utterly exclusive of all pre-
tences of the present episcopacy, I shall briefly, as in a diversion, add
the arguments which undeniably prove that in the whole New Testa-
ment bishops and presbyters, or elders, are every way the same per-
sons, in the same office, have the same function, without distinction
in order or degree; which also, as unto the Scripture, the most
learned advocates of prelacy begin to grant:—

1. The apostle describing what ought to be the qualifications of
presbyters or elders, gives this reason of it, Because a bishop must
be so: Tit. i. 5–9, "Ordain elders in every city, if any be blameless,"
etc., "for a bishop must be blameless." He that would prove of what
sort a presbyter, that is to be ordained so, ought to be, [and] gives this
reason for it, that "such a bishop ought to be," intends the same person
and office by presbyter and bishop, or there is no congruity of speech
or consequence of reason in what he asserts. To suppose that the
apostle doth not intend the same persons and the same office by
"presbyters" and "bishops," in the same place, is to destroy his
argument and render the context of his discourse unintelligible.
He that will say, "If you make a justice of peace or a constable, he
must be magnanimous, liberal, full of clemency and courage, for so
a king ought to be," will not be thought to argue very wisely; yet
such is the argument here, if by "elders" and "bishops" distinct
orders and offices are intended.

2. There were many bishops in one city, in one particular church:
Phil. i. 1, "To all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi,
with the bishops and deacons." That the church then at Philippi was
one particular church or congregation was proved before. But to have
many bishops in the same church, whereas the nature of the episco-
pacy pleaded for consists in the superiority of one over the presbyters
of many churches, is absolutely inconsistent. Such bishops whereof
there may be many in the same church, of the same order, equal in
power and dignity with respect unto office, will easily be granted;
but then they are presbyters as well as bishops. There will, I fear, be no end of this contest, because of the prejudices and interests of some; but that the identity of bishops and presbyters should be more plainly expressed can neither be expected nor desired.

3. The apostle, being at Miletus, sent to Ephesus for the elders of the church to come unto him; that is, the elders of the church at Ephesus, as hath been elsewhere undeniably demonstrated, Acts xx. 17, 18: unto these elders he says, “Take heed unto yourselves, and to all the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you bishops, to feed the church of God,” verse 28. If “elders” and “bishops” be not the same persons, having the same office, the same function, and the same duties, and the same names, it is impossible, so far as I understand, how it should be expressed: for these elders are they whom the Holy Ghost made bishops, they were many of them in the same church, their duty it was to attend unto the flock and to feed the church, which comprise all the duties, the whole function of elders and bishops; which must therefore be the same. This plain testimony can no way be evaded by pretences and conjectures, unwritten and uncertain; the only answer unto it is, “It was indeed so then, but it was otherwise afterward;” which some now betake themselves unto. But these elders were either elders only, and not bishops; or bishops only, and not elders; or the same persons were elders and bishops, as is plainly affirmed in the words. The last is that which we plead. If the first be asserted, then was there no bishop then at Ephesus, for these elders had the whole oversight of the flock; if the second, then were there no elders at all, which is no good exposition of those words, that “Paul called unto him the elders of the church.”

4. The apostle Peter writes unto the “elders” of the churches that they should “feed the flock,” ἵππομίατζετ, “taking the oversight,” or exercising the office and function of bishops over it; and that not as “lords,” but as “ensamples” of humility, obedience, and holiness, to the whole flock, 1 Pet. v. 1–3. Those on whom it is incumbent to feed the flock and to superintend it, as those who in the first place are accountable unto Jesus Christ, are bishops, and such as have no other bishop over them, unto whom this charge should be principally committed; but such, according unto this apostle, are the elders of the church: therefore these elders and bishops are the same. And such were the ἄγομενοι, the guides of the church at Jerusalem, whom the members of it were bound to obey, as those that did watch for and were to give an account of their souls, Heb. xiii. 17.

5. The substance of these and all other instances or testimonies of the same kind is this: Those whose names are the same, equally common and applicable unto them all, whose function is the same, whose qualifications and characters are the same, whose duties, account, and reward are the same, concerning whom there is in no one
place of Scripture the least mention of inequality, disparity, or preference in office among them, they are essentially and every way the same. That thus it is with the elders and bishops in the Scripture cannot modestly be denied.

I do acknowledge, that where a church is greatly increased, so as that there is a necessity of many elders in it for its instruction and rule, decency and order do require that one of them do, in the management of all church-affairs, preside, to guide and direct the way and manner thereof: so the presbyters at Alexandria did choose one from among themselves that should have the pre-eminence of a president among them. Whether the person that is so to preside be directed unto by being first converted, or first ordained, or on the account of age, or of gifts and abilities, whether he continue for a season only, and then another be deputed unto the same work, or for his life, are things in themselves indifferent, to be determined according unto the general rules of reason and order, with respect unto the edification of the church.

I shall never oppose this order, but rather desire to see it in practice,—namely, that particular churches were of such an extent as necessarily to require many elders, both teaching and ruling, for their instruction and government; for the better observation of order and decency in the public assemblies; for the fuller representation of the authority committed by Jesus Christ unto the officers of his church; for the occasional instruction of the members in lesser assemblies, which, as unto some ends, may be stated also; with the due attendance unto all other means of edification, as watching, inspecting, warning, admonishing, exhorting, and the like: and that among these elders one should be chosen by themselves, with the consent of the church, not into a new order, not into a degree of authority above his brethren, but only unto his part of the common work in a peculiar manner, which requires some kind of precedency. Hereby no new officer, no new order of officers, no new degree of power or authority, is constituted in the church; only the work and duty of it is cast into such an order as the very light of nature doth require.

But there is not any intimation in the Scripture of the least imparity or inequality, in order, degree, or authority, among officers of the same sort, whether extraordinary or ordinary. The apostles were all equal; so were the evangelists, so were elders or bishops, and so were deacons also. The Scripture knows no more of an archbishop, such as all diocesan bishops are, nor of an archdeacon, than of an arch-apostle, or of an archevangelist, or an archprophet. Howbeit it is evident that in all their assemblies they had one who did preside in the manner before described; which seems, among the apostles, to have been the prerogative of Peter.

The brethren also of the church may be so multiplied as that the
constant meeting of them all in one place may not be absolutely best for their edification; howbeit, that on all the solemn occasions of the church whereunto their consent was necessary, they did of old, and ought still, to meet in the same place, for advice, consultation, and consent, was proved before. This is so fully expressed and exemplified in the two great churches of Jerusalem and Antioch, Acts xv., that it cannot be gainsaid. When Paul and Barnabas, sent by the "brethren" or church at Antioch, verses 1–8, were come to Jerusalem, they were received by "the church," as the brethren are called, in distinction from the "apostles and elders," verse 4. So when the apostles and elders assembled to consider of the case proposed unto them, the whole "multitude" of the church, that is, the brethren, assembled with them, verses 6, 12; neither were they mute persons, mere auditors and spectators in the assembly, but they concurred both in the debate and determination of the question, insomuch that they are expressly joined with the apostles and elders in the advice given, verses 22, 23. And when Paul and Barnabas returned unto Antioch, the "multitude," unto whom the letter of the church at Jerusalem was directed, came together about it, verses 23, 30. Unless this be observed, the primitive church-state is overthrown. But I shall return from this digression.

The first officer or elder of the church is the pastor. A pastor is the elder that feeds and rules the flock, 1 Pet. v. 2; that is, who is its teacher and its bishop: Ποιμάνατε, ἐπισκόποιντες, "Feed, taking the oversight."

It is not my present design or work to give a full account of the qualifications required in persons to be called unto this office, nor of their duty and work, with the qualities or virtues to be exercised therein; it would require a large discourse to handle them practically, and it hath been done by others. It were to be wished that what is of this kind expressed in the rule, and which the nature of the office doth indispensably require, were more exemplified in practice than it is. But some things relating unto this officer and his office, that are needful to be well stated, I shall treat concerning.

The name of a pastor or shepherd is metaphorical. It is a denomination suited unto his work, denoting the same office and person with a bishop or elder, spoken of absolutely, without limitation unto either teaching or ruling; and it seems to be used or applied unto this office because it is more comprehensive of and instructive in all the duties that belong unto it than any other name whatever, nay, than all of them put together. The grounds and reasons of this metaphor, or whence the church is called a flock, and whence God termeth himself the shepherd of the flock; whence the sheep of this flock are committed unto Christ, whereon he becomes "the good shepherd that lays down his life for the sheep," and the prince of
shepherds; what is the interest of men in a participation of this office, and what their duty thereon,—are things well worth the consideration of them who are called unto it. "Hirelings," yea, "wolves" and "dumb dogs," do in many places take on themselves to be shepherds of the flock, by whom it is devoured and destroyed, Acts xx. 18, 19, etc.; 1 Pet. v. 2–4; Caut. i. 7; Jer. xiii. 17, xxiii. 2; Ezek. xxxiv. 3; Gen. xlix. 24; Ps. xxiii. 1, lxxx. 1; John x. 11, 14–16; Heb. xiii. 20; 1 Pet. ii. 25, v. 4.

Whereas, therefore, this name or appellation is taken from and includes in it love, care, tenderness, watchfulness, in all the duties of going before, preserving; feeding, defending the flock, the sheep and the lambs, the strong, the weak, and the diseased, with accountability, as servants, unto the chief Shepherd, it was generally disused in the church, and those of bishops or overseers, guides, presidents, elders, which seem to include more of honour and authority, were retained in common use; though one of them at last, namely, that of bishops, with some elating compositions and adjuncts of power, obtained the pre-eminence. Out of the corruption of these compositions and additions, in archbishops, metropolitans, patriarchs, and the like, brake forth the cockatrice of the church,—that is, the pope.

But this name is by the Holy Ghost appropriated unto the principal ministers of Christ in his church, Eph. iv. 11; and under that name they were promised unto the church of old, Jer. iii. 15. And the work of these pastors is to feed the flock committed to their charge, as it is constantly required of them, Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 2.

Of pastoral feeding there are two parts:—1. Teaching or instruction; 2. Rule or discipline. Unto these two heads may all the acts and duties of a shepherd toward his flock be reduced; and both are intended in the term of "feeding," 1 Chron. xi. 2, xvii. 6; Jer. xxiii. 2; Mic. v. 4, vii. 14; Zech. xi. 7; Acts xx. 28; John xxi. 15–17; 1 Pet. v. 2, etc. Wherefore he who is the pastor is the bishop, the elder, the teacher of the church.

These works of teaching and ruling may be distinct in several officers, namely, teachers and rulers; but to divide them in the same office of pastors, that some pastors should feed by teaching only, but have no right to rule by virtue of their office, and some should attend in exercise unto rule only, not esteeming themselves obliged to labour continually in feeding the flock, is almost to overthrow this office of Christ's designation, and to set up two in the room of it, of men's own projection.

Of the call of men unto this office so many things have been spoken and written by others at large that I shall only insist, and that very briefly, on some things which are either of the most important consideration or have been omitted by others; as,—
1. Unto the *call* of any person unto this office of a pastor in the church there are certain *qualifications* previously required in him, disposing and making him fit for that office. The outward call is an act of the church, as we shall show immediately; but therein is required an obediential acting of him also who is called. Neither of these can be regular, neither can the church act according to rule and order, nor the person called act in such a due obedience, unless there are in him some previous indications of the mind of God, designing the person to be called by such qualifications as may render him meet and able for the discharge of his office and work; for ordinary vocation is not a collation of gracious spiritual abilities, suiting and making men meet for the pastoral office, but it is the communication of right and power for the regular use and exercise of gifts and abilities received antecedently unto that call, unto the edification of the church, wherein the office itself doth consist. And if we would know what these qualifications and endowments are, for the substance of them, we may learn them in their great example and pattern, our Lord Jesus Christ himself. Our Lord Jesus Christ, being the good Shepherd, whose the sheep are, the Shepherd and Bishop of our souls, the chief Shepherd, did design, in the undertaking and exercise of his pastoral office, to give a type and example unto all those who are to be called unto the same office under him; and if there be not a conformity unto him herein, no man can assure his own conscience or the church of God that he is or can be lawfully called unto this office.

The qualifications of Christ unto, and the gracious qualities of his mind and soul in, the discharge of his pastoral office, may be referred unto five heads:—

(1) That *furniture with spiritual gifts and abilities* by the communication of the Holy Ghost unto him in an unmeasurable fulness, whereby he was fitted for the discharge of his office. This is expressed with respect unto his undertaking of it, Isa. xi. 2, 3, lixi. 1–3; Luke iv. 14. Herein was he “anointed with the oil of gladness above his fellows,” Heb. i. 9. But this unction of the Spirit is, in a certain measure, required in all who are called, or to be called, unto the pastoral office, Eph. iv. 7. That there are spiritual powers, gifts, and abilities, required unto the gospel ministry, I have at large declared in another treatise, as also what they are; and where there are none of those spiritual abilities which are necessary unto the edification of the church in the administration of gospel ordinances, as in prayer, preaching, and the like, no outward call or order can constitute any man an evangelical pastor. As unto particular persons, I will not contend as unto an absolute nullity in the office by reason of their deficiency in spiritual gifts, unless it be gross, and such as renders them utterly useless unto the edification of the church. I only say,
that no man can in an orderly way and manner be called or set apart unto this office in whom there are not some indications of God's designation of him thereunto by his furniture with spiritual gifts, of knowledge, wisdom, understanding, and utterance for prayer and preaching, with other ministerial duties, in some competent measure.

(2.) Compassion and love to the flock were gloriously eminent in this "great Shepherd of the sheep." After other evidences hereof, he gave them that signal confirmation in laying down his life for them. This testimony of his love he insists upon himself, John x. And herein also his example ought to lie continually before the eyes of them who are called unto the pastoral office. Their entrance should be accompanied with love to the souls of men; and if the discharge of their office be not animated with love unto their flocks, wolves, or hirelings, or thieves, they may be, but shepherds they are not. Neither is the glory of the gospel ministry more lost or defaced in any thing, or by any means, than by the evidence that is given among the most of an inconformity unto Jesus Christ in their love unto the flock. Alas! it is scarce once thought of amongst the most of them who, in various degrees, take upon them the pastoral office. Where are the fruits of it? what evidence is given of it in any kind? It is well if some, instead of laying down their lives for them, do not by innumerable ways destroy their souls.

(3.) There is and was in this great Shepherd a continual watchfulness over the whole flock; to keep it, to preserve it, to feed, to lead, and cherish it, to purify and cleanse it, until it be presented unspotted unto God. He doth never slumber nor sleep; he watereth his vineyard every moment; he keeps it night and day, that none may hurt it; he loseth nothing of what is committed to him. See Isa. xl. 11. I speak not distinctly of previous qualifications unto an outward call only, but with a mixture of those qualities and duties which are required in the discharge of this office; and herein also is the Lord Christ to be our example. And hereunto do belong,—[1.] Constant prayer for the flock; [2.] Diligence in the dispensation of the word with wisdom, as unto times, seasons, the state of the flock in general, their light, knowledge, ways, walking, ignorance, temptations, trials, defections, weaknesses of all sorts, growth, and decays, etc.; [3.] Personal admonition, exhortation, consolation, instruction, as their particular cases do require; [4.] All with a design to keep them from evil, and to present them without blame before Christ Jesus at the great day. But these and things of the like nature presenting themselves with some earnestness unto my mind, I shall at present discharge myself of the thoughts of them, hoping for a more convenient place and season to give them a larger treatment; and somewhat yet further shall be spoken of them in the next chapter.
(4.) Zeal for the glory of God, in his whole ministry and in all the ends of it, had its continual residence in the holy soul of the great Shepherd. Hence it is declared in an expression intimating that it was inexpressible: "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up," John ii. 17. This also must accompany the discharge of the pastoral office, or it will find no acceptance with him; and the want of it is one of those things which hath filled the world with a dead, faithless, fruitless ministry.

(5.) As he was absolutely in himself "holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners," so a conformity unto him in these things, and that in some degree of eminency above others, is required in them who are called unto this office.

2. Again; none can or may take this office upon him, or discharge the duties of it, which are peculiarly its own, with authority, but he who is called and set apart thereunto according to the mind of Jesus Christ. The continuation of all church order and power, of the regular administration of all sacred ordinances, yea, of the very being of the church as it is organical, depends on this assertion. Some deny the continuation of the office itself, and of those duties which are peculiar unto it, as the administration of the sacraments; some judge that persons neither called nor set apart unto this office may discharge all the duties and the whole work of it; some, that a temporary delegation of power unto any by the church is all the warranty necessary for the undertaking and discharge of this office. Many have been the contests about these things, occasioned by the ignorance and disorderly affections of some persons. I shall briefly represent the truth herein, with the grounds of it, and proceed to the consideration of the call itself, which is so necessary:—

(1.) Christ himself, in his own person and by his own authority, was the author of this office. He gave it, appointed it, erected it in the church, by virtue of his sovereign power and authority, Eph. iv. 11, 12; 1 Cor. xii. 28. As he gave, appointed, ordained, an extraordinary office of apostleship, so he ordained, appointed, and gave, the ordinary office of pastorship or teaching. They have both the same divine original.

(2.) He appointed this office for continuance, or to abide in the church unto the consummation of all things, Eph. iv. 13, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20; and therefore he took order by his apostles that, for the continuation of this office, pastors, elders, or bishops, should be called and ordained unto the care and discharge of it in all churches; which was done by them accordingly, Acts xiv. 22, 23, xx. 28, 1 Tim. iii. 1–7, Tit. i. 5–9: wherein he gave rule unto all churches unto the end of the world, and prescribed them their duty.

(3.) On this office and the discharge of it he hath laid the whole weight of the order, rule, and edification of his church, in his name
and by virtue of his authority, Acts xx. 28; Col. iv. 17; 1 Tim. iii. 15; 1 Pet. v. 1–4; Rev. ii. 1–5, etc. Hereon a double necessity of the continuation of this office doth depend,—first, That which ariseth from the precept or command of it, which made it necessary to the church on the account of the obedience which it owes to Christ; and, secondly, From its being the principal ordinary means of all the ends of Christ in and towards his church. Wherefore, although he can himself feed his church in the wilderness, when it is deprived of all outward instituted means of edification, yet where this office fails through its neglect, there is nothing but disorder, confusion, and destruction, will ensue thereon; no promise of feeding or edification.

(4.) The Lord Christ hath given commands unto the church for obedience unto those who enjoy and exercise this office among them. Now, all these commands are needless and superfluous, nor can any obedience be yielded unto the Lord Christ in their observance, unless there be a continuation of this office. And the church loseth as much in grace and privilege as it loseth in commands; for in obedience unto the commands of Christ doth grace in its exercise consist, 1 Tim. v. 17; Heb. xiii. 7, 17.

(5.) This office is accompanied with power and authority, which none can take or assume to themselves. All power and authority, whether in things spiritual or temporal, which is not either founded in the law of nature or collated by divine ordination, is usurpation and tyranny; no man can of himself take either sword. To invade an office which includes power and authority over others is to disturb all right, natural, divine, and civil. That such an authority is included in this office is evident,—[1.] From the names ascribed unto them in whom it is vested; as pastors, bishops, elders, rulers, all of them requiring it. [2.] From the work prescribed unto them, which is feeding by rule and teaching. [3.] From the execution of church-power in discipline, or the exercise of the keys of the kingdom of heaven committed unto them. [4.] From the commands given for obedience unto them, which respect authority. [5.] From their appointment to be the means and instruments of exerting the authority of Christ in the church, which can be done no other way.

(6.) Christ hath appointed a standing rule of the calling of men unto this office, as we shall see immediately; but if men may enter upon it and discharge it without any such call, that rule, with the way of the call prescribed, is altogether in vain; and there can be no greater affront unto the authority of Christ in his church than to act in it in neglect of or in opposition unto the rule that he hath appointed for the exercise of power in it.

(7.) There is an accountable trust committed unto those who undertake this office. The whole flock, the ministry itself, the truths
of the gospel, as to the preservation of them, all are committed to them, Col. iv. 17; 1 Tim. vi. 20; 2 Tim. ii. 2, 16, 23; Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 1—4; Heb. xiii. 17, "They that must give account." Nothing can be more wicked or foolish than for a man to intrude himself into a trust which is not committed unto him. They are branded as profligately wicked who attempt any such thing among men, which cannot be done without falsification; and what shall he be esteemed who intrudes himself into the highest trust that any creature is capable of in the name of Christ, and takes upon him to give an account of its discharge at the last day, without any divine call or warranty?

(8.) There are, unto the discharge of this office, especial promises granted and annexed of present assistances and future eternal rewards, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20; 1 Pet. v. 4. Either these promises belong unto them who take this office on themselves without any call, or they do not. If they do not, then have they neither any especial assistance in their work nor can expect any reward of their labours. If it be said they have an interest in them, then the worst of men may obtain the benefit of divine promises without any divine designation.

(9.) The general force of the rule, Heb. v. 4, includes a prohibition of undertaking any sacred office without a divine call; and so the instances of such prohibitions under the old testament, as unto the duties annexed unto an office, as in the case of Uzziah invading the priesthood, 2 Chron. xxvi. 16—21; or of taking a ministerial office without call or mission, as Jer. xxvii. 9, 10, 14, 15, having respect unto the order of God's institutions, may be pleaded in this case.

(10.) Whoever, therefore, takes upon him the pastoral office without a lawful outward call, doth take unto himself power and authority without any divine warranty, which is a foundation of all disorder and confusion; interests himself in an accountable trust no way committed unto him; hath no promise of assistance in or reward for his work, but engageth in that which is destructive of all church-order, and consequently of the very being of the church itself.

(11.) Yet there are three things that are to be annexed unto this assertion, by way of limitation; as,—[1.] Many things performed by virtue of office, in a way of authority, may be performed by others not called to office, in a way of charity. Such are the moral duties of exhorting, admonishing, comforting, instructing, and praying with and for one another. [2.] Spiritual gifts may be exercised unto the edification of others without office-power, where order and opportunity do require it. But the constant exercise of spiritual gifts in preaching, with a refusal of undertaking a ministerial office, or without design so to do upon a lawful call, cannot be approved. [3.] The rules proposed concern only ordinary cases, and the ordinary state
of the church; extraordinary cases are accompanied with a warranty in themselves for extraordinary actings and duties.

(12.) The call of persons unto the pastoral office is an act and duty of the church. It is not an act of the political magistrate, not of the pope, not of any single prelate, but of the whole church, unto whom the Lord Christ hath committed the keys of the kingdom of heaven. And, indeed, although there be great differences about the nature and manner of the call of men unto this office, yet none who understands aught of these things can deny but that it is an act and duty of the church, which the church alone is empowered by Christ to put forth and exert. But this will more fully appear in the consideration of the nature and manner of this call of men unto the pastoral office, and the actings of the church therein.

The call of persons unto the pastoral office in the church consists of two parts,—first, Election; secondly, Ordination, as it is commonly called, or sacred separation by fasting and prayer. As unto the former, four things must be inquired into:—I. What is previous unto it, or preparatory for it; II. Wherein it doth consist; III. Its necessity, or the demonstration of its truth and institution; IV. What influence it hath into the communication of pastoral office-power unto a pastor so chosen.

I. That which is previous unto it is the meetness of the person for his office and work that is to be chosen. It can never be the duty of the church to call or choose an unmeet, an unqualified, an unprepared person unto this office. No pretended necessity, no outward motives, can enable or warrant it so to do; nor can it by any outward act, whatever the rule or solemnity of it be, communicate ministerial authority unto persons utterly unqualified for and incapable of the discharge of the pastoral office according to the rule of the Scripture. And this has been one great means of debasing the ministry and of almost ruining the church itself, either by the neglect of those who suppose themselves intrusted with the whole power of ordination, or by impositions on them by secular power and patrons of livings, as they are called, with the stated regulation of their proceedings herein by a defective law, whence there hath not been a due regard unto the antecedent preparatory qualifications of those who are called unto the ministry.

Two ways is the meetness of any one made known and to be judged of:—I. By an evidence given of the qualifications in him before mentioned. The church is not to call or choose any one to office who is not known unto them, of whose frame of spirit and walking they have not had some experience; not a novice, or one lately come unto them. He must be one who by his ways and walking hath obtained a good report, even among them that are without, so far as he is known, unless they be enemies or scoffers;
and one that hath in some good measure evidenced his faith, love, and obedience unto Jesus Christ in the church. This is the chief trust that the Lord Christ hath committed unto his churches; and if they are negligent herein, or if at all adventures they will impose an officer in his house upon him without satisfaction of his meetness upon due inquiry, it is a great dishonour unto him and provocation of him. Herein principally are churches made the overseers of their own purity and edification. To deny them an ability of a right judgment herein, or a liberty for the use and exercise of it, is error and tyranny. But that flock which Christ purchased and purified with his own blood is thought by some to be little better than a herd of brute beasts. Where there is a defect of this personal knowledge, from want of opportunity, it may be supplied by testimonies of unquestionable authority. 2. By a trial of his gifts for edification. These are those spiritual endowments which the Lord Christ grants and the Holy Spirit works in the minds of men, for this very end that the church may be profited by them, 1 Cor. xii. 7–11. And we must at present take it for granted that every true church of Christ, that is so in the matter and form of it, is able to judge in some competent measure what gifts of men are suited unto their own edification. But yet, in making a judgment hereof, one directive means is the advice of other elders and churches; which they are obliged to make use of by virtue of the communion of churches, and for the avoidance of offence in their walk in that communion.

II. As to the nature of this election, call, or choice of a person known, tried, and judged meetly qualified for the pastoral office, it is an act of the whole church; that is, of the fraternity with their elders, if they have any; for a pastor may be chosen unto a church which hath other teachers, elders, or officers, already instated in it. In this case their concurrence in the choice intended is necessary, by way of common suffrage, not of authority or office-power; for election is not an act of authority, but of liberty and power, wherein the whole church in the fraternity is equal. If there be no officers stated in the church before, as it was with the churches in the primitive times, on the first ordination of elders among them, this election belongs unto the fraternity.

III. That, therefore, which we have now to prove is this, that it is the mind and will of Jesus Christ that meet persons should be called unto the pastoral office (or any other office in the church) by the election and choice of the church itself whereunto they are called, antecedently unto a sacred, solemn separation unto their respective offices; for under the old testament there were three ways whereby men were called unto office in the church:—1. They were so extraordinarily and immediately, by the nomination and designation of God himself: so Aaron was called unto the priesthood; and others
afterward, as Samuel, to be prophets. 2. By a law of carnal

generation: so all the priests of the posterity of Aaron succeeded

into the office of the priesthood without any other call. 3. By the

choice of the people, which was the call of all the ordinary elders

and rulers of the church: Deut. i. 13, כהן ונה, "Give to yourselves."

It was required of the people that they should in the first place

make a judgment on their qualifications for the office whereunto

they were called. Men known unto them for wise, understanding,

righteous, walking in the fear of God, they were to look out, and

then to present them unto Moses, for their separation unto office;

which is election. It is true that, Exod. xviii. 25, it is said that Moses

chose the elders; but it is frequent in the Scripture that where

any thing is done by many, where one is chief, that is ascribed in-

differently either to the many or to the chief director. So is it said,

"Israel sent messengers," Num. xxi. 21. Moses, speaking of the


xix. 19, "They made peace with David and became his servants;"

which is, 2 Sam. x. 19, "They made peace with Israel and served

them." See also 2 Kings xi. 12, with 2 Chron. xxiii. 11; as also

1 Chron. xvi. 1, with 2 Sam. vi. 17; and the same may be observed

in other places. Wherefore the people chose these elders under the

conduct and guidance of Moses: which directs us unto the right

interpretation of Acts xiv. 23, whereof we shall speak immediately.

The first of these ways was repeated in the foundation of the evan-

gelical church. Christ himself was called unto his office by the

Father, through theunction of the Spirit, Isa. lxi. 1-3, Heb. v. 5;

and he himself called the apostles and evangelists, in whom that call

ceased. The second, ordinary way, by the privilege of natural gener-

ation of the stock of the priests, was utterly abolished. The third way

only remained for the ordinary continuation of the church,—namely,

by the choice and election of the church itself, with solemn separa-

tion and dedication by officers extraordinary or ordinary.

The first instance of the choice of a church-officer had a mixture

in it of the first and last ways, in the case of Matthias. As he was

able to be a church-officer, he had the choice and consent of the

church; as he was to be an apostle or an extraordinary officer, there

was an immediate divine disposition of him into his office;—the latter,

to give him apostolical authority; the former, to make him a prece-

dent of the future actings of the church in the call of their officers.

I say, this being the first example and pattern of the calling of

any person unto office in the Christian church-state, wherein there

was an interposition of the ordinary actings of men, is established as

a rule and precedent, not to be changed, altered, or departed from, in

any age of the church whatever. It is so as unto what was of com-

mon right and equity, which belonged unto the whole church. And
I cannot but wonder how men durst ever reject and disannul this divine example and rule. It will not avail them to say that it is only a matter of fact, and not a precept or institution, that is recorded; for,—1. It is a fact left on record in the holy Scripture for our instruction and direction. 2. It is an example of the apostles and the whole church proposed unto us; which, in all things not otherwise determined, hath the force of an institution. 3. If there were no more in it but this, that we have a matter of common right determined and applied by the wisdom of the apostles and the entire church of believers at that time in the world, it were an impiety to depart from it, unless in case of the utmost necessity.

Whereas what is here recorded was in the call of an apostle, it strengthens the argument which hence we plead; for if in the extraordinary call of an apostle it was the mind of Christ that the fraternity or multitude should have the liberty of their suffrage, how much more is it certainly his mind, that in the ordinary call of their own peculiar officers, in whom, under him, the concernment is their own only, this right should be continued unto them!

The order of the proceeding of the church herein is distinctly declared; for,—1. The number of the church at that time,—that is, of the men,—was about an hundred and twenty, Acts i. 15. 2. They were assembled all together in one place, so as that Peter stood up in the midst of them, verse 15. 3. Peter, in the name of the rest of the apostles, declares unto them the necessity of choosing one to be substituted in the room of Judas, verses 16–22. 4. He limits the choice of him unto the especial qualification of being a meet witness of the resurrection of Christ, or unto those who constantly accompanied him with themselves from the baptism of John; that is, from his being baptized by him, whereon he began his public ministry. 5. Among these they were left at their liberty to nominate any two, who were to be left unto the lot for a determination whether of them God designed unto the office. 6. Hereon the whole multitude ἔστησαν δώ, "appointed two;" that is, the ἄνδρες ἄδελφοι, the "men and brethren," unto whom Peter spoke, verse 16, did so. 7. The same persons, to promote the work, "prayed and gave forth their lots," verses 24–26. 8. Συγκαταφησίζον Ματθαίον,—Matthias was, by the common suffrage of the whole church, reckoned unto the number of the apostles.

I say not that these things were done by the disciples in distinction from Peter and the rest of the apostles, but in conjunction with them. Peter did nothing without them, nor did they any thing without him. The exceptions of Bellarmine and others against this testimony, that it was a grant and a condescension in Peter, and not a declaration of the right of the church, that it was an extraordinary case, that the determination of the whole was by lot, are of no validity.
The pretended concession of Peter is a figment; the case was so extraordinary as to include in it all ordinary cases, for the substance of them; and although the ultimate determination of the individual person (which was necessary unto his apostleship) was immediately divine, by lot, yet here is all granted unto the people, in their choosing and appointing two, in their praying, in their casting lots, in their voluntary approbatory suffrage, that is desired.

This blessed example, given us by the wisdom of the apostles, yea, of the Spirit of God in them, being eminently suited unto the nature of the thing itself, as we shall see immediately, and compliant with all other directions and apostolical examples in the like case, is rather to be followed than the practice of some degenerate churches, who, to cover the turpitude of their acting in deserting this example and rule, do make use of a mock show and pretence of that which really they deny, reject, and oppose.

The second example we have of the practice of the apostles in this case, whereby the preceding rule is confirmed, is given us Acts vi., in the election of the deacons. Had there ensued, after the choice of Matthias, an instance of a diverse practice, by an exclusion of the consent of the people, the former might have been evaded as that which was absolutely extraordinary, and not obliging unto the church: but this was the very next instance of the call of any church-officer, and it was the first appointment of any ordinary officers in the Christian church; for, it falling out in the very year of Christ's ascension, there is no mention of any ordinary elders, distinct from the apostles, ordained in that church; for all the apostles themselves yet abiding there for the most part of this time, making only some occasional excursions unto other places, were able to take care of the rule of the church and the preaching of the word. They are, indeed, mentioned as those who were well known in the church not long afterward, chap. xi. 30; but the first instance of the call of ordinary teaching elders or pastors is not recorded. That of deacons is so by reason of the occasion of it; and we may observe concerning it unto our purpose,—

1. That the institution of the office itself was of apostolical authority, and that fulness of church-power wherewith they were furnished by Jesus Christ.

2. That they did not exert that authority but upon such reasons of it as were satisfactory to the church; which they declare, chap. vi. 2.

3. That the action is ascribed to the twelve in general, without naming any person who spake for the rest; which renders the pretence of the Romanists from the former place, where Peter is said to have spoken unto the disciples,—whereon they would have the actions of the church which ensued thereon to have been by his concession and grant, not of their own right,—altogether vain; for the rest of the apostles were as much interested and concerned in what
was then spoken by Peter as they were at this time, when the whole
is ascribed unto the twelve.

4. That the church was greatly multiplied [at] that time, on the
account of the conversion unto the faith recorded in the foregoing
chapter. It is probable, indeed, that many, yea, the most of them,
were returned unto their own habitations; for the next year there
were churches in all Judea, Galilee, and Samaria, chap. ix. 31. And
Peter went about "throughout all quarters," to visit the saints that
dwelt in them, verse 32, of whose conversion we read nothing but
that which fell out at Jerusalem at Pentecost; but a great multitude
they were, chap. vi. 1, 2.

5. This whole multitude of the church,—that is, the "brethren,"
verse 3,—assembled in one place, being congregated by the apostles,
verse 2; who would not ordain any thing, wherein they were con-
cerned, without their own consent.

6. They judged on the whole matter proposed unto them, and
gave their approbation thereof, before they entered upon the practice
of it: Verse 5, "The saying pleased the whole multitude."

7. The qualifications of the persons to be chosen unto the office
intended are declared by the apostles: Verse 3,—"Of honest report,
full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom."

8. These qualities the multitude were to judge upon; and so, abso-
lutely, of the meetness of any for this office.

9. The choice is wholly committed and left unto them by the
apostles, as that which of right did belong unto them, "Look ye
out among you;" which they made use of, choosing them unto the
office by their common suffrage, verse 5.

10. "Having thus chosen them, they presented them as their chosen
officers unto the apostles, to be by them set apart unto the exercise
of their office by prayer and imposition of hands, verse 6.

It is impossible there should be a more evident, convincing in-
stance and example of the free choice of ecclesiastical officers by the
multitude or fraternity of the church than is given us herein. Nor
was there any ground or reason why this order and process should
be observed, why the apostles would not themselves nominate and
appoint persons whom they saw and knew meet for this office to
receive it, but that it was the right and liberty of the people, accord-
ing to the mind of Christ, to choose their own officers, which they
would not abridge nor infringe.

So was it then, ὧτῳ καὶ ἐν γίνεσθαι ἰδεῖ, saith Chrysostom on the
place, "and so it ought now to be;" but the usage began then to de-
cline. It were well if some would consider how the apostles at that
time treated that multitude of the people, which is so much now de-
spised, and utterly excluded from all concern in church affairs but
what consists in servile subjection; but they have, in this pattern and
precedent for the future ordering of the calling of meet persons to office in the church, their interest, power, and privilege secured unto them, so as that they can never justly be deprived of it. And if there were nothing herein but only a record of the wisdom of the apostles in managing church affairs, it is marvellous to me that any who would be thought to succeed them in any part of their trust and office should dare to depart from the example set before them by the Holy Ghost in them, preferring their own ways and inventions above it. I shall ever judge that there is more safety in a strict adherence unto this apostolical practice and example than in a compliance with all the canons of councils or churches afterward.

The only objection usually insisted on,—that is, by Bellarmine and those that follow him,—is, "That this being the election of deacons to manage the alms of the church, that is, somewhat of their temporal, nothing can thence be concluded unto the right or way of calling bishops, pastors, or elders, who are to take care of the souls of the people. They may, indeed, be able to judge of the fitness of them who are to be intrusted with their purses, or what they are willing to give out of them; but it doth not thence follow that they are able to judge of the fitness of those who are to be their spiritual pastors, nor to have the choice of them."

Nothing can be weaker than this pretence or evasion; for,—(1.) The question is concerning the calling of persons unto office in the church in general, whereof we have here a rule whereunto no exception is any way entered. (2.) This cannot be fairly pleaded by them who appoint deacons to preach, baptize, and officiate publicly in all holy things, excepting only the administration of the eucharist. (3.) If the people are meet and able to judge of them who are of "honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom," which is here required of them, they are able to judge who are meet to be their pastors. (4.) The argument holds strongly on the other side, namely, that if it be right and equal, if it be of divine appointment and apostolical practice, that the people should choose those who were to collect and distribute their charitable benevolence because of their concernment therein, much more are they to enjoy the same liberty, right, and privilege, in the choice of their pastors, unto whom they commit the care of their souls, and submit themselves unto their authority in the Lord.

Thirdly. Accordingly they did use the same liberty in the choice of their elders: Acts xiv. 23, Χειροτονήσαντες αὐτοὺς πρεσβυτέρους κατ' ἐκκλησίαν, προσευχόμενοι μετὰ προσευχῆς,—that is, say Erasmus, Vatablus, Beza, all our old English translations, appointing, ordaining, creating elders by election, or the suffrage of the disciples, having prayed with fasting. The whole order of the sacred separation of persons qualified unto the office of the ministry,—that is, to be bishops, elders, or pas-
tors,—is here clearly represented; for,—1. They were *chosen by the people*, the apostles who were present, namely, Paul and Barnabas, presiding in the action, directing of it and confirming that by their consent with them. 2. *A time of prayer and fasting* was appointed for the action or discharge of the duty of the church herein. 3. When they were so *chosen*, the apostles present *solemnly prayed*, whereby their ordination was completed. And those who would have *χειροτονία* here mentioned to be *χειροποίησις*, or an authoritative imposition of hands, wherein this ordination did consist, do say there is an *υστερολογία* in the words,—that is, they feign a disorder in them to serve their own hypothesis; for they suppose that their complete ordination was effected before there was any prayer with fasting, for by imposition of hands in their judgment ordination is completed: so Bellarmine and a Lapide on the place, with those that follow them. But first to pervert the true signification of the word, and then to give countenance unto that wresting of it by assigning a disorder unto the words of the whole sentence, and that such a disorder as makes, in their judgment, a false representation of the matter of fact related, is a way of the interpretation of Scripture which will serve any turn. 4. This was done in *every church*, or in every congregation, as Tindal renders the word, namely, in all the particular congregations that were gathered in those parts; for that collection and constitution did always precede the election and ordination of their officers, as is plain in this place, as also Tit. i. 5. So far is it from truth that the being of churches dependeth on the successive ordination of their officers, that the church, essentially considered, is always antecedent unto their being and call.

But because it is some men’s interest to entangle things plain and clear enough in themselves, I shall consider the objection unto this reddition of the words. The whole of it lies against the signification, use, and application of *χειροτονήσωτες*. Now, although we do not here argue merely from the signification of the word, but from the representation of the matter of fact made in the context, yet I shall observe some things sufficient for the removal of that objection; as,—

1. The native signification of *χειροτονέω*, by virtue of its composition, is to “lift up” or “stretch forth the hands,” or a hand. And hereunto the LXX. have respect, Isa. Iviii. 9, where they render ἐπέτεινεν, “the putting forth of the finger,” which is used in an ill sense, by *χειροτονία*. *Χειροτονέω* is the same with τὰς χεῖρας αἴρειν, nor is it ever used in any other signification.

2. The first constant use of it in things political or civil, and so consequently ecclesiastical, is to choose, elect, design, or create any person an officer, magistrate, or ruler, by suffrage or common consent of those concerned. And this was usually done with making bare the hand and arm with lifting up, as Aristophanes witnesseth:—
He is a great stranger unto these things who knoweth not that among the Greeks, especially the Athenians, from whom the use of this word is borrowed or taken, χειροτονια was an act ὅλης τῆς ἐκκλησίας, "of the whole assembly" of the people in the choice of their officers and magistrates. χειροτονιώ is "by common suffrage to decree and determine of any thing, law, or order;" and when applied unto persons, it signifies their choice and designation to office. So is it used in the first sense by Demosthenes, Orat. De Corona, οὗ...Ο δήμος τάς ἓμας γνώμας περὶ σωτηρίας τῆς πόλεως ἐχειρότονι,—"The people confirmed my sayings by their suffrage;" and in the other, Philip. 1, Οὕτε βουλῆς, οὕτε δήμου χειροτονήσαντος αὐτῶν,—"Neither the senate nor the people choosing him to his office." So is the passive verb used, "to be created by suffrages." χειροτονία was the act of choosing; whose effect was ψῆφισμα, the determining vote or suffrage. "Porrexerunt manus: psephisma natum est," saith Cicero, speaking of the manner of the Greeks, Pro Flacco, 7. And when there was a division in choice, it was determined by the greater suffrage: Thucyd. lib. iii. cap. xlix., Ἐν γένοις ἐν τῇ χειροτονίᾳ ἄνγχώμαλς ἐκράτησε δὲ ἡ τοῦ λιοδότου. As many instances of this nature may be produced as there are reports of calling men unto magistracy by election in the Greek historians; and all the further compositions of the word do signify to choose, confirm, or to abrogate, by common suffrage.

3. The word is but once more used in the New Testament, 2 Cor. viii. 19, where it plainly signifies election and choice of a person to an employment: χειροτονηθῆς ὑπὸ τῶν ἐκκλησίων συνεκδημῶς ἡμῶν—"He was chosen of the churches to travel with us."

4. It is acknowledged that after this was the common use of the word, it was applied to signify the thing itself, and not the manner of doing it. Hence it is used sometimes for the obtaining or collation of authority, or dignity, or magistracy, any manner of way, though not by election: "to appoint," "to create." But this was, by an abusive application of the word, to express the thing itself intended without regard unto its signification and proper use. Why such a use of it should be here admitted no reason can be given; for in all other places on such occasions, the apostles did admit and direct the churches to use their liberty in their choice. So Acts xv. 22, "The apostles and elders, with the whole church, sent chosen men of their own company to Antioch," such as they chose by common suffrage for

---

1 This passage is not in the first Philippic, though in that speech χειροτονία occurs frequently in the sense referred to. Owen seems to have found this sentence in Stephens, who does not specify where it actually occurs in Demosthenes. The following expressions, however, are to be found in it, and are sufficient authority for the statement of our author: Ὅψως ἐξειροτόνησει δὲ εἰς ἑμᾶς αὐτῶν δίκα ταξιάρχους...Εἰς τὸν ἄρχον χειροτονῆσε τῶν ταξιάρχων.—Ed.
that end; so again, verse 25. “Whomsoever ye shall approve, them will I send,” 1 Cor. xvi. 3: the church chose them, the apostle sent them. “Who was chosen of the churches to travel with us,” 2 Cor. viii. 19. “Look ye out among you,” Acts vi. 3. If on all these and the like occasions, the apostles did guide and direct the people in their right and use of their liberty, as unto the election of persons unto offices and employments when the churches themselves were concerned, what reason is there to depart from the proper and usual signification of the word in this place, denoting nothing but what was the common practice of the apostles on the like occasions?

5. That which alone is objected hereunto, by Bellarmine and others who follow him and borrow their whole [argument] in this case from him, namely, that ἐκπορευόμενοι, grammatically agreeing with and regulated by Paul and Barnabas, denotes their act, and not any act of the people, is of no force; for,—(1.) Paul and Barnabas did preside in the whole action, helping, ordering, and disposing of the people in the discharge of their duty, as is meet to be done by some on all the like occasions; and therefore it is truly said of them that “they appointed elders by the suffrage of the people.” (2.) I have showed instances before out of the Scripture, that when a thing is done by the people, it is usual to ascribe it unto him or them who were chief therein, as elsewhere the same thing is ascribed unto the whole people.

The same authors contend that the liberty of choosing their own officers or elders, such as it was, was granted unto them or permitted by way of condescension for a season, and not made use of by virtue of any right in them thereunto. But this permission is a mere imagination. It was according to the mind of Christ that the churches should choose their own elders, or it was not. If it were not, the apostles would not have permitted it; and if it were, they ought to ordain it and practise according to it, as they did. Nor is such a constant apostolical practice, proposed for the direction of the church in all ages, to be ascribed unto such an original as condescension and permission: yea, it is evident that it arose from the most fundamental principles of the constitution and nature of the gospel churches, and was only a regular pursuit and practice of them; for,—

First, The calling of bishops, pastors, or elders, is an act of the power of the keys of the kingdom of heaven. But these keys are originally and properly given unto the whole church, unto the elders of it only ministerially, and as unto exercise. Pastors are eyes to the church. But God and nature design, in the first place, light to the whole body, to the whole person; thereunto it is granted both subjectively and finally, but actually it is peculiarly seated in the eye. So is it in the grant of church-power; it is given to the whole church, though to be exercised only by its elders.

That the grant of the keys unto Peter was in the person and as
the representative of the whole confessing church is the known judgment of Austin and a multitude of divines that follow him: so he fully expresseth himself, Tractat. 124. in Johan.: "Peter the apostle bare, in a general figure, the person of the church; for as unto what belonged unto himself, he was by nature one man, by grace one Christian, and of special, more abounding grace one and the chief apostle. But when it was said unto him, 'I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven,' etc., He signified the whole church," etc. Again: "The church, which is founded in Christ, received from him, in (the person of) Peter, the keys of the kingdom of heaven, which is the power of binding and loosing."

Unto whom these keys are granted, they, according to their distinct interests in that grant, have the right and power of calling their bishops, pastors, or elders; for in the exercise of that trust and power it doth consist. But this is made unto the whole church; and as there are in a church already constituted several sorts of persons, as some are elders, others are of the people only, this right resideth in them and is acted by them according to their respective capacities, as limited by the light of nature and divine institution; which is, that the election of them should belong unto the body of the people, and their authoritative designation or ordination unto the elders. And when in any place the supreme magistrate is a member or part of the church, he hath also his peculiar right herein.

That the power of the keys is thus granted originally and fundamentally unto the whole church is undeniably confirmed by two arguments:—

1. The church itself is the wife, the spouse, the bride, the queen of the husband and king of the church, Christ Jesus, Ps. xlv. 9; John iii. 29; Rev. xxi. 9, xxii. 17; Matt. xxv. 1, 5, 6. Other wife Christ hath none; nor hath the church any other husband. Now, to whom should the keys of the house be committed but unto the bride? There is, I confess, another who claims the keys to be his own; but withal he makes himself the head and husband of the church, proclaiming himself not only to be an adulterer with that harlot which he calleth the church, but a tyrant also, in that, pretending to be her husband, he will not trust her with the keys of his house, which Christ hath done with his spouse. And whereas, by the canon law, every bishop is the husband or spouse of his diocesan church, for the most part they commit an open rape upon the people, taking them without their consent; at least they are not chosen by them, which yet is essential unto a lawful marriage. And the bride of Christ comes no otherwise so to be but by the voluntary choice of him to be her husband. For the officers or rulers of the church, they do belong unto it as hers, 1 Cor. iii. 21, 22, and as stewards in the house, chap. iv. 1; the servants of the church for Jesus' sake, 2 Cor. iv. 5.
THE OFFICERS OF THE CHURCH.

If the Lord Christ have the keys of the kingdom of heaven, that is, of "his own house," Heb. iii. 6; if the church itself be the spouse of Christ, the mother of the family, the bride, the Lamb's wife, Rev. xxi. 9; and if all the officers of the church be but stewards and servants in the house and unto the family; if the Lord Christ do make a grant of these keys unto any, whereon the disposal of all things in this house and family doth depend, the question is, whether he hath originally granted them unto his holy spouse, to dispose of according unto her judgment and duty, or unto any servants in the house, to dispose of her and all her concernments at their pleasure?

2. The power of the keys as unto binding and loosing, and consequently as unto all other acts thence proceeding, is expressly granted unto the whole church: Matt. xviii. 17, 18, "If he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven." What church it is that is here intended we have proved before, and that the church is intrusted with the power of binding and loosing; and what is the part of the body of the people herein the apostle declares, 1 Cor. v. 4, 5; 2 Cor. ii. 6.

Secondly, This right, exemplified in apostolical practice, is comprehended in the commands given unto the church or body of the people with respect unto teachers and rulers of all sorts: for unto them it is in a multitude of places given in charge that they should discern and try false prophets, flee from them, try spirits, or such as pretend spiritual gifts or offices, reject them who preach false doctrine, to give testimony unto them that are to be in office, with sundry other things of the like nature; which all of them do suppose, or cannot be discharged without, a right in them to choose the worthy and reject the unworthy, as Cyprian speaks. See Matt. vii. 15-20; John v. 39; Gal. ii. 9; 1 Thess. v. 21; 1 John iv. 1; 2 John 10, 11.

What is objected hereunto from the unfitness and disability of the people to make a right judgment concerning them who are to be their pastors and rulers labours with a threefold weakness: for,—1. It reflects dishonour upon the wisdom of Christ, in commanding them the observance and discharge of such duties as they are no way meet for. 2. It proceeds upon a supposition of that degenerate state of churches in their members, as to light, knowledge, wisdom, and holiness, which they are for the most part fallen into; which must not be allowed to have the force of argument in it, when it is to be lamented and ought to be reformed. 3. It supposeth that there is no supply of assistance provided for the people in the discharge of their duty, to guide and direct them therein; which is otherwise, seeing the elders of the church wherein any such election
is made, and those of other churches in communion with that church, are, by the common advice and declaration of their judgment, to be assistant unto them.

Thirdly, The church is a voluntary society. Persons otherwise absolutely free, as unto all the rules, laws, and ends of such a society, do of their own wills and free choice coalesce into it. This is the original of all churches, as hath been declared. "They first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God," 2 Cor. viii. 5. Herein neither by prescription, nor tradition, nor succession, hath any one more power or authority than another, but they are all equal. It is gathered into this society merely by the authority of Christ; and where it is so collected, it hath neither right, power, privilege, rules, nor bonds, as such, but what are given, prescribed, and limited, by the institution and laws of Christ. Moreover, it abides and continues on the same grounds and principles as whereon it was collected, namely, the wills of the members of it, subjected unto the commands of Christ. This is as necessary unto its present continuance in all its members as it was in its first plantation. It is not like the political societies of the world, which, being first established by force or consent, bring a necessity on all that are born in them and under them to comply with their rule and laws. For men may, and in many cases ought to submit unto the disposal of temporal things in a way, it may be, not convenient for them, which they judge not well of, and which in many things is not unto their advantage; and this may be just and equal, because the special good which every one would aim at, being not absolutely so, may be outbalanced by a general good, nor alterable but by the prejudice of that which is good in particular. But with reference unto things spiritual and eternal it is not so. No man can by any previous law be concluded as unto his interest in such things; nor is there any general good to be attained by the loss of any of them. None, therefore, can coalesce in such a society, or adhere unto it, or be any way belonging unto it, but by his own free choice and consent. And it is inquired, how it is possible that any rule, authority, power, or office, should arise or be erected in such a society? We speak of that which is ordinary; for He by whom this church-state is erected and appointed may and did appoint in it and over it extraordinary officers for a season. And we do suppose that as he hath, by his divine authority, instituted and appointed that such societies shall be, he hath made grant of privileges and powers to them proper and sufficient for this end; as also, that he hath given laws and rules, by the observance whereof they may be made partakers of those privileges and powers, with a right unto their exercise.

On these suppositions, in a society absolutely voluntary, among

1 Not attainable?—Ed.
those who in their conjunction into it by their own consent are
every way equal, there can but three things be required unto the
actual constitution of rule and office among them:—

And the first is, That there be some among them that are fitted
and qualified for the discharge of such an office in a peculiar man-
er above others. This is previous unto all government, beyond that
which is purely natural and necessary: "Principio rerum, gentium
nationumque imperium penes reges erat; quos ad fastigium hujus
majestatis, non ambitio popularis, sed spectata inter bonos moderatio
provehebat," Just., lib. i. cap. i. So it was in the world, so it was in
the church: "President probati quique seniores, honorem istum non
pretio, sed testimonio adepti," Tertul. This preparation and furni-
ture of some persons with abilities and meet qualifications for office
and work in the church the Lord Christ hath taken on himself, and
doeth and will effect it in all generations. Without this there can
be neither office, nor rule, nor order in the church.

Secondly, Whereas there is a new relation to be made or created
between a pastor, bishop, or elder, and the church, which was not be-
fore between them (a bishop and a church, a pastor and a flock, are
relata), it must be introduced at the same time by the mutual
voluntary acts of one another, or of each party; for one of the relata
can, as such, have no being or existence without the other. Now,
this can no otherwise be but by the consent and voluntary subjec-
tion of the church unto persons so antecedently qualified for office,
according to the law and will of Christ; for it cannot be done by
the delegation of power and authority from any other superior or
equal unto them that do receive it. Neither the nature of this
power, which is incapable of such a delegation, nor the relation unto
Christ of all those who are pastors of the church, will admit of an
interposition of authority by way of delegation of power from them-
selves in other men; which would make them their ministers and not
Christ's. Nor is it consistent with the nature of such a voluntary
society. This, therefore, can no way be done but by free choice,
election, consent, or approbation. It cannot, I say, be so regularly.
How far an irregularity herein may vitiate the whole call of a mini-
ster we do not now inquire.

Now, this choice or election doth not communicate a power from
them that choose unto them that are chosen, as though such a power
as that whereunto they are called should be formally inherent in the
choosers antecedent unto such choice; for this would make those
that are chosen to be their ministers only, and to act all things in
their name and by virtue of authority derived from them. It is
only an instrumental, ministerial means to instate them in that power
and authority which is given unto such officers by the constitution
and laws of Christ, whose ministers thereon they are. These gifts,
offices, and officers, being granted by Christ unto the churches, Eph. iv. 11, 12, wherever there is a church called according to his mind, they do, in and by their choice of them, "submit themselves unto them in the Lord," according unto all the powers and duties wherewith they are by him intrusted and whereunto they are called.

Thirdly, It is required that persons so chosen, so submitted unto, be [al]so solemnly separated, dedicated unto, and confirmed in their office by fasting and prayer. As this is consonant unto the light of nature, which directs unto a solemnity in the susception of public officers,—whence proceeds the coronation of kings, which gives them not their title, but solemnly proclaims it, which on many accounts is unto the advantage of government,—so it is prescribed unto the church in this case by especial institution. But hereof I shall speak further immediately.

This order of calling men unto the pastoral office, namely, by their previous qualifications for the ministry, whereby a general designation of the persons to be called is made by Christ himself, the orderly choice or election of them in a voluntary subjection unto them in the Lord, according to the mind of Christ, by the church itself, followed with solemn ordination, or setting apart unto the office and discharge of it by prayer with fasting, all in obedience unto the commands and institution of Christ, whereunto the communication of office-power and privilege is by law-constitution annexed, is suited unto the light of reason in all such cases, the nature of gospel societies in order or churches, the ends of the ministry, the power committed by Christ unto the church, and confirmed by apostolical practice and example.

Herein we rest, without any further dispute, or limiting the formal cause of the communication of office-power unto any one act or duty of the church, or of the bishops or elders of it. All the three things mentioned are essential thereunto; and when any of them are utterly neglected,—where they are neither formally nor virtually,—there is no lawful, regular call unto the ministry according to the mind of Christ.

This order was a long time observed in the ancient church inviolate, and the footsteps of it may be traced through all ages of the church, although it first gradually decayed, then was perverted and corrupted, until it issued (as in the Roman church) in a pageant and show, instead of the reality of the things themselves: for the trial and approbation of spiritual endowments, previously necessary unto the call of any, was left unto the pedantic examination of the bishop's domestics, who knew nothing of them in themselves; the election and approbation of the people was turned into a mock show in the sight of God and men, a deacon calling out that if any had objections against him who was to be ordained, they should come forth and speak, whereunto another cries out of a corner, by compact,
“He is learned and worthy;” and ordination was esteemed to consist only in the outward sign of imposition of hands, with some other ceremonies annexed thereunto, whereby, without any other consideration, there ensued a flux of power from the ordainers unto the ordained!

But from the beginning it was not so. And some few instances of the right of the people, and the exercise of it in the choice of their own pastors, may be touched on in our passage:—

**Clemens**, Epist. ad Corinth., affirms that the apostles themselves appointed approved persons unto the office of the ministry, συνευκοπήσας τῆς ἐκκλησίας πάσης, “by (or with) the consent (or choice) of the whole church.” Συνευκοπήσειν is “to enact by common consent:” which makes it somewhat strange that a learned man should think that the right of the people in election is excluded in this very place by Clemens, from what is assigned unto the apostles in ordination.

**Ignatius**, Epist. ad Philadelphia, cap. x., Πρίστων ἵσται ἡμῖν, ὡς ἐκκλησίας Θεοῦ, ἐχειροτονήσαι ἐπίσκοπον, writing to the fraternity of the church,—“It becomes you, as a church of God, to choose or (ordin) a bishop.”

**Tertullian**, Apol., “Præsident probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio, sed testimonio adepti.”—“The elders came unto their honour (or office) by the testimony of the people;” that is, by their suffrage in their election.

**Origen**, in the close of his last book against Celsus, discoursing expressly of the calling and constitution of churches or cities of God, speaking of the elders and rulers of them, affirms that they are ἐκλεγόμενοι, “chosen to their office,” by the churches which they do rule.

The testimony given by **Cyprian** in sundry places unto this right of the people, especially in Epist. lxvii., unto the elders and people of some churches in Spain, is so known, so frequently urged, and excepted against to so little purpose, as that it is no way needful to insist again upon it. Some few things I shall only observe concerning and out of that epistle; as,—

1. It was not a simple epistle of his own more ordinary occasions, but a determination upon a weighty question, made by a synod of bishops or elders, in whose name, as well as that of Cyprian, it was written and sent unto the churches who had craved their advice.

2. He doth not only assert the right of the people to choose worthy persons to be their bishops, and reject those that are unworthy, but also industriously proves it so to be their right by divine institution and appointment.

3. He declares it to be the sin of the people, if they neglect the use and exercise of their right and power in rejecting and withdrawing themselves from the communion of unworthy pastors, and choosing others in their room.

4. He affirms that this was the practice not only of the churches
of Africa, but of those in most of the other provinces of the empire. Some passages in his discourse, wherein all these things are asserted, I shall transcribe, in the order wherein they lie in the epistle:

"Nec sibi plebs blandiatur, quasi immunis esse a contagio delicti possit cum sacerdote peccatore communicans, et ad injustum et illicitum praepositi sui episcopatum consensum suum commodans. . . . Propter quod plebs obsequens praeceptis Dominici et Deum metuens, a peccatore praeposito separare se debet, nec se ad sacrilegi sacerdotis sacrificia miscere; quando ipsa maxime habeat potestatem vel eligendi dignos sacerdotes vel indignos recusandi, quod et ipsum videmus de divina authoritate descendere;"—"For this cause the people, obedient to the commands of our Lord and fearing God, ought to separate themselves from a wicked bishop, nor mix themselves with the worship of a sacrilegious priest; for they principally have the power of choosing the worthy priests and rejecting the unworthy, which comes from divine authority (or appointment)," as he proves from the Old and New Testament. Nothing can be spoken more fully representing the truth which we plead for. He assigns unto the people a right and power of separating from unworthy pastors, of rejecting or deposing them, and that granted to them by divine authority.

And this power of election in the people he proves from the apostolical practice before insisted on: "Quod postea secundum divina magisteria observatur in Actis Apostolorum, quando in ordinando in locum Judæ apostolo, Petrus ad plebem loquitur. 'Surrexit,' inquit, 'Petrus in medio discentium, fuit autem turba hominum forte centum viginti.' Nec hoc in episcoporum tantum et sacerdotum, sed in diaconorum ordinationibus observasse apostolos animadvertimus de quo et ipso in actis eorum scriptum est. 'Et convocarunt,' inquit, 'illi duodecim totam plebem discipulorum, et dixerunt eis,'" etc.;—"According unto the divine commands, the same course was observed in the Acts of the Apostles;" whereof he gives instances in the election of Matthias, Acts i., and of the deacons, chap. vi.

And afterward, speaking of ordination "de universæ fraternitatis suffragio," "by the suffrage of the whole brotherhood of the church," he says, "Diligenter de traditione divina, et apostolica observatione servandum est et tenendum apud nos quoque et fere per universas provincias tenetur;"—"According to which divine tradition and apostolical practice, this custom is to be preserved and kept amongst us also, as it is almost through all the provinces."

Those who are not moved with his authority, yet I think have reason to believe him in a matter of fact of what was done everywhere, or almost everywhere, in his own days; and they may take time to answer his reasons when they can, which comprise the substance of all that we plead in this case.
But the testimonies in following ages given unto this right and power of the people in choosing their own church-officers, bishops and others, recorded in the decrees of councils, the writings of the learned men in them, the rescripts of popes, and constitutions of emperors, are so fully and faithfully collected by Blondellus, in the third part of his apology for the judgment of Jerome about episcopacy, as that nothing can be added unto his diligence, nor is there any need of further confirmation of the truth in this behalf.

The pretence also of Bellarmine, and others who follow him and borrow their conceits from him, that this liberty of the people in choosing their own bishops and pastors was granted unto them at first by way of indulgence or connivance, and that, being abused by them and turned into disorder, it was gradually taken from them, until it issued in that shameful mocking of God and man which is in use in the Roman church, when, at the ordination of a bishop or priest, one deacon makes a demand, "Whether the person to be ordained be approved by the people," and another answers out of a corner, "That the people approve him," has been so confuted by protestant writers of all sorts, that it is needless to insist any longer on them.

Indeed, the concessions that are made, that this ancient practice of the church in the people's choosing their own officers (which to deny is all one as to deny that the sun gives light at noon-day), is, as unto its right, by various degrees transferred unto popes, patrons, and bishops, with a representation in a mere pageantry of the people's liberty to make objections against them that are to be ordained, are as fair a concession of the gradual apostasy of churches from their original order and constitution as need be desired.

This power and right which we assign unto the people is not to act itself only in a subsequent consent unto one that is ordained, in the acceptance of him to be their bishop or pastor. How far that may salve the defect and disorder of the omission of previous election, and so preserve the essence of the ministerial call, I do not now inquire. But that which we plead for is the power and right of election, to be exercised previously unto the solemn ordination or setting apart of any unto the pastoral office, communicative of office-power in its own kind unto the person chosen.

This is part of that contest which for sundry ages filled most countries of Europe with broils and disorders; neither is there yet an end put unto it. But in this present discourse we are not in the least concerned in these things; for our inquiry is, what state and order of church-affairs is declared and represented to us in the Scripture; and therein there is not the least intimation of any of those things from whence this controversy did arise and whereon it doth depend. Secular endowments, jurisdictions, investiture, rights of
presentation, and the like, with respect unto the evangelical pastoral office and its exercise in any place, which are the subjects of these contests, are foreign unto all things that are directed in the Scriptures concerning them, nor can be reduced unto any thing that belongs unto them. Wherefore, whether this “jus patronatus” be consistent with gospel institutions; whether it may be continued with respect unto lands, tithes, and benefices; or how it may be reconciled unto the right of the people in the choice of their own ecclesiastical officers, from the different acts, objects, and ends required unto the one and the other,—are things not of our present consideration.

And this we affirm to be agreeable unto natural reason and equity, to the nature of churches in their institution and ends, to all authority and office-power in the church necessary unto its edification, with the security of the consciences of the officers themselves and the preservation of due respect and obedience unto them, and constituted by the institution of Christ himself in his apostles and the practice of the primitive church. Wherefore, the utter despoiling of the church, of the disciples, of those gathered in church-societies by his authority and command, of this right and liberty, may be esteemed a sacrilege of a higher nature than sundry other things which are reproached as criminal under that name.

And if any shall yet further appear to justify this deprivation of the right laid claim unto, and the exclusion of the people from their ancient possession, with sobriety of argument and reason, the whole cause may be yet further debated, from principles of natural light and equity, from maxims of law and policy, from the necessity of the ends of church-order and power, from the moral impossibility of any other way of the conveyance of ecclesiastical office-power, as well as from evangelical institution and the practice of the first churches.

It will be objected, I know, that the restoration of this liberty unto the people will overthrow that jus patronatus, or right of presenting unto livings and preferments which is established by law in this nation, and so, under a pretence of restoring unto the people their right in common, destroy other men’s undoubted rights in their own enclosures.

IV. But this election of the church doth not actually and immediately instate the person chosen in the office whereunto he is chosen, nor give actual right unto its exercise. It is required, moreover, that he be solemnly set apart unto his office in and by the church with fasting and prayer. That there should be some kind of peculiar prayer in the dedication of any unto the office of the ministry is a notion that could never be obliterated in the minds of men concerned in these things, nor cast out of their practice. Of what sort they have been amongst many we do not now inquire. But there hath been less regard unto the other duty, namely, that these prayers should
be accompanied with fasting; but this also is necessary by virtue of apostolical example, Acts xiv. 23.

The conduct of this work belongs unto the elders or officers of the church wherein any one is to be so ordained. It did belong unto extraordinary officers whilst they were continued in the church, and upon the cessation of their office it is devolved on the ordinary stated officers of the church. It is so, I say, in case there be any such officer before fixed in the church whereunto any one is to be only ordained; and in case there be none, the assistance of pastors or elders of other churches may and ought to be desired unto the conduct and regulation of the duty.

It is needless to inquire what is the authoritative influence of this ordination into the communication of office or office-power, whilst it is acknowledged to be indispensably necessary, and to belong essentially unto the call unto office; for when sundry duties, as these of election and ordination, are required unto the same end, by virtue of divine institution, it is not for me to determine what is the peculiar efficacy of the one or the other, seeing neither of them without the other hath any at all.

Hereunto is added, as an external adjunct, imposition of hands, significant of the persons so called to office in and unto the church; for although it will be difficultly proved that the use of this ceremony was designed unto continuance, after a cessation of the communication of the extraordinary gifts of the Holy Ghost, whereof it was the sign and outward means in extraordinary officers, yet we do freely grant it unto the ordinary officers of the church, provided that there be no apprehension of its being the sole authoritative conveyance of a successive flux of office-power, which is destructive of the whole nature of the institution.

And this may at present suffice, as unto the call of meet persons unto the pastoral office; and, consequently, any other office in the church. The things following are essentially necessary unto it, so as that authority and right to feed and rule in the church in the name of Christ, as an officer of his house, may be given unto any one thereby, by virtue of his law and the charter granted by him unto the church itself. The first is, That antecedently unto any actings of the church towards such a person with respect unto office, he be furnished by the Lord Christ himself with graces, and gifts, and abilities, for the discharge of the office whereunto he is to be called. This divine designation of the person to be called rests on the kingly office and care of Christ towards his church. Where this is wholly wanting, it is not in the power of any church under heaven, by virtue of any outward order or act, to communicate pastoral or ministerial power unto any person whatever. Secondly, There is to be an exploration or trial of those gifts and abilities as unto their
accommodation unto the edification of that church whereunto any person is to be ordained a pastor or minister. But although the right of judging herein doth belong unto and reside in the church itself (for who else is able to judge for them, or is intrusted so to do?), yet is it their wisdom and duty to desire the assistance and guidance of those who are approved in the discharge of their office in other churches. Thirdly, The first act of power committed unto the church by Jesus Christ, for the constitution of ordinary officers in it, is that election of a person qualified and tried unto his office which we have now vindicated. Fourthly, There is required hereunto the solemn ordination, inauguration, dedication, or setting apart, of the person so chosen, by the presbytery of the church, with fasting and prayer and the outward sign of the imposition of hands.

This is that order which the rule of the Scripture, the example of the first churches, and the nature of the things themselves, direct unto; and although I will not say that a defect in any of these, especially if it be from unavoidable hinderances, doth disannul the call of a person to the pastoral office, yet I must say that where they are not all duly attended unto, the institution of Christ is neglected, and the order of the church infringed. Wherefore,—

The plea of the communication of all authority for office, and of office itself, solely by a flux of power from the first ordainers, through the hands of their pretended successors in all ages, under all the innumerable miscarriages whereunto they are subject, and have actually fallen into, without any respect unto the consent or call of the churches, by rules, laws, and orders foreign to the Scripture, is contrary to the whole nature of evangelical churches and all the ends of their institution, as shall be manifested, if it be needful.

CHAPTER V.

The especial duty of pastors of churches.

We have declared the way whereby pastors are given unto and instated in the church; that which should ensue is an account of their work and duty in the discharge of their office: but this hath been the subject of many large discourses, both among the ancient writers of the church and of late; I shall therefore only touch on some things that are of most necessary consideration:—

1. The first and principal duty of a pastor is to feed the flock by diligent preaching of the word. It is a promise relating to the new testament, that God would give unto his church "pastors according to his own heart, which should feed them with knowledge and understanding," Jer. iii. 15. This is by teaching or preaching the word, and
no otherwise. This feeding is of the essence of the office of a pastor, as unto the exercise of it; so that he who doth not, or can not, or will not feed the flock is no pastor, whatever outward call or work he may have in the church. The care of preaching the gospel was committed to Peter, and in him unto all true pastors of the church, under the name of "feeding," John xxi. 15–17. According to the example of the apostles, they are to free themselves from all encumbrances, that they may give themselves wholly unto the word and prayer, Acts vi. 1–4. Their work is "to labour in the word and doctrine," 1 Tim. v. 17; and thereby to "feed the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made them overseers," Acts xx. 28: and it is that which is everywhere given them in charge.

This work and duty, therefore, as was said, is essential unto the office of a pastor. A man is a pastor unto them whom he feeds by pastoral teaching, and to no more; and he that doth not so feed is no pastor. Nor is it required only that he preach now and then at his leisure, but that he lay aside all other employments, though lawful, all other duties in the church, as unto such a constant attendance on them as would divert him from this work, that he give himself unto it,—that he be in these things labouring to the utmost of his ability. Without this no man will be able to give a comfortable account of the pastoral office at the last day.

There is, indeed, no more required of any man than God giveth him ability for. Weakness, sickness, bodily infirmities, may disenable men from the actual discharge of this duty in that assiduity and frequency which are required in ordinary cases; and some may, through age or other incapacitating distempers, be utterly disabled for it,—in which case it is their duty to lay down and take a dismission from their office, or, if their disability be but partial, provide a suitable supply, that the edification of the church be not prejudiced;—but for men to pretend themselves pastors of the church, and to be unable for, or negligent of, this work and duty, is to live in open defiance of the commands of Christ.

We have lived to see and hear of reproachful scorn and contempt cast upon laborious preaching,—that is, "labouring in the word and doctrine,"—and all manner of discouragements given unto it, with endeavours for its suppression in sundry instances; yea, some have proceeded so far as to declare that the work of preaching is unnecessary in the church, so to reduce all religion to the reading and rule of the liturgy. The next attempt, so far as I know, may be to exclude Christ himself out of their religion; which the denial of a necessity of preaching the gospel makes an entrance into, yea, a good progress towards.

Sundry things are required unto this work and duty of pastoral preaching; as,—(1.) Spiritual wisdom and understanding in the
mysteries of the gospel, that they may declare unto the church "all the counsel of God" and "the unsearchable riches of Christ:" see Acts xx. 27; 1 Cor. ii. 4–7; Eph. iii. 8–11. The generality of the church, especially those who are grown in knowledge and experience, have a spiritual insight into these things, and the apostle prays that all believers may have so, Eph. i. 15–19; and if those that instruct them, or should do so, have not some degree of eminency herein, they cannot be useful to lead them on to perfection. And the little care hereof or concernment herein is that which in our days hath rendered the ministry of many fruitless and useless. (2.) Experience of the power of the truth which they preach in and upon their own souls. Without this they will themselves be lifeless and heartless in their own work, and their labour for the most part will be unprofitable towards others. It is, to such men, attended unto as a task for their advantage, or as that which carries some satisfaction in it from ostentation and supposed reputation wherewith it is accompanied. But a man preacheth that sermon only well unto others which preacheth itself in his own soul. And he that doth not feed on and thrive in the digestion of the food which he provides for others will scarce make it savoury unto them; yea, he knows not but the food he hath provided may be poison, unless he have really tasted of it himself. If the word do not dwell with power in us, it will not pass with power from us. And no man lives in a more woful condition than those who really believe not themselves what they persuade others to believe continually. The want of this experience of the power of gospel truth on their own souls is that which gives us so many lifeless, sapless orations, quaint in words and dead as to power, instead of preaching the gospel in the demonstration of the Spirit. And let any say what they please, it is evident that some men's preaching, as well as others' not-preaching, hath lost the credit of their ministry. (3.) Skill to divide the word aright, 2 Tim. ii. 15; and this consists in a practical wisdom, upon a diligent attendance unto the word of truth, to find out what is real, substantial, and meet food for the souls of the hearers,—to give unto all sorts of persons in the church that which is their proper portion. And this requires, (4.) A prudent and diligent consideration of the state of the flock over which any man is set, as unto their strength or weakness, their growth or defect in knowledge (the measure of their attainments requiring either milk or strong meat), their temptations and duties, their spiritual decays or thriving; and that not only in general, but, as near as may be, with respect unto all the individual members of the church. Without a due regard unto these things, men preach at random, uncertainly fighting, like those that beat the air. Preaching sermons not designed for the advantage of them to whom they are preached; insisting on general doctrines not
levelled to the condition of the auditory; speaking what men can, without consideration of what they ought,—are things that will make men weary of preaching, when their minds are not influenced with outward advantages, as much as make others weary in hearing of them. And, (5.) All these, in the whole discharge of their duty, are to be constantly accompanied with the evidence of zeal for the glory of God and compassion for the souls of men. Where these are not in vigorous exercise in the minds and souls of them that preach the word, giving a demonstration of themselves unto the consciences of them that hear, the quickening form, the life and soul of preaching, is lost.

All these things seem common, obvious, and universally acknowledged; but the ruin of the ministry of the most for the want of them, or from notable defects in them, is or may be no less evidently known. And the very naming of them (which is all at present which I design) is sufficient to evidence how great a necessity there is incumbent on all pastors of churches to give themselves unto the word and prayer, to labour in the word and doctrine, to be continually intent on this work, to engage all the faculties of their souls, to stir up all their graces and gifts, unto constant exercise in the discharge of their duty; for "who is sufficient for these things?" And as the consideration of them is sufficient to stir up all ministers unto fervent prayer for supplies of divine aid and assistance for that work which in their own strength they can no way answer, so is it enough to warn them of the avoidance of all things that would give them a diversion or avocation from the constant attendance unto the discharge of it.

When men undertake the pastoral office, and either judge it not their duty to preach, or are not able so to do, or attempt it only at some solemn seasons, or attend unto it as a task required of them, without that wisdom, skill, diligence, care, prudence, zeal, and compassion, which are required thereunto, the glory and use of the ministry will be utterly destroyed.

2. The second duty of a pastor towards his flock is continual fervent prayer for them, James v. 16; John xvii. 20; Exod. xxxii. 11; Deut. ix. 18; Lev. xvi. 24; 1 Sam. xii. 23; 2 Cor. xiii. 7, 9; Eph. i. 15-19, iii. 14; Phil. i. 4; Col. i. 3; 2 Thess. i. 11. "We will give ourselves continually to prayer," Acts vi. 4. Without this, no man can or doth preach to them as he ought, nor perform any other duty of his pastoral office. From hence may any man take the best measure of the discharge of his duty towards his flock. He that doth constantly, diligently, fervently, pray for them, will have a testimony in himself of his own sincerity in the discharge of all other pastoral duties, nor can he voluntarily omit or neglect any of them. And as for those who are negligent herein, be their pains, labour, and travail in other
duties never so great, they may be influenced from other reasons, and so give no evidence of sincerity in the discharge of their office. In this constant prayer for the church, which is so incumbent on all pastors as that whatever is done without it is of no esteem in the sight of Jesus Christ, respect is to be had,—(1.) Unto the success of the word, unto all the blessed ends of it, among them. These are no less than the improvement and strengthening of all their graces, the direction of all their duties, their edification in faith and love, with the entire conduct of their souls in the life of God, unto the enjoyment of him. To preach the word, therefore, and not to follow it with constant and fervent prayer for its success, is to disbelieve its use, neglect its end, and to cast away the seed of the gospel at random. (2.) Unto the temptations that the church is generally exposed unto. These greatly vary, according unto the outward circumstances of things. The temptations in general that accompany a state of outward peace and tranquillity are of another nature than those that attend a time of trouble, persecution, distress, and poverty; and so it is as unto other occasions and circumstances. These the pastors of churches ought diligently to consider, looking on them as the means and ways whereby churches have been ruined, and the souls of many lost for ever. With respect unto them, therefore, ought their prayers for the church to be fervent. (3.) Unto the especial state and condition of all the members, so far as it is known unto them. There may be of them who are spiritually sick and diseased, tempted, afflicted, bemisted, wandering out of the way, surprised in sins and miscarriages, disconsolate and troubled in spirit in a peculiar manner. The remembrance of them all ought to abide with them, and to be continually called over in their daily pastoral supplications. (4.) Unto the presence of Christ in the assemblies of the church, with all the blessed evidences and testimonies of it. This is that alone which gives life and power unto all church assemblies, without which all outward order and forms of divine worship in them are but a dead carcase. Now, this presence of Christ in the assemblies of his church is by his Spirit, accompanying all ordinances of worship with a gracious, divine efficacy, evidencing itself by blessed operations on the minds and hearts of the congregation. This are pastors of churches continually to pray for; and they will do so who understand that all the success of their labours, and all the acceptance of the church with God in their duties, do depend hereon. (5.) To their preservation in faith, love, and fruitfulness, with all the duties that belong unto them, etc.

It were much to be desired that all those who take upon them this pastoral office did well consider and understand how great and necessary a part of their work and duty doth consist in their continual fervent prayer for their flocks; for besides that it is the only
The Especial Duty of Pastors of Churches.

79

instituted way whereby they may, by virtue of their office, bless their congregations, so will they find their hearts and minds, in and by the discharge of it, more and more filled with love, and engaged with diligence unto all other duties of their office, and excited unto the exercise of all grace towards the whole church on all occasions. And where any are negligent herein, there is no duty which they perform towards the church but it is influenced with false considerations, and will not hold weight in the balance of the sanctuary.

3. The administration of the seals of the covenant is committed unto them, as the stewards of the house of Christ; for unto them the authoritative dispensation of the word is committed, whereunto the administration of the seals is annexed; for their principal end is the peculiar confirmation and application of the word preached. And herein there are three things that they are to attend unto:—

(1.) The times and seasons of their administration unto the church's edification, especially that of the Lord's supper, whose frequency is enjoined. It is the duty of pastors to consider all the necessary circumstances of their administration, as unto time, place, frequency, order, and decency. (2.) To keep severely unto the institution of Christ, as unto the way and manner of their administration. The gradual introduction of uninstituted rites and ceremonies into the church celebration of the ordinance of the Lord's supper ended at length in the idolatry of the mass. Herein, then, alone, and not in bowing, cringing, and vestments, lies the glory and beauty of these administrations, namely, that they are compliant with and expressive of the institution of Christ, nor is any thing done in them but in express obedience unto his authority. "I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you," saith the apostle in this case, 1 Cor. xi. 23. (3.) To take care that these holy things be administered only unto those who are meet and worthy, according unto the rule of the gospel. Those who impose on pastors the promiscuous administration of these divine ordinances, or the application of the seals unto all without difference, do deprive them of one-half of their ministerial office and duty.

But here it is inquired by some, "Whether, in case a church have no pastor at present, or a teaching elder with pastoral power, it may not delegate and appoint the administration of these especial ordinances unto some member of the church at this or that season, who is meetly qualified for the outward administration of them?" which, for the sake of some, I shall examine.

No church is complete in order without teaching officers, Eph. iv. 11, 12; 1 Cor. xii. 27, 28.

A church not complete in order cannot be complete in administrations, because the power of administrations depends upon the power of order proportionably; that is, the power of the church depends
upon the being of the church. Hence the first duty of a church without officers is to obtain them, according to rule. And to endeavour to complete administrations without an antecedent completing of order is contrary unto the mind of Christ, Acts xiv. 23; Tit. i. 5, "That thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every church." The practice therefore proposed is irregular, and contrary to the mind of Christ.

The order of the church is twofold,—as essential, and as organical. The order of the church as essential, with its power thence arising, is,—first, For its preservation; secondly, For its perfection. (1.) For its preservation in admission and exclusion of members; (2.) For its perfection in the election of officers.

No part of this power, which belongs to the church as essentially considered, can be delegated, but must be acted by the whole church. They cannot delegate power to some to admit members, so as it should not be an act of the whole church. They cannot delegate power to any to elect officers, nor any thing else which belongs to them as a church essentially. The reason is, things that belong unto the essence of any thing belong unto it formally as such, and so cannot be transferred.

The church, therefore, cannot delegate the power and authority inquired after, should it be supposed to belong to the power of order as the church is essentially considered; which yet it doth not.

If the church may delegate or substitute others for the discharge of all ordinances whatsoever without elders or pastors, then it may perfect the saints and complete the work of the ministry without them, which is contrary to Eph. iv. 11, 12; and, secondly, it would render the ministry only convenient, and not absolutely necessary to the church, which is contrary to the institution of it.

A particular church, in order as organical, is the adequate subject of all ordinances, and not as essential; because as essential it never doth nor can enjoy all ordinances, namely, the ministry in particular, whereby it is constituted organical. Yet, on this supposition, the church, as essentially considered, is the sole adequate subject of all ordinances.

Though the church be the only subject, it is not the only object of gospel ordinances, but that is various. For instance,—

(1.) The preaching of the word: its first object is the world, for conversion; its next, professors, for edification.

(2.) Baptism: its only object is neither the world nor the members of a particular church, but professors, with those that are reckoned to them by God's appointment,—that is, their infant seed.

(3.) The supper: its object is a particular church only, which is acknowledged, and may be proved by the institution, one special end of it, and the necessity of discipline thereon depending.
Ordinances, whereof the church is the only subject and the only object, cannot be administered authoritatively but by officers only,—

(1.) Because none but Christ’s stewards have authority in and towards his house as such, 1 Cor. iv. 1; 1 Tim. iii. 15; Matt. xxiv. 45;

(2.) Because it is an act of office-authority to represent Christ to the whole church, and to feed the whole flock thereby, Acts xx. 28; 1 Pct. v. 2.

There are no footsteps of any such practice among the churches of God who walked in order, neither in the Scripture nor in all antiquity.

But it is objected, by those who allow this practice, “That if the church may appoint or send a person forth to preach, or appoint a brother to preach unto themselves, then they may appoint him to administer the ordinance of the supper.”

*Ans.* Here is a mistake in the supposition. The church,—that is, the body of it,—cannot send out any brother authoritatively to preach. Two things are required thereunto, collation of gifts and communication of office; neither of which the church, under that consideration, can do to one that is sent forth. But where God gives gifts by his Spirit and a call by his providence, the church only complies therewith, not in communicating authority to the person, but in praying for a blessing upon his work.

The same is the case in desiring a brother to teach among them. The duty is moral in its own nature; the gifts and call are from God alone; the occasion of his exercise is only administered by the church.

It is further added, by the same persons, “That if a brother, or one who is a disciple only, may baptize, then he may also administer the Lord’s supper, being desired of the church.”

*Ans.* The supposition is not granted nor proved; but there is yet a difference between these ordinances,—the object of the one being professors, as such, at large; the object of the other being professors, as members of a particular church. But to return,—

4. It is incumbent on them *to preserve the truth or doctrine of the gospel* received and professed in the church, and to defend it against all opposition. This is one principal end of the ministry, one principal means of the preservation of the faith once delivered unto the saints. This is committed in an especial manner unto the pastors of the churches, as the apostle frequently and emphatically repeats the charge of it unto Timothy, and in him unto all to whom the dispensation of the word is committed, 1 Epist. i. 3, 4, iv. 6, 7, 16, vi. 20; 2 Epist. i. 14, ii. 25, iii. 14–17. The same he giveth in charge unto the elders of the church of Ephesus, Acts xx. 28–31. What he says of himself, that the “glorious gospel of the blessed God was committed unto his trust,” 1 Tim. i. 11, is true of all pastors of churches, according to their measure and call; and they should all

Vol. XVI.
aim at the account which he gives of his ministry herein: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith," 2 Tim. iv. 7. The church is the "pillar and ground of the truth;" and it is so principally in its ministry. And the sinful neglect of this duty is that which was the cause of most of the pernicious heresies and errors that have infested and ruined the church. Those whose duty it was to preserve the doctrine of the gospel entire in the public profession of it have, many of them, "spoken perverse things, to draw away disciples after them." Bishops, presbyters, public teachers, have been the ringleaders in heresies. Wherefore this duty, especially at this time, when the fundamental truths of the gospel are on all sides impugned, from all sorts of adversaries, is in an especial manner to be attended unto.

Sundry things are required hereunto; as,—(1.) A clear, sound, comprehensive knowledge of the entire doctrine of the gospel, attained by all means useful and commonly prescribed unto that end, especially by diligent study of the Scripture, with fervent prayer for illumination and understanding. Men cannot preserve that for others which they are ignorant of themselves. Truth may be lost by weakness as well as by wickedness. And the defect herein, in many, is deplorable. (2.) Love of the truth which they have so learned and comprehended. Unless we look on truth as a pearl, as that which is valued at any rate, bought with any price, as that which is better than all the world, we shall not endeavour its preservation with that diligence which is required. Some are ready to part with truth at an easy rate, or to grow indifferent about it; whereof we have multitudes of examples in the days wherein we live. It were easy to give instances of sundry important evangelical truths, which our forefathers in the faith contended for with all earnestness, and were ready to seal with their blood, which are now utterly disregarded and opposed, by some who pretend to succeed them in their profession. If ministers have not a sense of that power of truth in their own souls, and a taste of its goodness, the discharge of this duty is not to be expected from them. (3.) A conscientious care and fear of giving countenance or encouragement unto novel opinions, especially such as oppose any truth of whose power and efficacy experience hath been had among them that believe. Vain curiosity, boldness in conjectures, and readiness to vent their own conceits, have caused no small trouble and damage unto the church. (4.) Learning and ability of mind to discern and disprove the oppositions of the adversaries of the truth, and thereby to stop their mouths and convince gainsayers. (5.) The solid confirmation of the most important truths of the gospel, and whereinto all others are resolved, in their teaching and ministry. Men may and do oftentimes prejudice, yea, betray the truth, by the weakness of their pleas for it. (6.) A diligent watch
over their own flocks against the craft of seducers from without, or the springing up of any bitter root of error among themselves. (7.) A concurrent assistance with the elders and messengers of other churches with whom they are in communion, in the declaration of the faith which they all profess; whereof we must treat afterward more at large.

It is evident what learning, labour, study, pains, ability, and exercise of the rational faculties, are ordinarily required unto the right discharge of these duties; and where men may be useful to the church in other things, but are defective in these, it becomes them to walk and act both circumspectly and humbly, frequently desiring and adhering unto the advices of them whom God hath intrusted with more talents and greater abilities.

5. It belongs unto their charge and office diligently to labour for the conversion of souls unto God. The ordinary means of conversion is left unto the church, and its duty it is to attend unto it; yea, one of the principal ends of the institution and preservation of churches is the conversion of souls, and when there are no more to be converted, there shall be no more church on the earth. To enlarge the kingdom of Christ, to diffuse the light and savour of the gospel, to be subservient unto the calling of the elect, or gathering all the sheep of Christ into his fold, are things that God designs by his churches in this world. Now, the principal instrumental cause of all these is the preaching of the word; and this is committed unto the pastors of the churches. It is true, men may be, and often are, converted unto God by their occasional dispensation of the word who are not called unto office; for it is the gospel itself that is the "power of God unto salvation," by whomsoever it is administered, and it hath been effectual unto that end even in the necessary occasional teaching of women: but it is so, frequently, in the exercise of spiritual gifts by them who are not stated officers of the church, 1 Cor. xiv. 24, 25; Phil. i. 14, 15, 18; 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11. But yet this hinders not but that the administration of the glorious gospel of the blessed God, as unto all the ends of it, is committed unto the pastors of the church. And the first object of the preaching of the gospel is the world, or the men of it, for their conversion; and it is so in the preaching of all them unto whom that work is committed by Christ. The work of the apostles and evangelists had this order in it:—First, they were to make disciples of men, by the preaching of the gospel unto conversion; and this was their principal work, as Paul testifieth, 1 Cor. i. 17: and herein were they gloriously instrumental in laying the foundation of the kingdom of Christ all the world over. The second part of their work was to teach them that were converted, or made disciples, to do and observe all that he did command them. In the pursuit of this part of their commission, they gathered
the disciples of Christ into churches, under ordinary officers of their own. And although the work of these ordinary officers, pastors and teachers, be of the same nature with theirs, yet the method of it is changed in them; for their first ordinary work is to conduct and teach all the disciples of Christ to do and observe all things appointed by him,—that is, to preach unto and watch over the particular flocks unto whom they do relate. But they are not hereby discharged from an interest in the other part of the work,—in preaching the word unto the conversion of souls. They are not, indeed, bound unto the method of the apostles and evangelists; yea, they are, by virtue of their office, ordinarily excluded from it. After a man is called to be a pastor of a particular church, it is not his duty to leave that church, and go up and down to preach for the conversion of strangers. It is not, I say, ordinarily so; for many cases may fall out wherein the edification of any particular church is to give way unto the glory of Christ with respect unto the calling of all the members of the church catholic. But in the discharge of the pastoral office there are many occasions of preaching the word unto the conversion of souls; as,—(1.) When any that are unconverted do come into the assemblies of the church, and are there wrought upon by the power of the word; whereby we have experience every day. To suppose that a man, at the same time, and in the same place, preaching unto one congregation, should preach to some of them, namely, those that are of the church whereunto he relates, as a minister, with ministerial authority, and to others only by virtue of a spiritual gift which he hath received, is that which no man can distinguish in his own conscience; nor is there any colour of rule or reason for it: for though pastors, with respect unto their whole office and all the duties of it, whereof many can have the church only for their object, are ministers in office unto the church, and so ministers of the church, yet are they ministers of Christ also; and by him it is, and not by the church, that the preaching of the gospel is committed unto them. And it is so committed as that, by virtue of their office, they are to use it unto all its ends, in his way and method; whereof the conversion of sinners is one. And for a man to conceive of himself in a double capacity, whilst he is preaching to the same congregation, is that which no man’s experience can reach unto. (2.) In occasional preaching in other places, whereunto a pastor of a church may be called and directed by divine providence; for although we have no concernment in the figment of an indelible character accompanying sacred orders, yet we do not think that the pastoral office is such a thing as a man must leave behind him every time he goes from home, or that it is in his own power, or in the power of all men in the world, to divest him of it, unless he be dismissed or deposed from it by Christ himself, through the rule of his word. Wherever a true minister preacheth, he preacheth as a minis-
ter, for as such the administration of the gospel is committed unto him, as unto all the ends of it, whereof the chief, as was said, is the conversion of souls; yea, of such weight it is that the conveniency and edification of particular churches ought to give place unto it. When, therefore, there are great opportunities and providential calls for the preaching of the gospel unto the conversion of souls, and, the harvest being great, there are not labourers sufficient for it, it is lawful, yea, it is the duty of pastors of particular churches to leave their constant attendance on their pastoral charge in those churches, at least for a season, to apply themselves unto the more public preaching of the word unto the conversion of the souls of men. Nor will any particular church be unwilling hereunto which understands that even the whole end of particular churches is but the edification of the church catholic, and that their good and advantage is to give place unto that of the glory of Christ in the whole. The good shepherd will leave the ninety and nine sheep, to seek after one that wanders; and we may certainly leave a few for a season, to seek after a great multitude of wanderers, when we are called thereunto by divine providence: and I could heartily wish that we might have a trial of it at this time.

The ministers who have been most celebrated, and that deservedly, in the last ages, in this and the neighbour nations, have been such as whose ministry God made eminently successful unto the conversion of souls. To affirm that they did not do their work as ministers, and by virtue of their ministerial office, is to cast away the crown and destroy the principal glory of the ministry. For my own part, if I did not think myself bound to preach as a minister, and as a minister authorized in all places and on all occasions, when I am called thereunto, I think I should never preach much more in this world. Nor do I know at all what rule they walk by who continue public constant preaching for many years, and yet neither desire nor design to be called unto any pastoral office in the church. But I must not here insist on the debate of these things.

6. It belongs unto them, on the account of their pastoral office, to be ready, willing, and able, to comfort, relieve, and refresh, those that are tempted, tossed, wearied with fears and grounds of disconsolation, in times of trial and desertion. "The tongue of the learned" is required in them, "that they should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary." One excellent qualification of our Lord Jesus Christ, in the discharge of his priestly office now in heaven, is, that he is touched with a sense of our infirmities, and knows how to succour them that are tempted. His whole flock in this world are a company of tempted ones; his own life on the earth he calls "the time of his temptation;" and those who have the charge of his flock under him ought to have a sense of their infirmities, and endeavour in an especial manner to succour them that are tempted.
But amongst them there are some always that are cast under darkness and disconsolations in a peculiar manner: some at the entrance of their conversion unto God, whilst they have a deep sense of the terror of the Lord, the sharpness of conviction, and the uncertainty of their condition; some are relapsed into sin or omissions of duties; some under great, sore, and lasting afflictions; some upon pressing, urgent, particular occasions; some on sovereign, divine desertions; some through the buffetings of Satan and the injection of blasphemous thoughts into their minds, with many other occasions of an alike nature. Now, the troubles, disconsolations, dejections, and fears, that arise in the minds of persons in these exercises and temptations are various, oftentimes urged and fortified with subtle arguings and fair pretences, perplexing the souls of men almost to despair and death. It belongs unto the office and duty of pastors,—

(1.) To be able rightly to understand the various cases that will occur of this kind, from such principles and grounds of truth and experience as will bear a just confidence in a prudent application unto the relief of them concerned; [to have] "the tongue of the learned, to know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary." It will not be done by a collection and determination of cases, which yet is useful in its place; for hardly shall we meet with two cases of this kind that will exactly be determined by the same rule, all manner of circumstances giving them variety: but a skill, understanding, and experience, in the whole nature of the work of the Spirit of God on the souls of men, of the conflict that is between the flesh and the Spirit, of the methods and wiles of Satan, of the wiles of principalities and powers or wicked spirits in high places, of the nature, and effects, and ends of divine desertions, with wisdom to make application out of such principles, or fit medicines and remedies unto every sore and distemper, are required hereunto. These things are by some despised, by some neglected, by some looked after only in stated cases of conscience, in which work it is known that some have horribly debauched their own consciences and [those of] others, to the scandal and ruin of religion, so far as they have prevailed. But not to dispute how far such helps as books written on cases of conscience may be useful herein,—which they may be greatly unto those who know how to use them aright,—the proper ways whereby pastors and teachers must obtain this skill and understanding are, by diligent study of the Scriptures, meditation thereon, fervent prayer, experience of spiritual things, and temptations in their own souls, with a prudent observation of the manner of God's dealing with others, and the ways of the opposition made to the work of his grace in them. Without these things, all pretences unto this ability and duty of the pastoral office are vain; whence it is that the whole work of it is much neglected.
(2.) To be ready and willing to attend unto the especial cases that may be brought unto them, and not to look on them as unnecessary diversions, whereas a due application unto them is a principal part of their office and duty. To discountenance, to discourage any from seeking relief in perplexities of this nature, to carry it towards them with a seeming moroseness and unconcernedness, is to turn that which is lame out of the way, to push the diseased, and not at all to express the care of Christ towards his flock, Isa. xl. 11. Yea, it is their duty to hearken after them who may be so exercised, to seek them out, and to give them their counsel and direction on all occasions.

(3.) To bear patiently and tenderly with the weakness, ignorance, dulness, slowness to believe and receive satisfaction, yea, it may be, impertinencies, in them that are so tempted. These things will abound amongst them, partly from their natural infirmities, many being weak, and perhaps froward, but especially from the nature of their temptations, which are suited to disorder and disquiet their minds, to fill them, with perplexed thoughts, and to make them jealous of every thing wherein they are spiritually concerned; and if much patience, meekness, and condescension, be not exercised towards them, they are quickly turned out of the way.

In the discharge of the whole pastoral office, there is not any thing or duty that is of more importance, nor wherein the Lord Jesus Christ is more concerned, nor more eminently suited unto the nature of the office itself, than this is. But whereas it is a work or duty which, because of the reasons mentioned, must be accompanied with the exercise of humility, patience, self-denial, and spiritual wisdom, with experience, with wearisome diversions from other occasions, those who had got of old the conduct of the souls of men into their management turned this whole part of their office and duty into an engine they called "auricular confession;" whereby they wrested the consciences of Christians to the promotion of their own ease, wealth, authority, and oftentimes to worse ends.

7. A compassionate suffering with all the members of the church in all their trials and troubles, whether internal or external, belongs unto them in the discharge of their office; nor is there any thing that renders them more like unto Jesus Christ, whom to represent unto the church is their principal duty. The view and consideration, by faith, of the glory of Christ in his compassion with his suffering members, is the principal spring of consolation unto the church in all its distresses. And the same spirit, the same mind herein, ought, according to their measure, to be in all that have the pastoral office committed unto them. So the apostle expresseth it in himself, "Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?" 2 Cor. xi. 29. And unless this compassion and goodness do run through the discharge of their whole office, men cannot be said
to be evangelical shepherds, nor the sheep said in any sense to be their own. For those who pretend unto the pastoral office to live, it may be, in wealth and pleasure, regardless of the sufferings and temptations of their flock, or of the poor of it, or related unto such churches as wherein it is impossible that they should so much as be acquainted with the state of the greatest part of them, is not answerable unto the institution of their office, nor to the design of Christ therein.

8. Care of the poor and visitation of the sick are parts of this duty, commonly known, though commonly neglected.

9. The principal care of the rule of the church is incumbent on the pastors of it. This is the second general head of the power and duty of this office, whereunto many things in particular do belong. But because I shall treat afterward of the rule of the church by itself distinctly, I shall not here insist upon it.

10. There is a communion to be observed among all the churches of the same faith and profession in any nation. Wherein it doth consist, and what is required thereunto, shall be afterward declared. The principal care hereof, unto the edification of the churches, is incumbent on the pastors of them. Whether it be exercised by letters of mutual advice, of congratulation or consolation, or in testimony of communion with those who are called to office in them, or whether it be by convening in synods for consultation of their joint concerns (which things made up a great part of the primitive ecclesiastical polity), their duty it is to attend unto it and to take care of it.

11. That wherewith I shall close these few instances of the pastoral charge and duty is that without which all the rest will neither be useful unto men nor be accepted with the great shepherd, Christ Jesus; and that is, a humble, holy, exemplary conversation, in all godliness and honesty. The rules and precepts of the Scripture, the examples of Christ and his apostles, with that of the bishops or pastors of the primitive churches, and the nature of the thing itself, with the religion which we do profess, do undeniably prove this duty to be necessary and indispensable in a gospel ministry. It were an easy thing to fill up a volume with ancient examples unto this purpose, with testimonies of the Scripture and first writers among Christians, with examples of public and private miscarriages herein, with evident demonstration that the ruin of Christian religion in most nations where it hath been professed, and so of the nations themselves, hath proceeded from the ambition, pride, luxury, uncleanness, profaneness, and otherwise vicious conversations, of those who have been called the "clergy." And in daily observation, it is a thing written with the beams of the sun, that whatever else be done in churches, if the pastors of them, or those who are so esteemed, are not exemplary in gospel obedience and holiness, religion will not be carried on and
improved among the people. If persons light or profane in their habits, garbs, and converse, corrupt in their communication, unsavoury and barren as unto spiritual discourse; if such as are covetous, oppressive, and contentious; such as are negligent in holy duties in their own families, and so cannot stir up others unto diligence therein; much more, if such as are openly sensual, vicious, and debauched,—are admitted into this office, we may take our leave of all the glory and power of religion among the people committed unto their charge.

To handle this property or adjunct of the pastoral office, it were necessary distinctly to consider and explain all the qualifications assigned by the apostle as necessary unto bishops or elders, evidenced as previously necessary unto the orderly call of them unto this office, 1 Tim. iii. 2–7, Tit. ii. 6–9; which is a work not consistent with my present design to engage in.

These are some instances of the things wherein the office-duty of pastors of the church doth consist. They are but some of them, and these only proposed, not pursued and pressed with the consideration of all those particular duties, with the manner of their performance, way of management, motives and enforcements, defects and causes of them; which would require a large discourse. These may suffice unto our present purpose; and we may derive from them the ensuing brief considerations:—

1. A due meditation and view of these things, as proposed in the Scripture, is enough to make the wisest, the best of men, and the most diligent in the discharge of the pastoral office, to cry out with the apostle, "Who is sufficient for these things?" This will make them look well to their call and entrance into this office, as that alone which will bear them out and justify them in the suspicion of it; for no sense of insufficiency can utterly discourage any in the undertaking of a work which he is assured that the Lord Christ calls him unto, for where he calls to a duty, he gives competent strength for the performance of it. And when we say, under a deep sense of our own weakness, "Who is sufficient for these things?" he doth say, "My grace is sufficient for you."

2. Although all the things mentioned do plainly, evidently, and undeniably, belong unto the discharge of the pastoral office, yet, in point of fact, we find, by the success, that they are very little considered by the most that seek after it. And the present ruin of religion, as unto its power, beauty, and glory, in all places, ariseth principally from this cause, that multitudes of those who undertake this office are neither in any measure fit for it, nor do either conscientiously attend unto or diligently perform the duties that belong unto it. It ever was and ever will be true in general, "Like priest, like people."

3. Whereas the account which is to be given of this office and
the discharge of it at the last day unto Jesus Christ, the considera-
tion whereof had a mighty influence upon the apostles themselves
and all the primitive pastors of the churches, is frequently proposed
unto us, and many warnings given us thereon in the Scripture, yet
it is apparent they are but few who take it into due consideration.
In the great day of Christ's visitation, he will proceed on such ar-
ticles as those here laid down, and others expressed in the Scripture,
and not at all on those which are now inquired upon in our episcopal
visitations. And if they may be minded of their true interest and
concern, whilst they possess the places they hold in the church, with-
out offence, I would advise them to conform their inquiries, in their
visitations, unto those which they cannot but know the Lord Christ
will make in the great day of his visitation, which doth approach.
This I think but reasonable. In the meantime, for those who desire
to give up their account with joy and confidence, and not with grief
and confusion, it is their wisdom and duty continually to bear in
mind what it is that the Lord Christ requires of them in the dis-
charge of their office. To take benefices, to perform legal duties, by
themselves or others, is not fully compliant with what pastors of
churches are called unto.

4. It is manifest also from hence how inconsistent it is with this
office, and the due discharge of it, for any one man to undertake the
relation of a pastor unto more churches than one, especially if far
distant from one another. An evil this is like that of mathematical
prognostications at Rome,—always condemned and always retained.
But one view of the duties incumbent on each pastor, and of whose
diligent performance he is to give an account at the last day, will
discard this practice from all approbation in the minds of them that
are sober. However, it is as good to have ten churches at once, as,
having but one, never to discharge the duty of a pastor towards it.

5. All churches may do well to consider the weight and burden
that lies upon their pastors and teachers in the discharge of their office,
that they may be constant in fervent prayers and supplications for
them; as also to provide, what lies in them, that they may be with-
out trouble and care about the things of this life.

6. "There being so many duties necessary unto the discharge of
this office, and those of such various sorts and kinds as to require
various gifts and abilities unto their due performance, it seems very
difficult to find a concurrence of them in any one person in any
considerable degree, so that it is hard to conceive how the office
itself should be duly discharged." I answer,—(1.) The end both of
the office and of the discharge of it is the due edification of the
church; this, therefore, gives them their measure. Where that is at-
tained, the office is duly discharged, though the gifts whereby men
are enabled thereunto be not eminent. (2.) Where a man is called
unto this office, and applieth himself sincerely unto the due discharge of it, if he be evidently defective with respect to any especial duty or duties of it, that defect is to be supplied by calling any other unto his assistance in office who is qualified to make that supply unto the edification of the church. And the like must be said concerning such pastors as, through age or bodily weakness, are disabled from attendance unto any part of their duty; for still the edification of the church is that which, in all these things, is in the first place to be provided for.

7. It may be inquired what is the state of those churches, and what relation with respect unto communion we ought to have unto them, whose pastors are evidently defective in or neglective of these things, so as that they are not in any competent measure attended unto; and we may, in particular, instance in the first and last of the pastoral duties before insisted on. Suppose a man be no way able to preach the word unto the edification of them that are pleaded to be his flock, or, having an ability, yet doth not, will not, give himself unto the word and prayer, or will not labour in the word and doctrine, unto the great prejudice of edification; and suppose the same person be openly defective as unto an exemplary conversation, and on the contrary layeth the stumbling-block of his own sins and follies before the eyes of others,—what shall we judge of his ministry, and of the state of that church whereof he is a constituent part as its ruler? I answer:

(1.) I do not believe it is in the power of any church really to confer the pastoral office, by virtue of any ordination whatever, unto any who are openly and evidently destitute of all those previous qualifications which the Scripture requireth in them who are to be called unto this office. There is, indeed, a latitude to be allowed in judging of them in times of necessity and great penury of able teachers, so that persons in holy ministry design the glory of God and the edification of the church according to their ability; but otherwise there is a nullity in the pretended office.

(2.) Where any such are admitted, through ignorance or mistake, or the usurpation of undue power over churches in imposing ministers on them, there is not an absolute nullity in their administrations until they are discovered and convicted by the rule and law of Christ. But if, on evidence hereof, the people will voluntarily adhere unto them, they are partakers of their sins, and do what in them lies to unchurch themselves.

(3.) Where such persons are, by any means, placed as pastors in or over any churches, and there is no way for their removal or reformation, it is lawful unto, it is the duty of every one who takes care of his own edification and salvation to withdraw from the communion of such churches, and to join with such as wherein edification is bet-
ter provided for; for whereas this is the sole end of churches, of all their offices, officers, and administrations, it is the highest folly to imagine that any disciple of Christ can be or is obliged, by his authority, to abide in the communion of such churches, without seeking relief in the ways of his appointment, wherein that end is utterly overthrown.

(4.) Where the generality of churches, in any kind of association, are headed by pastors defective in these things, in the matter declared, there all public church-reformation is morally impossible, and it is the duty of private men to take care of their own souls, let churches and churchmen say what they please.

Some few things may yet be inquired into with reference unto the office of a pastor in the church; as,—

1. Whether a man may be ordained a pastor or a minister without relation unto any particular church, so as to be invested with office-power thereby?

It is usually said that a man may be ordained a minister unto or of the catholic church, or to convert infidels, although he be not related unto any particular flock or congregation.

I shall not at present discuss sundry things about the power and way of ordination which influence this controversy, but only speak briefly unto the thing itself. And,—

(1.) It is granted that a man endowed with spiritual gifts for the preaching of the gospel may be set apart by fasting and prayer unto that work, when he may be orderly called unto it in the providence of God; for,—[1.] Such an one hath a call unto it materially in the gifts which he hath received, warranting him unto the exercise of them for the edification of others as he hath occasion, 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11; 1 Cor. xiv. 12. Setting apart unto an important work by prayer is a moral duty, and useful in church-affairs in an especial manner, Acts xiii. 1–3. [2.] A public testimony unto the approbation of a person undertaking the work of preaching is necessary,—1st. Unto the communion of churches, that he may be received in any of them as is occasion; of which sort were the letters of recommendation in the primitive church, 1 Cor. xvi. 3; 2 Cor. iii. 1; 3 John 9; —2dly. Unto the safety of them amongst whom he may exercise his gifts, that they be not imposed on by false teachers or seducers. Nor would the primitive church allow, nor is it allowable in the communion of churches, that any person not so testified unto, not so sent and warranted, should undertake constantly to preach the gospel.

(2.) Such persons, so set apart and sent, may be esteemed ministers in the general notion of the word, and may be useful in the calling and planting of churches, wherein they may be instated in the pastoral office. This was originally the work of evangelists,
which office being ceased in the church (as shall be proved elsewhere), the work may be supplied by persons of this sort.

(3.) No church whatever hath power to ordain men ministers for the conversion of infidels. Since the cessation of extraordinary officers and offices, the care of that work is devolved merely on the providence of God, being left without the verge of church-institutions. God alone can send and warrant men for the undertaking of that work; nor can any man know or be satisfied in a call unto that work without some previous guidance of divine providence leading him thereunto. It is, indeed, the duty of all the ordinary ministers of the church to diffuse the knowledge of Christ and the gospel unto the heathen and infidels, among whom, or near unto whom, their habitation is cast, and they have all manner of divine warranty for their so doing, as many worthy persons have done effectually in New England; and it is the duty of every true Christian who may be cast among them by the providence of God to instruct them according unto his ability in the knowledge of the truth: but it is not in the power of any church, or any sort of ordinary officers, to ordain a person unto the office of the ministry for the conversion of the heathen antecedently unto any designation by divine providence thereunto.

(4.) No man can be properly or completely ordained unto the ministry, but he is ordained unto a determinate office, as a bishop, an elder, a pastor. But this no man can be but he who is ordained in and unto a particular church; for the contrary practice,—

[1.] Would be contrary to the constant practice of the apostles, who ordained no ordinary officers but in and unto particular churches, which were to be their proper charge and care, Acts xiv. 23; Tit. i. 5. Nor is there mention of any ordinary officers in the whole Scripture but such as were fixed in the particular churches whereunto they did relate, Acts xx. 28; Phil. i. 1; Rev. ii., iii.; nor was any such practice known or heard of in the primitive church: yea,—

[2.] It was absolutely forbidden in the ancient church, and all such ordinations declared null, so as not to communicate office-power or give any ministerial authority. So it is expressly in the first canon of the council of Chalcedon, and the council decrees, "That all imposition of hands in such cases is invalid and of no effect." Yea, so exact and careful were they in this matter, that if any one, for any just cause, as he judged himself, did leave his particular church or charge, they would not allow him the name or title of a bishop, or to officiate occasionally in that church, or anywhere else. This is evident in the case of Eustathius, a bishop of Pamphylia. The good man finding the discharge of his office very troublesome, by reason of secular businesses, that it was encumbered withal, and
much opposition with reproach that befell him from the church itself, of his own accord laid down and resigned his charge, the church choosing one Theodorus in his room. But afterward he desired that, though he had left his charge, he might retain the name, title, and honour of a bishop. For this end he made a petition unto the council of Ephesus; who, as themselves express it, in mere commiseration unto the old man, condescended unto his desire as unto the name and title, but not as unto any office-power, which, they judged, related absolutely unto a particular charge, Epist. Conc. Ephes. 1, ad Synod. in Pamphyl.

[3.] Such ordination wants an essential constitutive cause, and part of the collation of office-power, which is the election of the people; and is therefore invalid. See what hath been proved before unto that purpose.

[4.] A bishop, an elder, a pastor, being terms of relation, to make any one so without relation unto a church, a people, a flock, is to make him a father who hath no child, or a husband who hath no wife, a relate without a correlate, which is impossible, and implies a contradiction.

[5.] It is inconsistent with the whole nature and end of the pastoral office. Whoever is duly called, set apart, or ordained unto that office, he doth therein and thereby take on himself the discharge of all the duties belonging thereunto, and is obliged to attend diligently unto them. If, then, we will take a view of what hath been proved before to belong unto this office, we shall find that not the least part, scarce any thing of it, can be undertaken and discharged by such as are ordained absolutely without relation unto particular churches. For any to take upon them to commit an office unto others, and not at the same time charge them with all the duties of that office and their immediate attendance on them, or for any to accept of an office and office-power not knowing when or where to exert the power or perform the duties of it, is irregular. In particular, ruling is an essential part of the pastoral office, which they cannot attend unto who have none to be ruled by them.

2. May a pastor remove from one congregation unto another?

This is a thing also which the ancient church made great provision against; for when some churches were increased in members, reputation, privileges, and wealth, above others, it grew an ordinary practice for the bishops to design and endeavour their own removal from a less unto a greater benefice. This is so severely interdicted in the councils of Nice and Chalcedon as that they would not allow that a man might be a bishop or presbyter in any other place but only in the church wherein he was originally ordained; and, therefore, if any did so remove themselves, decreed that they should be sent home again, and there abide, or cease to be church-officers,
Conc. Nicae. can. 15, 16; Chalced, can. 5, 20. Pluralities, as they are called, and open contending for ecclesiastical promotions, benefices, and dignities, were then either unknown or openly condemned.

Yet it cannot be denied but that there may be just causes of the removal of a pastor from one congregation unto another; for whereas the end of all particular churches is to promote the edification of the catholic church in general, where, in any especial instance, such a removal is useful unto that end, it is equal it should be allowed. Cases of this nature may arise from the consideration of persons, places, times, and many other circumstances that I cannot insist on in particular. But that such removals may be without offence, it is required that they be made,—(1.) With the free consent of the churches concerned; (2.) With the advice of other churches, or their elders, with whom they walk in communion. And of examples of this kind, or of the removal of bishops or pastors from one church to another in an orderly manner, by advice and counsel, for the good of the whole church, there are many instances in the primitive times. Such was that of Gregory Nazianzen, removed from Casima to Constantinople; though I acknowledge it had no good success.

3. May a pastor voluntarily, or of his own accord, resign and lay down his office, and remain in a private capacity?

This also was judged inconvenient, if not unlawful, by the first synod of Ephesus, in the case of Eustathius. He was, as it appears, an aged man, one that loved his own peace and quietness, and who could not well bear the oppositions and reproaches which he met withal from the church, or some in it, and thereon solemnly, upon his own judgment, without advice, laid down and renounced his office in the church; who thereupon chose a good man in his room. Yet did the synod condemn this practice, and that not without weighty reasons, whereby they confirmed their judgment.

But yet no general rule can be established in this case; nor was the judgment or practice of the primitive church precise herein. Clemens, in his epistle to the church of Corinth, expressly adviseth those on whose occasion there was disturbance and divisions in the church to lay down their office and withdraw from it. Gregory Nazianzen did the same at Constantinople; and protested openly that although he were himself innocent and free from blame, as he truly was, and one of the greatest men of his age, yet he would depart or be cast out, rather than they should not have peace among them; which he did accordingly, Orat. 52, et Vit. Greg. Nazian. And afterward a synod at Constantinople, under Photius, concluded that in some cases it is lawful, can. 5. Wherefore,—

(1.) It seems not to be lawful so to do merely on the account of weakness for work and labour, though occasioned by age, sickness, or bodily distemper: for no man is any way obliged to do more than
he is able with the regular preservation of his life; and the church is obliged to be satisfied with the conscientious discharge of what abilities a pastor hath, otherwise providing for itself in what is wanting.

(2.) It is not lawful merely on a weariness of and despondency under opposition and reproaches, which a pastor is called and obliged to undergo for the good and edification of the flock, and not to faint in the warfare whereto he is called.

These two were the reasons of Eustathius at Perga, which were disallowed in the council at Ephesus. But,—

(3.) It is lawful in such an incurable decay of intellectual abilities as whereon a man can discharge no duty of the pastoral office unto the edification of the church.

(4.) It is lawful in case of incurable divisions in the church, constantly obstructing its edification, and which cannot be removed whilst such a one continues in his office, though he be no way the cause of them. This is the case wherein Clemens gives advice, and whereof Gregory gave an example in his own practice.

But this case and its determination will hold only where the divisions are incurable by any other ways and means; for if those who cause such divisions may be cast out of the church, or the church may withdraw communion from them, or if there be divisions in fixed parties and principles, opinions or practices, they may separate into distinct communions. In such cases this remedy, by the pastor's laying down his office, is not to be made use of; otherwise all things are to be done for edification.

(5.) It may be lawful where the church is wholly negligent in its duty, and persists in that negligence, after admonition, in providing, according to their abilities, for the outward necessity of their pastor and his family. But this case cannot be determined without the consideration of many particular circumstances.

(6.) Where all or many of these causes concur, so as that a man cannot cheerfully and comfortably go on in the discharge of his office, especially if he be pressed in point of conscience, through the church's noncompliance with their duty with respect unto any of the institutions of Christ, and if the edification of the church, which is at present obstructed, may be provided for, in their own judgment, after a due manner, there is no such grievous yoke laid by the Lord Christ on the necks of any of his servants but that such a person may peaceably lay down his office in such a church, and either abide in a private station, or take the care of another church, wherein he may discharge his office (being yet of ability) unto his own comfort and their edification.
CHAPTER VI.

Of the office of teachers in the church, or an inquiry into the state, condition, and work of those called teachers in the Scripture.

The Lord Christ hath given unto his church "pastors and teachers," Eph. iv. 11. He hath "set in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers," 1 Cor. xii. 28. In the church that was at Antioch there were "prophets and teachers," Acts xiii. 1; and their work is both described and assigned unto them, as we shall see afterward.

But the thoughts of learned men about those who in the Scripture are called teachers are very various, nor is the determination of their state and condition easy or obvious, as we shall find in our inquiry.

If there were originally a distinct office of teachers in the church, it was lost for many ages; but yet there was always a shadow or appearance of it retained, first in public catechists, and then in doctors or professors of theology in the schools belonging unto any church. But this, as unto the title of doctor or teacher, is but a late invention; for the occasion of it rose about the year of Christ 1135. Lotharius the emperor having found in Italy a copy of the Roman civil law, and being greatly taken with it, he ordained that it should be publicly read and expounded in the schools. This he began, by the direction of Imerius his chancellor, at Bononia; and to give encouragement unto this employment, they ordained that those who were the public professors of it should be solemnly created doctors; of whom Bulgarus Hugolinus, with others, were the first. Not long after, this rite of creating doctors was borrowed of the lawyers by divines who publicly taught divinity in their schools; and this imitation first took place in Bononia, Paris, and Oxford. But this name is since grown a title of honour to sundry sorts of persons, whether unto any good use or purpose or no I know not; but it is in use, and not worth contending about, especially if, as unto some of them, it be fairly reconcilable unto that of our Saviour, Matt. xxiii. 8.

But the custom of having in the church teachers that did publicly explain and vindicate the principles of religion is far more ancient, and of known usage in the primitive churches. Such was the practice of the church of Alexandria in their school, wherein the famous Pantaenus, Origen, and Clemens, were teachers; an imitation whereof has been continued in all ages of the church.

And, indeed, the continuation of such a peculiar work and employment, to be discharged in manner of an office, is an evidence that originally there was such a distinct office in the church; for although in the Roman church they had instituted sundry orders of sacred officers, borrowed from the Jews or Gentiles, which have no resem-
blance unto any thing mentioned in the Scripture, yet sundry things abused and corrupted by them in church-officers took their occasional rise from what is so mentioned.

There are four opinions concerning those who are called by this name in the New Testament:—

1. Some say that no office at all is denoted by it, it being only a general appellation of those that taught others, whether constantly or occasionally. Such were the prophets in the church of Corinth, that spake occasionally and in their turns, 1 Cor. xiv.; which is that which all might do who had ability for it, verses 5, 24, 25.

2. Some say it is only another name for the same office with that of a pastor, and so not [intended] to denote any distinct office; of which mind Jerome seems to be, Eph. iv.

3. Others allow that it was a distinct office, whereunto some were called and set apart in the church, but it was only to teach (and that in a peculiar manner) the principles of religion, but had no interest in the rule of the church or the administration of the sacred mysteries. So the pastor in the church was to rule, and teach, and administer the sacred mysteries; the teacher to teach or instruct only, but not to rule nor dispense the sacraments; and the ruling elder to rule only, and neither to teach nor administer sacraments;—which hath the appearance of order, both useful and beautiful.

4. Some judge that it was a distinct office, but of the same nature and kind with that of the pastor, endowed with all the same powers, but differenced from it with respect unto gifts and a peculiar kind of work allotted unto it. But this opinion hath this seeming disadvantage, that the difference between them is so small as not to be sufficient to give a distinct denomination of officers or to constitute a distinct office; and, it may be, such a distinction in gifts will seldom appear, so that the church may be guided thereby in the choice of meet persons unto distinct offices.

But Scripture testimony and rule must take place, and I shall briefly examine all these opinions.

The first is, That this is not the name of any officer; nor is a teacher; as such, any officer in the church, but it is used only as a general name for any that teach, on any account, the doctrine of the gospel. I do not, indeed, know of any who have in particular contended for this opinion, but I observe that very many expositors take no further notice of them but as such. This seems to me to be most remote from the truth.

It is true, that in the first churches not only some, but all who had received spiritual light in the gifts of knowledge and utterance, did teach and instruct others as they had opportunity, 1 Pet. iv. 8–11. Hence the heathen philosophers, as Celsus in particular, objected to the Christians of old that they suffered sutlers, and weavers, and
cobblers, to teach among them; which they who knew that Paul himself, their great apostle, wrought at a trade not much better, were not offended at. Of this sort were the disciples mentioned Acts viii. 4; so was Aquila, chap. xviii. 26, and the many prophets in the church of Corinth, 1 Cor. xiv. 29. But,—

1. The name διδάσκαλος is not used in the New Testament but for a teacher with authority. The apostle John tells us that διδάσκαλος is the same with ἡσυχαστή, chap. xx. 16, or as it is written, ἡσυχαστή, Mark x. 51; which, in their mixed dialect, was the same with rabbi. And בְּרָכָה, ברכה, and אֶרֶץ, were then in use for the Hebrew ארץ: of which see Job xxxvi. 22; Isa. xxx. 20. Now, the constant signification of these words is “a master in teaching,” “a teacher with authority;” nor is διδάσκαλος used in the New Testament but for such a one. And therefore those who are called teachers were such as were set apart unto the office of teaching, and not such as were so called from an occasional work or duty.

2. Teachers are numbered among the officers which Christ hath given unto and set in the church, Eph. iv. 11; 1 Cor. xii. 28: so that originally church-officers were intended by them is beyond contradiction.

3. They are mentioned as those who, with others, did preside in the church, and join in the public ministrations of it, Acts xiii. 1, 2.

4. They are charged to attend unto the work of teaching; which none can be but they whose office it is to teach, Rom. xii. 7.

It is therefore undeniable that there is such an office as that of a teacher mentioned in the Scripture.

The second opinion is, That although a teacher be a church-officer, yet no distinct office is intended in that denomination. It is, say they, only another name for a pastor, the office being one and the same, the same persons being both pastors and teachers, or called by these several names, as they have other titles also ascribed unto them.

So it is fallen out, and so it is usual in things of this nature, that men run into extremes; truth pleaseth them not. In the first deviation of the church from its primitive institution, there were introduced sundry offices to the church that were not of divine institution, borrowed partly of the Jews and partly of the Gentiles; which issued in the seven orders of the church of Rome. They did not utterly reject any that were of a divine original, but retained some kind of figure, shadow, or image of them; but they brought in others that were merely of their own invention. In the rejection of this exorbitancy, some are apt to run into the other extreme; they will deny and reject some of them that have a divine warranty for their original.

1 So given in the textus receptus. Critical editions of the New Testament now give ἡσυχαστή.—Ed.
Howbeit they are not many nor burdensome; yea, they are all such as without the continuation of them, the edification of the church cannot be carried on in a due manner: for unto the beauty and order of the church, in its rule and worship, it is required not only that there be many officers in each church, but also that they be of sundry sorts; all harmony in things natural, political, and ecclesiastical, arising from variety with proportion. And he that shall with calmness and without prejudice consider the whole work that is to be done in churches, with the end of their institution, will be able to understand the necessity of pastors, teachers, ruling-elders, and deacons, for those ends, and no other. And this I hope I shall demonstrate in the consideration of these respective offices, with the duties that belong unto them, as I have considered one of them already. Wherefore, as unto the opinion under present consideration, I say,—

1. In the primitive church, about the end of the second century, before there was the least attempt to introduce new officers into the church, there were persons called unto the office and work of public teaching who were not pastors, nor called unto the administration of other ordinances. Those of this sort in the church of Alexandria were, by reason of their extraordinary abilities, quickly of great fame and renown. Their constant work was, publicly unto all comers, believers and unbelievers, to explain and teach the principles of Christian religion, defending and vindicating it from the opposition of its heathen adversaries, whether atheists or philosophers. This had never been so exactly practised in the church if it had not derived from divine institution. And of this sort is the ἐκατηχησθείς, "the catechist," intended by the apostle, Gal. vi. 6; for it is such a one as constantly labours in the work of preaching, and hath those who depend upon his ministry therein, ἐκατηχησθείς, those that are taught or catechised by him; for hence alone it is that maintenance is due unto him for his work: "Let the catechised communicate unto the catechist," the taught unto the teacher, "in all good things." And it is not the pastor of the church that he intends; for he speaks of him in the same case in another manner, and nowhere only with respect unto teaching alone.

2. There is a plain distinction between the offices of a pastor and a teacher: Eph. iv. 11, "Some pastors and teachers." This is one of the instances wherein men try their wits in putting in exceptions unto plain Scripture testimonies, as some or other do in all other cases; which if it may be allowed, we shall have nothing left us certain in the whole book of God. The apostle enumerates distinctly all the teaching officers of the church, both extraordinary and ordinary. "It is granted that there is a difference between apostles, prophets, and evangelists; but there is none," say some, "between pastors and teachers," which are also named distinctly. Why so?
"Because there is an interposition of the article τῶν between those of the former sort, and not between 'pastors and teachers;'"—a very weak consideration to control the evidence of the design of the apostle in the words. We are not to prescribe unto him how he shall express himself. But this I know, that the discrete and co-putative conjunction καί, "and," between "pastors" and "teachers," doth no less distinguish them the one from the other than the τῶν μιν and τῶν δὲ before made use of; and this I shall confirm from the words themselves:—

(1.) The apostle doth not say "pastors or teachers," which, in congruity of speech, should have been done if the same persons and the same office were intended; and the discrete particle in the close of such an enumeration of things distinct as that in this place is of the same force with the other notes of distinction before used.

(2.) After he hath named pastors he nameth teachers, with a note of distinction. This must either contain the addition of a new office, or be an interpretation of what went before, as if he had said, "Pastors, that is, teachers." If it be the latter, then the name of teachers must be added as that which was better known than that of pastors, and more expressive of the office intended (it is declared who are meant by pastors in calling them teachers), or else the addition of the word is merely superfluous. But this is quite otherwise, the name of pastor being more known as unto the indigitation of office power and care, and more appropriated thereunto, than that of teacher, which is both a common name, not absolutely appropriated unto office, and respective of one part of the pastoral office and duty only.

(3.) No instance can be given, in any place where there is an enumeration of church-officers, either by their names, as 1 Cor. xii. 28, or by their work, as Rom. xii. 6–8, or by the offices themselves, as Phil. i. 1, of the same officer, at the same time, being expressed under various names; which, indeed, must needs introduce confusion into such an enumeration. It is true, the same officers are in the Scriptures called by several names, as pastors, bishops, presbyters; but if it had been said anywhere that there were in the church bishops and presbyters, it must be acknowledged that they were distinct officers, as bishops and deacons are, Phil. i. 1.

(4.) The words in their first notion are not synonymous; for all pastors are teachers, but all teachers are not pastors: and therefore the latter cannot be exegetical of the former.

3. As these teachers are so called and named in contradistinction unto pastors in the same place, so they have distinct office-works and duties assigned unto them in the same place also: Rom. xii. 7, 8, "He that teacheth on teaching, he that exhorteth on exhortation." If they have especial works to attend unto distinctly by virtue of their offices, then are their offices distinct also; for from one there is an
especial obligation unto one sort of duties, and to another sort from the other.

4. These teachers are set in the church as in a distinct office from that of prophets, "secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers," 1 Cor. xii. 28. And so they are mentioned distinctly in the church of Antioch, Acts xiii. 1, "There were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers." But in both places pastors are comprised under the name of prophets, exhortation being an especial branch of prophesy, Rom. xii. 6–8.

5. There is a peculiar institution of maintenance for these teachers, which argues a distinct office, Gal. vi. 6.

From all these considerations it appears that the teachers mentioned in the Scripture were officers in the church distinct from pastors: for they are distinguished from them,—(1.) By their name, declarative of the especial nature of their office; (2.) By their peculiar work which they are to attend unto, in teaching by virtue of office; (3.) By their distinct placing in the church as peculiar officers in it, distinct from prophets or pastors; (4.) By the especial constitution of their necessary maintenance; (5.) By the necessity of their work, to be distinctly carried on in the church. Which may suffice for the removal of the second opinion.

The third is, that teachers are a distinct office in the church, but such whose office, work, and power, is confined unto teaching only, so as that they have no interest in rule or the administration of the sacraments. And,—

1. I acknowledge that this seems to have been the way and practice of the churches after the apostles; for they had ordinarily catechists and teachers in assemblies like schools, that were not called unto the whole work of the ministry.

2. The name of a teacher, neither in its native signification nor in its ordinary application, as expressive of the work of this office, doth extend itself beyond or signify any thing but the mere power and duty of teaching. It is otherwise as unto the names of pastors, bishops or overseers, elders; which, as unto the two former, their constant use in the Scripture, suited unto their signification, include the whole work of the ministry, and the latter is a name of dignity and rule. Upon the proposal of church-officers under these names, the whole of office-power and duty is apprehended as included in them. But the name of a teacher, especially as significant of that of rabbi among the Jews, carries along with it a confinement unto an especial work or duty.

3. I do judge it lawful for any church, from the nature of the thing itself, Scripture, general rules and directions, to choose, call, and set apart, meet persons unto the office, work, and duty of teachers, without an interest in the rule of the church, or the administration
of the holy ordinances of worship. The same thing is practised by many, for the substance of it, though not in due order; and, it may be, the practice hereof, duly observed, would lead us unto the original institution of this office. But,—

4. Whereas a teacher, merely as such, hath no right unto rule or the administration of ordinances, no more than the doctors among the Jews had right to offer sacrifices in the temple, yet he who is called to be a teacher may also at the same time be called to be an elder, and a teaching elder hath the power of all holy administrations committed to him.

5. But he that is called to be a teacher in a peculiar manner, although he be an elder also, is to attend peculiarly unto that part of his work from whence he receiveth his denomination.

And so I shall at present dismiss this third opinion unto further consideration, if there be any occasion for it.

The fourth opinion I rather embrace than any of the others, namely, upon a supposition that a teacher is a distinct officer in the church, his office is of the same kind with that of the pastor, though distinguished from it as unto degrees, both materially and formally; for,—

1. They are joined with pastors in the same order, as their associates in office, Eph. iv. 11: so they are with prophets, and set in the church as they are, 1 Cor. xii. 28; Acts xiii. 1.

2. They have a peculiar work, of the same general nature with that of pastors, assigned unto them, Rom. xii. 7. Being to teach or preach the gospel by virtue of office, they have the same office for substance with the pastors.

3. They are said λατοουργάοι in the church, Acts xiii. 1, 2, which compriseth all sacred administrations.

Wherefore, upon the consideration of all that is spoken in the Scripture concerning church-teachers, with the various conjectures of all sorts of writers about them, I shall conclude my own thoughts in some few observations, and then inquire into the state of the church with reference unto these "pastors and teachers." And I say,—

1. There may be teachers in a church called only unto the work of teaching, without any further interest in rule or right unto the administration of the sacraments. Such they seem to be who are mentioned, Gal. vi. 6. They are there called peculiarly κατηχεῶτες, "catechists;" and παιδαγωγοί, "instructors of those that are young" in the rudiments of religion, 1 Cor. iv. 15. And such there were in the primitive churches; some whereof were eminent, famous, and useful. And this was very necessary in those days when the churches were great and numerous; for whereas the whole rule of the church, and the administration of all ordinances in it, are originally committed unto the pastor, as belonging entirely unto his office, the discharge
of it in all its parts, unto the edification of the church, especially when it is numerous, being impossible for any one man, or it may be more, in the same office, where all are obliged unto an especial attendance on one part of it, namely, the word and prayer, it pleased the Lord Christ to appoint such as, in distinct offices, should be associated with them for the discharge of sundry parts of their duty. So were deacons ordained to take care of the poor and the outward concerns of the church, without any interest in rule or right to teach. So were, as we shall prove, elders ordained to assist and help in rule, without any call to preach or administer the sacraments. And so were teachers appointed to instruct the church and others in the truth, who had no right to rule or the administration of other ordinances. And thus, although the whole duty of the edification of the church be still incumbent on the pastors, yet being supplied with assistance to all the parts of it, it may be comfortably discharged by them. And if this order were observed in all churches, not only many inconveniences would be prevented, but the order and edification of the church greatly promoted.

2. He who is peculiarly called to be a teacher, with reference unto a distinction from a pastor, may yet at the same time be called to be an elder also; that is, to be a teaching elder. And where there is in any officer a concurrence of both these,—a right unto rule as an elder and power to teach, or preach the gospel,—there is the same office and office-power, for the substance of it, as there is in the pastor.

3. On the foregoing supposition, there yet remains a distinction between the office of a pastor and teacher;—which, as far as light may be taken from their names and distinct ascriptions unto them, consists materially in the different gifts which those to be called unto office have received, which the church in their call ought to have respect unto; and formally in the peculiar exercise of those gifts in the discharge of their office, according unto the assignation of their especial work unto them, which themselves are to attend unto.

Upon what hath been before discoursed concerning the office of pastors and teachers, it may be inquired whether there may be many of them in a particular church, or whether there ought only to be of one of each sort? And I say,—

1. Take teachers in the third sense, for those who are only so, and have no further interest in office-power, and there is no doubt but that there may be as many of them in any church as are necessary unto its edification, and ought so to be. And a due observation of this institution would prevent the inconvenience of men's preaching constantly who are in no office of the church; for although I do grant that those who have once been regularly and solemnly set apart or ordained unto the ministry have the right of constant preaching in-
herent in them, and the duty of it incumbent on them, though they may be separated from those churches wherein and unto whom they were peculiarly ordained, yet for men to give themselves up constantly unto the work of teaching by preaching the gospel who never were set apart by the church thereunto, I know not that it can be justified.

2. If there be but one sort of elders mentioned in the Scripture, it is out of all question that there may be many pastors in the same church; for there were many elders in every church, Acts xiv. 23, xx. 17, 28; Phil. i. 1; Tit. i. 5: but if there are sundry sorts of elders mentioned in the Scripture, as pastors who peculiarly feed the flock, those teaching elders of whom we have spoken, and those rulers concerning whom we shall treat in the next place, then no determination of this inquiry can be taken from the multiplication of them in any church.

3. It is certain that the order very early observed in the church was one pastor, ὁ ἐπίσκοπος, "præses," quickly called "episcopus," by way of distinction, with many elders assisting in rule and teaching, and deacons ministering in the things of this life, whereby the order of the church was preserved and its authority represented; yet I will not deny but that in each particular church there may be many pastors with an equality of power, if the edification of the church do require it.

4. It was the alteration of the state of the church from its primitive constitution, and deviation from its first order, by an occasional coalescence of many churches into one, by a new form of churches never appointed by Christ, which came not in until after the end of the second century, that gave occasion to corrupt this order into an episcopal pre-eminence, which degenerated more and more into confusion under the name of order. And the absolute equality of many pastors in one and the same church is liable unto many inconveniencies if not diligently watched against.

5. Wherefore let the state of the church be preserved and kept unto its original constitution, which is congregational, and no other, and I do judge that the order of the officers which was so early in the primitive church,—namely, of one pastor or bishop in one church, assisted in rule and all holy administrations with many elders teaching or ruling only,—doth not so overthrow church-order as to render its rule or discipline useless.

6. But whereas there is no difference in the Scripture, as unto office or power, intimated between bishops and presbyters, as we have proved, when there are many teaching elders in any church, an equality in office and power is to be preserved. But yet this takes not off from the due preference of the pastoral office, nor from the necessity of precedence for the observation of order in all church assem-
bles, nor from the consideration of the peculiar advantages which gifts, age, abilities, prudence, and experience, which may belong unto some, according to rule, may give.

CHAPTER VII.

Of the rule of the church, or of ruling elders.

1. The rule and government of the church, or the execution of the authority of Christ therein, is in the hand of the elders. All elders in office have rule, and none have rule in the church but elders. As such, rule doth belong unto them. The apostles, by virtue of their especial office, were intrusted with all church-power; but therefore they were elders also, 1 Pet. v. 1; 2 John 1; 3 John 1. See Acts xxii. 18; 1 Tim. v. 17. There are some of them, on other accounts, called "bishops, pastors, teachers, ministers, guides;" but what belongs unto any of them in point of rule, or what interest they have therein, it belongs unto them as elders, and not otherwise, Acts xx. 17, 28.

So under the old testament, where the word doth not signify a difference in age, but is used in a moral sense, elders are the same with rulers or governors, whether in offices civil or ecclesiastical; especially the rulers of the church were constantly called its elders. And the use of the word, with the abuse of the power or office intended by it, is traduced to signify men in authority ("seniores, aldermanni") in all places.

2. Church-power, acted in its rule, is called "The keys of the kingdom of heaven," by an expression derived from the keys that were a sign of office-power in the families of kings, Isa. xxii. 22; and it is used by our Saviour himself to denote the communication of church-power unto others, which is absolutely and universally vested in himself, under the name of "The key of David," Rev. iii. 7; Matt. xvi. 19.

3. These keys are usually referred unto two heads,—namely, the one of order, the other of jurisdiction.

4. By the "key of order," the spiritual right, power, and authority of bishops or pastors to preach the word, to administer the sacraments, and doctrinally to bind and loose the consciences of men, are intended.

5. By "jurisdiction," the rule, government, or discipline of the church is designed; though it was never so called or esteemed in the Scripture, or the primitive church until the whole nature of church rule or discipline was depraved and changed. Therefore, neither the word, nor any thing that is signified by it or which it is applied unto, ought to be admitted unto any consideration in the things that
belong unto the church or its rule, it being expressive of and direct-
ing unto that corrupt administration of things ecclesiastical, according unto the canon law, by which all church rule and order is destroyed. I do therefore at once dismiss all disputes about it, as of things foreign to the gospel and Christian religion; I mean as unto the institutions of Christ in his church. The civil jurisdiction of supreme magis-
trates about the externals of religion is of another consideration; but that these keys do include the twofold distinct powers of teaching and rule, of doctrine and discipline, is freely granted.

6. In the church of England (as in that of Rome) there is a peculiar distribution made of these keys. Unto some,—that is, unto one special sort or order of men,—they are both granted, both the key of order and of jurisdiction; which is unto diocesan bishops, with some others, under various canonical restrictions and limitations, as deans and archdeacons. Unto some is granted the key of order only, with-
out the least interest in jurisdiction or rule by virtue of their office; which are the parochial ministers, or mere presbyters, without any additional title or power, as of commissary surrogates, or the like. And unto a third sort there is granted the key of rule or jurisdiction almost plenipotent, who have no share in the key of order,—that is, were never ordained, separated, dedicated unto any office in the church,—such as are the chancellors, etc.

7. These chancellors are the only lay elders that I know any-
where in any church; that is, persons intrusted with the rule of the church and the disposition of its censures, who are not ordained unto any church-office, but in all other things continue in the order of the laity or the people. All church-rulers by institution are elders; to be an elder of the church and a ruler in it is all one: where-
fore these persons being rulers in the church, and yet thus continuing in the order of the people, are lay elders; whom I wonder how so many of the church came so seriously to oppose, seeing this order of men is owned by none but themselves. The truth is, and it must be acknowledged, that there is no known church in the world (I mean, whose order is known unto us, and is of any public consideration) but they do dispose the rule of the church, in part, into the hands of persons who have not the power of authoritative preaching of the word and administration of the sacraments committed unto them; for even those who place the whole external rule of the church in the civil magistrate do it as they judge him an officer of the church, intrusted by Christ with church-power. And those who deny any such officers as are usually called "ruling elders" in the reformed churches to be of divine institution, yet maintain that it is very necessary that there should be such officers in the church, either ap-
pointed by the magistrate or chosen by the people, and that with cogent arguments. See Imp. Sum. Pot. circ. sacra.
8. But this distribution mentioned of church-power is unscriptural, nor is there any footsteps of it in antiquity. It is so as unto the two latter branches of it. That any one should have the power of order to preach the word, to administer the seals, to bind and loose the conscience doctrinally, or ministerially to bind and loose in the court of conscience, and yet by the virtue of that office which gives him this power not to have a right and power of rule or discipline, to bind and loose in the court of the church, is that which neither the Scripture nor any example of the primitive church doth give countenance unto. And as by this means those are abridged and deprived of their power to whom it is granted by the institution and law of Christ (as it is with all elders duly called unto their office), so in the third branch there is a grant of church-power unto such as by the law of Christ are excluded from any interest therein; the enormity of which constitution I shall not at present insist upon.

But inquiry must be made what the Scripture directs unto herein. And,—

1. There is a work and duty of rule in the church distinct from the work and duty of pastoral feeding by the preaching of the word and administration of the sacraments. All agree herein, unless it be Erastus and those that follow him, who seem to oppose it; but their arguments lie not against rule in general, which were brutish, but only a rule by external jurisdiction in the elders of the church. So they grant the general assertion of the necessity of rule, for who can deny it? only they contend about the subject of power required thereunto. A spiritual rule, by virtue of mutual voluntary confederation, for the preservation of peace, purity, and order in the church, few of that opinion deny, at least it is not that which they do oppose; for to deny all rule and discipline in the church, with all administration of censures, in the exercise of a spiritual power internally inherent in the church, is to deny the church to be a spiritual political society, overthrow its nature, and frustrate its institution, in direct opposition unto the Scripture. That there is such a rule in the Christian church, see Acts xx. 28; Rom. xii. 8; 1 Cor. xii. 28; 1 Tim. iii. 5, v. 17; Heb. xiii. 7, 17; Rev. ii., iii.

2. Different and distinct gifts are required unto the discharge of these distinct works and duties. This belongs unto the harmony of the dispensation of the gospel. Gifts are bestowed to answer all duties prescribed. Hence they are the first foundation of all power, work, and duty in the church: "Unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ;" that is, ability for duty according to the measure wherein Christ is pleased to grant it, Eph. iv. 7. "There are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit; . . . . but the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal," 1 Cor. xii. 4, 7-10. "Having then gifts differing according
to the grace that is given to us,” etc., Rom. xii. 6-8. “As every man hath received the gift, so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God,” 1 Pet. iv. 10. Hence are they called “The powers of the world to come,” Heb. vi. 4, 5. Wherefore, differing gifts are the first foundation of differing offices and duties.

3. That differing gifts are required unto the different works of pastoral teaching on the one hand, and practical rule on the other, is evident,—(1.) From the light of reason, and the nature of the works themselves being so different; and, (2.) From experience. Some men are fitted by gifts for the dispensation of the word and doctrine in a way of pastoral feeding who have no useful ability for the work of rule, and some are fitted for rule who have no gifts for the discharge of the pastoral work in preaching; yea, it is very seldom that both these sorts of gifts do concur in any eminency in the same person, or without some notable defect. Those who are ready to assume all things unto themselves are, for the most part, fit for nothing at all. And hence it is that most of those who esteem both these works to belong principally unto themselves do almost totally decline the one, or that of pastoral preaching, under a pretence of attending unto the other, that is, rule, in a very preposterous way; for they omit that which is incomparably the greater and more worthy for that which is less and inferior unto it, although it should be attended unto in a due manner.

But this, and sundry other things of the like nature, proceed from the corruption of that traditional notion, which is true in itself and continued among all sorts of Christians, namely, that there ought to be some on whom the rule of the church is in an especial manner incumbent, and whose principal work it is to attend thereunto; for the great deprivations of all church-government proceed from the corruption and abuse of this notion, which in itself and its original is true and sacred. Herein also, “Malum habitat in alieno fundo;” there is no corruption in church order or rule but is corruptly derived from or set up as an image of some divine institution.

4. The work of rule, as distinct from teaching, is in general to watch over the walking or conversation of the members of the church with authority, exhorting, comforting, admonishing, reproving, encouraging, directing of them, as occasion shall require. The gifts necessary hereunto are diligence, wisdom, courage, and gravity; as we shall see afterward. The pastoral work is principally to “declare the whole counsel of God,” to “divide the word aright,” or to “labour in the word and doctrine,” both as unto the general dispensation and particular application of it, in all seasons and on all occasions. Hereunto spiritual wisdom, knowledge, sound judgment, experience, and utterance, are required, all to be improved by continual
study of the word and prayer. But this difference of gifts unto these
distinct works doth not of itself constitute distinct offices, because the
same persons may be meetly furnished with those of both sorts.

5. Yet distinct works and duties, though some were furnished
with gifts for both, were a ground, in the wisdom of the Holy Ghost,
for distinct offices in the church, where one sort of them was as
much as those of one office could ordinarily attend unto, Acts vi.
2–4. Ministration unto the poor of the church for the supply of
their temporal necessities is an ordinance of Christ. For the adm-
istration hereof the apostles were furnished with gifts and wisdom
above all others; but yet, because there was another part of their
work and duty superior hereunto, and of greater necessity unto the
propagation of the gospel and edification of the church,—namely, a
diligent attendance unto the word and prayer,—the wisdom of the
Holy Ghost in them thought meet to erect a new office in the church
for the discharge of that part of the ministerial duty, which was to
be attended unto, yet not so as to be any obstruction unto the other.
I do not observe this as if it were lawful for any others after them
to do the same,—namely, upon a supposition of an especial work to
erect an especial office. Only, I would demonstrate from hence the
equity and reasonable ground of that institution, which we shall
afterward evince.

6. The work of the ministry in prayer and preaching of the
word, or labour in the word and doctrine, wherunto the administra-
tion of the seals of the covenant is annexed, with all the duties that
belong unto the especial application of these things (before insisted
on) unto the flock, are ordinarily sufficient to take up the whole man,
and the utmost of their endowments who are called unto the pastoral
office in the church. The very nature of the work in itself is such
as that the apostle, giving a short description of it, adds, as an inti-
mation of its greatness and excellency, "Who is sufficient for these
things?" 2 Cor. ii. 16. And the manner of its performance adds
unto its weight; for,—not to mention that intension of mind, in the
exercise of faith, love, zeal, and compassion, which is required of
them in the discharge of their whole office,—the diligent consideration
of the state of the flock, so as to provide spiritual food convenient for
them, with a constant attendance unto the issues and effects of the
word in the consciences and lives of men, is enough, for the most
part, to take up their whole time and strength.

It is gross ignorance or negligence that occasioneth any to be
otherwise minded. As the work of the ministry is generally dis-
charged, as consisting only in a weekly provision of sermons and the
performance of some stated offices by reading, men may have time and
liberty enough to attend unto other occasions; but in such persons we
are not at present concerned. Our rule is plain, 1 Tim. iv. 12–16.
7. It doth not hence follow that those who are called unto the
ministry of the word, as pastors and teachers, who are elders also, are
divested of the right of rule in the church, or discharged from the
exercise of it, because others not called unto their office are appointed
to be assistant unto them, that is, helps in the government; for the
right and duty of rule is inseparable from the office of elders, which
all bishops or pastors are. The right is still in them, and the exer-
cise of it, consistently with their more excellent work, is required of
them. So was it in the first institution of the sanhedrim in the
church of Israel, Exod. xviii. 17–23. Moses had before the sole rule
and government of the people. In the addition that was made of
an eldership for his assistance, there was no diminution of his right
or the exercise of it according to his precedent power. And the
apostles, in the constitution of elders in every church, derogated no-	hing from their own authority, nor discharged themselves of their
care. So when they appointed deacons to take care of supplies for
the poor, they did not forego their own right nor the exercise of their
duty, as their other work would permit them, Gal. ii. 9, 10; and in
particular, the apostle Paul manifested his concernment herein in
the care he took about a collection for the poor in all churches.

8. As we observed at the entrance of this chapter, the whole
work of the church, as unto authoritative teaching and rule, is com-
mitted unto the elders; for authoritative teaching and ruling is
teaching and ruling by virtue of office, and this office whereunto
they do belong is that of elders, as it is undeniably attested, Acts
xx. 17, etc. All that belongs unto the care, inspection, oversight,
rule, and instruction of the church, is committed unto the elders of
it expressly; for “elders” is a name derived from the Jews, denoting
them that have authority in the church. The first signification of
the word, in all languages, respects age. Elders are old men, well
stricken in years; unto whom respect and reverence is due by the
law of nature and Scripture command, unless they forfeit their pri-
vilege by levity or wickedness,—which they often do. Now, ancient
men were originally judged, if not the only, yet the most meet for rule,
and were before others constantly called thereunto. Hence the name
of “elders” was appropriated unto them who did preside and rule over
others in any kind.

Only, it may be observed that there is in the Scripture no men-
tion of rulers that are called elders, but such as are in a subordinate
power and authority only. Those who were in supreme, absolute
power, as kings and princes, are never called “elders;” but elders
by office were such only as had ministerial power under others.
Wherefore, the highest officers in the Christian church being called
elders, even the apostles themselves, and Peter in particular, 1 Epist.
v. 1, 2, it is evident that they have only a ministerial power; and so
it is declared, verse 4. The pope would now scarce take it well to be esteemed only an elder of the church of Rome, unless it be in the same sense wherein the Turkish monarch is called the Grand Seignior. But those who would be in the church above elders have no office in it, whatever usurpation they may make over it.

9. To the complete constitution of any particular church, or the perfection of its organical state, it is required that there be many elders in it, at least more than one. In this proposition lies the next foundation of the truth which we plead for; and therefore it must be distinctly considered. I do not determine what their number ought to be, nor is it determinable, as unto all churches; for the light of nature sufficiently directs that it is to be proportioned unto the work and end designed. Where a church is numerous, there is a necessity of increasing their number proportionably unto their work. In the days of Cyprian there were in the church of Carthage ten or twelve of them, that are mentioned by name; and at the same time there were a great many in the church of Rome, under Cæcilius. Where the churches are small, the number of elders may be so also; for no office is appointed in the church for pomp or show, but for labour only, and so many are necessary in each office as are able to discharge the work which is allotted unto them. But that church, be it small or great, is not complete in its state, is defective, which hath not more elders than one, which hath not so many as are sufficient for their work.

10. The government of the church, in the judgment and practice of some, is absolutely democratical or popular. They judge that all church power or authority is seated and settled in the community of the brethren, or body of the people; and they look on elders or ministers only as servants of the church, not only materially in the duties they perform, and finally for their edification, serving for the good of the church in the things of the church, but formally also, as acting the authority of the church by a mere delegation, and not any of their own received directly from Christ by virtue of his law and institution. Hence they do occasionally appoint persons among themselves, not called unto, not vested with any office, to administer the supper of the Lord, or any other solemn office of worship. On this principle and supposition I see no necessity for any elders at all, though usually they do confer this office on some with solemnity. But as among them there is no direct necessity of any elders for rule, so we treat not at present concerning them.

11. Some place the government of many particular churches in a diocesan bishop, with those that act under him and by his authority, according unto the rule of the canon law and the civil constitution of the land. These are so far from judging it necessary that
there should be many elders for rule in every particular church, as that they allow no rule in them at all, but only assert a rule over them. But a church where there is no rule in itself, to be exercised in the name of Christ by its own rulers, officers, guides, immediately presiding in it, is unknown to Scripture and antiquity. Wherefore with these we deal not in this discourse, nor have any apprehension that the power of presenting men, for any pretended disorder, unto the bishop’s or chancellor’s court is any part of church power or rule.

12. Others place the rule of particular churches, especially in cases of greatest moment, in an association, conjunction, or combination of all the elders of them in one society; which is commonly called a classis. So in all acts of rule there will be a conjunct acting of many elders. And no doubt it is the best provision that can be made, on a supposition of the continuance of the present parochial distribution. But those also of this judgment who have most weighed and considered the nature of these things, do assert the necessity of many elders in every particular church; which is the common judgment and practice of the reformed churches in all places.

13. And some there are who begin to maintain that there is no need of any more but one pastor; bishop, or elder in a particular church, which hath its rule in itself, other elders for rule being unnecessary. This is a novel opinion, contradictory to the sense and practice of the church in all ages; and I shall prove the contrary.

(1.) The pattern of the first churches constituted by the apostles, which it is our duty to imitate and follow as our rule, constantly expresseth and declares that many elders were appointed by them in every church, Acts xi. 30, xiv. 23, xv. 2, 4, 6, 22, xvi. 4, xx. 17, etc.; 1 Tim. v. 17; Phil. i. 1; Tit. i. 5; 1 Pet. v. 1. There is no mention in the Scripture, no mention in antiquity, of any church wherein there were not more elders than one; nor doth that church answer the original pattern where it is otherwise.

(2.) Where there is but one elder in a church, there cannot be an eldership or presbytery, as there cannot be a senate where there is but one senator; which is contrary unto 1 Tim. iv. 14.

(3.) The continuation of every church in its original state and constitution is, since the ceasing of extraordinary offices and powers, committed to the care and power of the church itself. Hereunto the calling and ordaining of ordinary officers, pastors, rulers, elders, teachers, do belong; and therein, as we have proved, both the election of the people, submitting themselves unto them in the Lord, and the solemn setting of them apart by imposition of hands, do concur. But if there be but one elder only in a church, upon his death or removal, this imposition of hands must either be left unto the people, or be supplied by elders of other churches, or be wholly

VOL. XVI.
omitted; all which are irregular: and that church-order is defective which wants the symbol of authoritative ordination.

(4.) It is difficult, if not impossible, on a supposition of one elder only in a church, to preserve the rule of the church from being pre-latical or popular. There is nothing more frequently objected unto those who dissent from diocesan bishops, than that they would every one be bishops in their own parishes and unto their own people. All such pretences are excluded on our principles, of the liberty of the people, of the necessity of many elders in the same church in an equality of power, and the communion of other churches in association; but practically, where there is but one elder, one of the extremes can hardly be avoided. If he rule by himself, without the previous advice, in some cases, as well as the subsequent consent of the church, it hath an eye of unwarrantable prelacy in it. If every thing be to be originally transacted, disposed, ordered by the whole society, the authority of the elder will quickly be insignificant, and he will be little more, in point of rule, than any other brother of the society. But all these inconveniencies are prevented by the fixing of many elders in each church, which may maintain the authority of the presbytery, and free the church from the despotical rule of any Diotrephes. But in case there be but one in any church, unless he have wisdom to maintain the authority of the eldership in his own person and actings, there is no rule, but confusion.

(5.) The nature of the work whereunto they are called requires that, in every church consisting of any considerable number of members, there should be more elders than one (when God first appointed rule in the church under the old testament, he assigned unto every ten persons or families a distinct ruler, Deut. i. 15); for the elders are to take care of the walk or conversation of all the members of the church, that it be according unto the rule of the gospel. This rule is eminent, as unto the holiness that it requires, above all other rules of moral conversation whatever; and there is, in all the members of the church, great accuracy and circumspection required in their walking after it and according unto it. The order also and decency which is required in all church-assemblies stands in need of exact care and inspection. That all these things can be attended unto and discharged in a due manner in any church, by one elder, is for them only to suppose who know nothing of them. And although there may be an appearance for a season of all these things in such churches, yet, there being not therein a due compliance with the wisdom and institution of Christ, they have no present beauty, nor will be of any long continuance.

These considerations, as also those that follow, may seem jejune and contemptible unto such as have another frame of church rule and order drawn in their minds and interests. A government vested
in some few persons, with titles of pre-eminence, and legal power, exercised in courts with coercive jurisdiction, by the methods and processes of canons of their own framing, is that which they suppose doth better become the grandeur of church-rulers and the state of the church than these creeping elders with their congregations. But whereas our present inquiry after these things is only in and out of the Scripture, wherein there is neither shadow nor appearance of any of these practices, I beg their pardon if at present I consider them not.

We shall now make application of these things unto our present purpose. I say, then,—1. Whereas there is a work of rule in the church distinct from that of pastoral feeding; and, 2. Whereas this work is to be attended unto with diligence, which includes the whole duty of him that attends unto it; and, 3. Whereas the ministry of the word and prayer, with all those duties that accompany it, is a full employment for any man, and so, consequently, his principal and proper work, which it is unlawful for him to be remiss in by attending on another with diligence; and, 4. Whereas there ought to be many elders in every church, that both the works of teaching and ruling may be constantly attended unto; and, 5. Whereas, in the wisdom of the Holy Ghost, distinct works did require distinct offices for their discharge (all which we have proved already), our inquiry hereon is,—

Whether the same Holy Spirit hath not distinguished this office of elders into these two sorts,—namely, those who are called unto teaching and rule also, and those who are called unto rule only? which we affirm.

The testimonies whereby the truth of this assertion is confirmed are generally known and pleaded. I shall insist on some of them only, beginning with that which is of uncontrollable evidence, if it had any thing to conflict withal but prejudices and interest; and this is 1 Tim. v. 17: Οἱ καλῶς προεστῶτες πρεσβύτεροι ὑπάρχησιν ἀξιόσωμοι, μᾶλτα οἱ κοσμίωτες ἐν λόγῳ καὶ διδασκαλίᾳ. Πρεσβύτης, or πρεσβύταμοι, is "presum, presideo," to preside, to rule: "President probati seniores," Tertul. And the bishop or pastor in Justin Martyr is οἱ πρεσβυτταῖς. So is the word constantly used in the New Testament: Rom. xii. 8, "Ο πρεσβύταμοι, —"That ruleth;" 1 Thess. v. 12, Πρεσβύταμοις ὑμῖν,—"That are over you," that is, in place of rule; 1 Tim. iii. 4, 5, 12, it is applied unto family rule and government; as it is also unto care and diligence about good works, Tit. iii. 8, 14. Πρεσβύτας is the whole presidency in the church, with respect unto its rule. Translators agree in the reading of these words: so the Hebrew of Munster, מנהיגים, מיושנים ההליגה, —"The elders of the congregation who well discharge their rule or conduct," so the Syriac, מנהיגים, מנהיגים, —"Those elders," "Qui bene præsunt presby-
teri," Vulg. Lat.; "Seniori che governano bene," Ital. All agree that it is the governors and government of the church in general that are here intended. **Mâliôta** is the word most controverted; all translators esteem it distinctive: Heb. **לֹ֥א עָלֶ֖ים,** "eminently;" Syr. **חִינֶהָן,** "chiefly, principally;" "maxime;" **καὶ ἄλλοι** — "who labour painfully," labour to weariness, travail in the word and doctrine.

"The elders, or presbyters in office, elders of the church, that rule well, or discharge their presidency for rule in due manner, are to be counted worthy, or ought to be reputed worthy, of double honour, especially those of them who labour or are engaged in the great labour and travail of the word and doctrine."

And some things may be observed in general concerning these words:—

1. This testimony relates directly unto the **rules and principles** before laid down, directing unto the practice of them. According unto the analogy of those principles these words are to be interpreted; and unless they are overthrown, it is to no purpose to put in exceptions against the sense of this or that word. The interpretation of them is to be suited unto the analogy of the things which they relate unto. If we consider not what is spoken here in consent with other scriptures treating of the same matter, we depart from all sober rules of interpretation.

2. On this supposition, the words of the text have a **plain and obvious signification,** which at first view presents itself unto the common sense and understanding of all men; and where there is nothing contrary unto any other divine testimony or evident reason, such a sense is constantly to be embraced. There is nothing here of any spiritual mystery; but only a direction concerning outward order in the church. In such cases the literal sense of the words, rationally apprehended, is all that we are concerned in. But on the first proposal of this text, "That the elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, especially those who labour in the word and doctrine," a rational man who is unprejudiced, who never heard of the controversy about ruling elders, can hardly avoid an apprehension that there are two sorts of elders, some that labour in the word and doctrine, and some who do not so do. The truth is, it was interest and prejudice that first caused some learned men to strain their wits to find out evasions from the evidence of this testimony. Being so found out, some others of meaner abilities have been entangled by them; for there is not one new argument advanced in this cause, not one exception given in unto the sense of the place which we plead for, but what was long since coined by Papists and Prelatists, and managed with better colours than some now are able to lay on them who pretend unto the same judgment.

3. This is the substance of the truth in the text:—There are
elders in the church; there are or ought to be so in every church. With these elders the whole rule of the church is intrusted; all these, and only they, do rule in it. Of these elders there are two sorts; for a description is given of one sort distinctive from the other, and comparative with it. The first sort doth rule and also labour in the word and doctrine. That these works are distinct and different was before declared; yet as distinct works they are not incompatible, but are committed unto the same person. They are so unto them who are not elders only, but moreover pastors or teachers. Unto pastors and teachers, as such, there belongs no rule; although by the institution of Christ the right of rule be inseparable from their office, for all that are rightfully called thereunto are elders also, which gives them an interest in rule. They are elders, with the addition of pastoral or teaching authority. But there are elders which are not pastors or teachers; for there are some who rule well, but labour not in the word and doctrine,—that is, who are not pastors or teachers.

Elders that rule well, but labour not in the word and doctrine, are ruling elders only; and such are they in the text.

The most learned of our protestant adversaries in this case are Erastus, Bilson, Saravia, Downham, Scultetus, Mede, Grotius, Hammond; who agree not at all among themselves about the sense of the words: for,—

1. Their whole design and endeavour is to put in exceptions against the obvious sense and interpretation of the words, not fixing on any determinate exposition of it themselves, such as they will abide by in opposition unto any other sense of the place. Now, this is a most sophistical way of arguing upon testimonies, and suited only to make controversies endless. Whose wit is so barren as not to be able to raise one exception or other against the plainest and most evident testimony? So the Socinians deal with us in all the testimonies we produce to prove the deity or satisfaction of Christ. They suppose it enough to evade their force if they can but pretend that the words are capable of another sense, although they will not abide by it that this or that is their sense; for if they would do so, when that is overthrown, the truth would be established. But every testimony of the Scripture hath one determinate sense. When this is contended about, it is equal that those at difference do express their apprehensions of the mind of the Holy Spirit in the words which they will abide by. When this is done, let it be examined and tried whether of the two senses pretended unto doth best comply with the signification and use of the words, the context or scope of the place, other Scripture testimonies, and the analogy of faith. No such rule is attended unto in this case by our adversaries. They think it enough to oppose our sense of the words, but will not fix upon any of their own, which if it be disproved, ours ought to take place. And hence,—
2. They do not in the least agree among themselves, scarce any two of them, on what is the most probable sense of the words, nor are any of them singly well resolved what application to make of them, nor unto what persons, but only propose things as their conjecture. But of very many opinions or conjectures that are advanced in this case, all of them but one are accompanied with the modesty of granting that divers sorts of elders are here intended; which, without more than ordinary confidence, cannot be denied. But,—

Some, by "elders that rule well," do understand bishops that are diocesans; and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine," ordinary preaching presbyters; which plainly gives them the advantage of pre-eminence, reverence, and maintenance, above the others!

Some, by "elders that rule well," understand ordinary bishops and presbyters; and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine," evangelists; so carrying the text out of the present concernment of the church. Deacons are esteemed by some to have an interest in the rule of the church, and so to be intended in the first place, and preaching ministers in the latter.

Some speak of two sorts of elders, both of the same order, or ministers; some that preach the word and administer the sacraments; and others that are employed about inferior offices, as reading and the like: which is the conceit of Scultetus.

Mr Mede weighs most of these conjectures, and at length prefers one of his own before them all,—namely, that by "elders that rule well" civil magistrates are intended, and by "those that labour in the word and doctrine" the ministers of the gospel.

But some, discerning the weakness and improbability of all these conjectures, and how easily they may be disproved, betake themselves unto a direct denial of that which seems to be plainly asserted in the text, namely, that there are two sorts of elders here intended and described; which they countenance themselves in by exception unto the application of some terms in the text, which we shall immediately consider.

Grotius, as was before intimated, disputes against the divine institution of such temporary, lay-elders as are made use of in sundry of the reformed churches: but when he hath done, he affirms that it is highly necessary that such conjunct associates in rule from among the people should be in every church; which he proves by sundry arguments. And these he would have either nominated by the magistrate or chosen by the people.

Wherefore, omitting all contests about the forementioned conceits, or any other of the likeneature, I shall propose one argument from these words, and vindicate it from the exceptions of those of the latter sort.

Preaching elders, although they rule well, are not worthy of double honour, unless they labour in the word and doctrine;
But there are elders who rule well that are worthy of double honour, though they do not labour in the word and doctrine:

Therefore there are elders that rule well who are not teaching or preaching elders,—that is, who are ruling elders only.

The proposition is evident in its own light, from the very terms of it; for to preach is to “labour in the word and doctrine.” Preaching or teaching elders, that do not labour in the word and doctrine, are preaching or teaching elders that do not preach or teach. And to say that preachers, whose office and duty it is to preach, are worthy of that double honour which is due on the account of preaching, though they do not preach, is uncouth and irrational. It is contrary to the Scripture and the light of nature, as implying a contradiction, that a man whose office it is to teach and preach should be esteemed worthy of double honour on the account of his office, who doth not as an officer teach or preach.

The assumption consists upon the matter in the very words of the apostle; for he who says, “The elders who rule well are worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine,” saith there are, or may be, elders who rule well who do not labour in the word and doctrine,—that is, who are not obliged so to do.

The argument from these words may be otherwise framed, but this contains the plain sense of this testimony.

Sundry things are excepted unto this testimony and our application of it. Those which are of any weight consist in a contest about two words in the text, μάλιστα and κοσμίσατε. Some place their confidence of evasion in one of them, and some in another, the argument from both being inconsistent. If that sense of one of these words which is pleaded as a relief against this testimony be embraced, that which unto the same purpose is pretended to be the sense of the other must be rejected. Such shifts doth an opposition unto the truth put men to.

Some say that μάλιστα, “especially,” is not distinctive, but descriptive only; that is, it doth not distinguish one sort of elders from another, but only describes that single sort of them by an adjunct of their office, whereof the apostle speaks. The meaning of it, they say, is, as much as, or seeing that: “The elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, seeing that they also labour,” or “especially considering that they labour,” etc.

That this is the sense of the word, that it is thus to be interpreted, must be proved from the authority of ancient translations, or the use of it in other places of the New Testament, or from its precise signification and application in other authors learned in this language, or that it is enforced from the context or matter treated of.

But none of these can be pretended.

1. The rendering of the word in old translations we have be-
fore considered. They agree in “maxime illi qui,” which is distinctive.

2. The use of it in other places of the New Testament is constantly distinctive, whether applied to things or persons: Acts xx. 38, ὑπονόμωνα μάλιστα ἐπὶ τῷ λόγῳ,—“Sorrowing chiefly at the word” of seeing his face no more. Their sorrow herein was distinct from all their other trouble. Gal. vi. 10, “Let us do good unto all, μάλιστα δὲ πρὸς τοὺς οἰκείους τῆς πίστεως,”—“but chiefly,” especially, “unto the household of faith.” It puts a distinction between the household of faith and all others, by virtue of their especial privilege; which is the direct use of the word in that place of the same apostle, Phil. iv. 22, “All the saints salute you, μάλιστα δὲ οἱ ἐν τῆς Καίσαρος οἰκίας,”—“especially they that are of Cæsar’s house.” Two sorts of saints are plainly expressed,—first, such as were so in general; such as were so also, but under this especial privilege and circumstance, that they were of Cæsar’s house, which the others were not. So it is here with respect unto elders: all “rule well,” but some moreover “labour in the word and doctrine.” 1 Tim. v. 8, Ἐὰν δὲ τις τῶν ἰδίων, καὶ μάλιστα τῶν οἰκίων οὐ σφένει—“If a man provide not for his own, especially those of his own house,” especially children or servants, which live in his own house, and are thereby distinguished from others of a more remote relation. 2 Tim. iv. 13, “Bring the books, μάλιστα τὰς μεμελερήνας,”—“especially the parchments;” not because they are parchments, but among the books, the parchments in particular and in an especial manner. 2 Pet. ii. 9, 10, “The Lord knoweth how to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished, μάλιστα δὲ τοὺς ὀπίσω σαρκός,” etc.,—“especially those that walk after the flesh,” who shall be singled out to exemplary punishment. It is but once more used in the New Testament, namely, Acts xxvi. 3, where it includes a distinction in the thing under consideration.

Whereas this is the constant use of the word in the Scripture (being principally used by this apostle in his writings), wherein it is distinctive and comparative of the things and persons that respect is had unto, it is to no purpose to pretend that it is here used in another sense or is otherwise applied, unless they can prove from the context that there is a necessity of their peculiar interpretation of it.

3. The use of the word in other authors is concurrent with that of it in the Scripture: Herodian, lib. ii. cap. xxviii., Φιλίφερτοι δὲ φόβοι Σάρων δὲν μάλιστα οἱ τὴν Ἀντίοχειαν κατοικοῦντες, κ.τ.λ.—“The Syrians are naturally lovers of festivals, especially they that dwell at Antioch.” It is the same phrase of speech with that here used; for all they that dwelt at Antioch were Syrians, but all the Syrians dwelt not at Antioch. There is a distinction and distribution made of the Syrians into two sorts,—such as were Syrians only, and such as, being Syrians,
dwell at Antioch, the metropolis of the country. If a man should say that all Englishmen were stout and courageous, especially the Londoners, he would both affirm the Londoners to be Englishmen and distinguish them from the rest of their countrymen. So, all that labour in the word and doctrine are elders. But all elders do not labour in the word and doctrine, nor is it their duty so to do; these we call “ruling elders,” and, as I judge, rightly.

4. The sense which the words will give, being so interpreted as that a distinction of elders is not made in them, is absurd, the subject and predicate of the proposition being terms convertible. It must be so if the proposition be not allowed to have a distinction in it. “One sort of elders only,” it is said, “is here intended.” I ask who they are, and of what sort? It is said, “The same with pastors and teachers, or ministers of the gospel;” for if the one sort of elders intended be of another sort, we obtain what we plead for as fully as if two sorts were allowed. Who, then, are these elders, these pastors and teachers, these ministers of the church? are they not those who labour in the word and doctrine? “Yes,” it will be said, “it is they, and no other.” Then this is the sense of the words, “Those who labour in the word and doctrine, that rule well, are worthy of double honour, especially if they labour in the word and doctrine;” for if there be but one sort of elders, then “elders” and “those that labour in the word and doctrine” are terms convertible. But “elders” and “labour in the word and doctrine” are subject and predicate in this proposition.

Wherefore there are few of any learning or judgment that make use of this evasion; but, allowing a distinction to be made, they say that it is as to work and employment, and not as unto office,—those who, in the discharge of their office as elders, do so labour as is intended and included in the word κοπίων, which denotes a peculiar kind of work in the ministry. Yea, say some, “This word denotes the work of an evangelist, who was not confined unto any one place, but travelled up and down the world to preach the gospel.” And those of this mind do allow that two sorts of elders are intended in the words. Let us see whether they have any better success in this their conjecture than the others had in the former answer.

1. I grant that κοπίων, the word here used, signifies to labour with pains and diligence, “ad ultimum virium, usque ad fatigationem,”—unto the utmost of men’s strength, and unto weariness. But,—

2. So to labour in the word and doctrine is the duty of all pastors and teachers, and whosoever doth not so labour is negligent in his office, and worthy of severe blame instead of double honour: for,—

(1.) Κόστος, whence is κοπίων, is the labour of a minister, and so of any minister in his work of teaching and preaching the gospel: 1 Cor. iii. 8, “Εκκλησίας δὲ τὸν Ἁγίον μισθὸν λήψεται κατὰ τὸν Ἁγίον κόστον”—“Every one” (that is, every one employed in the ministry, whether
to plant or to water, to convert men or to edify the church) "shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour." He that doth not strive, κοπιάν, in the ministry, shall never receive a reward κατὰ τὸν ἱδίου κόσμον, according to his own labour, and so is not worthy of double honour.

(2.) It is a general word, used to express the work of any in the service of God; whereon it is applied unto the prophets and teachers under the old testament: John iv. 38, "I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: ἐὰν συνεργάσω ὑμεῖς εἰς τὸν κόσμον αὐτῶν εἰσιληπθήσατε,"—"others have laboured, and ye have entered into their labours;" that is, of the prophets and John the Baptist. Yea, it is so unto the labour that women may take in the serving of the church: Rom. xvi. 6, "Salute Mary, ἡ τις πολλὰ ἐκοπιασα,―" who laboured much;" which is more than simply κοπιάν. Verse 12, "Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, τὰς κοπιώσας ἐν Κυρίῳ,"—"who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, ἡ τις πολλὰ ἐκοπιασαν ἐν Κυρίῳ,"—"who laboured much in the Lord." So wide from truth is it that this word should signify a labour peculiar to some sorts of ministers, which all are not in common obliged unto.

3. If the labour of evangelists, or of them who travelled up and down to preach the word, be intended, then it is so either because this is the proper signification of the word, or because it is constantly used elsewhere to express that kind of labour; but the contrary unto both of these is evident from all places wherein it is used. So is it expressly applied to fixed elders, 1 Thess. v. 12, "We exhort you, brethren, to know τῶς κοπιώντας ἐν ᾿Ημῖν,"—"them that labour among you," who are the rulers and instructors.

It is therefore evident that this word expresseth no more but what is the ordinary, indispensable duty of every teaching elder, pastor, or minister; and if it be so, then those elders,—that is, pastors or teachers,—that do not perform and discharge it are not worthy of double honour, nor would the apostle give any countenance unto them who were any way remiss or negligent, in comparison of others, in the discharge of their duty. See 1 Thess. v. 12.

There are, therefore, two sorts of duties confessedly here mentioned and commanded;—the first is, ruling well; the other, labouring in the word and doctrine. Suppose that both these, ruling and teaching, are committed to one sort of persons only, having one and the same office absolutely, then are some commended who do not discharge their whole duty, at least not comparatively unto others; which is a vain imagination. That both of them are committed unto one sort of elders, and one of them only unto another, each discharging its duty with respect unto its work, and so both worthy of honour, is the mind of the apostle.

[To] that which is objected from the following verse, namely, "That
OF THE RULE OF THE CHURCH, OR OF RULING ELDERS. 123

maintenance belongs unto this double honour, and so, consequently, that if there be elders that are employed in the work of rule only, maintenance is due unto them from the church," I answer, It is so, no doubt, if.—1. The church be able to make them an allowance; 2. If their work be such as to take up the whole or the greatest part of their industry; and, 3. If they stand in need of it;—without which considerations it may be dispensed withal, not only in them, but in teaching elders also.

Our next testimony is from the same apostle: Rom. xii. 6-8, "Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministry: or he that teacheth, on teaching; or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness."

Our argument from hence is this: There is in the church δ’ προιστάμενος, "one that ruleth." Προιστάμενος is "to rule with authority by virtue of office;" whence is προεστώς and προιστάμενος, one that presides over others with authority. For the discharge of their office, there is γεμίσαι διάφορον, a "differing peculiar gift," bestowed on some: "Εξουσίες γεμίσαι διάφορον, verse 6. And there is the especial manner prescribed for the discharge of this especial office, by virtue of that especial gift; εν στουδή, it is to be done with peculiar "diligence." And this ruler is distinguished from "him that exhorteth" and "him that teacheth," with whose especial work, as such, he hath nothing to do; even as they are distinguished from those who "give" and "show mercy;"—that is, there is an elder by office in the church, whose work and duty it is to rule, not to exhort nor teach ministerially; which is our ruling elder.

It is answered, "That the apostle doth not treat in this place of offices, functions, or distinct officers, but of differing gifts in all the members of the church, which they are to exercise according as their different nature doth require."

Sundry things I shall return hereunto, which will both explain the context and vindicate our argument:—

1. Those with whom we have to do principally allow no exercise of spiritual gifts in the church but by virtue of office. Wherefore, a distinct exercise of them is here placed in distinct officers, one, as we shall see, being expressly distinguished from another.

2. Give such a probable enumeration of the distinct offices in the church, which they assert, namely, of archbishops, bishops, presbyters, and chancellors, etc., and we shall yield the cause.

3. Gifts alone do no more, give no other warranty nor authority, but only render men meet for their exercise as they are called, and as occasion doth require. If a man hath received a gift of
teaching, but is not called to office, he is not obliged nor warranted thereby to attend on public teaching, nor is it required of him in a way of duty, nor given in charge unto him, as here it is.

4. There is in one "rule" required "with diligence." He is ἐπίσκοπος, a "ruler;" and it is required of him that he attend unto his work with diligence. And there are but two things required unto the confirmation of our thesis.—(1.) That this rule is an act of office-power; (2.) That he unto whom it is ascribed is distinguished from them unto whom the pastoral and other offices in the church are committed.

For the first, it is evident that rule is an act of office or of office-power: for it requires,—[1.] An especial relation; there is so between him that ruleth and them that are ruled; and this is the relation of office, or all confusion will ensue. [2.] Especial prelature. He that rules is over, is above them that are ruled: "Obey them that are over you in the Lord." This, in the church, cannot be in any but by virtue of office. [3.] Especial authority. All lawful rule is an act of authority; and there is no authority in the church but by virtue of office. Secondly, That this officer is distinct from all others in the church we shall immediately demonstrate, when we have a little farther cleared the context. Wherefore,—

5. It is confessed that respect is had unto gifts,—"Having differing gifts," verse 6,—as all office-power in the church is founded in them, Eph. iv. 7, 8, 11, 12. But gifts absolutely, with reference unto common use, are not intended, as in some other places; but they are spoken of with respect unto offices or functions, and the communication of them unto officers for the discharge of their office. This is evident from the text and context, with the whole design of the place; for,—

(1.) The analysis of the place directs unto this interpretation. Three sorts of duties are prescribed unto the church in this chapter,—[1.] Such as are universal, belonging absolutely unto all and every one that appertains unto it; which are declared, Rom. xii. 1, 2. [2.] Such as are peculiar unto some, by virtue of that especial place which they have in the church, verses 3–8. This can be nothing but office. [3.] Such as are general or common, with respect unto occasions, from verse 8 to the end of the chapter. Hence the same duty is doubly prescribed,—to some in way of especial office, to others in the way of a gracious duty in general. So here, "He that giveth, let him do it with simplicity," verse 8, is the same duty or work, for the substance of it, with "Distribution to the necessity of saints," verse 13. And the apostle doth not repeat his charge of the same duty, in so few words, as required in the same manner and of the same persons; but in the first place, he speaks of the manner of its performance by virtue of office, and in the latter of its discharge, as to the sub-
stance of it, as a grace in all believers. The design of the apostle lies plain in the analysis of this discourse.

(2.) The context makes the same truth evident; for,—

[1.] The whole ordinary public work of the church is distributed into προφητεία and διακονία,—"prophecy and ministry;" for the extraordinary gift of prophecy is not here intended, but only that of the interpretation of the Scripture, whose rule is the "analogy of faith:" Εἷς προφητείαν, κατὰ τὴν ἀνάλογον τῆς πίστεως. It is such prophecy as is to be regulated by the Scripture itself, which gives the "proportion of faith." And there is not any thing in any or both of these, prophecy and ministry, but it belongs unto office in the church; neither is there any thing belonging unto office in the church but may be reduced unto one of these, as they are all of them here by the apostle.

[2.] The gifts spoken of are, in general, referred unto all them who are intended. Now, these are either the whole church and all the members of it, or all the officers of the church only. Hence it is expressed in the plural number, "Εὐχώτες χαρίσματα, "We having;" that is, all we that are concerned herein. This cannot be "all of the church," for all the church have not received the gifts of prophecy and ministry; nor can any distinction be made of who doth receive them and who doth not but with respect unto office. And therefore,—

[3.] In the distribution which ensues of prophecy into exhorting and teaching, and of ministry into showing mercy, rule, and giving, having stated these gifts in general, in the officers in general, making distinct application of them unto distinct officers, he speaks in the singular number: 'Ο διδάσκων, ὃ παρακαλῶν, ὃ προεστάμενος—"He that teacheth, he that exhorteth, he that ruleth."

6. It is, then, evident that offices are intended, and it is no less evident that distinct offices are so, which was to be proved in the second place: for,—(1.) The distributive particle ἕτε, and the indicative article ὃ, prefixed unto each office in particular, do show them [to be] distinct, so far as words can do it. As by the particle ἕτε, "whether," they are distinguished in their nature, whether they be of this or that kind; so by the article prefixed to each of them in exercise, they are distinguished in their subjects. (2.) The operations, works, and effects ascribed unto these gifts, require distinct offices and functions in their exercise. And if the distribution be made unto all promiscuously, without respect unto distinct offices, it were the only way to bring confusion into the church, whereas, indeed, here is an accurate order in all church-administrations represented to us. And it is further evident that distinct offices are intended,—(1.) From the comparison made unto the members of the body, verse 4, "All members have not the same office;" the eye hath one, the ear hath
another. (2.) Each of the duties mentioned and given in charge is sufficient for a distinct officer, as is declared Acts vi. 1-4.

7. In particular; "He that ruleth" is a distinct officer,—an officer, because rule is an act of office or office-power; and he is expressly distinguished from all others. But say some, "'He that ruleth' is he that doth so, be who he will,—that is, the pastor or teacher, the teaching elder." But the contrary is evident:—(1.) He that says, "He that exhorteth," and then adds, "He that ruleth," having distinguished before between prophecy, whereunto exhortation doth belong, and ministry, whereof rule is a part, and prefixing the prepositive indicative article to each of them, doth as plainly put a difference between them as can be done by words. (2.) Rule is the principal work of him that ruleth, for he is to attend unto it ἐν σοφίᾳ, "with diligence,"—that is, such as is peculiar unto rule, in contradistinction unto what is principally required in other administrations. But rule is not the principal work of the pastor, requiring constant and continual attendance; for his labour in the word and doctrine is ordinarily sufficient for the utmost of his diligence and abilities.

8. We have, therefore, in this context, a beautiful order of things in and of the church,—all the duties of it, with respect unto its edification, derived from distinct differing spiritual gifts, exercised in and by distinct officers unto their peculiar ends, the distinction that is in the nature of those gifts, their use and end, being provided for in distinct subjects. The mind of no one man, at least ordinarily, is meet to be the seat and subject of all those differing gifts in any eminent degree. The person of no man being sufficient, meet, or able, to exercise them in a way of office towards the whole church, especially, "those who labour in the word and doctrine" being obliged to "give themselves wholly thereunto," and those that "rule" to attend thereto with "diligence," so many distinct works, duties, and operations, with the qualifications required in their discharge, being inconsistent in the same subject, all things are here distributed into their proper order and tendency unto the edification of the church. Every distinct gift, required to be exercised in a peculiar manner, unto the public edification of the church, is distributed unto peculiar officers, unto whom an especial work is assigned, to be discharged by virtue of the gifts received, unto the edification of the whole body. No man alive is able to fix on any thing which is necessary unto the edification of the church that is not contained in these distributions, under some of the heads of them; nor can any man find out any thing in these assignations of distinct duties unto distinct offices that is superfluous, redundant, or not directly necessary unto the edification of the whole, with all the parts and members of it; nor do I know any wise and sober man, who knows any thing how the duties enjoined are to be performed, with what care, diligence, circumspec-
tion, prayer, and wisdom, suited unto the nature, ends, and objects of them who can ever imagine that they can all of them belong unto one and the same office, or be discharged by one and the same person.

Let men advance any other church-order in the room of that here declared; so suited unto the principles of natural light, operations and duties of diverse natures, being distributed and assigned to such distinct gifts, acted in distinct offices, as renders those unto whom they are prescribed meet and able for them; so correspondent to all institutions, rules, and examples of church-order in other places of Scripture; so suited unto the edification of the church, wherein nothing which is necessary thereunto is omitted, nor any thing added above what is necessary,—and it shall be cheerfully embraced.

The truth is, the ground of the different interpretations and applications of this [text and] context of the apostle ariseth merely from the prejudice apprehensions that men have concerning the state of the church and its rule; for if the state of it be national or diocesan, if the rule of it be by arbitrary rules and canons, from an authority exerting itself in courts ecclesiastical, legal or illegal, the order of things here described by the apostle doth no way belong nor can be accommodated thereunto. To suppose that we have a full description and account in these words of all the offices and officers of the church, of their duty and authority, of all they have to do, and the manner how they are to do it, is altogether unreasonable and senseless, unto them who have another idea of church affairs and rule conceived in their minds, or received by tradition, and rivetted by interest. And, on the other hand, those who know little or nothing of what belongs unto the due edification of the church beyond preaching the word and reaping the advantage that is obtained thereby, cannot see any necessity of the distribution of these several works and duties unto several officers, but suppose all may be done well enough by one or two in the same office. Wherefore, it will be necessary that we treat briefly of the nature of the rule of the church in particular, and of what is required thereunto; which shall be done in the close of this discourse.

9. The exceptions which are usually put in unto this testimony have not the least countenance from the text or context, or the matter treated of, nor confirmation from any other divine testimony. It is therefore in vain to contend about them, being such as any man may multiply at his pleasure on the like occasion; and they are used by those who, on other considerations, are not willing that things should be as they are here declared to be by the apostle. Yet we may take a brief specimen of them. Some say it is gifts absolutely, without respect unto distinct offices, that the apostle treats of; which hath been disproved from the text and context before. Some say that rule is
included in the pastoral office, so as that the pastor only is here intended. But,—(1.) Rule is not his principal work, which he is to attend unto in a peculiar manner, with diligence above other parts of his duty. (2.) The care of the poor of the flock belongs also to the pastoral office, yet is there another officer appointed to attend unto it in a peculiar manner, Acts vi. 1–6. (3.) "He that ruleth" is in this place expressly distinguished from "him that exhorteth" and "him that teacheth." Some say that "He that ruleth" is he that ruleth his family; but this is disproved by the analysis of the chapter before declared; and this duty, which is common unto all that have families, and confined unto their families, is ill placed among those public duties which are designed unto the edification of the whole church. It is objected that "He that ruleth" is here placed after "Him that giveth,"—that is, the deacon; I say, then, it cannot be the pastor that is intended, if we may prescribe methods of expressing himself unto the apostle. But he useth his liberty, and doth not oblige himself unto any order in the annumeration of the offices of the church. See 1 Cor. xii. 8–10, 28. And some other exceptions are insisted on of the same nature and importance, which indeed deserve not our consideration.

10. There is the same evidence given unto the truth argued for in another testimony of the same apostle: 1 Cor. xii. 28, "God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues." I shall not insist on this testimony and its vindication in particular, seeing many things would be required thereunto which have been treated of already. Some things may be briefly observed concerning it. That there is here an annumeration of officers and offices in the church, both extraordinary, for that season, and ordinary, for continuance, is beyond exception. Unto them is added the present exercise of some extraordinary gifts, as "miracles, healings, tongues." That by "helps" the deacons of the church are intended, most do agree, because their original institution was as helpers in the affairs of the church. "Governments" are governors or rulers, the abstract for the concrete,—that is, such as are distinct from "teachers," such hath God placed in the church, and such there ought to be. But it is said "That gifts, not offices, are intended,—the gift of government, or gift for government." If so, then these gifts are either ordinary or extraordinary. If ordinary, how come they to be reckoned among "miracles, healings, and tongues"? If extraordinary, what extraordinary gifts for government were then given distinct from those of the apostles, and what instance is anywhere given of them in the Scripture? Again: if God hath given gifts for government to abide in the church, distinct from those given unto teachers, and unto other persons than the teachers, then is there a
distinct office of rule or government in the church; which is all we plead for.

11. The original order of these things is plain in the Scripture. The apostles had all church-power and church-office in themselves, with authority to exercise all acts of them everywhere on all occasions: but considering the nature of the church, with that of the rule appointed by the Lord Christ in it or over it, they did not, they would not, ordinarily exercise their power by themselves or in their own persons alone; and therefore, when the first church consisted of a small number, the apostles acted all things in it by the consent of the whole multitude, or the fraternity, as we have proved from Acts i. 15–26. And when the number of believers increased, so as that the apostles themselves could not in their own persons attend unto all the duties that were to be performed towards the church by virtue of office, they added, by the direction of the Holy Ghost, the office of the deacons, for the especial discharge of the duty which the church oweth unto its poor members. Whereas, therefore, it is evident that the apostles could no more personally attend unto the rule of the church, with all that belongs thereunto, without an intrenchment on that labour in the word and prayer which was incumbent on them, than they could attend unto the relief of the poor, they appointed elders to help and assist in that part of office-work, as the deacons did in the other.

These elders are first mentioned Acts xi. 30, where they are spoken of as those which were well known, and had now been of some time in the church. Afterward they are still mentioned in conjunction with the apostles, and in distinction from the church itself, Acts xv. 2, 4, 6, 22, xvi. 4, xxii. 18. Now, the apostles themselves were teaching elders,—that is, such as had the work of teaching and rule committed to them, 1 Pet. v. 1; 2 John 1,—and these elders are constantly distinguished from them; which makes it evident that they were not teaching elders: and therefore, in all the mention that is made of them, the work of teaching or preaching is nowhere ascribed unto them, which, at Jerusalem, the apostles reserved to themselves, Acts vi. 2–4; but they are everywhere introduced as joining with the apostles in the rule of the church, and that in distinction from the church itself, or the brethren of it. Yea, it is altogether improbable that whilst the apostles were at Jerusalem, giving themselves wholly unto the word and prayer, they should appoint in the same church many more teaching elders, though it is plain that the elders intended were many.

I shall add, for a close of all, that there is no sort of churches in being but are of this persuasion, that there ought to be rulers in the church that are not in "sacred orders," as some call them, or have no interest in the pastoral or ministerial office, as unto the dispensation.
of the word and administration of the sacraments; for as the govern-
ment of the Roman church is in the hands of such persons in a great
measure, so in the church of England much of the rule of it is
managed by chancellors, officials, commissaries, and the like officers,
who are absolutely laymen, and not at all in their holy orders.
Some would place the rule of the church in the civil magistrate, who
is the only ruling elder, as they suppose. But the generality of all
Protestant churches throughout the world, both Lutheran and Re-
formed, do, both in their judgment and practice, assert the necessity
of the ruling elders which we plead for; and their office lies at the
foundation of all their order and discipline, which they cannot forego
without extreme confusion, yea, without the ruin of their churches.
And although some among us, considering particular churches only
as small societies, may think there is no need of any such office or
officers for rule in them, yet when such churches consist of some
thousands, without any opportunity of distributing themselves into
several congregations, as at Charenton in France, it is a weak ima-
gination that the rule of Christ can be observed in them by two or
three ministers alone. Hence, in the primitive times, we have in-
stances of ten, twenty, yea, forty elders, in a particular church; wherein
they had respect unto the institution under the old testament,
whereby each ten families were to have a peculiar ruler. However,
it is certain that there is such a reformation in all sorts of churches,
that there ought to be some attending unto rule that are not called
to labour in the word and doctrine.

CHAPTER VIII.

The nature of church polity or rule, with the duty of elders.

Having declared who are the rulers of the church, something
must be added concerning the rule itself which is to be exercised
therein. Hereof I have treated before in general; that which I now
design is what in particular respects them who are called unto rule
only, whereunto some considerations must be premised:—

I. There is power, authority, and rule, granted unto and residing
in some persons of the church, and not in the body of the fraternity
or community of the people. How far the government of the church
may be denominated democratical from the necessary consent of the
people unto the principal acts of it in its exercise, I shall not deter-
mine; but whereas this consent, and the liberty of it, are absolutely
necessary, according to the law of obedience unto Christ, which is
prescribed unto the church, requiring that all they do in compliance
therewith be voluntary, as unto the manner of its exercise, being in
dutiful compliance with the guidance of the rule, it changeth not the state of the government. And therefore, where any thing is acted and disposed in the church by suffrage, or the plurality of voices, the vote of the fraternity is not determining and authoritative, but only declarative of consent and obedience. It is so in all acts of rule where the church is organical or in complete order.

2. That there is such an authority and rule instituted by Christ in his church is not liable unto dispute. Where there are "bishops, pastors, elders, guides, rulers, stewards," instituted, given, granted, called, ordained; and some to be ruled, "sheep, lambs, brethren," obliged by command to "obey them, follow them, submit unto them in the Lord, regard them as over them,"—there is rule and authority in some persons, and that committed unto them by Jesus Christ; but all these things are frequently repeated in the Scripture. And when, in the practical part or exercise of rule, due respect is not had unto their authority, there is nothing but confusion and disorder. When the people judge that the power of the keys is committed unto them as such only, and in them doth the right of their use and exercise reside; that their elders have no interest in the disposing of church-affairs or in acts of church-power, but only their own suffrages, or what they can obtain by reasoning; and think there is no duty incumbent on them to acquiesce in their authority in any thing (an evil apt to grow in churches),—it overthrows all that beautiful order which Jesus Christ hath ordained. And if any shall take advantage of this complaint, that where the people have their due liberty granted unto them, they are apt to assume that power unto themselves which belongs not unto them, an evil attended with troublesome impertinencies and disorder, tending unto anarchy, let them remember, on the other hand, how, upon the confinement of power and authority unto the guides, bishops, or rulers of the church, they have changed the nature of church-power, and enlarged their usurpation, until the whole rule of the church issued in absolute tyranny. Wherefore, no fear of consequents that may ensue and arise from the darkness, ignorance, weakness, lusts, corruptions, or secular interests of men, ought to entice us unto the least alteration of the rule by any prudential provisions of our own.

3. This authority in the rulers of the church is neither autocratical or sovereign, nor nomothetical or legislative, nor despotical or absolute, but organical and ministerial only. The endless controversies which have sprung out of the mystery of iniquity, about an autocratical and monarchical government in the church, about power to make laws to bind the consciences of men, yea, to kill and destroy them, with the whole manner of the execution of this power, we are not concerned in. A pretence of any such power in the church is destructive of the kingly office of Christ, contrary to ex-
press commands of Scripture, and condemned by the apostles, Isa. xxxiii. 22; James iv. 12; Matt. xvii. 5, xxxiii. 8–11; Luke xxii. 25, 26; 2 Cor. i. 24; 1 Cor. iii. 21–23; 2 Cor. iv. 5; 1 Pet. v. 1–3.

4. As the rule of the church, in those by whom it is exercised, is merely ministerial, with respect unto the authority of Christ, his law, and the liberty of the church, wherewith he hath made it free, so in its nature it is spiritual, purely and only; so the apostle affirms expressly, 2 Cor. x. 4–6. For its object is spiritual,—namely, the souls and consciences of men, whereunto it extends, which no other human power doth; nor doth it reach those other concerns of men that are subject unto any political power. Its end is spiritual,—namely, the glory of God, in the guidance and direction of the minds and souls of men to live unto him, and come to the enjoyment of him. The law of it is spiritual, even the word, command, and direction of Christ himself alone. The acts and exercise of it, in binding and loosing, in remitting and retaining sin, in opening and shutting the kingdom of heaven, are all spiritual merely and only. Neither can there be an instance given of any thing belonging unto the rule of the church that is of another nature; yea, it is sufficient eternally to exclude any power or exercise of it, any act of rule or government, from any interest in church-affairs, that it can be proved to be carnal, political, despotic, of external operation, or not entirely spiritual.

5. The change of this government of the church fell out and was introduced gradually, upon an advantage taken from the unmeetness of the people to be laid under this spiritual rule; for the greatest part of them that made up Christian churches being become ignorant and carnal, that rule which consists in a spiritual influence on the consciences of men was no way able to retain them within the bounds of outward obedience, which was at last only aimed at. There was therefore another kind of rule and government judged necessary, to retain them in any order or decorum. And it must be acknowledged that where the members of the church are not in some degree spiritual, a rule that is merely spiritual will be of no great use unto them. But principally this change was introduced by those that were in possession of the rule itself, and that on two grounds:—(1.) Their unskilfulness in the management of this spiritual rule, or weariness of the duties which are required thereunto,—this made them willing to desert it,—with that perpetual labour and exercise of all sorts of graces which are required in it, and to embrace another more easy and more suited unto their inclinations. (2.) A desire of the secular advantages of profit, honour, and veneration, which tendered themselves unto them in another kind of rule. By these means was the original government of the church, which was of divine institution, utterly lost,
and a worldly domination introduced in the room thereof. But the brief delineation given of it before, with what shall now be added, will demonstrate sufficiently that all those disputes and contests which are in the world between the church of Rome and others about church power and rule are utterly foreign unto Christian religion.

I shall therefore briefly inquire into these three things:—1. What is the skill and polity that are required unto the exercise or administration of the government of the church; 2. What is the sole law and rule of it; 3. What are the acts and duties of it, what it is conversant about, especially those wherein the office of ruling elders doth take place:—

1. The polity of church-government, subjectively considered, is generally supposed to consist,—(1.) In a skill, learning, or understanding in the civil, and especially the canon law, with the additional canons accommodating that law unto the present state of things of the nation, to be interpreted according unto the general rules of it. (2.) Knowledge of and acquaintance with the constitution, power, jurisdiction, and practice, of some law-courts, which being, in their original, grant of power, manner of proceeding, pleas and censures, merely secular, are yet called ecclesiastical or spiritual. (3.) A good discretion to understand aright the extent of their power, with the bounds and limits of it; that on the one hand they let none escape whom they can reach by the discipline of their courts, and on the other not intrench so far on the civil power and the jurisdiction of other courts, according to the law of the land, as to bring themselves into charge or trouble. (4.) An acquaintance with the table of fees, that they may neither lose their own profit nor give advantage unto others to question them for taking more than their due. But in these things we are not at present concerned.

The skill, then, of the officers of the church for the government of it is a spiritual wisdom and understanding in the law of Christ for that end, with an ability to make application of it in all requisite instances, unto the edification of the whole church and all its members, through a ministerial exercise of the authority of Christ himself, and a due representation of his holiness, love, care, compassion, and tenderness, towards his church.

(1.) The sole rule and measure of the government of the church being the law of Christ,—that is, the intimation and declaration of his mind and will, in his institutions, commands, prohibitions, and promises,—an understanding herein, with wisdom from that understanding, is, and must be, the whole of the skill inquired after. How this wisdom is bestowed as a spiritual gift, how it is to be acquired in a way of duty, by prayer, meditation, and study of the word, hath been intimated before, and shall fully be declared in our discourse
of Spiritual Gifts. All decrees and decretals, canons and glosses, come properly in this matter under one title of them, namely, extravagant. The utmost knowledge of them and skill in them will contribute nothing unto this wisdom; neither are any sort of men more strangers unto it or unacquainted with it than they are, for the most part, who are eminently cunning in such laws and the jurisdiction of ecclesiastical courts. But wisdom in the knowledge of the will of Christ as revealed in the Scripture is that alone which is of use in the government of the church.

(2.) A part of this wisdom consisteth in an ability of mind to make application of the law of Christ, in all requisite instances, unto the edification of the church in general and all the members of it respectively. This wisdom is not notional only, but practical. It consists not in a speculative comprehension of the sense of the rule, or of the mind of Christ therein only, though that be required in the first place; but in an ability of mind to make application of it, whereunto diligence, care, watchfulness, and spiritual courage, are required. Some are to be admonished, some to be rebuked sharply, some to be cut off; in which and the like cases a spirit of government acting itself in diligence, boldness, and courage, is necessary. And this is one reason why the Lord Christ hath appointed many elders in each church, and those of several sorts; for it is seldom that any one man is qualified for the whole work of rule. Some may have a good understanding in the law of the church’s government, yet, through a natural tenderness and an insuperable kind of modesty, not be so ready and prompt for that part of this discipline which consists in reproofs and severity of censures. Some may not have so great an ability for the indagation of the sense of the law as others have, who yet, upon the knowledge of it being discovered unto them, have readiness and boldness in Christ to apply it as occasion doth require. All elders, therefore, in their variety of gifts, are to be helpful to each other in the common work which they are called unto. But such as are utterly destitute of these gifts are not called unto this work, nor to any part of it.

(3.) The power that is exercised herein is the power and authority of Christ, committed unto the elders: “Our authority, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for destruction,” 2 Cor. x. 8. It is granted unto the rulers of the church, not formally to reside in them, as the power of a king is in his own person, but ministerially and instrumentally only; for it must be the authority of Christ himself, whereby the consciences of men are spiritually affected with reference unto spiritual ends,—whereby they are bound or loosed in heaven and earth, have their sins remitted or retained. And the consideration hereof is that alone which gives a due regard

*See vol. iv. of the author’s works.*
unto the ministry of the church, in the discharge of their office, among them that desire to commend their consciences unto the Lord Christ in what they do.

(4.) The especial design of the rule of the church in its govern-
ment is, to represent the holiness, love, compassion, care, and author-
ity of Christ towards his church. This is the great end of rule in
the church, and of all the discipline which is to be exercised by
virtue thereof. Whilst this is not attended unto, when the officers
and rulers of the church do not endeavour, in all the actions of their
power and office, to set forth these virtues of Christ, to exemplify
that impression of them which he hath left in his laws and rule, with
the divine testimonies which he gave of them in his own person,
they utterly deviate from the principal end of all rule in the church.
For men to act herein in a way of domination, with a visible elation
of mind and spirit above their brethren; with anger, wrath, and pas-
sion; by rules, order, and laws of their own devising, without the
least consideration of what the Lord Christ requires, and what is the
frame of his heart towards all his disciples,—is to reflect the highest
dishonour imaginable upon Christ himself. He who comes into the
courts of the king in Westminster Hall, when filled with judges,
grave, learned, and righteous, must ordinarily be allowed to judge
of the king himself, his wisdom, justice, moderation, and clemency,
by the law which they proceed upon and their manner of the ad-
ministration of it. But God forbid that Christians should make a
judgment concerning the holiness, wisdom, love, and compassion of
Christ by the representation which, as is pretended, is made of him
and them in some courts wherein church rule and discipline is ad-
ministered! When any had offended of old, their censure by the
church was called the bewailing of them, 2 Cor. xii. 21; and that
because of the sorrow, pity, and compassion whereby, in that censure,
they evidenced the compassion of the Lord Christ towards the souls
of sinners. This is scarce answered by those pecuniary mulcts and
other penalties, which, with indignation and contempt, are inflicted
on such as are made offenders, whether they will or no. Certainly,
those who love the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity, and have a due
honour for the gospel, will, at one time or another, begin to think
meet that this stain of our religion should be washed away.

2. The rule and law of the exercise of power in the elders of the
church is the holy Scripture only. The Lord Christ is the only
lawgiver of the church; all his laws unto this end are recorded in
the Scripture; no other law is effectual, can oblige or operate upon
the objects or unto the ends of church-rule. If the church make a
thousand rules, or canons, or laws for government, neither any of
them, nor all of them in general, have any the least power to oblige
men unto obedience or compliance with them, but only so far as vir-
tually or materially they contain what is of the law of Christ, and
derive force from thence: as the judges in our courts of justice are
bound to judge and determine in all cases out of and according to
the law of the land; and when they do not, their sentence is of no
validity, but may and ought to be reversed. But if, wilfully or of
choice, they should introduce laws or rules not legally established in
this nation, judging according unto them, it would render them
highly criminal and punishable. It is no otherwise in the kingdom
of Christ and the rule thereof. It is by his law alone that rule is to
be exercised in it. There is nothing left unto the elders of the church
but the application of his laws and the general rules of them unto
particular cases and occasions. To make, to bring, to execute, any
other rules, laws, or canons, in the government of his church, is to
usurp on his kingly dominion, whereunto all legislative power in
the church is appropriate. Nor is it possible that any thing can fall
out in the church, that any thing can be required in the rule of it,
nor can any instance be given of any such thing, wherein, for the
ends of church-rule, there is, or can be, any more left unto the rulers
of it but only the application and execution of the laws of Christ.
Unto this application, to be made in a due manner, the wisdom and
skill before described is requisite, and that alone. Where there are
other laws, rules, or canons of the government of the church, and
where the administration of them is directed by laws civil or politi-
cal, there is a skill in them required unto that administration, as all
will confess. So is the wisdom we before described, and that alone,
necessary unto that rule of the church which the Lord Christ hath or-
dained; the instrument and means whereof is his word and law alone.

3. The matter of this rule about which it is conversant, and so the
acts and duties of it, may be reduced unto three heads:—

(1.) The admission and exclusion of members. Both these are
acts of church power and authority, which are to be exercised by the
elders only, in a church that is organical and complete in its officers.
There is that in them both which is founded in and warranted from
the light and law of nature and rules of equity. Every righteous
voluntary society, coalescing therein rightfully, upon known laws and
rules for the regulation of it unto certain ends, hath naturally a power
inherent in it, and inseparable from it, to receive into its incorpora-
tion such as, being meet for it, do voluntarily offer themselves there-
unto; as also to reject or withhold the privileges of the society from
such as refuse to be regulated by the laws of the society. This power
is inherent in the church essentially considered, antecedently unto
the instating of officers in it. By virtue of their mutual confedera-
tion, they may receive into the privileges of the society those that
are meet, and withdraw the same privileges from those that are un-
worthy. But in these actings of the church, essentially considered,
there is no exercise of the power of the keys as unto authoritative rule but what is merely doctrinal. There is in what it doth a declaration of the mind of Christ as unto the state of the persons whom they do receive or reject. But unto the church as organical, as there are elders or rulers instated in it according unto the mind of Christ, there is a peculiar authority committed for those acts of the admission and exclusion of members. Unto this end is the key of rule committed unto the elders of the church, to be applied with the consent of the whole society, as we shall see afterward.

(2.) The direction of the church, in all the members of it, unto the observance of the rule and law of Christ in all things, unto his glory and their own edification. And all these things may be reduced unto these four heads:—[1.] Mutual, intense, peculiar love among themselves, to be exercised continually in all the duties of it. [2.] Personal holiness, in gracious moral obedience. [3.] Usefulness towards the members of the same church, towards other churches, and all men absolutely, as occasion and opportunity do require. [4.] The due performance of all those duties which all the members of the church owe mutually unto each other, by virtue of that place and order which they hold and possess in the body. About these things is church-rule to be exercised; for they all belong unto the preservation of its being and the attainment of its ends.

(3.) Hereunto also belongs the disposal of the outward concernments of the church in its assemblies, and in the management of all that is performed in them, that "all things may be done decently and in order." The disposal of times, seasons, places, the way and manner of managing all things in church-assemblies, the regulation of speeches and actions, the appointment of seasons for extraordinary duties, according unto the general rules of the word and the reason of things from present circumstances, are acts of rule, whose right resides in the elders of the church.

These things being premised, we may consider what is the work and duty of that sort of elders which we have proved to be placed by Christ for rule in the church; for considering that which hath been spoken before concerning the pastoral office, or the duty of teaching elders of the church, and what hath now been added concerning its rule in general, I cannot but admire that any one man should have such a confidence in his own abilities as to suppose himself meet and able for the discharge of the duties of both sorts in the least church of Christ that can well be supposed. Yea, supposing more teaching elders in every church than one, yet if they are all and every one of them equally bound to give themselves unto the word and prayer, so as not to be diverted from that work by any inferior duties, if they are obliged to labour in the word and doctrine to the utmost of their strength continually, it will appear
at length to be necessary that there should be some whose peculiar office and duty is to attend unto rule with diligence. And the work of these elders consists in the things ensuing:

1. They are joined unto the teaching elders in all acts and duties of church-power for the rule and government of the church; such are those before declared. This is plain in the text, 1 Tim. v. 17. Both sorts of elders are joined and do concur in the same rule and all the acts of it, one sort of them labouring also in the word and doctrine. Of both sorts is the presbytery or eldership composed, wherein resides all church-authority. And in this conjunction, those of both sorts are every way equal, determining all acts of rule by their common suffrage. This gives order, with a necessary representation of authority, unto the church in its government.

2. They are, in particular, to attend unto all things wherein the rule or discipline of the church is concerned, with a due care that the commands of Christ be duly observed by and among all the members of the church. This is the substance of the rule which Christ hath appointed, whatever be pretended unto the contrary. Whatever is set up in the world in opposition unto it or inconsistent with it, under the name of the government of the church, is foreign unto the gospel. Church-rule is a due care and provision that the institutions, laws, commands, and appointments of Jesus Christ be duly observed, and nothing else. And hereof, as unto the duty of the elders, we may give some instances; as,—

(1.) To watch diligently over the ways, walking, and conversation of all the members of the church, to see that it be blameless, without offence, useful, exemplary, and in all things answering the holiness of the commands of Christ, the honour of the gospel, and the profession which in the world they make thereof; and upon the observation which they so make, in the watch wherein they are placed, to instruct, admonish, charge, exhort, encourage, comfort, as they see cause. And this are they to attend unto with courage and diligence.

(2.) To watch against all risings or appearances of such differences and divisions, on the account of things ecclesiastical or civil, as unto their names, rights, and proprieties in the world, as are contrary unto that love which the Lord Christ requireth in a peculiar and eminent manner to be found amongst his disciples. This he calls his own "new commandment," with respect unto his authority requiring it, his example first illustrating it in the world, and the peculiar fruits and effects of it which he revealed and taught. Wherefore, the due observance of this law of love, in itself and all its fruits, with the prevention, removal, or condemnation, of all that is contrary unto it, is that in which the rule of the church doth principally consist. And, considering the weakness, the passions, the temptations of men, the
mutual provocations and exasperations that are apt to fall out even among the best, the influence that earthly occasions are apt to have upon their minds, the frowardness sometimes of men's natural tempers, the attendance unto this one duty or part of rule requires the utmost diligence of them that are called unto it; and it is merely either the want of acquaintance with the nature of that law and its fruits which the Lord Christ requires among his disciples, or an undervaluation of the worth and glory of it in the church, or inadvertency unto the causes of its decays and of breaches made in it, or ignorance of the care and duties that are necessary unto its preservation, that induces men to judge that the work of an especial office is not required hereunto.

(3.) Their duty is to warn all the members of the church of their especial church-duties, that they be not found negligent or wanting in them. There are especial duties required respectively of all church-members, according unto the distinct talents, whether in things spiritual or temporal, which they have received. Some are rich, and some are poor; some are old, and some are young; some are in peace, some in trouble; some have received more spiritual gifts than others and have more opportunities for their exercise. It belongs unto the rule of the church that all be admonished, instructed, and exhorted to attend unto their respective duties, not only publicly in the preaching of the word, but personally as occasion doth require, according to the observation which those in rule do make of their forwardness or remissness in them. In particular, and in the way of instance, men are to be warned that they contribute unto the necessities of the poor and other occasions of the church, according unto the ability that God in his providence hath intrusted them withal, and to admonish them that are defective herein, in order to their recovery unto the discharge of this duty in such a measure as there may be an equality in the church, 2 Cor. viii. 14. And all other duties of an alike nature are they to attend unto.

(4.) They are to watch against the beginnings of any church-disorders, such as those that infested the church of Corinth, or any of the like sort, with remissness as unto [attending] the assemblies of the church and the duties of them, which some are subject unto, as the apostle intimates, Heb. x. 25. On the constancy and diligence of the elders in this part of their work and duty, the very being and order of the church do greatly depend. The want hereof hath opened a door unto all the troubles, divisions, and schisms, that in all ages have invaded and perplexed the churches of Christ from within themselves; and from thence also have decays in faith, love, and order insensibly prevailed in many, to the dishonour of Christ and the danger of their own souls. First one grows remiss in attending unto the assemblies of the church, and then another, first to one degree, then to another,
until the whole lump be infected. A diligent watch over these 
things, as to the beginnings of them, in all the members of 
the church, will either heal and recover them that offend, or it will warn 
others, and keep the church from being either corrupted or defiled, 
Heb. iii. 12, xii. 15.

(5.) It belongs unto them also to visit the sick; especially such as 
whose inward or outward conditions do expose them unto more than 
ordinary trials in their sickness; that is, the poor, the afflicted, the 
tempted in any kind. This in general is a moral duty, a work of 
mercy; but it is moreover a peculiar church-duty by virtue of insti-
tution. And one end of the institution of churches is, that the dis-
ciples of Christ may have all that spiritual and temporal relief which 
is needful for them and useful to them in their troubles and dis-
tresses. And if this duty were diligently attended unto by the officers 
of the church, it would add much unto the glory and beauty of our 
order, and be an abiding reserve with relief in the minds of them 
whose outward condition exposeth them to straits and sorrows in 
such a season.

I add hereunto, as a duty of the same nature, the visitation of 
those who suffer under restraint and imprisonment upon the account 
of their profession, adherence unto church-assemblies, or the dis-
charge of any pastoral or office duties in them. This is a case where-
with we are not acquainted, nor are like so to be. Some look on 
this as the duty of all the members of the church who yet enjoy 
their liberty; and so it is as their opportunities and abilities will 
allow them, provided the discharge of it be useful unto those whom 
they visit, and inoffensive unto others. But this duty diligently at-
tended unto by the elders, representing therein the care and love of 
the whole church, yea, of Christ himself unto his prisoners, is a great 
spring of relief and comfort unto them. And by the elders may the 
church be acquainted what yet is required of them in a way of duty 
on their account. The care of the primitive churches herein was 
most eminent.

(6.) It belongs unto them and their office to advise with and give 
direction unto the deacons of the church as unto the making pro-
vision and distribution of the charity of the church for the relief of 
the poor. The office of the deacons is principally executive, as we 
shall see afterward. Inquisition into the state of the poor, with all 
their circumstances, with the warning of all the members of the 
church unto liberality for their supply, belongs unto the elders.

(7.) When the state of the church is such, through suffering, per-
secution, and affliction, that the poor be multiplied among them, so 
as that the church itself is not able to provide for their relief in a 
due manner, if any supply be sent unto them from the love and 
bounty of other churches, it is to be deposited with these elders, and
disposed according to their advice, with that of the teachers of the church, Acts xi. 30.

(8.) It is also their duty, according to the advantage which they have, by their peculiar inspection of all the members of the church, their ways and their walking, to acquaint the pastors, or teaching-elders of the church, with the state of the flock; which may be of singular use unto them for their direction in the present work of the ministry. He who makes it not his business to know the state of the church which he ministers unto in the word and doctrine, as to their knowledge, their judgment and understanding, their temptations and occasions, and applies not himself in his ministry to search out what is necessary and useful unto their edification, he fights uncertainly in his whole work, as a man beating the air. But whereas their obligation to attend unto the word and prayer confines them much unto a retirement for the greatest part of their time, they cannot by themselves obtain that acquaintance with the whole flock but that others may greatly assist therein from their daily inspection, converse, and observation.

(9.) And it is their duty to meet and consult with the teaching-elders about such things of importance as are to be proposed in and unto the church, for its consent and compliance. Hence nothing crude or indgested, nothing unsuited to the sense and duty of the church, will at any time be proposed therein, so as to give occasion unto contests or janglings, disputes contrary unto order or decency, but all things may be preserved in a due regard unto the gravity and authority of the rulers.

(10.) To take care of the due liberties of the church, that they be not imposed on by any Diotrephes, in office or without it.

(11.) It is incumbent on them, in times of difficulties and persecution, to consult together with the other elders concerning all those things which concern the present duty of the church from time to time, and their preservation from violence, according unto the will of Christ.

(12.) Whereas there may be, and oftentimes is, but one teaching-elder, pastor, or teacher in a church, upon his death or removal it is the work and duty of these elders to preserve the church in peace and unity, to take care of the continuation of its assemblies, to prevent irregularities in any persons or parties among them, and to go before, to direct and guide the church in the call and choice of some other meet person or persons in the room of the deceased or removed.

These few instances have I given of the work and duty of ruling-elders. They are all of them such as deserve a greater enlargement in their declaration and confirmation than I can here afford unto them, and sundry things of the like nature, especially with respect unto communion with other churches and synods; but what hath
been spoken is sufficient unto my present purpose. And to manifest that it is so, I shall add the ensuing observations:—

1. All the things insisted on do undoubtedly and unquestionably belong unto the rule and order appointed by Christ in his church. There is no one of them that is liable unto any just exception from them by whom all church-order is despised. Wherefore, where there is a defect in them, or any of them, the church itself is defective as unto its own edification; and where this defect is great in many of them, there can be no beauty, no glory, no order in any church, but only an outward show and appearance of them. And that all these things do belong unto the duty of these elders, there needs no other proof or confirmation but that they all undoubtedly and unquestionably belong unto that rule and order which the Lord Christ hath appointed in his church, and which the Scripture testifieth unto both in general and particular; for all the things which belong unto the rule of the church are committed to the care of the rulers of the church.

2. It is a vain apprehension, to suppose that one or two teaching officers in a church, who are obliged to “give themselves unto the word and prayer,” to “labour” with all their might “in the word and doctrine,” to “preach in season and out of season”—that is, at all times, on all opportunities, as they are able,—to convince gainsayers, by word and writing pleading for the truth, to assist and guide the consciences of all under their temptations and desertions, with sundry other duties, in part spoken to before, should be able to take care of, and attend with diligence unto, those things that do evidently belong unto the rule of the church. And hence it is that churches at this day do live on the preaching of the word, the proper work of their pastors, which they greatly value, and are very little sensible of the wisdom, goodness, love, and care of Christ, in the institution of this rule in the church, nor are partakers of the benefits of it unto their edification. And the supply which many have had hitherto herein, by persons either unacquainted with their duty, or insensible of their own authority, or cold, if not negligent, in their work, doth not answer the end of their institution. And hence it is that the authority of government and the benefit of it are ready to be lost in most churches. And it is both vainly and presumptuously pleaded, to give countenance unto a neglect of their order, that some churches do walk in love and peace, and are edified without it, supplying some defects by the prudent aid of some members of them; for it is nothing but a preference of our own wisdom unto the wisdom and authority of Christ, or at best an unwillingness to make a venture on the warranty of his rule, for fear of some disadvantages that may ensue thereon.

3. Whereas sundry of the duties before mentioned are, as unto the substance of them, required of the members of the church in their
several stations, without any especial obligation to attend unto them with diligence, to look after them, or power to exercise any authority in the discharge of them, to leave them from under the office-care of the elders is to let confusion and disorder into the church, and gradually to remove the whole advantage of the discipline of Christ; as it is come to pass in many churches already.

It is therefore evident, that neither the purity, nor the order, nor the beauty or glory of the churches of Christ, nor the representation of his own majesty and authority in the government of them, can be long preserved without a multiplication of elders in them, according to the proportion of their respective members, for their rule and guidance. And for want hereof have churches, of old and of late, either degenerated into anarchy and confusion, their self-rule being managed with vain disputes and janglings, unto their division and ruin, or else given up themselves unto the domination of some prelatical teachers, to rule them at their pleasure, which proved the bane and poison of all the primitive churches; and they will and must do so in the neglect of this order for the future.

CHAPTER IX.

Of deacons.

The original institution, nature, and use, of the office of deacons in the church, are so well known as that we need not much insist upon them; nor shall I treat of the name, which is common unto any kind of ministry, civil or sacred, but speak of it as it is appropriated unto that especial work for which this office was ordained.

The remote foundation of it lieth in that of our Saviour, "The poor always ye have with you," John xii. 8. He doth not only foretell that such there should be in the church, but recommends the care of them who should be so unto the church: for he maketh use of the words of the law, Deut. xv. 11, "The poor shall never cease out of the land; therefore I command thee, saying, Thou shalt open thine hand wide unto thy brother, to thy poor, and to thy needy." This legal institution, founded in the law of nature, doth the Lord Christ by his authority transfer and translate unto the use of gospel churches among his disciples.

And it may be observed, that at the same instant hypocrisy and avarice began to attempt their advantage on the consideration of this provision for the poor, which they afterward effected unto their safety; for, on the pretence hereof, Judas immediately condemned an eminent duty towards the person of Christ, as containing a cost in it, which might have been better laid out in provision for the poor. The ointment poured on our Saviour he thought might have been "sold
for three hundred pence" (it may be about forty or fifty pounds"), "and given to the poor." But "this he said, not that he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the bag," out of which he could have made a good prey unto himself, John xii. 6. And it may be observed, that although Judas maliciously began this murmuring, yet at last some of the other disciples were too credulous of his insinuation, seeing the other evangelists ascribe it to them also. But the same pretence, on the same grounds, in following ages, was turned unto the greatest advantage of hypocrisy and covetousness that ever was in the world: for under this pretence of providing for the poor, the thieves who had got the bag,—that is, the ruling part of the clergy, with the priests, friars, and monks, who served them,—allowed men in the neglect of the greatest and most important duties of religion towards Christ himself, so as that they would give all that they had to the poor; not that they cared for the poor, but because they were thieves, and had the bag; by which means they possessed themselves of the greatest part of the wealth of the nations professing Christian religion. This was their compliance with the command of Christ, which they equally made use of in other things.

This foundation of their office was further raised by the preaching of the gospel among the poor. Many of them who first received it were of that state and condition, as the Scripture everywhere testifieth: "The poor are evangelized," Matt. xi. 5; "God hath chosen the poor," James ii. 5. And so it was in the first ages of the church, when the provision for them was one of the most eminent graces and duties of the church in those days. And this way became the original propagation of the gospel; for it was made manifest thereby that the doctrine and profession of it were not a matter of worldly design or advantage. God also declared therein of how little esteem with him the riches of this world are. And also provision was made for the exercise of the grace of the rich in their supply; the only way whereby they may glorify God with their substance. And it were well if all churches, and all the members of them, would wisely consider how eminent is this grace, how excellent is this duty, of making provision for the poor,—how much the glory of Christ and honour of the gospel are concerned herein; for whereas, for the most part, it is looked on as an ordinary work, to be performed transiently and cursorily, scarce deserving any of the time which is allotted unto the church's public service and duties, it is indeed one of the most eminent duties of Christian societies, wherein the principal exercise of the second evangelical grace, namely, love, doth consist.

The care of making provision for the poor being made in the

1 It is difficult to explain this estimate by our author of the value of three hundred denarii. According to the received valuation of Roman money, the sum could not have exceeded £9, 7s. 6d. of our money.—Ed.
church an institution of Christ, was naturally incumbent on them who were the first, only officers of the church; that is, the apostles. This is plain from the occasion of the institution of the office of the deacons, Acts vi. 1–6. The whole work and care of the church being in their hands, it was impossible that they should attend unto the whole, and all the parts of it in any manner. Whereas, therefore, they gave themselves, according to their duty, mostly unto those parts of their work which were incomparably more excellent and necessary than the other,—namely, preaching of the word and prayer,—there was such a defect in this other part, of ministration unto the poor, as must unavoidably accompany the actings of human nature, not able to apply itself constantly unto things of diverse natures at the same time. And hereon those who were concerned quickly, as the manner of all is, expressed their resentment of a neglect in somewhat an undue order; there was “a murmuring” about it, verse 1. The apostles hereon declared that the principal part of the work of the ministry in the church, namely, the word and prayer, was sufficient for them constantly to attend unto. Afterward, indeed, men began to think that they could do all in the church themselves; but it was when they began to do nothing in a due manner. And whereas the apostles chose as their duty the work of prayer and preaching, as that which they would and ought entirely to give up themselves unto, and for the sake of that work would deposit the care of other things in other hands, they are a strange kind of successors unto them who lay aside that work, which they determined to belong unto them principally and in the first place, to apply themselves unto any thing else whatever.

Yet did not the apostles hereon utterly forego the care of providing for the poor, which being originally committed unto them by Jesus Christ, they would not divest themselves wholly of it; but, by the direction of the Holy Ghost, they provided such assistance in the work as that for the future it might require no more of their time or pains but what they should spare from their principal employment. And the same care is still incumbent on the ordinary pastors and elders of the churches, so far as the execution of it doth not interfere with their principal work and duty; from which those who understand it aright can spare but little of their time and strength.

Hereon the apostles, by the authority of Christ and direction of the Holy Spirit, under whose infallible guidance they were in all the general concerns of the church, instituted the office of deacons, for the discharge of this necessary and important duty in the church, which they could not attend unto themselves. And whereas the Lord Christ had in an especial manner committed the care of the poor unto the disciples, there was now a declaration of his mind and will in what way and by what means he would have them provided for.
And it was the institution of a new office, and not a present supply in a work of business, which they designed; for the limitation of an especial ecclesiastical work, with the designation of persons unto that work, with authority for the discharge of it, set over this business, with a separation unto it, do completely constitute an office, nor is there any thing more required thereunto.

But whereas there are three things that concur and are required unto the ministration unto the poor of the church,—1. The love, charity, bounty, and benevolence of the members of the church, in contribution unto that ministration; 2. The care and oversight of the discharge of it; and, 3. The actual exercise and application of it,—the last only belongs unto the office of the deacons, and neither of the first is discharged by the institution of it: for the first is both a duty of the light and law of nature, and in its moral part enforced by many especial commands of Christ, so as that nothing can absolve men from their obligation thereunto. The office and work of the deacons is to excite, direct, and help them, in the exercise of that grace and discharge of the duty therein incumbent on them. Nor is any man, by the intrusting a due proportion of his good things in the hands of the deacons for its distribution, absolved thereby from his own personal discharge of it also; for it being a moral duty, required in the law of nature, it receiveth peculiar obligations unto a present exercise by such circumstances as nature and providence do suggest. The care also of the whole work is, as was said, still incumbent on the pastors and elders of the church; only the ordinary execution is committed unto the deacons.

Nor was this a temporary institution, for that season, and so the officers appointed extraordinary, but it was to abide in the church throughout all generations; for,—1. The work itself, as a distinct work of ministry in the church, was never to cease; it was to abide for ever: “The poor ye shall have always with you.” 2. The reason of its institution is perpetual, namely, that the pastors of the churches are not sufficient in themselves to attend unto the whole work of praying, preaching, and this ministration. 3. They are afterward, not only in this church at Jerusalem, but in all the churches of the Gentiles, reckoned among the fixed officers of the church, Phil. i. 1. And, 4. Direction is given for their continuation in all churches, with a prescription of the qualifications of the persons to be chosen and called unto this office, 1 Tim. iii. 8–10, 12, 13. 5. The way of their call is directed, and an office committed unto them: “Let them be first proved, then let them use the office of a deacon.” 6. A promise of acceptance is annexed unto the diligent discharge of this office, verse 13.

Hence those who afterward utterly perverted all church-order, taking out of the hands and care of the deacons that work which
was committed to them by the Holy Ghost in the apostles, and for which end alone their office was instituted in the church, assigning other work unto them, whereunto they are not called nor appointed, yet thought meet to continue the name and the pretence of such an office, because of the evident institution of it unto a continuation. And whereas, when all things were swelling with pride and ambition in the church, no sort of its officers contenting themselves with their primitive institution, but striving by various degrees to somewhat in name and thing that was high and aloft, there arose from the name of this office the meteor of an archdeacon, with strange power and authority, never heard of in the church for many ages, this belongs unto the mystery of iniquity, whereunto neither the Scripture nor the practice of the primitive churches doth give the least countenance. But some think it not inconvenient even to sport themselves in matters of church order and constitution.

This office of deacons is an office of service, which gives not any authority or power in the rule of the church; but being an office, it gives authority with respect unto the special work of it, under a general notion of authority; that is, a right to attend unto it in a peculiar manner, and to perform the things that belong thereunto. But this right is confined unto the particular church whereunto they do belong. Of the members of that church are they to make their collections, and unto the members of that church are they to administer. Extraordinary collections from or for other churches are to be made and disposed by the elders, Acts xi. 30.

Whereas the reason of the institution of this office was, in general, to free the pastors of the churches who labour in the word and doctrine from avocations by outward things, such as wherein the church is concerned, it belongs unto the deacons not only to take care of and provide for the poor, but to manage all other affairs of the church of the same kind; such as are providing for the place of the church-assemblies, of the elements for the sacraments, of collecting, keeping, and disposing of the stock of the church for the maintenance of its officers and incidences, especially in the time of trouble or persecution. Hereon are they obliged to attend the elders on all occasions, to perform the duty of the church towards them, and receive directions from them. This was the constant practice of the church in the primitive times, until the avarice and ambition of the superior clergy enclosed all alms and donations unto themselves; the beginning and progress whereof is excellently described and traced by Paulus Sarpius in his treatise of matters beneficiary.

That maintenance of the poor which they are to distribute is to be collected by the voluntary contributions of the church, to be made ordinarily every first day of the week, and as occasion shall require in an extraordinary manner, 1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2. And this contribu-
tion of the church ought to be,—1. In a way of bounty, not sparingly, 2 Cor. ix. 5–7; 2. In a way of equality, as unto men's abilities, chap. viii. 13, 14; 3. With respect unto present successes and thriving in affairs, whereof a portion is due to God, "As God hath prospered him," 1 Cor. xvi. 2; 4. With willingness and freedom, 2 Cor. viii. 12. Wherefore it belongs unto the deacons, in the discharge of their office,—1. To acquaint the church with the present necessity of the poor; 2. To stir up the particular members of it unto a free contribution, according unto their ability; 3. To admonish those that are negligent herein, who give not according to their proportion, and to acquaint the elders of the church with those who persist in a neglect of their duty.

The consideration of the state of the poor, unto whom the contributions of the church are to be administered, belongs unto the discharge of this office; as,—1. That they are poor indeed, and do not pretend themselves so to be for advantage; 2. What are the degrees of their poverty, with respect unto their relations and circumstances, that they may have suitable supplies; 3. That in other things they walk according unto rule; 4. In particular, that they work and labour according to their ability, for he that will not labour must not eat at the public charge; 5. To comfort, counsel, and exhort them unto patience, submission, contentment with their condition, and thankfulness: all which might be enlarged and confirmed, but that they are obvious.

The qualifications of persons to be called unto this office are distinctly laid down by the apostle, 1 Tim. iii. 8–13. Upon the trial, knowledge, and approbation of them, with respect unto these qualifications, their call to this office consists,—1. In the choice of the church; 2. In a separation unto it by prayer and imposition of hands, Acts vi. 3, 5, 6. And the adjuncts of their ministration are,—1. Mercy, to represent the tenderness of Christ towards the poor of the flock, Rom. xii. 8. 2. Cheerfulness, to relieve the spirits of them that receive against thoughts of being troublesome and burdensome to others. 3. Diligence and faithfulness, by which they "purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus."

It remains only that we inquire into some few things relating unto this office and those that are called unto it; as,—

1. What is the meaning of the apostle where he affirms that the deacons, in the discharge of their office, Βαβυλῶν ἰαυτός καλῶν περισσουτέναι, 1 Tim. iii. 13, "purchase (or procure) to themselves a good degree." Βαβυλῶν is "a step, a degree, a seat a little exalted;" and metaphorically it is applied to denote dignity and authority. This good degree, which deacons may obtain, is, in the judgment of most, the office of presbytery. This they shall be promoted unto in the
church; from deacons they shall be made presbyters. I cannot comply with this interpretation of the words: for,—(1.) The office of presbytery is called καλὸν ἐφετον, "a good work," nowhere καλὸς βαθμός, "a good degree." (2.) The difference between a deacon and a presbyter is not in degree but in order. A deacon made a presbyter is not advanced unto a farther degree in his own order, but leaves it for another. (3.) The diligent discharge of the work of a deacon is not a due preparation for the office of the presbytery, but a hindrance of it: for it lies wholly in the providing and disposal of earthly things, in a serving of the tables of the church, and those private, of the poor; but preparation for the ministry consists in a man's giving himself unto study, prayer, and meditation.

I shall only give my conjecture on the words. The apostle seems to me to have respect unto church-order, with decency therein, in both these expressions, "Purchase to themselves a good degree," and, "Great confidence in the faith." Βαθμός is of the same significance with βαθμίς, which is a seat raised in an assembly, to hear or speak. So saith the schol. on Soph. ΟΕδ. Τύρ. 142: 'ο τότες ἔνθα ἡ ἱκαλησία ἐγένετο, βαθμίς ἢν κύκλῳ διαλημμένος, ἄλλως ἢπ' ἄλλως ἔνθα εἰ συνελθόντες πάντες καθήμεναι ἀνεμπόδιστας ἠφεωντο τοῦ ἱσταμένου ἐν μέσῳ: "The place where the assembly (or church) met was divided round about with seats in degrees, some above others, where all that met might without trouble hear him that stood in the midst as they sat."

And countenance is given hereunto by what is observed concerning the custom of sitting in the Jewish synagogues. So Ambrose: "Traditio est synagogæ, ut sedentes disputarent, seniores dignitate in cathedris, subsecuentes in subsellii; novissimi in pavimento;"—"It is the tradition (or order) of the synagogue, that the elders in dignity (or office) should discourse sitting in chairs, the next order on forms (or benches), and the last on the floor." So speaks Philo before him: Εἰς ἵσον ἀφικνοῦμενοι τόπους καθ' ἡλικίας ἐν τάξεων υπὸ πρεσβυτέρων αἰών καθίζονται—"When we meet in sacred places," places of divine worship, "the younger sort, according to their quality, sit in orders under the elders." And this James the apostle hath respect unto, in the primitive assemblies of the Christian Jews; for, reproving their partiality in accepting of men's persons, preferring the rich immoderately before the poor, he instanceth in their disposing of them unto seats in their assemblies. They said unto the rich man, "Σὺ κάθου ἄνθρωπον καλύτερον, "Sit thou here in a good place,"—that is, in βάθμῳ καλῷ, "in the best degree,"—and to the poor, "Stand thou there," on the floor, or "Sit at my footstool," without respect unto those other qualifications whereby they were to be distinguished. Wherefore, the apostle having respect unto church-assemblies, and the order to be observed in them, the καλὸς βαθμός here intended may signify no more but a place of some eminency in the church-assemblies, which is due
unto such deacons, where with boldness and confidence they may assist in the management of the affairs of the church, which belongs unto the profession of the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

If any shall rather think that both of the expressions do signify an increase in gifts and grace, which is a certain consequence of men’s faithful discharge of their office in the church, wherein many deacons of old were eminent unto martyrdom, I shall not contend against it.

2. Whereas there are qualifications expressly required in the wives of deacons, as that they should be “grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things,” 1 Tim. iii. 11, which are to be considered before their call to office, supposing that any of them do fall from the faith, as becoming Papists, Socinians, or Quakers, [it is asked] whether their husbands may be continued in their office?

Ans. 1. He who in his own person faithfully dischargeth his office may be continued therein, yea, though his wife should be actually excommunicated out of the church. Every one of us must give an account of himself unto the Lord. He rejects us not for what we cannot remedy. The sinning person shall bear his own judgment.

2. Such an one ought to take care, by virtue of his authority as a husband, that as little offence as possible may be given to the church by his wife, when she loseth the qualification of not being a slanderer, which is inseparable from such apostates.

3. May a deacon be dismissed from his office wholly, after he hath been solemnly set apart unto it by prayer?

Ans. 1. The very end of the office being only the convenience of the church and its accommodation, the continuation of men in this office is to be regulated by them; and if the church at any time stand not in need of the ministry of this or that person, they may, upon his desire, discharge him of his office. 2. Things may so fall out with men as unto their outward circumstances, with respect unto either their persons in bodily distempers and infirmities, or their condition in the world, as that they are not able any longer to attend unto the due discharge of this office; in which case they ought to be released. 3. A man may be solemnly set apart unto a work and duty by prayer for a limited season, suppose for a year only; wherefore this doth not hinder but that a man may, on just reasons, be dismissed at any time from his office, though he be so set apart unto it. 4. A deacon, by unfaithfulness and other offences, may forfeit his office and be justly excluded from it, losing all his right unto it and interest in it; and therefore, on just reasons, may be dismissed wholly from it. 5. For any one to desert his office, through frowardness, covetousness, sloth, or negligence, is an offence and scandal which the church ought to take notice of. 6. He who desires a dismissal from his office ought to give an account of his desires and the reasons of them unto the church, that the ministry
which he held may be duly supplied, and love continued between him and the church.

4. How many deacons may there be in one congregation?

Ans. As many as they stand in need of for the ends of that ministry, and they may be at all times increased as the state of the church doth require; and it is meet that there should always be so many as that none of the poor be neglected in the daily ministration, nor the work be made burdensome unto themselves.

5. What is the duty of the deacons towards the elders of the church?

Ans. Whereas the care of the whole church, in all its concerns, is principally committed unto the pastors, teachers, and ruling elders, it is the duty of the deacons, in the discharge of their office,—1. To acquaint them from time to time with the state of the church, and especially of the poor, so far as it falls under their inspection; 2. To seek and take their advice in matters of greater importance relating unto their office; 3. To be assisting unto them in all the outward concerns of the church.

6. May deacons preach the word and baptize authoritatively by virtue of their office?

Ans. 1. The deacons, whose office is instituted, Acts vi., and whose qualifications are fixed, 1 Tim. iii., have no call unto or ministerial power in these things. The limitation of their office, work, and power is so express as will not admit of any debate. 2. Persons once called unto this office might of old in an extraordinary manner, may at present in an ordinary way, be called unto the preaching of the word; but they were not then, they cannot be now, authorized thereunto by virtue of this office. 3. If a new office be erected under the name of deacons, it is in the will of them by whom it is erected to assign what power unto it they please.

CHAPTER X.

Of excommunication.

The power of the church towards its members (for it hath nothing to do with them that are without) may be referred unto three heads:—1. The admission of members into its society; 2. The rule and edification of them that belong unto it; 3. The exclusion out of its society of such as obstinately refuse to live and walk according unto the laws and rules of it. And these things belong essentially and inseparably unto every free society, and are comprehensive of all church-power whatever.

The second of these hath been treated of in the discourse concern-
ing church offices and rule; and all that belongs unto the first of
them is fully declared in the chapters of the essential constituent
parts of gospel churches, namely, their matter and form. The third
must be now spoken unto, which is the power of excommunication.

There is nothing in Christian religion about which the contest of
opinions hath been more fierce than this of excommunication, most
of them proceeding evidently from false assumptions and secular
interests; and no greater instance can be given of what the serpen-
tine wits of men, engaged by the desire of domination and wealth,
and assisted by opportunities, may attain unto. For whereas, as we
shall see immediately, there is nothing more plain, simple, and more
exposed unto the common understanding of all Christians, yea of all
mankind, than is this institution of Christ, both as unto its nature,
form, and manner of administration; nothing more wholesome nor
useful unto the souls of men; nothing more remote from giving the
least disturbance or prejudice to civil society, to magistrates or rulers,
unto the personal or political rights or concernments of any one in-
dividual in the world;—it hath been metamorphosed into a hideous
monster, an engine of priestly domination and tyranny, for the depo-
sition or assassination of kings and princes, the wasting of nations
with bloody wars, the terror of the souls of men, and the destruction
of their lives, with all their earthly concerns, unto the erection of a
tyannical empire, no less pernicious unto the Christian world than
those of the Saracens or the Turks. He is a stranger unto all that
hath passed in the world for nearly a thousand years who knows not
the truth of these things. And to this very day, the greatest part
of them that are called Christians are so supinely ignorant and
doting, or so infatuated and blinded by their prejudices and corrupt
interests, as to suppose or to say that if the pope of Rome do ex-
communicate kings or princes, they may be lawfully deposed from
their rule, and in some cases killed; and that other persons, being
rightly excommunicated, according unto certain laws, rules, and
processes, that some have framed, ought to be fined, punished, im-
prisoned, and so destroyed! And about these things there are many
disputes and contests, when, if men were awakened out of their
lethargy, they would be laughed at as the most ridiculous and con-
temptible mormos that ever appeared in the world; though they are
no laughing matter at present unto them that are concerned in them.

Supposing, then, ecclesiastical excommunication (as I at present
suppose, and shall immediately prove it) to be an appointment of
our Lord Jesus Christ, these things are plain and evident concerning
it, not capable of any modest contradiction:—1. That there is no
divine evangelical institution that is more suited unto the light of
nature, the rules of common equity, and principles of unseared con-
sciences, as unto the nature, efficacy, and rule of it, than this is.
2. That the *way* of the administration and exercise of the power and acts of it is so determined, described, and limited in the Scripture and the light of nature, as that there can be no gross error or mistake about it but what proceeds from secular interests, pride, ambition, covetousness, or other vicious habits and inclinations of the minds of men. 3. That the whole *authority* of it, its sentence, power, and efficacy, are merely spiritual, with respect unto the souls and consciences of men only; and that to extend it, directly or indirectly, immediately or by consequences, unto the temporal hurt, evil, or damage of any, in their lives, liberties, estates, natural or legal privileges, is opposite unto and destructive of the whole government of Christ in and over his church. All these things will fully appear in the account which we shall give of it.

It is therefore evident, as was intimated, that nothing in Christian practice hath been or is more abused, corrupted, or perverted, than this of excommunication hath been and is. The residence of the supreme power of it, to be exercised towards and over all Christians, rulers and subjects, in the pope of Rome, or in other single persons absolutely, over less or greater distributions of them; the administration of it by citations, processes, pleadings, and contentions, in wrangling law-courts, according unto arbitrary canons and constitutions, whose original is either known or unknown; the application of it unto the hurt, damage, evil, or loss of men, in their temporal concerns,—are utterly and openly foreign unto the gospel, and expressly contrary unto what the Lord Christ hath appointed therein. It would require a whole volume to declare the horrible abuses both in point of right and in matter of fact, with the pernicious consequences that have issued thereon, which the corruption of this divine institution hath produced: but to make a declaration hereof doth not belong to my present design; besides, it hath in some good measure been done by others. In brief, it is so come to pass that it is made a mere political engine of an external, forcible government of the persons of men, unto the ends of the interests of some who have got a pretence of its power; administered by such ways and means as wherein the consciences of men, neither of those by whom it is administered nor of those unto whom it is applied, are any way concerned, with respect unto the authority of any institution of Jesus Christ.

From an observation hereof, and a desire to vindicate as well Christian religion from such a scandalous abuse as mankind from bondage to such a monstrous fiction as is the present power and exercise of it, some have fallen into another extreme, denying that there is any such thing as excommunication appointed or approved by the gospel. But this neither is nor ever will be a way to reduce religion, nor any thing in it, unto its primitive order and purity.
deny the being of any thing because it hath been abused, when there could have been no abuse of it but upon a supposition of its being, is not a rational way to reprove and convince that abuse. And when those who have corrupted this institution find the insufficiency of the arguments produced to prove that there never was any such institution, it makes them secure in the practice of their own abuses of it; for they imagine that there is nothing incumbent on them, to justify their present possession and exercise of the power of excommunication, but that excommunication itself is appointed in the church by Christ: whereas the true consideration of this appointment is the only means to divest them of their power and practice; for the most effectual course to discharge and disprove all corruptions in the agenda or practicals of religion, as the sacraments, public worship, rule, and the like, is to propose and declare the things themselves in their original simplicity and purity, as appointed by Christ and recorded in the Scriptures. A real view of them in such a proposal will divest the minds of men, not corrupted and hardened by prejudice and interest, of those erroneous conceptions of them that, from some kind of tradition, they have been prepossessed withal; and this I shall now attempt in this particular of excommunication.

There hath been great inquiry about the nature and exercise of this ordinance under the old testament, with the account given of it by the later Jews; for the right and power of it in general belongs unto a church as such,—every church, and not to that which is purely evangelical only. This I shall not inquire into; it hath been sifted to the bran already, and intermixed with many rabbinical conjectures and mistakes. In general, there is nothing more certain than that there was a double removal of persons by church-authority from the communion of the whole congregation in divine worship,—the one for a season, the other for ever; whereof I have given instances elsewhere. But I intend only the consideration of what belongs unto churches under the new testament. And to this end we may observe,—

1. That all lawful societies, constituted such by voluntary confederation, according unto peculiar laws and rules of their own choice, unto especial duties and ends, have a right and power, by the light of nature, to receive into their society those that are willing and meet, engaging themselves to observe the rules, laws, and ends of the society, and to expel them out of it who wilfully deviate from those rules. This is the life and form of every lawful society or community of men in the world, without which they can neither coalesce nor subsist. But it is required hereunto,—

(1.) That those who so enter into such a society have right or power so to do. And many things are required unto this end; as,—

[1.] That those who enter into such a society be “sui juris,” have a
lawful right to dispose of themselves as unto all the duties and ends of such a society. Hence children, servants, subjects, have no power in themselves to enter into such societies without the interposition of and obligation from a power superior unto that of parents, masters, or princes,—namely, that of God himself. [2.] That the rules, laws, and ends of the society be lawful, good, and useful, unto themselves and others; for there may be a confederation in and for evil, which is a combination that gives no right nor power over one another, or towards others that enter into it. [3.] That it contains nothing that is prejudicial unto others, in things divine or human. [4.] Nor obliges unto the omission or neglect of any duty that men, by virtue of any relations, natural, moral, or political, do owe unto others. [5.] Nor is hurtful unto themselves, in their lives, liberties, names, reputation, usefulness in the world, or any thing else, unto whose preservation they are obliged by the law of nature. [6.] Nor are nor can be such persons obliged to forsake the conduct of themselves, in things divine and human, by the light of their own consciences, by an engagement of blind obedience unto others; which would render every society unlawful by the law of God and light of nature. [7.] Least of all have any persons right or power to obliged themselves in such societies unto things evil, sinful, superstitious, or idolatrous.

These things are plain and evident in themselves, and every way sufficient to divest all the religious societies and fraternities that are erected in the church of Rome of all that right and power which belong unto lawful societies, constituted by voluntary confederation. And if any thing inconsistent with these principles of natural light be pretended in churches, it divests them of all power, as to the exercise of it, by virtue of any compact or confederation whatsoever.

(2.) It is required that a society by voluntary consent vested with the right and power mentioned do neither give nor take away any right, privilege, or advantage, to or from any members of the society which belongs unto them naturally or politically; but their power is confined unto those things alone wherein men may be benefited and advantaged by the society. And this is the foundation of all political societies. Men for the sake and benefit of them may and ought to forego many particular advantages, which without them they might make unto themselves; but they cannot forego any of those rights which, in their several relations, are inseparably annexed unto them by the law of nature, nor give power over themselves in such things unto the society. So is it with churches: the power of expulsion out of their society extends only unto the benefits and advantages which the society, as such, doth afford and communicate. Now, these are only things spiritual, if churches be an institution of Him whose kingdom is not of this world. The power, then, that is in churches,
by virtue of their being what they are, extends not itself unto any outward concerns of men, as unto their lives, liberties, natural or political privileges, estates, or possessions; unless we shall say that men hold and possess these things by virtue of their relation unto the church, which is to overthrow all natural and human right in the world. "De facto," men are now compelled, whether they will or no, to be esteemed to be of this or that church, and to be dealt withal accordingly; but if they had not been divested of their natural liberty, they know not how, without their own consent, and should be taught that by entering into a church, they must come under a new tenure of their lives, liberties, and estates, at the will of the lords of the society, according to the customs of their courts, there would not be so many wise men in churches as now there are thought to be.

But this is the true state of things in the church of Rome, and among others also. Christians are esteemed to be of them, and belong unto them, whether they will or no. Immediately hereon all the rights, liberties, privileges, and possessions which they enjoy by the law of God and nature, and by the just laws and constitutions of men in the civil governments under which they live, come to depend upon and be subject unto the especial laws and rules of the society which they are adjudged to belong unto; for upon expulsion out of that society by excommunication, according unto the laws and rules which it hath framed unto itself, all their rights and titles, and liberties and enjoyments, are forfeited and exposed to ruin. Some, indeed, do earnestly and learnedly contend that the pope of Rome hath not power to excommunicate sovereign kings and princes, and that if he do, they make no forfeiture of life or dignity thereby; and there are good reasons why they do so. But, in the meantime, they deal with other poor men after the same manner; for if a poor man be excommunicated, immediately he loseth the free tenure of his goods, liberty, and life, by the law of the church and the land, and is committed to the jail without bail or mainprise.¹ So that, by this artifice, all men hold their natural and civil rights by the rules of the church-society whereto they are supposed to belong. And as this utterly overthrows the foundation of all that [right of] property according to the laws of the land, which is so much talked of and valued, so indeed it would be destructive of all order and liberty, but that the church is wise enough not to employ this engine unto great men and men in power, who may yet deserve excommunication as well as some of their poor neighbours, if the gospel be thought to give the rule of it; but those that are poor, helpless, and friendless, shall, in the pursuit of this excommunication, be driven from their houses, cast into pri-

¹ A term of English law, signifying the deliverance of a prisoner on security for his appearance on a future day.—Ed.
sons, and kept there until they and their families starve and perish. And it is apparent that we are beholden unto the greatness, authority, and wealth of many, whom the ecclesiastical courts care not to conflict withal, that the whole nation is not actually brought under this new tenure of their lives, liberties, and estates, which, on this presumption, they are obnoxious unto.

And all this evil ariseth from the neglect and contempt of this fundamental rule of all societies, apparent unto all in the light of nature itself,—namely, That they have no power in or over any thing, right, privilege, or advantage, but what men are made partakers of by virtue of such societies, their rules and laws, whereunto they are obliged. But of this sort are not the lives, the liberties, the houses and possessions of men, with respect unto the church. They receive them not from the church, and a man would certainly think that the church could not take them away.

Yea, we live and subsist in order upon the good nature and wisdom of men who judge it best neither to exert their power nor act their principles in this matter: for whereas they esteem all the inhabitants of the land to belong unto their church, if they should in the first place excommunicate all that ought to be excommunicated by the rule and law of the gospel, and then all that ought to be so according to their own laws and canons,—both which a man would think they were obliged in point of conscience unto,—and in pursuit of their sentence send out the "capias" for them all, I very much question whether any of them would go to prison or no, and then in what a fine case would this government be! and if they should all go to jail, I am persuaded the king would be in an ill state to defend his realms against his enemies.

(3.) Every society hath this power towards those who are incorporated in it by their own consent, and not towards others; for whence should they have such a power, or who should commit it unto them? Nor can any be cast out from those privileges which they never had an interest in nor a right unto. The apostle's rule holds in this case, especially with respect unto churches, "What have we to do to judge them that are without?" And as unto the exercise of this power, they are all to be esteemed to be without who are not rightly incorporated into that particular church by which they may be ejected out of it. A power of excommunication at random, towards all that those who exercise it can extend force unto, hath no foundation either in the light of nature or authority of the Scripture; and it would be ridiculous in any corporation to disfranchise such as never belonged unto it, who were never members of it.

(4.) The only reason or cause for the expulsion of any person out of such a society is a wilful deviation from the rules and laws of
the society, whose observance he had engaged unto upon his entrance into it. Nothing else can be required, unto the preservation of a man's interest in any right or privilege, but what he took upon himself to perform in his admittance into it. And if the great rule of every church-society be, "That men observe and do whatsoever the Lord Christ hath commanded," none can be justly ejected out of that society but upon a wilful disobedience unto his commands. And therefore the casting of men out of church-communion on light and trivial occasions, or for any reasons or causes whatever but such as essentially belong unto the rules and laws whereon the church doth originally coalesce into a society, is contrary unto natural light and the reason of the things themselves.

Thus far, I say, is every lawful confederate society enabled and warranted, by the light of nature, to remove from its communion, and from a participation in its rights and privileges, any of its number who will not walk according to the rules and principles of its coalescency and constitution. Whereas, therefore, the rule of the constitution of the church is, "That men walk together in holy obedience unto the commands of Christ, and in the observance of all his institutions, without giving offence unto one another or those that are without by any sinful miscarriage, and do abide in the profession of the truth," if any one shall wilfully and obstinately transgress in any of these things, it is the right and duty, and in the power, of the church to remove him from its society.

2. But this is not the entire nor the next immediate ground, reason, or warranty, of ecclesiastical excommunication; for this natural equity will not extend itself unto cases that are in things spiritual and supernatural, nor will the actings of the church thereon reach unto the consciences of men for the proper ends of excommunication. Wherefore it was necessary that it should have a peculiar institution in the church by the authority of Jesus Christ; for,—

(1.) The church is such a society as no men have right or power either to enter into themselves or to exclude others from but by virtue of the authority of Christ. No warranty from the light of nature, nor from the laws of men, nor their own voluntary confederation, can enable any to constitute a church-society, unless they do all things expressively in obedience unto the authority of Christ; for his church is his kingdom, his house, which none can constitute or build but himself. Wherefore it is necessary that the power of admission into and exclusion from the church do arise from his grant and institution; nor is it in the power of any men in the world to admit into or exclude from this society but by virtue thereof.

(2.) Excommunication is an act of authority, as we shall see afterward. But no authority can be exercised in the church towards any person whatever but by virtue of the institution of Christ; for the
authority itself, however ministerially exercised by others, is his alone, and he exerts it not but in the ways of his own appointment. So, in particular, the apostle directs that excommunication be exerted "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;" that is, in and by his authority, 1 Cor. v. 4.

(3.) The privileges from which men are excluded by excommunication are not such as they have any natural or civil right unto (as hath been proved), but merely such as are granted unto the church by Jesus Christ; and men cannot, by virtue of any agreement among themselves, without a warranty from him by his institution, expel others from the privileges which are merely of his grant and donation. He alone, therefore, hath given and granted this power unto the church, namely, of excluding any, by the rules and ways of his appointment, from the privileges of his grant; which is the peculiar power of excommunication inquired after.

(4.) There is such an efficacy assigned unto excommunication, in binding the consciences of men, in retaining their sins, in the destruction or mortification of the flesh, in the healing and recovery of sinners, as nothing but the authority of a divine institution can give unto it. By virtue of natural light and mutual consent, men may free themselves from the company and society of those who will not walk with them according to rules of communion agreed upon among them, but they cannot reach the minds and consciences of others with any of these effects.

(5.) That excommunication is an express ordinance of our Lord Jesus Christ in his churches is fully declared in the Scripture; for,—

[1.] The power of it is contained in the authority given by Christ unto the church, under the name of "The keys of the kingdom of heaven;" for the power expressed therein is not merely doctrinal and declarative, as is the preaching of the gospel,—the consequent whereof, upon the faith or unbelief of them that hear it, is the remitting or retaining of their sins in heaven and earth,—but it is disciplinary also, as it is appropriated unto the house, whose keys are committed unto the stewards of it. And seeing the design of Christ was, to have his church holy, unblamable, and without offence in the world, that therein he might make a representation of his own holiness and the holiness of his rule; and whereas those of whom it is constituted are liable and subject unto sins scandalous and offensive, reflecting dishonour on himself and the church, in being the occasion of sinning unto others,—that design would not have been accomplished had he not given this authority unto his church to cast out and separate from itself all that do by their sins so give offence. And the neglect of the exercise of this authority in a due manner was the principal means whereby the glory, honour, and usefulness of the churches in the world were at length utterly lost.
[2.] It hath a direct institution: Matt. xviii. 15–20, “If thy brother shall trespass,” etc., “tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven,” etc. After all the learned and unlearned contests that have been about this place, the sense of it is plain and obvious unto such as whose minds are not clouded with prejudices about such churches and such excommunications as are utterly foreign unto the Scripture. But that by “trespasses” in this place, sins against God, giving scandal or offence, are intended, hath been proved before; as also, that by “church” a particular Christian congregation is intended. This church hath the cognizance of the scandalous offences of its members committed unto it, when brought before it in the due order described. Hereon it makes a determination, designing in the first place the recovery of the person offending from his sin, by his hearing of its counsel and advice; but, in case of obstinacy, it is to remove him from its communion, leaving him in the outward condition of a “heathen man and a publican:” so is he to be esteemed by them that were offended with his sin; and that because of the authority of the church binding him in heaven and earth unto the punishment due unto his sin, unless he doth repent. The rejection of an offending brother out of the society of the church, leaving him, as unto all the privileges of the church, in the state of a heathen, declaring him liable unto the displeasure of Christ and everlasting punishment, without repentance, is the excommunication we plead for; and the power of it, with its exercise, is here plainly granted by Christ and ordained in the church.

[3.] According unto this institution was the practice of the apostles, whereof we have several instances. I might insist on the excommunication of Simon the magician, a baptized professor, by Peter, who declared him to have “neither part nor lot” in the church, upon the discovery of his wickedness, Acts viii. 13, 20–23; yet because it was the single act of one apostle, and so may be esteemed extraordinary, I shall omit it. However, that fact of the apostle is sufficiently declarative of what is to be done in the church in like cases; and which if it be not done, it cannot be preserved in its purity, according unto the mind of Christ. But that which was directed by the apostle Paul to be done towards the incestuous person in the church of Corinth is express, I Cor. v. 1–7:—1st. He declares the sin whereof the person charged was guilty, with the ignominy and scandal of it, verse 1. 2dly. He blames the church that they had not been affected with the guilt and scandal of it, so as to have proceeded to his removal or expulsion out of the church, that he might be “taken away” or cut off from them, verse 2. 3dly. He declares his own
judgment in the case,—that he ought to be so taken away or removed; which yet was not actually effected by that judgment and sentence of his, verse 3. 4thly. He declares the causes of this excision:—(1st.) The supreme efficient cause of it is the power or authority of the Lord Jesus Christ instituting this ordinance in his church, giving right and power unto it for its administration in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and with his power; (2dly.) The declarative cause of the equity of this sentence, which was the spirit of the apostle, or the authoritative declaration of his judgment in the case, “With my spirit;” (3dly.) The instrumental, ministerial cause of it, which is the church, “Do it ‘in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together;’” verse 4; “and thereby ‘purge out the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump,’” verse 7; whence the punishment of this sentence is said to be “inflicted by many,” 2 Cor. ii. 6; that is, all those who, on his repentance, were obliged to forgive and comfort him,—that is, the whole church, verse 7. 5thly. The nature of the sentence is, the “delivering of such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus,” 1 Cor. v. 5; not the destruction of his body by death, but through the “mortification of the flesh,” whereby he was shortly afterward recovered and restored unto his former condition.

The whole of what we plead for is here exemplified; as,—[1.] The cause of excommunication, which is a scandalous sin unrepented of. [2.] The preparation for its execution, which is the church’s sense of the sin and scandal, with humiliation for it. [3.] The warranty of it, which is the institution of Christ, wherein his authority is engaged. [4.] The manner and form of it, by an act of authority, with the consent of the whole church. [5.] The effect of it, in a total separation from the privileges of the church. [6.] The end of it,—1st. With respect unto the church, its purging and vindication; 2dly. With respect unto the person excommunicated, his repentance, reformation, and salvation.

It is usually replied hereunto, “That this was an extraordinary act of apostolical power, and so not to be drawn by us into example; for he himself both determines the case and asserteth his presence in spirit,—that is, by his authority,—to be necessary unto what was done. Besides, it was a delivery of the man to Satan,—that is, into his power,—to be afflicted and cruciated by him, to be terrified in his mind and punished in his body to the destruction of the flesh, that is, unto death. Such was the delivery of a man to Satan by the apostle, mentioned here and 1 Tim. i. 19, 20, in the judgment of many of the ancients. But there is no such power in any church at present to deliver an offender unto Satan, nor any appearing effects of such a pretence. Wherefore this is a matter which belongs not unto churches at present.”

VOL. XVI.
I answer,—1. What the apostles did in any church, whether present or absent, by their own authority, did not prejudice the right of the churches themselves, nor their power, acted in subordination unto them and their guidance. So it is evident in this place, that, notwithstanding the exerting of any apostolical power intimated, the church itself is charged with its duty, and directed to exercise its authority in the rejection of the offender. 2. There is nothing extraordinary in the case:—(1.) It is not so that a member of a church should fall into a scandalous sin, unto the dishonour of Christ and the church, giving offence unto persons of all sorts. (2.) It is an ordinary rule, founded in the light of nature, confirmed here and elsewhere by express divine commands, that such an one be rejected from the society and communion of the church, until he give satisfaction by repentance and reformation. (3.) It is that without which the church cannot be preserved in its purity, nor its being be continued, as both reason and experience do manifest. (4.) The judgment both of the fact and right was left unto the church itself; whence it was afterward highly commended by the apostle for the diligent discharge of its duty herein, 2 Cor. ii. 6–8. In brief, it is such a divine order that is here prescribed as without the observance whereof no church can long subsist. (5.) There is no difficulty in the other part of the objection, about the delivery unto Satan; for,—[1.] It cannot be proved that hereon the offender was delivered so into the power of Satan, to be cruciated, agitated, and at length killed, as some imagine; nor can any instance of any such thing be given in the Scripture or antiquity, though there be many of them who, upon their rejection out of the church, were enraged unto an opposition against it, as it was with Simon Magus, Marcion, and others. [2.] Yea, it is evident that there was no such thing included in their delivery unto Satan as is pretended: for the design and end of it was the man’s humiliation, recovery, and salvation, as is expressly affirmed in the text; and this effect it actually had, for the man was healed and restored. Wherefore this delivery unto Satan is an ordinance of Christ for the exciting of saving grace in the souls of men, adapted unto the case of falling by scandalous sins, peculiarly effectual, above any other gospel ordinance. Now, this cannot be such a delivery unto Satan as that pretended, which can have no other end but destruction and death. [3.] This delivery unto Satan is no more but the casting of a man out of the visible kingdom of Christ, so giving him up, as unto his outward condition, into the state of heathens and publicans, which belonged unto the kingdom of Satan; for he who, by the authority of Christ himself, according unto his law and institution, is not only debarred from a participation of all the privileges of the gospel, but also visibly and regularly divested of all present right to them and interest in them, he belongs unto the visible kingdom of Satan.
The gathering of men into the church by conversion is the "turning of them from the power of Satan unto God," Acts xxvi. 18; a "delivery from the power of darkness,"—that is, the kingdom of Satan,—and a translation into the kingdom of Christ, Col. i. 13. Wherefore, after a man hath, by faith and his conjunction unto a visible church, been translated into the kingdom of Christ, his just rejection out of it is the re-delivery of him into the visible kingdom of Satan; which is all that is here intended. And this is an act suited unto the end whereunto it is designed; for a man hereby is not taken out of his own power and the conduct of his own mind, not acted or agitated by the devil, but is left unto the sedate consideration of his present state and condition. And this, if there be any spark of ingenuous grace left in him, will be effectually operative, by shame, grief, and fear, unto his humiliation, especially understanding that the design of Christ and his church herein is only his repentance and restoration.

Here is, therefore, in this instance, an everlasting rule given unto the church in all ages, the ordinary occurrence of the like cases requiring an ordinary power for relief in them; without which the church cannot be preserved. That it is the duty of the church, enjoined unto it by the Lord Jesus Christ, and that necessary unto its glory, its own honour, and edification, to reject scandalous offenders out of its communion, is evidently declared in this place; and to suppose that to be the duty of the church which it hath no power and authority to discharge (seeing without them it cannot be discharged) is a wild imagination.

The duty of the church herein, with such other particular duties as suppose the institution hereof, are in many places directed and enjoined. It is so in that insisted on, 1 Cor. v. The foundation of the whole discourse and practice of the apostle there recorded lies in this, that churches ought to cut off from among them scandalous offenders, and that to the end they may preserve themselves pure; and that this they ought to do in the name of Christ, and by virtue of his authority, verses 2-5, 7. And this is the whole of that excommunication which we plead for. The manner of its administration we shall consider afterward. 2 Cor. ii. 6-8, the apostle commends the church for what they had done in the excommunication of the incestuous person, calling it a punishment inflicted on him by them, verse 6. He gives also an account of the effect of this sentence against him; which was his humiliation and repentance, verse 7; and hereon he gives direction for his restoration, by an act of the church forgiving him and confirming their love unto him. Men may fancy to themselves strange notions of excommunication, with reference unto its power, the residence of that power, its effects, extent, and ends; and so either, on the one hand, erect it into an engine of arbi-
trary domination over the church and all the members of it, or deny, on the other, that there is any such institution of Christ in force in his churches: but we can be taught nothing more plainly of the mind of Christ than that he hath given power unto his church to cast out of their communion obstinate, scandalous offenders, and to restore them again upon their repentance, enjoining it unto them as their duty. And it is an evidence of a woful degeneracy in churches from their primitive institution, when the sentence is so administered as that it hath an effect by virtue of human laws or the outward concerns of men, but no influence on their consciences unto humiliation and repentance; which is the principal end of its appointment. The apostle treats of the same matter, Gal. v. 7-12. He speaks of those false teachers who opposed and overthrew, what lay in them, the fundamental doctrine of the gospel. These at that time were in great power and reputation in the churches of the Galatians, which they had corrupted with their false opinions, so that the apostle doth not directly enjoin their immediate excision; yet he declares what they did deserve, and what was the duty of the church towards them when freed from their delusions: Verse 12, "I would they were even cut off that trouble you." Men have exercised their minds in curious conjectures about the sense of these words, altogether in vain and needlessly. The curiosity of some of the best of the ancients, applying it unto a forcible eunuchism, is extremely fond. No other excision is intended but that which was from the church, and to be done by the church, in obedience unto the truth. Neither the subject-matter treated of, the nature of the crime condemned, nor the state of the church or design of the apostle, will admit of any other exposition. 2 Thess. iii. 6, the apostle gives command unto the brethren of the church, and that "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ," to "withdraw from every brother that walketh disorderly." What it is to "walk disorderly" he declares immediately,—namely, to live in an open disobedience unto any of the commands of Christ, and "not after the tradition which he received of us;" that is, the doctrine of the gospel which he had delivered unto them. This withdrawing is as unto church-communion; which cannot be done but upon some act of the church depriving him of the right of it: for if every member of the church should be left unto his own judgment and practice herein, it would bring all things into confusion. And therefore, verse 14, he requires that a note be set on such a person by the church,—that is, a sentence be denounced against him,—before the duty of withdrawing from him by the brethren be incumbent on them. See to the same purpose Tit. iii. 10, 11; 1 Tim. v. 20; Rev. ii. 2, 14, 15, 20, 21.

It is therefore evident that this censure, judgment, spiritual punishment, is an institution of Christ, for whose administration he hath
given authority unto his church, as that which is necessary unto its edification, with its preservation in honour, purity, and order.

There have been many disputes about it, as unto its order and kinds. Some suppose that there are two sorts of excommunication,—the one they call the "lesser," and the other the "greater;" some, three sorts, as it is supposed there were among the Jews. There is no mention in the Scripture of any more sorts but one, or of any degrees herein. A segregation from all participation in church-order, worship, and privileges, is the only excommunication spoken of in the Scripture. But whereas an offending person may cause great disorder in a church, and give great scandal unto the members of it, before he can be regularly cut off or expelled the society, some do judge that there should a suspension of him from the Lord's table at least precede total or complete excommunication in case of impenitency; and it ought in some cases so to be. But this suspension is not properly an especial institution, but only an act of prudence in church-rule, to avoid offence and scandal. And no men question but that this is lawful unto, yea, the duty of the rulers of the church, to require any one to forbear for a season from the use of his privilege in the participation of the supper of the Lord, in case of scandal and offence which would be taken at it and ensue thereon. And if any person shall refuse a submission unto them in this act of rule, the church hath no way for its relief but to proceed unto the total removal of such a person from their whole communion; for the edification of the whole church must not be obstructed by the refractoriness of any one among them.

This excommunication, as we have proved before, is an act of church-authority exerted in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; and if so, then it is an act of the officers of the church,—namely, so far as it is authoritative,—for there is no authority in the church, properly so called, but what resides in the officers of it. There is an office in the church which is merely ministerial, without any formal authority,—that is, of the deacons; but there is no authority in exercise but what is in the elders and rulers of the church. And there are two reasons which prove that the power of excommunication, as to the authoritative exercise of it, is in the elders of the church:—

1. Because the apostles, by virtue of their office-power in every church, did join in the authoritative excommunication, as is plain in the case insisted on, 1 Cor. v.; and there is no office-power now remaining but what is in the elders of the church. 2. It is an act of rule; but all rule, properly so called, is in the hands of rulers only. We may add hereunto, that the care of the preservation of the church in its purity, of the vindication of its honour, of the edification of all its members, of the correction and salvation of offenders, is principally incumbent on them, or committed unto them, as
we have declared; as also, that they are best able to judge when and for what the sentence ought to be denounced against any, which requires their best skill in the wisdom of spiritual rule. And therefore the omission of the exercise of it, when it was necessary, is charged as a neglect on the angels or rulers of the churches, as the due execution of it is commended in them; and therefore unto them it doth belong, with respect unto their office, and is thereon an office-act or an act of authority.

Howbeit, it cannot be denied but that the interest, yea, the power of the whole church, in the fraternity of it, is greatly to be considered herein; for indeed wherever the apostle treats of it, he doth not anywhere recommend it unto the officers of the church in a peculiar manner, but unto the whole church or the brethren therein. This is evident in the places before quoted. Wherefore the whole church is concerned herein, both in point of duty, interest, and power:—

1. In point of duty; for by virtue of the mutual watch of all the members of the church over each other, and of the care incumbent on every one of them, for the good, the honour, the reputation, and edification of the whole, it is their duty, jointly and severally, to endeavour the purging out from among them of every thing that is contrary unto these ends. And they who are not concerned in these things are dead and useless members of the church. 2. In interest they have also a concernment therein. They are to look that no root of bitterness spring up amongst them, lest themselves be at length defiled thereby. It is usually said that the good are not defiled by holding communion with them that are wicked in a participation of holy ordinances; and there is some truth in what is said, with reference unto wicked, undiscovered hypocrites, or such as are not scandalously flagitious: but to promote this persuasion, so as to beget an opinion in church-members that they are no way concerned in the scandalous sins and lives of those with whom they walk in all duties of spiritual communion, openly avowing themselves members of the same body with them, is a diabolical engine, invented to countenance churches in horrible security, unto their ruin. But yet, besides that defilement which may be contracted in a joint participation of the same ordinances with such persons, there are other ways, almost innumerable, whereby their example, if passed by without animadversion, may be pernicious unto their faith, love, and obedience. Wherefore they are obliged in point of spiritual interest, as they take care of their own souls, to concur in the execution out of the church of obstinate offenders. 3. In point of power; for the execution of this sentence is committed unto and rests in the body of the church. According as they concur and practise, so it is put in execution or suspended; for it is they who must withdraw communion from them, or the sentence is of no use or validity. This
punishment must be inflicted by the "many;" who also are to restore him who is so rebuked. Wherefore, excommunication without the consent of the church is a mere nullity.

But if any one shall say that excommunication is not an act of authority or of office, but of power residing in the community, resulting from their common suffrage, guided and directed by the officers or elders of the church, I shall again take up this inquiry immediately, and speak unto it more distinctly, lest what is here spoken should not be sufficient unto the satisfaction of any.

Our next inquiry is concerning the objects of this church-censure, or who they are that ought to be excommunicated. And,—

1. They must be members of that church by which the sentence is to be denounced against them; and this, as we have proved before, they cannot be without their own consent. One church cannot excommunicate the members of another. They are unto them, as unto this matter, "without," and they have no power to judge them. The foundation of the right to proceed against any herein is in their own voluntary engagement to observe and keep the rules and laws of the society whereunto they are admitted. The offence is given unto that church in the first place, if not only; and it is an act of that church for its own edification. And there is a nullity in the sentence which is ordained, decreed, or denounced, by any who are not officers of that church in particular wherein the sin is committed.

2. These church-members that may be justly excommunicated are of two sorts:—

(1.) Such as continue obstinate in the practice of any scandalous sin after private and public admonition. The process from the first offence in admonition is so stated, in ordinary cases, Matt. xviii. 15–20, that there is no need further to declare it. The time that is to be allotted unto the several degrees of it shall be spoken unto afterward. And unto a right judgment of obstinacy in any scandalous sin, it is required,—[1.] That the sin, considered in itself, be such as is owned to be such by all, without doubting, dispute, or hesitation. It must be some sin that is judged and condemned in the light of nature or in the express testimony of Scripture; yea, such as the Holy Ghost witnesseth, that, continued in without repentance, it is inconsistent with salvation. If the thing itself to be animadverted on be dubious, or disputable whether it be a sin or no, especially such a sin, either from the nature of the fact, or the qualifications of the person offending, or from other circumstances, so as that the guilty person is not

1 Strangely enough, our author mentions only one sort, and omits to specify the other. Perhaps he intended by the second sort members, whose conduct, though not grossly and obstinately scandalous, was so contumacious in resisting the authority of the church, that their continued enjoyment of church-membership would have been subversive of all peace and order. See a preceding paragraph, which appears to imply as much, p. 165.—Ed.
self-condemned, nor are others fully satisfied in their minds about
the nature of it, there is no room for excommunication in such case. And if it be once allowed to be applied towards any sins but such as
are evident to be so (as the apostle says, "The works of the flesh are
manifest") in the light of nature and express testimony of Scripture,
not only will the administration of it be made difficult, a matter of
dispute, unfit for the determination of the body of the church, but it
will leave it unto the wills of men to prostitute it unto litigious brawls,
quarrels, and differences, wherein interest and partiality may take
place; which is to profane this divine institution. But confine it, as
it ought to be, unto such sins as are condemned in the light of nature
or by express testimony of Scripture, as inconsistent with salvation
by Jesus Christ, if persisted in, and all things that belong unto the
administration of it will be plain and easy.

From the neglect of this rule proceeded that horrible confusion
and disorder, in excommunication and the administration of it, which
for sundry ages prevailed in the world; for as it was mostly applied
unto things holy, just, and good, or the performance of such gospel
duties as men owed to Christ and their own souls, so being exercised
with respect unto irregularities that are made such merely by the
arbitrary constitutions and laws of men, and that in cases frivolous,
trifling, and of no importance, it was found necessary to be managed
in and by such courts, such processes, such forms of law, such plead-
ings and intricacies of craft, such a burden of cost and charge, as it
is uncertain whether it ought to be more bewailed or derided.

[2.] It is required hereunto that the matter of fact as unto the
relation of the sin unto the particular offender be confessed, or not
denied, or clearly proved. How far this is to extend, and what
ground of procedure there may be in reports or fame concurring with
leading circumstances, we shall inquire afterward. And although in
such cases of public fame, a good testimony, from those of credit and
repute in the church, given unto the supposed guilty person is of
use, and sufficient, in some cases, singly to oppose unto public reports,
yet to require a man to purge himself by others from any feigned
scandalous imputation is an unwarrantable tyranny.

[3.] It is also required that the previous process, in and by private
and public admonition, and that repeated, with patient waiting for
the success of each of them, be duly premised. Whether this extend
itself unto all causes of excommunication shall be afterward inquired
into. Ordinarily it is so necessary unto the conviction of the mind
and conscience of the offender, and to leave him without either pro-
vocation from the church or excuse in himself, so suited to be ex-
pressive of the grace and patience of Christ toward sinners, so requi-
site unto the satisfaction of the church itself in their procedure, as
that the omission of it will probably render the sentence useless and
ineffectual. A crying out, "I admonish a first, a second, a third
time," and so, to excommunication, is a very absurd observation of a
divine institution.

[4.] It is required that the case of the person to be censured, as
unto his profession of repentance on the one hand, or obstinacy on
the other, be judged and determined by the whole church in love
and compassion. There are few who are so profligately wicked but
that, when the sin wherewith they are charged is evidently such in
the light of nature and Scripture, and when it is justly proved
against them, they will make some profession of sorrow and repent-
ance. Whether this be sufficient, as in most cases it is, to suspend
the present proceeding of the church, or quite to lay it aside, is left
unto the judgment of the church itself, upon consideration of present
circumstances and what is necessary unto its own edification. Only,
this rule must be continually observed, that the least appearance of
haste or undue precipitation herein is to be avoided in all these cases,
as the bane of church rule and order.

Again; the manner of its administration according to the mind of
Christ may be considered. And hereunto are required,—1. Prayer,
without which it can no way be administered in the name of our
Lord Jesus Christ. The administration of any solemn ordinance of
the gospel without prayer is a horrible profanation of it; and the
neglect or contempt hereof, in any who take upon them to excom-
municate others, is an open proclamation of the nullity of their act
and sentence. And the observation of the administration of it
without any due reverence of God, without solemn invocation of the
name of Christ, whereby engaging his presence and authority in what
they do, is that principally which hath set the consciences of all
mankind at liberty from any concernment in this ecclesiastical cen-
sure, and whence those that administer it expect no other success of
what they do but what they can give it by outward force; and
where this fails, excommunication is quickly laid aside; as it was
when the pope threatened the cantons of the Swiss, that if they com-
plied not with some of his impositions, he would excommunicate
them; whereon they sent him word "They would not be excom-
municated;" which ended the matter. Wherefore, when our Lord
Jesus Christ gives unto his church the power of binding and loosing,
directing them in the exercise of that power, he directs them to ask
assistance by prayer when they are gathered together, Matt. xviii.
18–20: and the apostle directs the church of Corinth that they
should proceed unto this sentence when they were gathered together
in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, 1 Cor. v. 4; which could not
be without calling on his name. In brief, without prayer, neither is
the ordinance itself sanctified unto the church, nor are any meet to
administer it, nor is the authority of Christ either owned or engaged,
nor divine assistance obtained, neither is what is done any more excommunication than any rash curse is; so that many [such] proceed inordinately out of the mouths of men.

And the prayer required herein is of three sorts:—(1.) That which is previous, for guidance and direction in a matter of so great weight and importance. It is no small thing to fall into mistakes when men act in the name of Christ, and so engage his authority in what he will not own; and the best of men, the best of churches, are liable unto such mistakes, when they are not under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, which is to be obtained by prayer only. (2.) In or together with the administration of it, that what is done on earth may be ratified in heaven, by the approbation of Christ, and be made effectual unto its proper end. (3.) It must be followed with the prayer of the church unto the same purpose; all with respect unto the humiliation, repentance, healing, and recovery, of the offender.

2. It is to be accompanied with lamentation or mourning. So the apostle, reproving the church of Corinth for the omission of it when it was necessary, tells them that they had not "mourned," that the offender might be taken away from among them, 1 Cor. v. 2. It is not to be done without mourning. And himself calls the execution of this sentence, from this adjunct, his bewailing of them: "I shall bewail many that have sinned already," 2 Cor. xii. 21 Compassion for the person offending, with respect unto that dangerous condition whereunto he hath cast himself, the excision of a member of the same body, with whom they have had communion in the most holy mysteries of divine worship and sat down at the table of the Lord, with a due sense of the dishonour of the gospel by his fall, ought to ingenerate this mourning or lamentation in the minds of those who are concerned in the execution of the sentence; nor is it advisable for any church to proceed thereunto before they are so affected.

3. It is to be accompanied with a due sense of the future judgment of Christ; for we herein judge for Christ in the matters of his house and kingdom. And woe to them who dare pronounce this sentence without a persuasion, on good grounds, that it is the sentence of Christ himself! And there is a representation also in it of the future judgment, when Christ will eternally cut off and separate from himself all hypocrites and impenitent sinners. This is well expressed by Tertullian: "Ibidem etiam exhortationes, castigationes et censura divina" (speaking of the assemblies of the church), "nam et judicatur magno cum pondere, ut apud certos de Dei conspectu; summumque futuri judicii praecipuum est, si quis ita deliquerit ut a communicaione orationis et conventus, et omnis sancti commercii relegetur," Apol. cap. xxxix. Were this duty observed, it would be a preservative against that intermixture of corrupt affections and corrupt ends
which often impose themselves on the minds of men in the exercise of this power.

Lastly, The nature and end of this judgment or sentence being corrective, not vindicative,—for healing, not destruction,—what is the duty of the church and those principally concerned in the pursuit of it, to render it effectual, is plainly evident. Of what use a "significabit" and "capias" may be in this case I know not; they belong not unto Christian religion,—much less do fire and fagot do so. Prayer for the person cut off, admonition as occasion is offered, compassion in his distressed estate (which is so much the more deplorable if he know it not), forbearance from common converse, with readiness for the restoration of love in all the fruits of it, contain the principal duties of the church and all the members of it towards them that are justly excommunicated.

What further belongeth unto this head of church rule or order shall be spoken unto in the resolution of some cases or inquiries, wherein some things only mentioned already shall be more fully explained.

I have made some inquiry before whether excommunication be an act of authority and jurisdiction in the officers of the church, or an act of power in the fraternity of the church; but, for the sake of some by whom it is desired, I shall a little more distinctly inquire after the truth herein, though I shall alter nothing of what was before laid down. And,—

1. It is certain, it hath been proved, and I now take it for granted, that the Lord Christ hath given this power unto the church. Wherefore, in the exercise of this power, both the officers and members of the church are to act according unto their respective interests; for that exercise of power in the church towards any which is not an act of obedience unto Christ in them that exercise it, is in itself null. There is, therefore, no distinction or distribution of power in the church, but by the interposition of especial duty.

2. The institution of Christ with respect unto a church as it is a peculiar society, for its especial ends, doth not deprive it of its natural right as it is a society. There is in every community, by voluntary confederation, a natural right and power to expel those from its society who will not be ruled by the laws of its constitution. And if the church should, by the institution of a power new as unto the way, manner, and ends of its exercise, be deprived of its original, radical power, with respect unto the general end of its own preservation, it would not be a gainer by that institution. It may be easily understood that the Lord Christ should, in particular, appoint the way and manner of the exercise of this power, or administration of this sentence, committing the care thereof unto the officers of the

---

1 Significabit, Capias. The first words of certain legal writs issued to prosecute the sentences of the church, and maintain its authority.—Ed.
church; but it cannot be well understood that thereby he should deprive the church of its right, and forbid them their duty in preserving their society entire and pure. Neither can it be in so an especial manner committed unto any, as that upon their neglect, whereby those who by the law and rule of Christ ought to be cast out of the church’s communion are continued in it, unto its sin and defilement, the church itself should be free from guilt. Wherefore the apostle expressly chargeth the whole church of Corinth with sin and neglect of duty, in that the incestuous person was not put away from among them. This could not be, if so be the power of it were so in the hands of a few of the officers that the church had no right to act in it; for none can incur guilt merely by the defect of others in discharge of their duty.

3. The church, essentially considered, is before its ordinary officers; for the apostles ordained officers in every church. But the church in that state hath power to put away from among them and their communion an obstinate offender: they have it as they are a society by voluntary confederation. Wherein this comes short of authoritative excommunication will immediately appear.

4. Where a church is complete and organized with its stated rulers, as the church of Corinth was, yet rules, instructions, and commands, are given expressly unto the fraternity or community of the church, for their duty and acting in the administration of this sentence, and the cutting off of an offender, 1 Cor. v. 1–7; 2 Cor. ii. 7, 8; yea, the ἵππησις, or infliction of the sentence, is ascribed unto them, verse 6. All these things do suppose a right and duty thereon to act according to their interest in excommunication to reside in the whole church. Wherefore,—

5. There are some acts belonging hereunto that the church itself, in the body of the fraternity, cannot be excluded from without destroying the nature of the sentence itself and rendering it ineffec-
tual. Such are, the previous cognizance of the cause, without which they cannot be blamed for any neglect about it; preparatory duties unto its execution, in prayer, mourning, and admonition, which are expressly prescribed unto them; and a testification of their consent unto it by their common suffrage. Without these things excom-
munication is but a name with a noise; it belongs not unto the order appointed by Christ in his church.

6. Hence arise the duties of the church towards an excomunicated person that are consequential unto his exclusion from among them. Such are, praying for him, as one noted by the church and under the discipline of Christ; avoiding communion with him in public and private, that he may be ashamed, and the like;—all which arise from their own voluntary actings in his exclusion, and such as without a judgment of the cause they cannot be obliged unto.
7. Yet, on the other side, unto the formal completeness of this sentence, an authoritative act of office-power is required: for,—
(1.) There is in it such an act of rule as is in the hands of the elders only; (2.) The executive power of the keys in binding and loosing, so far as it compriseth authority to be acted in the name of Christ, is intrusted with them only.

8. Wherefore I shall say no more, in answer unto this inquiry, but that excommunication is an act of church-power in its officers and brethren, acting according unto their respective rights, interests, and duties, particularly prescribed unto them. The officers of the church act in it as officers, with authority; the brethren, or the body of the church, with power, yet so as that the officers are no way excluded from their power, consent, and suffrage, in the acting of the church, but have the same interest therein with all the other members of the church;—but the community of the church have no interest in those authoritative actings of the officers which are peculiar unto them. Where either of these is wanting, the whole duty is vitiating, and the sense of the sentence rendered ineffectual.

First. It is inquired, Whether excommunication, justly deserved, may and ought to be omitted in case of trouble or danger that may ensue unto the church thereon?

It is usually granted that so it may and ought to be; which seems in general to have been the judgment of Austin.

The troubles and dangers intended are threefold:—1. From the thing itself; 2. From the persons to be excommunicated; 3. From the church.

1. "Trouble may arise from the thing itself; for there being an exercise of authority or jurisdiction in it over the persons of men not granted from the civil magistrate by the law of the land, those that execute it may be liable unto penalties ordained in such cases.

2. "The persons to be excommunicated may be great, and of great interest in the world, so as that if they receive a provocation hereby, they may occasion or stir up persecution against the church, as it hath often fallen out.

3. "The church itself may be divided on these considerations, so as that lasting differences may be occasioned among them, which the omission of the sentence might prevent."

For answer hereunto, some things must be premised; as,—

1. Here is no supposition of any thing sinful or morally evil in the church, its officers or any of its members, by refusing to omit the pronouncing of this sentence. Whether there be any sin in giving occasion unto the troubles mentioned, to be avoided by an omission of duty, is now to be inquired into.

2. We must suppose,—(1.) That the cause of excommunication be clear and evident, both as unto the merit of the fact and the due
application of it unto the person concerned, so as that no rational indifferent man shall be able to say that it is meet that such a one should be continued a member of such a society; as it ought to be wherever excommunication is administered. (2) That sufficient time and space for repentance, and for giving satisfaction unto the church (whereof afterward), hath been allowed unto the person after admonition. (3) That the church doth really suffer in honour and reputation by tolerating such a scandalous offender among them.

I answer, on these suppositions, I see no just reason to countenance the omission of the execution of this sentence, or to acquit the church from the guilt of sin in so doing; for,—

1. The first pretence of danger is vain. There is not the least shadow of jurisdiction in this act of the church. There is nothing in it that toucheth any thing which is under the protection and conservation of human laws. It reacheth not the persons of men in their lives, or liberties, or estates, or the least secular privileges that they do enjoy; it doth not expose them to the power or censures of others, nor prejudice them as unto office or advantage of life. There is, therefore, no concernment of the law of the land herein,—no more than in a parent’s disinheriting a rebellious child.

2. As unto danger of persecution by the means of the person provoked, I say,—(1.) The same may be pleaded as unto all other duties of obedience unto Jesus Christ wherewith the world is provoked, and so the whole profession of the church should give place to the fear of persecution. To testify against sin in the way of Christ’s appointment is a case of confession. (2.) The apostles were not deterred by this consideration from the excommunication of Simon Magus, the seducing Jews, Hymeneus and Alexander, with others. (3.) The Lord Christ commendeth or reproveth his churches, according as they were strict in the observation of this duty or neglective of it, notwithstanding the fear of persecution thereon, Rev. ii., iii. And,—(4.) He will take that care of his church, in all their obedience unto him, as shall turn all the consequences thereof unto their advantage.

3. As unto danger of differences in the church there is nothing to be said, but that if rule, order, love, and duty, will not prevent such differences, there is no way appointed of Christ for that end; and if they are sufficient for it (as they are abundantly), they must bear their own blame who occasion such differences.

Secondly. But it may be said, What if such an offender as justly deserves to be excommunicated, and is under admonition in order thereunto in case of impenitency, should voluntarily withdraw himself from and leave the communion of the church, is there any necessity to proceed against him by excommunication?

Ans. 1. Some say it is enough if it be declared in the church that such a one hath cut off himself from the church, and is there-
fore no longer under their watch or care, but is left unto himself and
the world. And this is sufficient with them who own no act of office-
power or authority in excommunication, but esteem it only a noted
cessation of communion; which destroys a principal branch of the
power of the keys. Wherefore,—

2. Where the offence is plain, open, scandalous, persisted in,—where
admonition is despised or not complied with,—it is the duty of the
church to denounced sentence of excommunication against such a
person notwithstanding his voluntary departure; for,—

(1.) No man is to make an advantage unto himself, or to be freed
from any disadvantage, censure, or spiritual penalty, by his own sin,
such as is the voluntary relinquishment of the church by a person
under admonition for scandalous offences.

(2.) It is necessary unto the church, both as unto the discharge of
its duty and the vindication of its honour, as also from the benefit
and edification it will receive by those duties of humiliation, mourning,
and prayer, which are necessary unto the execution of this sentence.

(3.) It is necessary for the good and benefit of him who so deserves
to be excommunicated; for,—[1.] The end of the institution of the
ordinance is his correction, not his destruction; and may be effectual
unto his repentance and recovery. [2.] It is to be followed with
sharp admonition and prayer; which in due time may reach the most
profligate sinner.

(4.) It becomes not the wisdom and order of any society intrusted
with authority for its own preservation, as the church is by Christ
himself, to suffer persons obnoxious unto censure by the fundamental
rules of that society to cast off all respect unto it, to break their order
and relation, without animadverting thereon, according to the author-
ity wherewith they are intrusted. To do otherwise is to expose their
order unto contempt, and proclaim a diffidence in their own author-
ity for the spiritual punishment of offenders.

(5.) One end of the appointment of the power and sentence of ex-
communication in the church, is to give testimony unto the future
final judgment of Christ against impenitent sinners, which none of
them can run away from nor escape.

A third inquiry may be, Whether, in case of any great and scan-
dalous sin, the church may proceed unto excommunication without
any previous admonition?

Aus. 1. Persons may be falsely accused of and charged with
great sins, the greatest of sins, as well as those of a lesser degree, and
that both by particular testimonies and public reports, as it was with
the Lord Christ himself; which daily experience confirms. Where-
fore all haste and precipitation, like that of David in judging the
case of Mephibosheth, is carefully to be avoided, though they are
pressed under the pretences of the greatness and notoriety of the sin.
2. There is no individual actual sin but is capable of great aggravation or alleviation from its circumstances. These the church is to inquire into, and to obtain a full knowledge of them, that all things being duly weighed, they may be affected with the sin in a due manner, or after a godly sort; which is essential unto the right administration of this ordinance.

3. This cannot be done without personal conference with the offender, who is to be allowed to speak for himself. This conference, in case guilt be discovered, cannot but have in it the nature of an admonition, whereon the church is to proceed, as in the case of previous solemn admonition, in the order and according to the rule which shall be immediately declared.

Fourthly. Whether, on the first knowledge of an offence or scandalous sin, if it be known unto the church that the offending party is penitent, and willing to declare his humiliation and repentance for the satisfaction of the church, the church may proceed unto his excommunication, in case the sin be great and notorious?

Ans. 1. It is certain that, in an orderly progress, as unto more private sins, a compliance by repentance with the first or second admonition doth put a stop unto all further ecclesiastical procedure.

2. But whereas the inquiry is made concerning sins either in their own nature or in their circumstances great and of disreputation unto the church, I answer,—

If repentance be evidenced unto the consciences of the rulers of the church to be sincere, and proportionable unto the offence in its outward demonstration, according unto the rule of the gospel, so as that they are obliged to judge in charity that the person sinning is pardoned and accepted with Christ, as all sincerely penitent sinners undoubtedly are, the church cannot proceed unto the excommunication of such an offender; for,—

(1.) It would be publicly to reject them whom they acknowledge that Christ doth receive. This nothing can warrant them to do; yea, so to do is to set up themselves against Christ, or at least to make use of his authority against his mind and will. Yea, such a sentence would destroy itself; for it is a declaration that Christ doth disapprove them whom he doth approve.

(2.) Their so doing would make a misrepresentation of the gospel, and of the Lord Christ therein; for whereas the principal design of the gospel, and of the representation that is made therein of Christ Jesus, is to evidence that all sincerely penitent sinners, that repent according unto the rule of it, are and shall be pardoned and accepted, by the rejection of such a person in the face of his sincere repentance, there is an open contradiction thereunto. Especially it would give an undue sense of the heart, mind, and will of Christ towards repenting sinners, such as may be dangerous unto the faith of
believers, so far as the execution of this sentence is doctrinal; for such it is, and declarative of the mind of Christ according unto the judgment of the church. The image, therefore, of this excommunication which is set up in some churches, wherein the sentence of it is denounced without any regard unto the mind of Christ, as unto his acceptance or disapprobation of those whom they excommunicate, is a teacher of lies.

(3.) Such a procedure is contrary unto the nature and end of this sentence; for it is corrective and instructive, not properly punishing and vindictive. The sole end of it, with respect whereunto it hath its efficacy from divine institution, is the humiliation, repentance, and recovery, of the sinner; and if this be attained before, the infliction of this sentence is contrary to the nature and end of it.

It will be said “That it hath another end also,—namely, the preservation of the purity of the church, and the vindication of its honour and reputation, wherein it suffers by the scandalous offences of any of its members.” Whereunto I say,—(1.) No church is or can be made impure by them whom Christ hath purged, as he doth all those who are truly penitent; (2.) It is no dishonour unto any church to have sinners in it who have evidenced sincere repentance; (3.) The present offence and scandal may be provided against by an act of rectorial prudence, in causing the offending person to abstain from the Lord’s table for a season.

FIFTIETH. It is inquired, Whether such as voluntarily, causelessly, and disorderly, do leave the communion of any church whereof they are members, though not guilty of any scandalous immoralities, may and ought to be excommunicated?

Ans. 1. Where persons are esteemed members of churches by external causes, without their own consent, or by parochial cohabitation, they may remove from one church unto another by the removal of their habitation, according unto their own discretion; for such cohabitation being the only formal cause of any relation to such a church in particular, upon the ceasing of that cause, the relation ceaseth of its own accord.

2. Where persons are members of churches by mutual confederatio or express personal consent, causeless departure from them is an evil liable unto many aggravations.

3. But whereas the principal end of all particular churches is edification, there may be many just and sufficient reasons why a person may remove himself from the constant communion of one church unto that of another; and of these reasons he himself is judge, on whom it is incumbent to take care of his own edification above all other things. Nor ought the church to deny unto any such persons their liberty, desired peaceably and according unto order.

4. It was declared before that where any persons guilty of, and
under admonition for, any scandalous sin do withdraw from the communion of any church, their so doing is no impediment unto a further procedure against them.

5. Whereas there are amongst us churches, or those which are so esteemed in the consciences of men, so far differing in principles and practices as that they have not entire communion with one another in all parts of divine worship, it may be inquired, Whether, if a man leave a church of one sort to join with one of another, as suppose he leave a select congregation to join in a parochial church constantly and totally, he may be justly excommunicated for so doing without the consent of the church wherunto he did belong?

Ans. 1. It is certain, on the one hand, that if any man leave the communion of parochial assemblies to join himself unto a select congregation, those who have power over those parishes will make no question whether they shall excommunicate him or no in their way. But,—

2. Supposing persons so departing from particular congregations,—

(1.) To be free from scandalous sins; (2.) That they depart quietly, without attempting disorder or confusion in the church; (3.) That they do actually join themselves unto the communion of some church, whose constitution, principles, and worship, they do approve, whereby their visible profession is preserved,—the church may not justly proceed unto their excommunication; it may suffice to declare that such persons have, of their own accord, forsaken the communion of the church, are no more under its watch and care, neither is the church further obliged towards them, but as unto Christian duties in general.

6. As for those whose departure is, as voluntary and causeless, so accompanied with other evils, such as are revilings, reproaches, and false accusations (as is usual in such cases), they may be proceeded against as obstinate offenders.

The sixth inquiry is, What time is to be given after solemn admonition, before actual excommunication?

Ans. 1. The manner of some, to run over the words, "I admonish you a first, second, and third time," so immediately to make way for the sentence of excommunication, is that wherein men are greatly to be pitied, for their ignorance of the nature of those things which they take on themselves to act, order, and dispose of,—that we ascribe it not unto worse and more evil causes.

2. The nature of the thing itself requires a considerable season or space of time between solemn admonition and excommunication: for the end and design of the former is the repentance and recovery of the offender; nor doth its efficacy thereunto depend on or consist in the actual giving of it, but it is as other moral causes, which may work gradually upon occasional advantages. Want of light, some present exasperation and temptation, may seem to frustrate a present
admonition, when they do but suspend its present efficacy, which it may afterward obtain on the conscience of the offender.

3. It being a church-admonition that is intended, it is the duty of the church to abide in prayer and waiting for the fruit of it, according to the appointment of Christ; and herein the case may possibly require some long time to be spent.

4. No present appearance of obstinacy or impenitence under admonition (which is usually pleaded) should cause an immediate procedure unto excommunication; for,—(1.) It is contrary unto the distinct institution of the one and the other, wherein the former is to be allowed its proper season for its use and efficacy. (2.) It doth not represent the patience and forbearance of Christ towards his church and all the members of it. (3.) It is not suited unto the rule of that love which “hopeth all things, beareth all things,” etc. (4.) All grounds of hope for the recovery of sinners by repentance are to be attended unto, so as to defer the ultimate sentence.

"Nulla unquam de morte hominis cunctatio longa est."—Juv. Sat. vi. 220.

5. If new sins are added, of the same or any other kind, unto former scandals, whilst persons are under admonition, it is an indication of the necessity of a procedure.

SEVENTHLY. It may be further inquired, Whether a man may be excommunicated for errors in matters of faith, or false opinions about them?

Ans. 1. The case is so plainly and positively stated, Rev. ii. 2, 6, 14, 15, 20, 1 Tim. i. 19, 20, Tit. iii. 10, 11, and other places, that it needs no further determination. Wherefore,—

2. If the errors intended are about or against the fundamental truths of the gospel, so as that they that hold them cannot “hold the Head,” but really make “shipwreck of the faith,” no pretended usefulness of such persons, no peaceableness as unto outward deportment, which men guilty of such abominations will frequently cover themselves withal, can countenance the church in forbearing, after due admonition, to cut them off from their communion. The nature of the evil, the danger that is from it unto the whole church, as from a gangrene in any member unto the body, the indignation of Christ expressed against such pernicious doctrines, the opposition of them to the building of the church on the Rock, which in most of them is opposed, do render a church altogether inexcusable who omit their duty herein.

3. False opinions in lesser things, when the foundation of faith and Christian practice is not immediately concerned, may be tolerated in a church; and sundry rules are given unto this end in the Scripture, as Rom. xiv. 1–3, etc., Phil. iii. 15, 16. Howbeit, in that low ebb of grace, love, and prudence, which we are come unto, it is best for edification that all persons peaceably dispose themselves
into those societies with which they most agree in principles and opinions, especially such as relate or lead unto practice in any duties of worship. But,—

4. With respect unto such opinions, if men will, as is usual, wrangle and contend, to the disturbance of the peace of the church, or hinder it in any duty, with respect unto its own edification, and will neither peaceably abide in the church nor peaceably depart from it, they may and ought to be proceeded against with the censures of the church.

EIGHTHLY. Whether persons excommunicated out of any church may be admitted unto the hearing of the word in the assemblies of that church?

Ans. 1. They may be so, as also to be present at all duties of moral worship; for so may heathens and unbelievers, 1 Cor. xiv. 23, 24.

2. When persons are under this sentence, the church is in a state of expecting of their recovery and return, and therefore are not to prohibit them any means thereof, such as is preaching of the word.

NINTHLY. How far extends the rule of the apostle towards persons rejected of the church, 1 Cor. v. 11, “With such an one no not to eat;” as that also, “Note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed,” 2 Thess. iii. 14?

1. To “eat” compriseth all ordinary converse in things of this life: “Give us our daily bread.” To “note” is either the act of the church setting the mark of its censure and disapprobation on him, or the duty of the members of the church to take notice of him as unto the end of not keeping company with him. Wherefore,—

2. Herein all ordinary converse of choice, not made necessary by previous occasions, is forbidden. The rule, I say, forbids,—(1.) All ordinary converse of choice, not that which is occasional; (2.) Converse about earthly, secular things, not that which is spiritual, for such an one may and ought still to be admonished whilst he will hear the word of admonition; (3.) It is such converse as is not made previously necessary by men’s mutual engagements in trade and the like, for that is founded on such rules of right and equity, with such obligations in point of truth, as excommunication cannot dissolve.

3. No suspension of duties antecedently necessary by virtue of natural or moral relation is allowed or countenanced by this rule; such are those of husband and wife, parents and children, magistrates and subjects, masters and servants, neighbours, relations in propinquity or blood. No duties arising from or belonging unto any of these relations are released, or the obligation unto them weakened, by excommunication. Husbands may not hereon forsake their wives if they are excommunicated, nor wives their husbands; magistrates may not withdraw their protection from any of their subjects because they are excommunicated, much less may subjects withhold their obe-
dience on any pretence of the excommunication of their magistrates as such. And the same is true as unto all other natural or moral relations.

4. The ends of this prohibition are,—(1.) To testify our condemnation of the sin and disapprobation of the person guilty of it, who is excommunicated; (2.) The preservation of ourselves from all kinds of participation in his sin; (3.) To make him ashamed of himself, that if he be not utterly profligate and given up unto total apostasy, it may occasion in him thoughts of returning.

TENTHLY. How ought persons excommunicated to be received into the church upon their repentance?

Ans. 1. As unto the internal manner, with all readiness and cheerfulness, with,—(1.) Meekness, to take from them all discouragement and disconsolation, Gal. vi. 1; (2.) With compassion and all means of relief and consolation, 2 Cor. ii. 7; (3.) With love in all the demonstrations of it, verse 8; (4.) With joy, to represent the heart of Christ towards repenting sinners.

2. The outward manner of the restoration of such a person consists in,—(1.) His testification of his repentance unto the satisfaction of the church; (2.) The express consent of the church unto his reception; (3.) His renewed engagement in the covenant of the church, whereby he is re-instated or jointed again in the body in his own proper place;—in all which the elders, by their authority, are to go before the church.

All sorts of persons do now condemn the opinions of the Novatians in refusing the re-admission of lapsed sinners into the church, upon repentance. But there may be an evil observed amongst some leading that way, or unto what is worse; and this is, that they seek not after the recovery of those that are excommunicated, by prayer, admonition, exhortation, in a spirit of meekness and tenderness, but are well satisfied that they have quitted themselves of their society. It is better never to excommunicate any, than so to carry it towards them when they are excommunicated. But there is a sort of men unto whom if a man be once an offender, he shall be so for ever.

ELEVENTHLY. Our last inquiry shall be, Whether excommunication may be regular and valid when the matter of right is dubious and disputable,—as many such cases may fall out, especially with respect unto the occasions of life and mutual converse,—or when the matter of fact is not duly proved by positive witnesses on the one hand, and is denied on the other?

Ans. 1. The foundation of the efficacy of excommunication, next and under its divine institution, lies in the light and conviction of the consciences of them that are to be excommunicated. If these are not affected with a sense of guilt, as in dubious cases they may not be, the sentence will be of no force or efficacy.
2. A case wherein there is a difference in the judgment of good and wise men about it is to be esteemed such a dubious case as is exempted from this censure. Nothing is to be admitted here to take place but what is reprovable by natural light and the concurrent judgment of them that fear God.

3. If the case be about such a right or wrong, in pretended fraud, over-reaching, or the like, as is determinable by civil laws, the church is no judge in such cases, unless it be by way of arbitration, 1 Cor. vi.

4. If the question be about doctrines that are not on points fundamental, so as those who dissent from the church do carry it peaceably and orderly, there can be no procedure unto ecclesiastical censure; but if men will dote on their own opinions, wrangling, contending, and breaking the peace of the church about them, there are other rules given in that case.

5. If the matter of fact be to be determined and stated by witness, it is absolutely necessary, by virtue of divine institution, that there be two or three concurrent testimonies; one witness is not to be regarded. See Deut. xix. 15; Num. xxxv. 30; Matt. xviii. 16, etc.

Wherefore the ensuing rules or directions are to be observed in the matter of excommunication:—

1. No excommunication is to be allowed in cases dubious and disputable, wherein right and wrong are not easily determinable unto all unprejudiced persons that know the will of God in such things; nor is it to be admitted when the matter of fact stands in need of testimony, and is not proved by two witnesses at the least.

2. All prejudices, all partiality, all provocations, all haste and precipitation, are most carefully to be avoided in this administration; for the judgment is the Lord's. Wherefore,—

3. We are continually, in all things that tend unto this sentence, and eminently in the sentence itself, to charge our consciences with the mind of Christ and what he would do himself in the case, considering his love, grace, mercy, and patience, with instances of his condescension which he gave us in this world.

4. There is also required of us herein a constant remembrance that we also are in the flesh and liable to temptation; which may restrain and keep in awe that forwardness and confidence which some are apt to manifest in such cases. In all these things a watchful eye is to be kept over the methods of Satan, who by all means seeks to pervert this ordinance unto the destruction of men, which is appointed for their edification; and he too often prevails in that design. And if, by the negligence of a church in the management and pursuit of this ordinance, he get advantage to pervert it unto the ruin of any, it is the fault of that church, in that they have not been careful of the honour of Christ therein.
Wherefore,—1. As excommunication by a cursed noise and clamour, with bell, book, and candle (such as we have instances of in some papal councils), is a horrible antichristian abomination: so,—

2. It is an undue representation of Christ and his authority, for persons openly guilty of profaneness in sinning to excommunicate them who are blameless in all Christian obedience.

3. All excommunication is evangelically null where there is wanting an evangelical frame of spirit in those by whom it is administered, and there is present an anti-evangelical order in its administration.

4. It is sufficiently evident that, after all the contests and disputes about this excommunication that have been in the world, the noise that it hath made, the horrible abuses that it hath been put unto, the wresting of all church order and rule to give countenance unto a corrupt administration of it, with the needless oppositions that have been made against its institution, there is nothing in it, nothing belongs unto it, nothing is required unto its administration, wherein men's outward interests are at all concerned, and which the smallest number of sincere Christians in any church-society may not perform and discharge unto the glory of Christ and their own edification.

It is the mystery of iniquity that hath traversed these things into such a state and posture as is unintelligible unto spiritual wisdom, unpracticable in the obedience of faith, and ruinous unto all evangelical order and discipline.

CHAPTER XI.

Of the communion of churches.

Churches so appointed and established in order as hath been declared ought to hold communion among themselves, or with each other, as unto all the ends of their institution and order, for these are the same in all; yea, the general end of them is in order of nature considered antecedently unto their institution in particular. This end is, the edification of the body of Christ in general, or the church catholic. The promotion hereof is committed jointly and severally unto all particular churches. Wherefore, with respect hereunto, they are obliged unto mutual communion among themselves; which is their consent, endeavour, and conjunction, in and for the promotion of the edification of the catholic church, and therein their own, as they are parts and members of it.

This communion is incumbent on every church with respect unto all other churches of Christ in the world equally. And the duties and acts of it in all of them are of the same kind and nature; for there is no such disparity between them or subordination among
them as should make a difference between the acts of their mutual communion, so as that the acts of some should be acts of authority, and those of others acts of obedience or subjection. Wherever there is a church, whether it be at Rome or Eugubium,¹ in a city or a village, the communion of them all is mutual, the acts of it of the same kind, however one church may have more advantages to be useful and helpful therein than another. And the abuse of those advantages was that which wrought effectually in the beginning of that disorder which at length destroyed the catholic church, with all church-communion whatever: for some churches, especially that of Rome, having many advantages, in gifts, abilities, numbers, and reputation above many, above most churches, for usefulness in their mutual communion, the guides of it insensibly turned and perverted the addresses made unto them, the advices and assistances desired of them in way of communion, or their pretences of such addresses and desires, into a usurpation, first of a primacy of honour, then of order, then of supremacy and jurisdiction, unto the utter overthrow of all church order and communion, and at length of the whole nature of the catholic church, as stated and subsisting in particular churches; as we shall see.

All churches, on their first institution, quickly found themselves indigent and wanting, though not as unto their being, power, and order, yet as unto their well-being, with their preservation in truth and order upon extraordinary occurrences, as also with respect unto their usefulness and serviceableness unto the general end of furthering the edification of the church catholic. The care hereof, and the making provision for this defect, was committed by our Lord Jesus Christ unto the apostles during their lives, which Paul calls 'Π μετριμνα πασών τῶν ἐκκλησίων, 2 Cor. xi. 28, "The care of all the churches," yet what was only a pressing care and burden unto them was afterward contended for by others as a matter of dignity and power! the pretence of it, in one especially, being turned into a cursed domination, under the style and title of "Servus servorum Dei."

But if a thousand pretences should be made of supplying churches' defects, after the decease of the apostles, by any other order, way, or means besides this of the equal communion of churches among themselves, they will be all found destitute of any countenance from the Scripture, primitive antiquity, the nature, use, and end of churches, yea, of Christian religion itself. Yet the pretence hereof is the sole foundation of all that disposal of churches into several stories of subordination, with an authority and jurisdiction over one another, which now prevails in the world. But there is no place for such imagination, until it be proved either that our Lord Jesus Christ hath not appointed the mutual communion of churches among themselves by

¹ See note, vol. xvi. p. 300.—Ed.
their own consent, or that it is not sufficient for the preservation of the union and furtherance of the edification of the church catholic, whereunto it is designed.

Wherefore, our Lord Jesus Christ, in his infinite wisdom, hath constituted his churches in such a state and order as wherein none of them are able of themselves, always and in all instances, to attain all the ends for which they are appointed, with respect unto the edification of the church catholic; and he did it for this end, that whereas the whole catholic church is animated by one spirit, which is the bond of union between all particular churches (as we shall see), every one of them may act the gifts and graces of it unto the preservation and edification of the whole.

Herein then, we acknowledge, lieth the great difference which we have with others about the state of the church of Christ in this world. We do believe that the mutual communion of particular churches amongst themselves, in an equality of power and order, though not of gifts and usefulness, is the only way appointed by our Lord Jesus Christ, after the death of the apostles, for the attaining the general end of all particular churches, which is the edification of the church catholic, in faith, love, and peace. Other ways and means have been found out in the world for this end, which we must speak unto immediately. Wherefore it behoveth us to use some diligence in the consideration of the causes, nature, and use, of this communion of churches.

But it must be moreover premised, that whereas this communion of churches is radically and essentially the same among all churches in the world, yet, as unto the ordinary actual exercise of the duties of it, it is confined and limited by divine providence unto such churches as the natural means of the discharge of such duties may extend unto; that is, unto those which are planted within such lines of communion, such precincts or boundaries of places and countries, as may not render the mutual performance of such duties insufferably difficult. Yet is not the world itself so wide but that, all places being made pervious by navigation, this communion of churches may be visibly professed, and in some instances practised, among all churches, "from the rising of the sun, even unto the going down of the same," where the name of Christ is known among the Gentiles; wherein the true nature of the catholic church and its union doth consist, which is utterly overthrown by the most vehement pretences that are made unto it, as those in the church of Rome.

Wherefore such a communion of churches is to be inquired after as from which no true church of Christ is or can be excluded; in whose actual exercise they may and ought all to live, and whereby the general end of all churches, in the edification of the catholic church, may be attained. This is the true and only catholicism of
the church; which whosoever departs from, or substitutes any thing else in the room of it under that name, destroys its whole nature, and disturbs the whole ecclesiastical harmony that is of Christ's institution.

However, therefore, we plead for the rights of particular churches, yet our real controversy with most in the world is for the being, union, and communion of the church catholic; which are variously perverted by many, separating it into parties, and confining it to rules, measures, and canons, of their own finding out and establishment: for such things as these belong neither to the internal nor external form of that catholic church whose being in the world we believe, and whose union we are obliged to preserve. And whosoever gives any description of or limitation to the catholic church besides what consists in the communion of particular churches intended, doth utterly overthrow it, and therein an article of our faith.

But this communion of churches cannot be duly apprehended unless we inquire and determine wherein their union doth consist, for communion is an act of union that receives both its nature and power from it or by virtue of it; for of what nature soever the union of things distinct in themselves be, of the same is the communion that they have among themselves.

In the church of Rome, the person of the pope, as he is pope, is the head and centre of all church-union, nor is there allowed any union of particular churches with Christ or among themselves but in and through him. A universal subjection unto him and his authority is the original spring of all church-union among them: and if any one soul fail herein,—if, as unto things of faith and divine worship, he do not depend on the pope and live in subjection unto him,—he is reputed a stranger and foreigner unto the catholic church; yea, they affirm that be a man never so willing for and desirous of an interest in Christ, he cannot have it but by the pope!

The communion of churches congenial and suited unto this union, proceeding from it and exercised by virtue of it, ariseth from a various contignation of order, or the erection of one story of church-interest upon another, until we come to the idol placed on the top of this Babel. So is this communion carried on from the obedience and subjection of the lowest rubbish of ecclesiastical order unto diocesans, of them to metropolitans, of them to patriarchs or cardinals, of them to the pope; or an ascent is made from diocesan synods, by provincial and national, to those that are called oecumenical, whose head is the pope.

Yet two things must be further observed, to clear this communion of the Roman Catholic church; as,—1. That there is no ascent of church order or power by a vital act of communion from the lower degrees, orders, or consociations, and by them to the pope, as though
he should receive any thing of church-power from them; but all the plenitude of it being originally vested in him, by these several orders and degrees he communicates of it unto all churches, as the life of their conjunction and communion. 2. That no man is so jointed in this order, so compacted in this body, but that he is also personally and immediately subject to the pope, and depends on him as unto his whole profession of religion.

And this is that which constitutes him formally to be what he is,—that is, antichrist; and the church-state arising from its union unto him, holding him as its head, subsisting in a communion by virtue of power received through various orders and constitutions from him, to be antichristian: for he and it are set up in the room of, and in direct opposition unto, the Lord Christ, as the head of the catholic church and the church-state thereon depending. This we have described, Eph. iv. 15, 16: "Speaking the truth in love, may grow up," etc.; as also Col. ii. 19, where there is a rejection of them who belong not unto the church catholic, taken from its relation unto Christ, and the nature of its dependence on him: "Not holding the Head," etc.

When men shall cease to be wilfully blind, or when the powers of the "strong delusion," that begin to abate, shall expire, they will easily see the direct opposition that is between these two heads and two churches, namely, Christ and the pope, the catholic church and that of Rome.

I know well enough all the evasions and distinctions that are invented to countenance this antichristianism: as, "That there is a double head,—one of internal influence of grace, which Christ is, and the pope is not; the other of rule and authority, which the pope is. But this also is twofold, supreme and remote, and immediate and subordinate; the first is Christ, the latter is the pope. And there is yet further a twofold head of the church,—the one invisible, which is Christ; the other visible, which is the pope."

Not to insist on these gross and horrible figments of a twofold head of the catholic church, in any sense, which are foreign to the Scripture, and foreign to antiquity, whereof never one word was heard in the church for six hundred years after Christ, deforming the beautiful spouse of Christ into a monster, we will allow, at present, that the pope is only the immediate, visible, subordinate head of all rule and authority to their church; which is what they plead for. Then I say, that the church whereof he is the head is his body; that it holds him as its head, that it is compacted together by the officers and orders that depend on him and receive all their influence of church power and order from him: which though he communicates not by an internal influence of grace and gifts, (alas, poor wretch!) yet he doth it by officers, offices, orders, and laws; so giving
union and communion unto the whole body by the effectual working of every joint and part of the hierarchy under him, for its union, communion, and edification. This, I say, is the antichrist and the antichristian church-state, as I shall be at any time ready to maintain.

Let any man take a due prospect of this head and this body, as related and united by the bond of their own rules, constitutions, and laws, acting in worldly pomp, splendour, and power, with horrid, bloody cruelties against all that oppose them, and he will not fail of an open view of all the scriptural lineaments of the apostate, antichristian state of the church.

I say again, this assigning of the original of all church order, union, and communion, unto the pope of Rome, investing him therewith as an article of faith, constituting him thereby the head of the church, and the church thereon his body,—as it must be if he be its head, so as that from him all power of order, and for all acts of communion, should be derived, returning all in obedience and subjection unto him,—doth set up a visible, conspicuous, antichristian church-state in opposition unto Christ and the catholic church. But with this sort of men we deal not at present.

There is a pretence unto a union of churches not derived from the papal headship; and this consists in the canonical subjection of particular churches unto a diocesan bishop, and of such bishops to metropolitans, which though "de facto" it be at present terminated and stated within the bounds of a nation, yet "de jure" it ought to be extended unto the whole catholic church.

According unto this principle, the union of the catholic church consists in that order whereby particular churches are distributed into deaneries, archdeaconries, exempt peculiars, under officials; dioceses, provinces, under metropolitans; and so by or without patriarchs, to avoid the rock of the Papacy, issuing in a general council, as I suppose. But,—

1. To confine the union and communion of the catholic church hereunto is at present absolutely destructive both of the church and its communion: for all particular churches, when they are by a coalescency extended unto those which are provincial or national, have, both politically and ecclesiastically, such bounds fixed unto them as they cannot pass to carry on communion unto and with the church as catholic, by any acts and duties belonging unto their order; and hereby the union and communion of the church is utterly lost, for the union of the catholic church, as such, doth always equally exist, and the communion of it is always equally in exercise, and can consist in nothing but what doth so exist and is so exercised. Wherever is the catholic church, there is the communion of saints; but nothing of this can be obtained by virtue of this order.
2. We inquire at present after such a union as gives particular churches communion among themselves, which this order doth not, but absolutely overthrows it, leaving nothing unto them but subjection to officers set over them, who are not of them, according to rules and laws of their appointment; which is foreign to the Scripture and antiquity.

3. This order itself, the only bond of the pretended union, having no divine institution, especially as to its extent unto the whole catholic church, nor any intimation in the Scripture, and being utterly impossible to be put in execution or actual exercise, no man can declare what is the original or centre of it, whence it is deduced, and whereon it rests.

Having removed these pretences out of our way, we may easily discern wherein the union, and consequently the communion, of all particular churches doth consist; and in the due observation whereof all that church-order which the Lord Christ hath appointed and doth accept is preserved.

I say, then, that the true and only union of all particular churches consists in that which gives form, life, and being unto the church catholic, with the addition of what belongs unto them as they are particular; and this is, that they have all one and the same God and Father, one Lord Jesus Christ, one faith and one doctrine of faith, one hope of their calling, or the promised inheritance, one regeneration, one baptism, one bread and wine, and are united unto God and Christ in one Spirit, through the bond of faith and love.

This description, with what is suited thereunto and explanatory of it, is all the account which is given us in the Scripture of the constituting form of the catholic church, and of the union of particular churches among themselves. What church soever fails in the essential parts of this description, or any of them, it is separated from the catholic church, nor hath either union or communion with any true churches of Christ.

Two things concur unto the completing of this union of churches, —1. Their union or relation unto Christ; 2. That which they have among themselves.

1. The Lord Christ himself is the original and spring of this union, and every particular church is united unto him as its head; besides which, with or under which, it hath none. This relation of the church unto Christ as its head the apostle expressly affirms to be the foundation and cause of its union, Eph. iv. 15, 16, Col. ii. 19, —the places before quoted. Hereby it is also in God the Father, 2 Thess. i. 1, or hath God as its Father. And unless this union be dissolved, unless a church be disunited from Christ, it cannot be so from the catholic church, nor any true church of Christ in particular, however it may be dealt withal by others in the world.
From Christ, as the head and spring of union, there proceedeth unto all particular churches a bond of union, which is his Holy Spirit, acting itself in them by faith and love, in and by the ways and means and for the ends of his appointment.

This is the kingly, royal, beautiful union of the church: Christ, as the only head of influence and rule, bringing it into a relation unto himself as his body, communicating of his Spirit unto it, governing it by the law of his word, enabling it unto all the duties of faith, love, and holiness.

For unto the completing of this union on the part of the church, these things are required:—(1.) Faith in him, or holding him as the head, in the sincere belief of all things concerning his person, office, and doctrine in the gospel, with whatever belongs thereunto; (2.) Love unto him and all that is his; (3.) That especial holiness whose foundation is repentance and effectual vocation; (4.) The observance of his commands as unto all duties of divine worship. These things are essentially requisite unto this union on the part of the church. The reality and power of them is the internal form of the church, and the profession of them is its external form.

2. There concurreth hereunto an union among themselves, I mean all particular churches throughout the world, in whom the church catholic doth act its power and duty. And the relation that is between these churches is that which is termed "relatio equiparentiae," wherein neither of the "relata" is the first foundation of it, but they are equal. It doth not arise from the subordination of one unto another, they being all equal as unto what concerns their essence and power. And the bond hereof is that especial love which Christ requireth among all his disciples, acting itself unto all the ends of the edification of the whole body.

Take in the whole, and the union of churches consists in their relation unto God as their Father, and unto Christ as their only immediate head of influence and rule, with a participation of the same Spirit in the same faith and doctrine of truth, the same kind of holiness, the same duties of divine worship, especially the same mysteries of baptism and the supper, the observance of the same rules or commands of Christ in all church-order, with mutual love, effectual unto all the ends of their being and constitution, or the edification of the church catholic.

There may be failures in them or some of them, as unto sundry of these things; there may be differences among them about them, arising from the infirmities, ignorance, and prejudices of them of whom they do consist, the best knowing here but in part; but whilst the substance of them is preserved, the union of all churches, and so of the catholic church, is preserved.

This is that blessed oneness which the Lord Christ prayed for so
earnestly for his disciples,—that they might be one in the Father and the Son, one among themselves, and "made perfect in one," John xvii. 20–23, without any respect unto that horrid image of it which was set up in the latter days of the church, which all men were compelled to bow down unto and worship by the fire of Nebuchadnezzar's furnace. Of any other union there is not the least mention in the Scripture.

This union of the catholic church in all particular churches is always the same, inviolable, unchangeable, comprehending all the churches in the world at all times, not confinable unto any state or party, not interruptible by any external form, nor to be prevailed against by the gates of hell; and all such disputes about a catholic church and its union as can be so much as questionable among them that profess to believe the gospel are in direct opposition unto the prayers and promises of Jesus Christ. Whilst evangelical faith, holiness, obedience unto the commands of Christ, and mutual love, abide in any on the earth, there is the catholic church; and whilst they are professed, that catholic church is visible. Other catholic church upon the earth I believe none, nor any that needs other things unto its constitution.

These things being premised, I proceed unto that which is our present inquiry,—namely, wherein the communion of particular churches among themselves doth consist.

The communion of churches is their joint actings in the same gospel duties towards God in Christ, with their mutual actings towards each other with respect unto the end of their institution and being, which is the glory of Christ in the edification of the whole catholic church.

As unto the actings of the first sort, the ground of them is faith, and therein is the first act of the communion of churches. And this communion in faith among all the churches of Christ is fivefold:—

1. General, in the belief of the same doctrine of truth, which is according unto godliness, the same articles of faith, and the public profession thereof; so that every one of them is the pillar and ground of the same truth. This the primitive church provided for in creeds and symbols, or confessions of faith, as is known. But as never any one of them was expressly owned by all churches, so in process of time they came to be abused, as expressing the sense of the present church, whether true or false. Hence we have as many Arian creeds yet extant as those that are orthodox. But unto the communion of all particular churches in the world, there is nothing required but a belief of the Scripture to be the word of God, with a professed assent unto all divine revelations therein contained, provided that no error be avowed that is contrary to the principal or fundamental doctrines of it. For although any society of men should
profess the Scripture to be the word of God, and avow an assent unto the revelations made therein, yet, by the conceptions of their minds, and misunderstanding of the sense of the Holy Spirit therein, they may embrace and adhere unto such errors as may cut them off from all communion with the catholic church in faith: such are the denial of the holy Trinity, the incarnation of the Son of God, his divine person or office, the redemption of the church by his blood, the necessity of regeneration by his Spirit, and the like. And they may also add that of their own unto their professed belief as shall exclude them from communion with the catholic church: such are the assertions of traditions as equal with the written word, of another head of the church besides the Lord Christ, of another sacrifice besides what he once offered for all, and the like. But where any are preserved from such heresies on the one hand and the other, there is no more required unto communion with the whole church, as unto faith in general, but only the belief before described.

2. This communion in faith respects the church itself as its material object; for it is required hereunto that we believe that the Lord Christ hath had in all ages, and especially hath in that wherein we live, a church on the earth, confined unto no places nor parties of men, no empires nor dominions, nor capable of any confinement; as also, that this church is redeemed, called, sanctified by him; that it is his kingdom, his interest, his concernment in the world; that thereunto, and [unto] all the members of it, all the promises of God do belong and are confined; that this church he will save, preserve, and deliver, from all opposition, so as that "the gates of hell shall not prevail against it," and after death will raise it up and glorify it at the last day. This is the faith of the catholic church concerning itself; which is an ancient, fundamental article of our religion. And if any one deny that there is such a church called out of the world, separated from it, unto which alone, and all the members of it, all the promises of God do appertain, in contradistinction unto all others, or confine it unto a party unto whom these things are not appropriate, he cuts himself off from the communion of the church of Christ.

In the faith hereof all the true churches of Christ throughout the world have a comforting, refreshing communion; which is the spring of many duties in them continually.

3. This communion of churches in faith consists much in the principal fruit of it, namely, prayer. So is it stated, Eph. ii. 18, "For through Christ we have access by one Spirit unto the Father." And that therein the communion of the catholic church doth consist the apostle declares in the following verses, 19–22, "Now therefore," etc.; for prayers in all churches having one object, which is God even the Father, God as the Father; proceeding in all from one and
the same Spirit, given unto them as a Spirit of grace and supplications to make intercession for them; and all of them continually offered unto God by the same High Priest, who adds unto it the incense of his own intercession, and by whom they have all an access unto the same throne of grace,—they have all a blessed communion herein continually. And this communion is the more express in that the prayers of all are for all, so as that there is no particular church of Christ in the world,—not any one member of any of them, but they have the prayers of all the churches in the world and of all the members of them every day. And however this communion be invisible unto the eyes of flesh, yet is it glorious and conspicuous unto the eye of faith, and is a part of the glory of Christ the mediator in heaven. This prayer, proceeding from or wrought by one and the same Spirit in them all, equally bestowed on them all by virtue of the promise of Christ, having the same object, even God as a Father, and offered unto him by the same High Priest, together with his own intercession, gives unto all churches a communion far more glorious than what consists in some outward rites and orders of men's devising.

But now if there be any other persons or churches which have any other object of their prayers but God even the Father, and as our Father in Christ, or have any other mediators or intercessors by whom to convey or present their prayers unto God but Christ alone, the only high priest of the church, or do renounce the aid and assistance of the Holy Spirit as a Spirit of grace and supplications, they cut themselves off from all communion with the catholic church herein.

4. The unity of faith in all churches effecteth communion among them in the administration of the same sacraments of baptism and the supper of the Lord. These are the same in, unto, and amongst them all; neither do some variations in the outward manner of their administration interrupt that communion. But wherever the continuation of these ordinances is denied, or their nature or use is perverted, or idolatrous worship is annexed unto their administration, there communion with the catholic church is renounced.

5. They have also by faith communion herein, in that all churches do profess a subjection unto the authority of Christ in all things, and an obligation upon them to do and observe all whatsoever he hath commanded.

Other instances of the like nature might be given, but these are sufficient to manifest how unscriptural the notion is, that there is no proper communion with or among churches but what consists in a compliance with certain powers, orders, and rites, the pressing whereof under the name of "uniformity" hath cast all thoughts of real, evangelical church-communion into oblivion.

SECONDLY. Churches ordained and constituted in the way and manner, and for the ends, declared in our former discourse on this
subject, and, by virtue of their union unto Christ and among themselves, living constantly, in all places of the world, in the actual exercise of that communion which consists in the performance of the same church-duties towards God in Christ, unto their own continuance, increase, and edification, have also an especial union among themselves, and a mutual communion thence arising.

*The bond of this union is love;* not the common regulated affection of human nature so called, not merely that power and duty which is engraven on the hearts of men by the law of creation towards all of the same kind and blood with themselves, but an especial grace of the Holy Spirit, acting in the church as the principle and bond of its union unto itself; whence the command of it is called a "new commandment," because in itself, as unto the only example of it, in the person of Christ, the causes and motives unto it, with its peculiar ends and proper exercise, it was absolutely new and evangelical. An explanation of the nature of it belongs not unto this place; although it be a grace and a duty of so much importance,—wherein so much of the life, power, and peculiar glory of Christian religion doth consist,—and is either so utterly lost or hath such vile images of it set up in the world, that it deserves a full consideration; which it may receive in another place.

I say, the Holy Spirit of grace and love being given from Christ, the fountain and centre of all church-union, to dwell in and abide with his church, thereby uniting it unto himself, doth work in it and all the members of it that mutual love which may and doth animate them unto all those mutual acts which are proper unto the relation wherein they stand, by virtue of their union unto Christ their head, as members of the same body one with another.

Herein consists the union of every church in itself, of all churches among themselves, and so of the whole catholic church, their communion consisting in regular acts and duties proceeding from this love, and required by virtue of it.

This account of the union and communion of churches may seem strange unto some, who are enamoured of that image which is set up of them in the world, in canons, constitutions of rites, and outward order, in various subordinations and ceremonies, which are most remote from making any due representation of them.

The church, in its dependence on Christ its head, being by its institution disposed into its proper order for its own edification, or fitly joined together and compacted, this love working effectually in every office, officer, and member, according unto its disposal in the body for the receiving and communicating supplies for edification, gives the whole both its union and communion, all the actings of it being regulated by divine rule and prescription.

Instead hereof, to erect a machine, the spring and centre of whose
motions are unknown (any other, I mean, but external force), compacted by the iron joints and bands of human laws, edifying itself by the power of offices and officers foreign unto the Scripture, acting with weapons that are not spiritual but carnal, and mighty through him whose work it is to cast the members of the church of Christ into prison, as unto an outward conformity, is to forsake the Scripture and follow our own imagination.

The outward acts of communion among churches, proceeding from this love, and the obligation that is on them to promote their mutual edification, may be referred unto the two heads of advice and assistance.

Churches have communion unto their mutual edification by advice in synods or councils; which must in this place be considered.

Synods are the meetings of divers churches by their messengers or delegates, to consult and determine of such things as are of common concernment unto them all by virtue of this communion which is exercised in them.

1. The necessity and warranty of such synods ariseth,—(1.) From the light of nature; for all societies which have the same original, the same rule, the same interest, the same ends, and which are in themselves mutually concerned in the good or evil of each other, are obliged by the power and conduct of reason to advise in common for their own good on all emergencies that stand in need thereof.

Churches are such societies; they have all one and the same authoritative institution, one and the same rule of order and worship, the same ends, as we have declared, and their entire interest is one and the same. When, therefore, any thing occurs amongst them that is attended with such difficulties as cannot be removed or taken away by any one of them severally, or in whose determination all of them are equally concerned, not to make use herein of common advice and counsel is to forsake that natural light which they are bound to attend unto in all duties of obedience unto God.

(2.) The union of all churches as before described,—in one Head, by one Spirit, through one faith and worship, unto the same ends,—doth so compact them into one body mystical as that none of them is or can be complete absolutely without a joint acting with other members of the same body unto the common good of the whole, as occasion doth require. And this joint acting with others in any church can be no otherwise but by common advice and counsel; which natural circumstances render impossible by any means but by their convention in synods by their messengers and delegates: for although there may be some use of letters missive, and was so eminently in the primitive churches, to ask the advice of one another in difficult cases (as the first instance we have of the communion of churches after the days of the apostles is, in the letter of the church of Corinth unto that of Rome, desiring their advice about the composing of a
difference among them, and the answer of the church of Rome thereunto), yet many cases may fall out among them which cannot be reconciled or determined but by present conference; such as that was recorded, Acts xv. No church, therefore, is so independent as that it can always and in all cases observe the duties it owes unto the Lord Christ and the church catholic, by all those powers which it is able to act in itself distinctly, without conjunction with others. And the church that confines its duty unto the acts of its own assemblies cuts itself off from the external communion of the church catholic; nor will it be safe for any man to commit the conduct of his soul to such a church. Wherefore,—

(3.) This acting in synods is an institution of Jesus Christ, not in an express command, but in the nature of the thing itself, fortified with apostolical example; for having erected such a church-state, and disposed all his churches into such order and mutual relation unto one another as that none of them can be complete or discharge their whole duty without mutual advice and counsel, he hath thereby ordained this way of their communion in synods, no other being possible unto that end. And thereby such conventions are interested in the promise of his presence,—namely, that “where two or three are gathered together in his name, there he will be in the midst of them;” for these assemblies being the necessary effect of his own constitution, in the nature and use of his churches, are or may be in his name, and so enjoy his presence.

(4.) The end of all particular churches is the edification of the church catholic, unto the glory of God in Christ; and it is evident that in many instances this cannot be attained, yea, that it must be sinfully neglected, unless this way for the preservation and carrying of it on be attended unto. Truth, peace, and love, may be lost among churches, and so the union of the catholic church in them be dissolved, unless this means for their preservation and reparation be made use of. And that particular church which extends not its duty beyond its own assemblies and members is fallen off from the principal end of its institution; and every principle, opinion, or persuasion, that inclines any church to confine its care and duty unto its own edification only, yea, or of those only which agree with it in some peculiar practice, making it neglective of all due means of the edification of the church catholic, is schismatical.

(5.) There is direction hereunto included in the order and method of church proceedings in case of offence, prescribed unto it by Christ himself. The beginning and rise of it is between two individual persons; thence is it carried unto the cognizance and judgment of two or three others before unconcerned; from them it is to be brought unto the church; and there is no doubt but the church hath power to determine concerning it, as unto its own communion, to continue
the offender in it or reject him from it. This must abide, as unto outward order and the preservation of peace. But no church is infallible in their judgment absolutely in any case; and in many their determinations may be so doubtful as not to affect the conscience of him who is censured. But such a person is not only a member of that particular church, but, by virtue thereof, of the catholic church also. It is necessary, therefore, that he should be heard and judged as unto his interest therein, if he do desire it; and this can no way be done but by such synods as we shall immediately describe.

(6.) Synods are consecrated unto the use of the church in all ages by the example of the apostles in their guidance of the first churches of Jews and Gentiles; which hath the force of a divine institution, as being given by them under the infallible conduct of the Holy Ghost, Acts xv.; which we shall speak further unto immediately.

2. Having seen the original of church synods, or their formal cause, we shall consider also their material cause, or the subject-matter to be treated of or determined in them; and this, in general, is every thing wherein churches are obliged to hold communion among themselves when any thing falls out amongst them which otherwise would disturb that communion. And hereof some instances may be given:—

(1.) Churches have mutual communion in the profession of the same faith. If any doubts or differences do arise about it, any opinions be advanced contrary unto it, either in any particular church, which they cannot determine among themselves, or among sundry churches, the last outward means for the preservation of the rule of faith among them, and of their communion in the condemnation of errors and opinions contrary unto the form of wholesome words, is by these synods or councils. The care hereof is, indeed, in the first place, committed unto the churches themselves, as was at large before declared; but in case, through the subtlety, prevalency, and interest of those by whom damnable doctrines are broached, the church itself whereunto they do belong is not able to rebuke and suppress them, nor to maintain its profession of the truth, or that by suffering such things in one church others are in danger to be infected or defiled, this is the last external refuge that is left for the preservation of the communion of churches in the same faith. We have multiplied examples hereof in the primitive churches, before the degeneracy of these synods into superstition and domination. Such was eminently that gathered at Antioch for the condemnation of the heresies of Paulus Samosatenus, the bishop of that church.

(2.) It is so with respect unto that order, peace, and unity, wherein every particular church ought to walk in itself and amongst its own members. There were schisms, divisions, strifes, and contentions, in some of the churches that were of apostolical planting and watering; so there were at Antioch, and afterward at Corinth, as also in some of
the churches in Galatia. The duty of remedying and healing these divisions and differences, from what cause soever they arise, is first incumbent on each particular member in every such church. Unto them it is given in charge by the apostle in the first place; and if every one of them do perform their duty in love, an end will be put unto all strife. In case of failure therein, the whole church is charged, in the exercise of its power, authority, and wisdom, to rebuke and compose such differences; but in case it is not able so to do, as it fell out in the church at Antioch, then an assembly of other churches walking in actual communion with that church wherein the difference is arisen, and thereon concerned in their prosperity and edification, by their messengers and delegates, is the last outward means for its composure.

(3.) Where there hath been any maladministration of discipline, whereby any members of a church have been injured,—as suppose they are unduly cast out of the church by the power and interest of some Diotrephes, or that any members of the church make a party and faction to depose their elders, as it was in the church at Corinth when the church at Rome gave them advice in the case,—it is necessary, from the communion of churches and the interest the persons injured have in the catholic church, whose edification is the end of all church administrations, that the proceedings of such a church be reviewed by a synod, and a remedy provided in the case. Nor was it the mind of the apostles that they should be left without relief which were unduly cast out of the church by any Diotrephes, nor is there any other ordinary way hereof but only by synods; but this case, I suppose, I shall speak unto afterward.

(4.) The same is the case with respect unto worship, as also unto manners and conversation. If it be reported, or known by credible testimony, that any church hath admitted into the exercise of divine worship any thing superstitious or vain, or if the members of it walk like those described by the apostle, Phil. iii. 18, 19, unto the dishonour of the gospel and of the ways of Christ, the church itself not endeavouring its own reformation and repentance, other churches walking in communion therewith, by virtue of their common interest in the glory of Christ and honour of the gospel, after more private ways for its reduction, as opportunity and duty may suggest unto their elders, ought to assemble in a synod for advice, either as to the use of further means for the recovery of such a church, or to withhold communion from it in case of obstinacy in its evil ways. The want of a due attendance unto this part of the communion of churches, with respect unto gospel worship in its purity, and gospel obedience in its power, was a great means of the decay and apostasy of them all. By reason of this negligence, instead of being helpful one to another for their mutual recovery, and the revival of the things that
were ready to die, they gradually infected one another, according as they fell into their decays, and countenanced one another by their examples unto a continuance in such disorders.

The image which, in late ages, was set up hereof, in diocesan and metropolitical visitations, and those of lesser districts, under officers of antichristian names, hath been useful rather unto destruction than edification; but so it hath fallen out in most things concerning church order, worship, and discipline. The power and spirituality of divine institutions being lost, a machine hath been framed to make an appearance and representation of them, to divert the minds of men from inquiring after the primitive institutions of Christ, with an experience of their efficacy.

Considering what we have learned in these later ages, by woful experience, of what hath fallen out formerly amongst all the churches in the world, as unto their degeneracy from gospel worship and holiness, with the abounding of temptations in the days wherein we live, and the spiritual decays that all churches are prone unto, it were not amiss if those churches which do walk in express communion would frequently meet in synods, to inquire into the spiritual state of them all, and to give advice for the correction of what is amiss, the due preservation of the purity of worship, the exercise of discipline, but especially of the power, demonstration, and fruit of evangelical obedience.

Hence it is evident what are the ends of such synods among the churches of Christ. The general end of them all is to promote the edification of the whole body or church catholic; and that,—

(1.) To prevent divisions from differences in judgment and practice, which are contrary thereunto. The first Christian synod was an assembly of the first two churches in the world by their delegates. The first church of the Jews was at Jerusalem, and the first church of the Gentiles was at Antioch; to prevent divisions and to preserve communion between them was the first synod celebrated, Acts xv.

(2.) To avoid or cure offences against mutual love among them. (3.) To advance the light of the gospel by a joint confession and agreement in the faith. (4.) To give a concurrent testimony against pernicious heresies or errors, whereby the faith of any is overthrown, or in danger so to be. (5.) To relieve such by advice as may be by any Diotrephes unduly cast out of the church.

What are the ends whereunto they have been used may be seen in the volumes written concerning them, and the numberless laws enacted in them; whereof very little belongs unto the discipline of the gospel or real communion of churches.

3. The measure or extent of them ariseth from concernment and convenience. All unprejudiced persons do now acknowledge that the pretence of œcumenical councils, wherein the whole church of Christ on the earth or all particular churches should be represented,
and so obliged to acquiesce in their determinations, is a fond imagination; and it were easy to demonstrate in particular how every one of them which hath in vulgar esteem obtained that title were openly remote from so being. Such councils never were, and, as it is probable, never will nor can be, nor are any way needful unto the edification of the church.

Their due measure and bounds, as was said before, are given them by concernment and convenience; wherein respect also may be had unto the ability of some churches to promote edification above others. Such churches as are, in the same instances, concerned in the causes of them before declared, and may be helpful unto the ends mentioned, are to convene in such synods. And this concernment may be either from some of those causes in themselves, or from that duty which they owe unto other churches which are immediately concerned. So it was in the assistance given by the church at Jerusalem in that case which was peculiar to the church of Antioch.

With this interest or concernment there must be a concurrence of natural, moral, and political conveniences. Some churches are planted at such distances from others that it is naturally impossible that they should ever meet together to advise by their messengers; and some are at such as that they cannot assemble but with such difficulties and hazards as exempt them from the duty of it. And whereas they are placed under different civil governments, and those ofttimes engaged in mutual enmities, and always jealous of the acts of their own subjects in conjunction with them that are not so, they cannot so convene and preserve the outward peace of the churches. Hence the largest of the councils of old that are called “oecumenical” never extended farther than the single Roman empire, when there were innumerable churches planted under the civil jurisdiction of other sovereigns.

Wherefore, in the assembling of churches in synods, respect is to be had unto the convenience of their meeting; that it may be, so far as is possible, without trouble or danger. And this, with respect unto the causes or occasions of them, will determine what churches (which or how many) may be necessary on such occasions to constitute a synod. And it is useful hereunto that the churches which are planted within such a circumference as gives facility or convenience for such conventions should, by virtue of their mutual communion, be in express readiness to convene on all occasions of common concernment.

Again; in the assistance which, in the way of advice and counsel, any one church may stand in need of from others, respect is to be had, in their desire, unto such churches as are reputed and known to have the best ability to give advice in the case; on which account the church at Antioch addressed themselves in a peculiar manner unto the church at Jerusalem, which was far distant from them.

But in all these cases use is to be made of spiritual prudence,
with respect unto all sorts of circumstances; which although some would deny, [such] as the privilege of even matters of fact, and the application of general Scripture rules unto practice, because we require divine institution unto all parts of religious worship, yet we must not decline from using the best we have in the service of Christ and his church, rather than comply with any thing which, in the whole substance of it, is foreign to his institution.

It was the Roman empire under one monarch, in its civil distributions for rule and government, which gave the first rise and occasion unto a pretended visibly ruling catholic church under one spiritual monarch, distributed into those that were patriarchal, diocesan, metropolitical, and others of inferior kinds; for, retaining the people in their civil distributions, whereinto they were cast according to the polity and interest of the empire, there were ecclesiastical officers assigned unto each distribution, answerable unto the civil officers which were ordained in the polity of the empire. So, in answer unto deputies, exarchs, prefects, governors of provinces and cities, there were found out and erected patriarchs, metropolitans, diocesans, in various allotments of territories and powers, requiring unto their complete state one visible monarchical head, as the empire had;—which was the pope. And whereas the emperors had not only a civil rule and power, but a military also, exercised under them by legates, generals, tribunes, centurions, and the like; so there was raised an ecclesiastical militia, in various orders of monks, friars, and votaries of all sorts, who, under their immediate generals and prefects, did depend absolutely on the sovereign power of the new ecclesiastical monarch. So was the visible professing church moulded and fashioned into an image of the old Roman pagan empire, as it was foretold it should be, Rev. xiii. 13–15. And although this image was first framed in compliance with it and for a resemblance of it, yet in process of time it substituted itself entirely in the room of the empire, taking all its power unto itself, and doing all its works.

From this distribution of various sorts of new-framed churches in the Roman empire arose a constitution of synods or councils in subordination one unto another, until, by sundry degrees of ascent, they arrived unto those which they called "general," under the conduct of the pope, whose senate they were.

But these things have no countenance given them by any divine institution, apostolical example, or practice of the first churches, but are a mere product of secular interest working itself in a mystery of iniquity.

Since the dissolution of the Roman empire, nations have been cast into distinct civil governments of their own, whose sovereignty is in themselves, by the event of war and counsels thereon emergent. Unto each of these it is supposed there is a church-state accommodated, as the church of England, the church of Scotland, the church
of France, and the like; whose original and being depend on the first event of war in that [their?] dissolution. Unto these new church-states, whose being, bounds, and limits, are given unto them absolutely by those of the civil government which they belong unto, it is thought meet that ecclesiastical synods should be accommodated; but in what way this is to be done there is not yet an agreement: but it is not my present business to consider the differences that are about it, which are known unto this nation on a dear account. Yet this I shall say, that whereas it is eminently useful unto the edification of the church catholic that all the churches professing the same doctrine of faith, within the limits of the same supreme civil government, should hold constant actual communion among themselves unto the ends of it before mentioned, I see not how it can be any abridgment of the liberty of particular churches, or interfere with any of their rights which they hold by divine institution, if, through more constant lesser synods for advice, there be a communication of their mutual concerns unto those that are greater, until, if occasion require and it be expedient, there be a general assembly of them all, to advise about any thing wherein they are all concerned. But this is granted only with these limitations:—(1.) That the rights of particular churches be preserved in the free election of such as are to be members of all these synods; (2.) That they assume no authority or jurisdiction over churches or persons, in things civil or ecclesiastical; (3.) That none are immediately concerned in this proper synodal power or authority (which what it is we shall inquire) who are not present in them by their own delegates.

As for that kind of synods which some call a *classis*, which is a convention of the elders or officers of sundry parochial churches, distinguished for presential communion ordinarily, in some acts of it, by virtue of their office, and for the exercise of office-power, it is the constitution of a new kind of particular churches by a combination of them into one, whose original distinction is only in the civil limits of their cohabitation; which probably may be done sometimes and in some places unto edification.

4. The persons of whom all sorts of ecclesiastical synods are to consist must be inquired into; and there is nothing of mere human prudential constitution that hath longer obtained in the church than that these should be officers of the churches only. And whereas, after the days of the apostles, we have no record of any synods of more churches than one, until after the distinction was made between bishops and presbyters, they were made up of both sorts of them; but afterward, those who were peculiarly called bishops enclosed this right unto themselves,—on what grounds God knows, there being not one tittle in the Scripture or the light of reason to give them countenance therein.
It must therefore be affirmed, that no persons, by virtue of any office merely, have right to be members of ecclesiastical synods, as such; neither is there either example or reason to give colour unto any such pretence. Further; no office-power is to be exerted in such synods as such, neither conjunctly by all the members of them, nor singly by any of them. Officers of the church, bishops, pastors, elders, may be present in them, ought to be present in them, are meetest for the most part so to be, but merely as such it belongs not unto them. The care, oversight, and rule of the churches whereunto they do belong, the flock among them distinctly, is committed unto them; and for that they are intrusted with power and authority by virtue of their office: but as unto their conjunction in synods, which is a mere act and effect of the communion of churches among themselves, it is not committed unto them in a way of peculiar right by virtue of their office. If it be so, without respect unto the power of the magistrate in calling them, or of the churches in choosing them, then it belongs unto them all; for that which belongs unto any of them, as such, by virtue of office, belongs equally unto all: and if it belong unto all, then it belongs unto all of one sort only, as, for instance, bishops; or unto all of all sorts, as, for instance, presbyters also. If it be stated in the latter way, then every presbyter, as such, by virtue of his office, hath right and power to be present in all ecclesiastical synods equal with that of the bishops; for although it be supposed that his office is not equal unto theirs, yet it is so also that this right doth equally belong unto his office. If the former be avowed, namely, that this right belongs unto bishops only (such as are pleaded for), by virtue of their office as such, then,—(1.) I desire that any tolerable proof of the confinement of this right unto such an office be produced, either from the Scripture, or reason, or the example of the first churches; which as yet I have never seen. (2.) I fear not to say, that a false presumption hereof was one principal cause and means of introducing tyranny into the churches, and the utter ruin of their liberty.

Concerning the composition that is made herein, that some should convene in ecclesiastical synods by their own personal right and in virtue of their office, and others by a kind of delegation from some of their own order, it being a mere political constitution, which I shall immediately speak unto, it is not here to be taken notice of.

There is nothing, therefore, in Scripture example or the light of natural reason, with the principles of all societies in union or communion, that will lead us any farther than this, that such synods are to be composed and consist of such persons as are chosen and delegated by those churches respectively who do act and exert their communion in such assemblies. So was it in the first example of them, Acts xv. The church of Antioch chose and sent messengers of their own number to advise with the apostles and elders of the church at
Jerusalem, at which consultation the members of that church also were present; and this is the whole of the nature and use of ecclesiastical synods. It is on other accounts that they make up so great a part of the history of the church. For the first three hundred years there were nothing but voluntary conventions of the officers or elders, bishops and presbyters, with some others of neighbouring churches, on the occasion of differences or heresies among them. In and from the council of Nice, there were assemblies of bishops and others, called together by the authority of the Roman emperors, to advise about matters of faith. In after ages, those which were called in the western parts of the world, in Italy, Germany, France, and England, were of a mixed nature, advising about things civil and political, as well as sacred and religious, especially with respect unto mutual contests between popes and princes. In them the whole nature of ecclesiastical synods was lost and buried, and all religion almost destroyed.

Thus this laudable practice of churches acting their mutual communion by meeting in synods or assemblies, by their delegates or messengers, to advise about things of their common concernment and joint edification, as occasion should require, founded in the light of nature, and countenanced by primitive, apostolical example, was turned, by the designing interests and ambition of men, into the instating of all church-power in such synods, and the usurpation of a power given unto no churches nor all of them together; as might be made evident by instances innumerable.

And whereas they have made such a noise in Christian religion, and have filled so many volumes with their acts and doings, yet some of them who, under the pope, would place all religion in them, do grant and contend that they are a mere human invention; so Bellarmine affirms Pighius to have done in his book De Coelest. Hierarch. lib. vi. cap. i. But for his part he judgeth that it is more probable that they have a divine original by virtue of that word, “Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there I will be in the midst of them,” Matt. xviii. 20, De Concil. lib. i. cap. iii.; which will not bear the least part of the superstructure pretended to be built upon it.

Of these delegates and messengers of the churches, the elders or officers of them, or some of them at least, ought to be the principal; for there is a peculiar care of public edification incumbent on them, which they are to exercise on all just occasions. They are justly presumed to know best the state of their own churches, and to be best able to judge of matters under consideration; and they do better represent the churches from whom they are sent than any private brethren can do, and so receive that respect and reverence which is due to the churches themselves; as also, they are most meet to re-
port and recommend the synodal determinations unto their churches; and a contrary practice would quickly introduce confusion.

But yet it is not necessary that they alone should be so sent or delegated by the churches, but [they] may have others joined with them, and had so until prelatical usurpation overturned their liberties. So there were others besides Paul and Barnabas sent from Antioch to Jerusalem; and the brethren of that church, whatever is impudently pretended to the contrary, concurred in the decree and determination there made.

5. That which is termed the calling of these synods, is nothing but the voluntary consent of the churches concerned to meet together by their delegates and messengers, for the ends before declared.

I no way deny but that a Christian magistrate may convene, by his authority, the bishops, pastors, or ministers, with such others as he shall think meet, within his own territories, yea, and to receive into his convention meet men out of the territories of others, by their consent; to advise among themselves and to give him advice about the concernments of religion and of the church under his dominion, and regulate himself accordingly. It hath been practised with good success, and may be with bad also. And I do deny that churches have power, without the consent and authority of the magistrate, to convene themselves in synods to exercise any exterior jurisdiction that should affect the persons of his subjects any otherwise than by the law of the land is allowed.

But whereas the synods whereof we treat, and which are all that belong unto the church, can take no cognizance of any civil affairs wherein the persons of men are outwardly concerned, have no jurisdiction in any kind, can make no determination but only doctrinal declarations of divine truth, of the same nature with the preaching of the word, there is no more required unto their calling, beyond their own consent, but only that they may meet in external peace by the permission of the magistrate; which when they cannot obtain, they must deport themselves as in case of other duties required of them by the law of Christ.

6. In the last place, I shall speak briefly of the power and authority of these synods, in what measures, extent, and numbers severer they are assembled; for although this may be easily collected from what hath been declared concerning their original, nature, causes, use, and ends, yet it may be necessary to be more particularly inquired into, because of the many differences that are about it.

There is a threefold power ascribed unto synods. The first is declarative, consisting in an authoritative teaching and declaring the mind of God in the Scripture; the second is constitutive, appointing and ordaining things to be believed, or done and observed, by and upon its own authority; and, thirdly, executive, in acts of jurisdiction towards persons and churches.
The persons whom the authority pleaded may affect are of two sorts:—(1.) Such as have their **proper representatives** present in such synods, who are directly concerned in its conciliary determinations; (2.) Such as have **no such representatives** in them, who can be no otherwise concerned but in the doctrine, materially considered, declared in them.

Wherefore the ground of any church's receiving, complying with, or obeying the determinations and decrees of synods must be either, —(1.) The evidence of truth given unto those determinations by the synod from the Scripture; or, (2.) The **authority of the synod itself**, affecting the minds and consciences of those concerned.

In the first way, wherein the assent and obedience of churches is resolved ultimately into the evidence of truth from the Scripture, upon the judgment which they make thereof, not only the discovery of truth is to be owned, but there is an authoritative proposal of it by virtue of the promised presence of Christ in them, if duly sought and regarded; whence great respect and reverence is due unto them.

The power of a synod for the execution of its decrees respects either, —(1.) The things or doctrines declared, and is recommendatory of them, on its authority from the presence of Christ; or, (2.) Persons, to censure, excommunicate, or punish those who receive them not.

These things being premised, the just power of synods may be positively and negatively declared in the two following assertions:—

(1.) The authority of a synod declaring the mind of God from the Scripture in doctrine, or giving counsel as unto practice synodically, unto them whose proper representatives are present in it, whose decrees and determinations are to be received and submitted unto on the evidence of their truth and necessity, as recommended by the authority of the synod from the promised presence of Christ among them, is suitable unto the mind of Christ and the example given by the apostles, Acts xv.

Hence it is evident that, in and after such synods, it is in the power of churches concerned humbly to consider and weigh,—[1.] The evidences of the presence of Christ in them, from the manner, causes, and ends, of their assembling, and from their deportment therein. [2.] What regard, in their constitutions and determinations, there hath been unto the word of God, and whether in all things it hath had its due pre-eminence. [3.] How all their determinations have been educed from its truth and are confirmed by its authority.

Without a due exercise of judgment with respect unto these things, none can be obliged by any synodical determinations, seeing that, without them and on the want of them, many assemblies of bishops, who have had the outward appearance and title of synods or councils, have been dens of thieves, robbers, idolaters, managing their synodical affairs with fury, wrath, horrible craft, according to their
interests, unto the ruin of the church. Such were the second Ephesine, the second at Nice, and that at Trent, and others not a few.

Hence nothing is more to be feared, especially in a state of the church wherein it is declining in faith, worship, and holiness, than synods, according to the usual way of their calling and convention, where these things are absent, for they have already been the principal means of leading on and justifying all the apostasy which churches have fallen into; for never was there yet synod of that nature which did not confirm all the errors and superstitions which had in common practice entered into the church, and opened a door to a progress in them, nor was ever the pretence of any of them for outward reformation of any use or signification.

(2.) The authority of a synod determining articles of faith, constituting orders and decrees for the conscientious observance of things of their own appointment, to be submitted unto and obeyed on the reason of that authority, under the penalty of excommunication, and the trouble by custom and tyranny thereto annexed, or acted in a way of jurisdiction over churches or persons, is a mere human invention, for which nothing can be pleaded but prescription from the fourth century of the church, when the progress of the fatal apostasy became visible.

The proof of both these assertions depends on what was before declared of the nature and use of these synods; for if they are such as we have evinced, no other power or authority can be ascribed unto them but that here allowed. Yet the whole may be further illustrated by some brief considerations of the assembly at Jerusalem in the nature of a synod, recorded Acts xv.

(1.) The occasion of it was a difference in the church of Antioch, which they could not compose among themselves, because those who caused the difference pretended authority from the apostles, as is evident, verses 1, 24.

(2.) The means of its convention was the desire and voluntary reference of the matter in debate made by the church at Antioch, where the difference was, unto that at Jerusalem, where, as it was pretended, the cause of the difference arose, unto the hazard of their mutual communion, to be consulted of with their own messengers.

(3.) The persons constituting the synod were the apostles, elders, and brethren of the church at Jerusalem, and the messengers of that of Antioch, with whom Paul and Barnabas were joined in the same delegation.

(4.) The matter in difference was debated, as unto the mind of God concerning it in the Scripture, and out of the Scripture. On James' proposal the determination was made.

(5.) There was nothing imposed anew on the practice of the churches; only direction is given in one particular instance as unto duty, necessary on many accounts unto the Gentile converts, namely, to abstain
from fornication and from the use of their liberty in such instances of its practice as whereon scandal would ensue; which was the duty of all Christians even before this determination, and is so still in many other instances besides those mentioned in the decree, only it was now declared unto them.

(6.) The grounds whereon the synod proposed the reception of and compliance with its decrees were four:—[1.] That what they had determined was the mind of the Holy Ghost: "It pleased the Holy Ghost." This mind they knew either by inspiration, or immediate revelation made unto themselves, or by what was written or recorded in the Scripture, which on all other occasions they alleged as what was the word and spoken by the Holy Ghost; and it is evident that it was this latter way, namely, a discovery of the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, that is intended. However, it is concluded that nothing be proposed or confirmed in synods but what is well known to be the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, either by immediate inspiration or by Scripture revelation. [2.] The authority of the assembly, as convened in the name of Christ and by virtue of his presence, whereof we have spoken before: "It pleased the Holy Ghost and us." [3.] That the things which they had determined were "necessary;" that is, antecedently so unto that determination,—namely, the abstaining from the use of their liberty in things indifferent, in case of scandal. [4.] From the duty with respect unto the peace and mutual communion of the Jewish and Gentile churches: "Doing thus," say they, "ye shall do well;" which is all the sanction of their decree, manifesting that it was doctrinal, not authoritative in way of jurisdiction.

(7.) The doctrinal abridgment of the liberty of the Gentile Christians in case of scandal they call the "imposing of no other burden," in opposition unto what they rejected, namely, the imposing a yoke of ceremonies upon them, verse 10: so that the meaning of these words is, that they would lay no burden on them at all, but only advise them unto things necessary for the avoidance of scandal; for it is impious to imagine that the apostles would impose any yoke or lay any burden on the disciples but only the yoke and burden of Christ, as being contrary to their commission, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.

Hence it will follow that a synod convened in the name of Christ, by the voluntary consent of several churches concerned in mutual communion, may declare and determine of the mind of the Holy Ghost in the Scripture, and decree the observation of things true and necessary, because revealed and appointed in the Scripture; which are to be received, owned, and observed on the evidence of the mind of the Holy Ghost in them, and on the ministerial authority of the synod itself.
I.

A LETTER

CONCERNING

THE MATTER OF THE PRESENT EXCOMMUNICATIONS.

II.

A DISCOURSE

CONCERNING

THE ADMINISTRATION OF CHURCH CENSURES.
PREFATORY NOTES.

I.

No date can be assigned to this letter on the subject of the excommunications. The reader will find an explanation of these cruel processes in a prefatory note to our author's "Word of Advice to the Citizens of London:" see vol. xiii. p. 576. The letter, which is written, especially towards the close, with some point and humour, exposes the prostitution of a gospel ordinance implied in these excommunications by the civil power, and vindicates the character of the Dissenters, against whom they were issued.

II.

The tract on the administration of church censures appeared in the folio volume of "Sermons and Tracts," which was published in 1721, but seems to have been previously given to the world. It is of use in explaining and defending Congregational usages in matters of ecclesiastical discipline.—Ed.
A LETTER

CONCERNING THE MATTER OF THE PRESENT EXCOMMUNICATIONS.

Sir,

You judge aright, that at my last being in London I did consider the unusual hurry of excommunications against those called Dissenters; and, because of the novelty of the proceedings therein, I did, moreover, endeavour my own satisfaction as unto the design, causes, and ends of them; and I find it a thing easily attainable, without difficulty or curiosity of inquiry: for, whereas there is no covering of religion, nor any thing appertaining thereunto, save only a name or title cast upon them, they openly discover themselves of what sort they are, and what they belong unto; and among many other indecencies wherewith they are accompanied, one seemed to me to be very notable, and this is, the collection of whole droves together by summons and citations, then dealing with them in such a clamorous manner as makes a representation of a public market or fair for chaffering about souls. But that, I found, which did principally affect the minds of men was the event which these proceedings do tend unto and will produce; and they generally concluded that they would be highly prejudicial, if not ruinous, unto all trust and trade among the peaceable subjects of the kingdom. For they said that if the commissaries would do as in the old Roman proscriptions in the time of Sylla, and of the triumvirate afterward, and set up the names of all that were to be proceeded against in public tables, to be exposed to the view of all, those concerned might shift for themselves as well as they could, and the residue of mankind might be at liberty to follow their own occasions; but whilst they retain an unreasonable reserve in their own breasts, as unto persons to be ruined by them, so as that they know not whose names, their own or of those with whom they are concerned, they shall see the next day affixed on the church-doors in order unto excommunication, it deprives them of all repose in the law of the land or public justice, and breaks all their measures about the disposal of their affairs. How far this is already come to pass, you, that are in the place, know better than I; but sure I am that the very rumour of it gives a general discomposure unto the minds of men.
Hearing no other discourse of these things, I was somewhat surprised with your letter, wherein you required my thoughts what influence these excommunications may have on the consciences of them who are so excommunicated; for I did not think there would have been any question made about it: but since you are pleased to make the inquiry, I shall, for the satisfaction of my respects unto you (though as unto any other end I judge it needless), give you a brief account of my judgment concerning these proceedings; which is the same, for the substance of it, with that of all sober persons with whom I ever conversed.

Excommunication is the name of a divine institution of Christ, wherein, and in whose due and just administration, the consciences of Christians are, or ought to be, highly concerned; and this, as for other causes, so principally because it is the only sure representation of the future judgment of Christ himself: he did appoint it for this end, that so it might be. Providential dispensations are various, and no certain judgment can be made on them, as unto the final and eternal determination of things and causes: "No man knoweth love or hatred by the things" of that nature "that are before him." But this is ordained by the law of Christ, to be a just representation of his future judgment, with a recognition of the cause which he will proceed upon. Therefore it is divinely instructive in what he himself will do in the great day: it is "futuri judicii pra judicium." But he will scarcely be thought well advised who shall send men to Doctors' Commons to learn the way and manner of Christ's judgment of his church, with the causes which he will proceed upon. He himself giveth another account of it, Matt. xxv. 31 unto the end of the chapter. Of what he there declares, there is neither name nor thing found among men of those practices which we treat about. The mentioning of them would be looked on as a sedition against their authority, or else make them ashamed, as a thief when he is found. But for any sort of persons to undertake the administration and execution of the sentence of excommunication against others, not making it their design to represent the judgment of Christ towards impenitent sinners, is to bid defiance to him and his gospel. Wherefore no person whatever, wise or unwise, good or bad, can be concerned in the excommunication in conscience, or on a religious account. I speak not only of them who are forced to suffer by them, but of them also by whom they are administered and denounced; for it is impossible that men should be so far forsaken of all understanding as to imagine that the proceedings therein do belong unto the gospel or Christian religion any otherwise but as a debasement and corruption of it: neither is any man ever the less of the communion of the church of England by these excommunications, though
he may, by force, be debarred from some advantages that belong thereunto. Neither is the communion of any church to be valued from which a man may be really and effectually expelled by such means; for this excommunication is not only null as to the efficacy of its sentence, on the account of its maladministration, but it is not in any sense that which it is called, and which it pretends to be. Idols are called “gods,” but we know they are “nothing in the world;” so is this proceeding called “excommunication,” but is no such thing at all. If a man should paint a rat or hedge-hog, and write over it that it is a lion, no man would believe it so to be because of its magnificent title. All that it can pretend unto is a political engine, used to apply the displeasure of some, upon an accidental advantage, unto them whose ruin they design; and therein a satisfaction unto revenge, for discountenancing their supposed interest. That there is any acting in it of the authority of Christ, any representation of his love, care, and tenderness towards his church, any thing that is instructive in his mind or will, any “præludium” of the future judgment, no man, I suppose, does pretend; nor, I am sure, can do so, without reflecting the highest dishonour imaginable on Christ himself and the gospel.

To make these things yet more evident, and to show how remote the present excommunications are from all possibility of affecting the consciences of any, I shall briefly pass through the consideration of those things which principally belong unto them, and whereinto all their efficacy is resolved. And that which first offereth itself is the persons by whom they are administered. The truth is, there is such a variety of scenes in this tragedy, and such different actors in it, —from [the] apparitor with whom it begins, unto the jailer with whom it ends,—that it seems not easy whom to ascribe the animating power and authority that is in it unto; but yet, on a little consideration, the matter is plain enough. The ministers of the parishes wherein the excommunicated persons are supposed to dwell, by whom the sentence of excommunication is rehearsed out of a paper from the court, have no concernment herein; for they know nothing of the causes or reasons of it, nor of the process therein, nor do pretend unto any right for the cognizance of them, nor do, for the most part, know the persons at all on whose qualifications alone the validity or invalidity of the sentence doth depend, nor can give an account to God or man of what is done, as to right and equity: and therefore I no way doubt but that those who are learned and pious among them do hardly bear the yoke of being made such properties¹ in those acts and duties which appertain unto their ministerial function. But it is known who they are who begin the work, and carry on the process of it

¹ Articles and machinery necessary for the stage; used here in a sense equivalent to “puppets.”—Ed.
until its final execution; and I shall say no more concerning them but this alone, that how meet soever they may be for the transaction of civil affairs, or for the skilful managing of that work herein which they suppose committed unto them, yet as unto any thing wherein conscience may be affected with the authority of Jesus Christ, they can be of no consideration in it. If any man can but pretend to believe that our Lord Jesus, by an act, grant, law, or institution of his, by any signification of his mind or will, hath committed, or doth commit, the keys of the kingdom of heaven, the power of binding and loosing, of expelling out of and admitting into his church, unto these or such persons, he hath assuredly confidence enough to pretend unto a persuasion of whatever he pleases. They do not believe it themselves, nor among themselves pretend unto any such thing, but only a power to execute their own laws or canons. They do not judge that any personal, moral, or spiritual qualifications are required unto ecclesiastical administrations, which yet to deny is to undermine all religion; without which they may be fit for all church-duties who are no better than that archdeacon of Oxford, who, being charged with immorality in his conversation, justified himself by the soundness of his faith, affirming that he believed three Gods in one person, and, besides, he believed all that God himself did believe! Let a man out of interest, or fear, or ignorant superstition, strive never so much to affect his conscience with the excommunications of such men, he will never be able to effect it.

But be the personal qualifications of those intended what they please, the question is, how they came by that power and authority herein which they pretend unto? They are chancellors, archdeacons, commissaries, officials, with their court attendants, of whom we speak. I confess these horrid names, with the reports concerning them and their power, are enough to terrify poor harmless men, and make them fear some evil from them. But excommunication is that which no man knows on what grounds to fear from these names, titles, and offices: for that is the name of a divine ordinance instituted by Christ in the gospel, to be administered according to the rule and law thereof; but these names, and those unto whom they do belong, are utterly foreign unto the Scriptures, and, as unto the work, to the practice of the church for a thousand years. What, therefore, is done by them of this kind must of necessity be utterly null, seeing that, as such, they have no place in the church themselves by the authority of Christ. But however it be undeniably evident that they have no relation unto the Scripture, nor can have any authority from Christ by virtue of any law or institution of his, nor countenance given unto them by any practice of the primitive church, yet what they do in this kind being pretended acts of power
and authority, an authority for them must be pleaded by them. But then it may be justly demanded of them what it is, of what nature and kind, how it is communicated unto them, or derived by them from others. This is that which those who are excommunicated by them are principally concerned to inquire into; and which themselves in the first place are obliged to declare and evince. Unless men are satisfied in conscience that those who act against them have just authority so to do, or in what they do, it is utterly impossible they should be concerned in conscience in what is done against them, or be any ways obliged thereby. Here, therefore, they abide until they are satisfied in this just and necessary demand.

But here all things are in confusion; they can declare neither what authority is required unto what they do, nor how they came to possess that which they pretend unto. If it be from Christ, how comes it to operate on the outward concerns of men, their liberties and estates? If it be merely of man, whence do they give the name and pretence of a divine ordinance unto what they do? If any should follow the clue in this labyrinth, it is to be feared that it would lead them into the abyss of papal omnipotency.

As they exercise this power in courts of external jurisdiction and forms of law, they will not deny, I suppose, but that it is from the king. But why do they not, then, act that power in the king's name? for what is not done by his name is not done by his authority. Ministers do not preach nor administer sacraments in the name of the king; for they do it not by his authority or by virtue of authority derived from him: nor do parents govern their children or families in his name, but their own; because authority for it is their own by the law of God and nature. But that exercise of power which externally affects the civil rights and liberties of men must be in the king's name, or the foundations of the government of the nation are shaken.—But I make it not my concernment what name or style they use in their courts. Let it be granted, for their own security, that they have all their power and authority from the king, it must be therewithal granted of what nature it is,—namely, civil, and not spiritual. But why, then, doth what they do not go under the name of a civil order, constitution, or penalty, but of an ordinance or institution of Jesus Christ? Are not these things in their own nature everlastingly distinct? and is not conscience hereby fully absolved from any respect unto it as such an ordinance; which, on this supposition, it neither is nor can be? It is easily discernible how these things tend unto the utter confusion of all things in religion.

If it be said that the power of it, as it is excommunication, is originally seated in the prelates, by virtue of their office, and is communicated unto these sorts of persons by commission, delegation, or
deputation, under their seals, it will yield no relief; for this fiction of the delegation of office-power, or the power of office, unto any, without giving them the office itself whereunto that power belongs, is gross and intolerable. Let it be tried whether the bishops can delegate the power of ministerial preaching the word and administration of the sacraments unto any persons, without giving them the office of the ministry. If excommunication be an act of office-power, authority to administer it cannot be delegated unto any without the office itself whereunto it doth belong; for these things are inseparable. I certainly believe it is the duty and concernment of some men to state proceedings of this nature on better foundations; that the exercise of such solemn duties of Christian religion be not exposed to utter contempt, nor men led, by a discovery of false pretences of divine institutions, to despise the things themselves that are so abused.

It were easy, from many other considerations, to demonstrate the nullity of these men's pretended authority with respect unto excommunication as it is an ordinance of the gospel, in which respect alone the consciences of men are concerned; and as unto their power over the civil rights and interests of men, those troubled by them must shift as well as they can.

But yet further: the manner of the administration of the present excommunications doth evidence their invalidity and nullity. That which they pretend unto, as hath been said, is a divine ordinance, an institution of Jesus Christ; and this declares in general how it ought to be administered by them who have authority for it and are called thereunto: for it hence followeth that it ought to be accompanied with an humble reverence of him and his authority; diligent attendance unto his law and the rule of his word in all things; with solemn, reiterated invocation of his holy name, for his presence, guidance, and assistance. Where these things are neglected in the administration of any divine ordinances, it is nothing but the taking the name of God in vain, and the profanation of his worship. It may be some will despise these considerations; I cannot help it,—they do it at their utmost peril. It is conscience alone which I respect in this discourse;—they who have any such thing will think these things reasonable.

Again: the especial nature of this institution doth require an especial frame of mind in its administration, for it is the cutting off of a member of the same body with them, which cannot be without sense and sorrow (to cut off any one from a church who was never a member of it by his own consent, nor doth judge himself so to be, is ridiculous); hence St Paul calls the execution of this censure, "bewailing," 2 Cor. xii. 21, denominating the whole action from the frame of mind wherewith it ought to be performed. And he that shall dare
to decree or denounce this sentence without sorrow and compassion for the sin and on the person of him that is excommunicated, plays a game with things sacred for his advantage, and shall answer for his presumption.

Besides, as was before observed, it is an instituted representation of the Lord Christ and his judgment in and of the church at the last day. If the consideration hereof be once out of the minds of them by whom it is administered, they must unavoidably err in all that they do,—much more if it be never once in them. But this they ought to take on their souls and consciences, that what they do, Christ himself, if present, would do, and will do the same at the last day; for so he will deal with all impenitent sinners,—he will denounce them accursed, and deliver them to Satan. There is undoubtedly required from hence a reverential care and circumspection in all that is done here. To make a false representation of Christ in these things,—that is, his wisdom, authority, holiness, love, and care towards the church,—is the worst and most deformed image that can be set up. What higher indignity can be offered to his gracious holiness than to act and represent him as furious, proud, passionate, unmerciful, and delighting in the ruin of those that openly profess faith in him and love unto him? God forbid that we should think that he hath any concern in such ways and proceedings!

Whereas, also, the next end of this censure is not destruction, but edification, or the repentance and recovery of lapse sinners, it ought to be accompanied with continual fervent prayers for this end. This the nature of the thing itself requireth, this the Scripture directs unto, and such was the practice of the primitive church.

If we are Christians, we are concerned in these things as much as we are in the glory of Christ and the salvation of our own souls. If we only make a pretence of religious duties, if we only erect an image of them for our own advantage, we may despise them, but at our peril. How well these things are observed in the present excommunications is notorious. Once to mention them is to deserve a second thunderbolt! An account of them, as to matter of fact, will be given shortly. At present I shall only say, that there is not any transaction of affairs in any kind, amongst men civilized, wherein there is a greater appearance and evidence of turbulent passions, acting themselves in all manner of irregularities, more profaneness of expression, more insolent insultations, more brawling, litigious proceedings, more open mixtures of money demanded in pretended administrations of right and equity, than there are in the public proceedings about them. Shall any Christian suppose that the Holy Spirit of God, on whom alone depends the efficacy of all divine ordinances unto their proper end, will immix his holy opera-
tions in or with this furious exertion of the lusts of men? If this
be looked on as the complement of Christian discipline, or the last
and utmost actings of the authority of Christ towards men in this
world, it must needs be a temptation unto men of atheistical inclina-
tions; certainly greater scandal cannot be given. And it is the in-
terest of some, at least for the preservation of a veneration to their
office, to dispose of proceedings in this case in such a way and manner
as may administer occasion of consideration unto them concerned, and
not so as to be carried on, as at present, with laughter, indignation,
and confusion; and if dissenters are to be destroyed, it is desirablc
that the work were left unto the penal statutes,—which, as now pro-
secuted and interpreted, are sufficient for it,—rather than that the
name of religion and a divine ordinance should, merely for that end,
be exposed to contempt.

The last thing that I shall trouble you with at present is, the con-
sideration of the persons against whom the present excommunications
are blustered, with the pretended causes of them. These are they
whom they call Dissenters; concerning whom we may inquire what
they are, and the cause of this pretended ecclesiastical severity
towards them. And as unto the first part of the inquiry, they are
such as believe and make open profession of all the articles of the
Christian faith; they do so as they are declared in the Scripture; nor
is the contrary charged on them. There is nothing determined by
the ancient councils to belong unto Christian faith which they dis-
believe; nor do they own any doctrine condemned by them. They
profess an equal interest of consent in the harmony of protestant
confessions with any other Protestants whatever. They own the
doctrine of the church of England as established by law, in nothing
receding from it; nor have they any novel or uncatholic opinion of
their own.

It is therefore utterly impossible to separate them from the com-
munion of the catholic church in faith, or to cast them from that
Rock whereon they are built thereby.

They do also attend unto divine worship in their own assemblies;
and herein they do practise all that is agreed on by all Christians in
the world, and nothing else; for they do not only make the Scripture
the sole rule of their worship, so as to omit nothing prescribed therein
to that purpose, nor to observe any thing prohibited thereby, but their
worship is the very same with that of the catholic church in all ages;
nothing do they omit that was ever used by it, nothing do they observe
that was ever condemned by it. And this must be the principle and
measure of catholic union in worship, if ever there be any such thing
in the earth; to expect it in any other observances is vain and foolish.
Offering prayers and praises to God in the name of Jesus Christ, read-
A LETTER CONCERNING EXCOMMUNICATION. 219

ing the holy Scripture and expounding of it, singing of psalms to God, preaching of the word, with the administration of the sacraments of baptism and the Lord’s supper, in a religious observation of the Lord’s day unto these ends, all according as God doth enable them by his Spirit, is the sum and substance of the worship of the catholic church, wherein all Christians are agreed. These things the Scripture doth prescribe, and these things the church in all ages hath observed. All differences about this worship, which have filled the world with inhuman contentions, arose from men’s arbitrary addition of forms, rites, modes, ceremonies, languages, cringings, adorations, which they would have observed in it; whereof the Scripture is silent and primitive antiquity utterly ignorant. And it may be it will be one day understood, that the due observance of this catholic worship, according as God enableth any thereunto (leaving others at liberty to use such helps unto their devotion as they shall think meet), is the only communion of worship in the church which the Scripture requires, or which is possible to be attained. About the imposition of other things, there ever were, since they were, and ever will be, endless contentions. Wherefore, these dissenters practising nothing in the worship of God but what is approved by all Christians, particularly by the church of England, omitting nothing that either the Scripture or catholic tradition directs unto, they are, notwithstanding this pretended excommunication, secure of communion with the catholic church in evangelical worship.

Moreover, they plead that their conversation is unblamable,—that they are peaceable in the civil government, and useful among their neighbours. If they do evil in these things, let them that prosecute them bear witness of the evil; but if they do well, why are they smitten? If they can be charged with any immoralities, with any disobedience unto the rule and precept of the gospel, those by whom they are thus prosecuted are highly concerned, if not in conscience, yet in honour and interest, to manage the charge against them, that some countenance may be given unto their proceedings: for “the law is not made,” as penal, “for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane;” and if it be otherwise with the laws about these excommunications, they neither belong to nor are derived from the law of God.

There are, indeed, great clamours against them that they are schismatics and separatists, and things of the like nature,—that is, that they are dissenters; but in this case the whole force of any inference from hence is built on this supposition, that it is the will of Christ that those who profess faith in him and obedience unto him unblamably should be excluded from an interest in and participation
of those ordinances of divine worship which are of his own institution, if they will not comply with and observe such rites and practices in that worship as are not so, but confessedly of human invention. But no colour of proof can be given hereunto; for it is directly contrary unto express Scripture rule, to the example of the apostolical churches, and unheard of in the world before the branded usurpation of Victor, bishop of Rome. An assertion of it is to prostitute the wisdom, authority, and love of Christ towards his disciples unto the wills of men, oftentimes prepossessed with darkness, ignorance, superstition, and other lusts; as shall be more fully manifested if there be occasion. Let any colour be given unto this supposition from Scripture or antiquity, and the whole cause shall be given up. Yet thus is it, and no otherwise, in the matter of the present excommunications: Persons of all sorts, every way sound in the faith, unreprouvable in the catholic worship of the gospel, professing love and obedience unto Jesus Christ, without blame, are excluded,—what lies in them who manage these ordinances of divine worship which the Lord Christ hath appointed and enjoined,—without pretence of any other cause or reason but only their not observance, in that worship, of what he hath not appointed. He that can believe this to be the will of Christ neither knoweth him nor his will, as it is revealed in his word; and the consciences of men are sufficiently secure from being concerned in that wherein such an open defiance is bid unto evangelical precepts and rules, with apostolical examples.

And further to manifest the iniquity of these proceedings, whilst these dissenters are thus dealt withal, all sorts of persons,—ignorant, profane, haters of godliness, and openly wicked in their lives,—are allowed in the full communion of the church, without any disciplinary admonition or control! But as this serves to acquit them from any concernment in what is done against them, so nothing can be invented that tends more directly to harden men in their sins and impenitency; for whilst there is a pretence of church-censures, they will be apt to think that they are sufficiently approved of Christ and the church, seeing their displeasure is no way declared against them. So they are not dissenters, they have reason to judge that they are safe here, and shall be so to eternity! Let them look to themselves who deserve to be excommunicated. Is this the rule of the gospel? Is this the discipline of Christ? Is this the representation of his future judgment? Is this the way and manner of the exercise of his authority in the church, a declaration of what he owns, and what alone he disavows? God forbid that such thoughts should have any countenance given unto them! Ecclesiastical laws have been always looked on as cobwebs that catch the smaller flies, whilst the greater break them at their pleasure; but amongst those lesser, to
A LETTER CONCERNING EXCOMMUNICATION.

221

spare those that are noxious or poisonous, and to cast the net over the innocent and harmless, is that which the spider gives no pattern of,—nor can imitate.

I shall not mention the avowed end and design of these present excommunications; only I shall say, they are such as [that] many good men tremble to consider the horrible profanation of things sacred which they manifest to be in them.

There are also many other things which evidence the nullity of these proceedings, which may be pleaded if there be occasion. What hath already been spoken is abundantly sufficient to satisfy my engagement unto you, namely, that the consciences of men are not at all concerned in the present excommunications.

It may be it will be said that all this while we have been doing just nothing, or that which is to no purpose at all, as not concerning the present case; for those of whom we treat pretend no power in "foro interiori," or the court of conscience, or unto any thing that should immediately affect it. Their authority is only in "foro exteriori," in the court of the church, which it seems is at Doctors' Commons. Wherefore, by their sentence of excommunication they oblige men only as unto their outward concerns; as unto what concerns conscience, they leave that unto the preachers of the word. It may be it will be so pleaded; but before they quit their hands well of this business, they will understand that excommunication itself is nothing but an especial way of the application of the word unto the consciences of sinners unto their edification, and that which is not so, pretend what it will, is nothing at all. Unto the dispensers of the word, therefore, it doth alone belong. And whereas the apostle tells us that the weapons of our Christian warfare are not carnal, but mighty, through God, to bring into captivity every thought unto the obedience of Christ, they seem herein to say that the weapons of their warfare are carnal, and mighty, through the aid of somebody, to cast men into prison, or to bring their persons into captivity. And, indeed, this outward court of theirs is part of that court without the temple which is trodden down by the Gentiles, and shall not be measured in the restoration of the worship of God; yea, the distinction itself is silly, if any thing be intended by this outward court but only the outward declaration of what is, or is supposed to be, effected in the inward, or the mind and consciences of men. But let it be what it will, those who have neither name, nor place, nor office in the church, by divine institution, who attend not at all in what they do unto any rule of the Scripture, nor can nor do pretend any authority from Christ in and for what they do, are no way to be heeded in this matter, but only as the instruments of external compulsion; which, for the sake of the public peace, is to be submitted unto with quietness and patience.
I find, I confess, by the books with me, sent us weekly into the country, that in this state of things some of the reverend clergy do manifest great compassion towards the dissenters, in writing and publishing many discourses containing persuasives unto and arguments for conformity, whereby they may be freed from their troublesome circumstances;—but I must needs commend their prudence in the choice of the season for this work, as much as their charity in the work itself; for the conformity they press needs no other recommendation at this time, nor need they use any other arguments for it, but only that it is better than being hanged, or kept in perpetual durance, or stifled in prisons, or beggared, they and their families, or being starved in exile. And it hath been always observed, that arguments which march with halberts, bills, staves, sergeants, bailiffs, writs, warrants, and capiases,¹ are very forcible and prevalent.

But I have done, and shall leave it unto others to declare what mischiefs do ensue on these proceedings on civil accounts, and what an inroad is made by them on the government of the kingdom; for a new tenure is erected by them, whereon all men must hold their birthright privileges, especially that which is the root whereon they all do grow,—namely, their personal liberty. They hold them no longer by the law of the land, nor can pretend unto security whilst they forfeit them not by that law: they are all put into the power of chancellors, archdeacons, commissaries, and officials; they may deprive them of them all at their pleasure, against the protection of that law under which they are born, and which hath been looked on as the only rule and measure of the subject's liberties, privileges, and possessions. These things tend not only to the disturbance, but the ruin of all peace and trust among men, and of all good government in the world.

And if they should excommunicate all that by the law of Christ are to be excommunicated on the one hand, and all that are to be so by their own law on the other, and then procure capiases for them all, it is to be feared the king might want subjects to defend his realms against his enemies, unless he should do as they did of old at Rome in great distresses,—open the jails, and arm the prisoners; or it may be the lesser part would at length find it troublesome to keep the greater in prison. But these things concern not you nor me. I beg your excuse, as not knowing whether you will judge this hasty writing too little for the cause or too much for a letter. As it is, accept it from, Sir, your, etc.,

J. O.

¹ See note, p. 171.—Ed.
DISCOURSE
CONCERNING THE ADMINISTRATION OF CHURCH-CENSURES.

Ques. 1. *May a true church of Christ err or mistake in the administration of church-censures?*

Ans. A true church of Christ may err or mistake in the administration of the censures, or any act of discipline, whereby members of it, who are true members of Christ, may be injured, and sundry other inconveniences may ensue. And this is not unduly supposed:—

1. Because no particular church is absolutely infallible either in doctrine or administrations, especially in such points or things as overthrow not the foundation of faith or worship.

2. Because churches are more obnoxious and liable to error and mistake in their administrations and discipline than in doctrine; for all doctrines of truth are absolutely determined and revealed in the Scripture, so that there is no principle, means, nor cause of mistake about them—"but what is only in the minds of men that inquire into them and after them. But the administration of the censures of the church hath respect unto many fallible mediums, requiring testimonies, evidences, and circumstances, which of themselves may lead a church acting in sincerity into many mistakes, especially considering how much in the dark unto us, for the most part, are the principles, causes, and ends of actions, [and] the frames of men's spirits in and after them; all which, in such cases, deserve much consideration.

3. Churches have erred in not administering the censures of the gospel according unto order and their duty, 1 Cor. v. 2.

4. The experience of all ages confirms the truth of this supposition. The first church-censure after the death of the apostles that is remaining on any record was that of the church of Corinth against some of their elders; wherein how they miscarried is evident from the epistle of the church of Rome unto them about that matter.

Corollary. In case any question arise about the administration of any church-censure in a church of Christ, it ought to be very jealous lest it have, in matter or manner, miscarried therein, seeing absolutely they may do so, and seeing there are so many ways and means whereby they may actually be induced into mistakes.
Q. 2. Is it necessary that such maladministrations be rectified? 
A. It is necessary such maladministrations should be rectified by some way or means of Christ's appointment. And it is so,—

1. First on the part of the censures themselves; and that,—

(1.) Because of their nullity; for they are null, and bind not,—

[1.] "In foro coeli." They bind not in heaven: for the Lord Christ ratifieth nothing in heaven but what is done in his name, by his commission, and according to his word; in some or all of which every maladministration faileth.

[2.] Nor "in foro conscientiae;" for conscience is not bound, nor will bind, on mere external ecclesiastical authority, where the person is indeed free, and judgeth himself to be so according unto rule. Only such censures may be said to bind for a season, in some cases, in the church, but that "quoad ordinem exteriorem et mere ecclesiasticum," with respect unto outward order, that the peace of the church be not troubled, until mistakes may be rectified; but not "quoad ordinem internum et mere spiritualenum," with reference unto the dependence of the whole church on Christ the head.

(2.) Because of the consequents of them. Disadvantage to the gospel, prejudice to the ways of Christ, and the utter impairing the authority of all church-censures, must needs ensue, if there be no way to rectify such mistakes, or if they are left unrectified; as may easily be manifested.

2. This is also necessary on the part of the church supposed to have erred; for whereas all church-power is for edification, that which is unduly put forth and exercised is rather for destruction, the guilt whereof every church ought to rejoice in being delivered from, especially considering that there is much more evil in condemning the righteous than in acquitting the wicked, though both of them be an abomination.

3. On the part of the persons unduly or unjustly separated from the church by such censures. This is so evident that it needs no confirmation.

4. On the account of all other churches holding communion with the church which hath (as it is supposed to have) miscarried. The reasons hereof will afterward be made to appear.

Corol. This relief, by what means soever it is to be obtained, is of great use to the churches of Christ, and of great concernment unto their peace and edification.

Q. 3. How may such [mal]administrations be rectified? 
A. The rectifying such maladministrations may be (and is ordinarily no otherwise to be expected) by the advice and counsel of other churches, walking in the same fellowship and ordinances of
the gospel with that church so failing, as is supposed; and this to be given upon the hearing and understanding of the whole proceedings of that church in the administration supposed irregular.

This, being the principal thing aimed at, must be further considered. And,—

1. The way or means whereby other churches come to the knowledge of such supposed miscarriages in any church of their communion may be considered. Now, this is either,—

(1.) By public report. So the Israelites took notice of the fact of the Reubenites, and the Gadites, [and the half tribe of Manasseh,] in building an altar; which thereupon they sent to inquire about: they heard say they had done it, Josh. xxii. 11. So the apostle took notice of the miscarriage of the church of Corinth in the case of the incestuous person, 1 Cor. v. 1. And this is a sufficient ground of inquiry, or of desiring an account of any church in such cases.

(2.) By information of particular persons whom they judge holy and faithful. So the apostle took notice of the dissensions in the church of Corinth: they were "declared unto him by them of the house of Chloe," 1 Cor. i. 11.

(3.) By an account given unto them by any church requiring their advice in any case of difficulty, either before or after the administration of censures. So the church at Antioch gave an account of their troubles and differences to the church at Jerusalem, Acts xv.

(4.) By the addresses of the persons injured, or supposing themselves to be so: which to make, whilst they judge themselves innocent, is their indispensable duty, either directly by seeking advice or counsel from them, or by desiring admission into the fellowship of the gospel with them; which they cannot grant without an inquiry into the causes of their separation from any other church or society.

Corol. Where there is a concurrence of the most ways or means of information, there ought to be the more diligence in the inquiry.

Hence it follows, that it is the duty of churches walking in the same order and fellowship of the gospel, upon such information or complaint as before mentioned, of any undue administration of church-censures, especially of excommunication by any church amongst themselves, to inquire by their messengers into the cause and manner of it, to the end that they may give their joint advice and counsel in the matter. And it is the duty of the church complained of or informed against to give them an account of all their proceedings in that case, with their reasons for their procedure, and to hearken unto and consider the advice that shall be offered and given unto them.

2. This will appear sufficiently confirmed if we consider, in order unto a right judgment of the grounds whereon this way and practice is asserted,—

VOL. XVI.
(1.) That this advice of churches in communion to be given and taken is no ordinary or standing ordinance of the church as to its practice, though it be as unto its right, but is only to be made use of in extraordinary cases, and such as should not occur,—although they will; and for this cause it is more sparingly mentioned in the Scripture.

(2.) That it is, and may be fully proved to be, the duty of all churches, by previous advice with other churches in cases of difficulty, to prevent this consequent counsel; which, being after a sentence given, must needs be attended with many difficulties.

(3.) That the practice of the churches as to discipline is no longer recorded in the Scripture than they had the direction and help of the apostles, which supplied all extraordinary emergencies among them; so that many instances of this practice amongst them are not to be expected,—and it is of the care and wisdom of our Lord Jesus that we have any.

(4.) That we must here be content with such arguments and testimonies as we act upon in other ordinances and things belonging to the worship and order of the churches; such as the distribution of elders into teaching and ruling, the administration of the sacraments by officers only, gesture in the sacrament of the supper, observation of the first day of the week, and the like.

These things being premised, the order above expressed is confirmed,—

I. From the light and law of nature, with the unalterable reason of the thing itself. Hence are churches directed unto this order and practice.

There is somewhat that is moral in all ordinances. Some of them are wholly so as to their matter and substance, and founded in the light of nature, being only directed as to their principle, manner, and end, in the gospel. Such is excommunication itself, as might easily be made to appear. And from hence a direction unto duty and an indispensable obligation unto obedience do arise. That which is moral in any ordinance doth no less oblige us to an observation of it than that which is of mere institution; and it obligeth us because it is moral. And the Lord Christ being in all things the Lord of our consciences, what we do therein we do it in obedience unto him.

Now, that the order established is thus grounded and warranted appears by the ensuing rules, taken from the light of nature:—

1. "Quod omnes tangit, ab omnibus tractari debet." All men are to consider that wherein the concernment of all doth lie, according to their respective interests. What is the ground and reason why all the members of a church do consider, determine, give their counsel and consent, in the case of any person being cast out of their
society? It is warranted by virtue of this rule. They all have communion with such a person, and must all withdraw communion from him, and therefore must consider the reason of his excision or cutting off. Now, a church in its censures doth not eject any one from the enjoyment of ordinances numerically only, that is, in that one society; but specifically, that is, from the ordinances of Christ in all churches. Hence it becomes the concernment of other churches, even as many as the person ejected may seek communion from; and therefore it is to be considered by them with respect unto their own duty of walking towards him.

2. "Cujus est judicare, ejus est cognoscere." Whosoever is to judge is to take cognizance of the fact, and the reason of it. This is to be done according to the several interests that men may have in the matter under consideration;—which in some is of jurisdiction, which in this case we admit not of; in others, of counsel and advice. Now, other churches are not allowed in this case to be merely passive and indifferent, but must make a determination in it. This is evident on supposition of the injured person's offering himself to their communion; for they must reject him or receive him. In both they judge, and therein must take cognizance, by hearing the matter from the church, and so on both sides. And unless this be allowed, no church can or ought to expect that any other church will reject from communion any whom they reject, merely because they are rejected, unless they suppose their judgment to be absolutely a rule unto any other churches to walk by in their observation of the commands and institutions of Christ.

3. On the part of the persons supposed to be injured, every man by the law of nature is obliged to undertake "inculpatae sui tutelam," the just defence of his own innocency by all lawful ways and means. And as absolutely the way, means, and measure of this defence are left unto a man's own prudence, so there is a rule given unto it,—Wherever the glory of God or the good of his neighbour is concerned. If either of these suffer by his wrong, he is obliged to vindicate his own innocency, nor is at liberty to suffer false imputations to lie upon him. It is in such cases a man's sin not to do so. And in the case under consideration, this can be done only by an address unto other persons for their assistance, according to their interest. An interest of jurisdiction, in civil courts or in churches, in this case there is none. The interest of private persons herein is of compassion, prayer, and private advice; the interest of churches is a cognizance of the cause, with advice and judgment thereon. And for persons or churches not to give advice in this case, according to truth and equity, is their sin.

That these are principles of the light of nature and the natural
reason of such things, appears from the general allowance of them so to be, and their constant practice amongst all men walking accord-
ing to that light and law.

Corol. If churches, as they are assemblies and societies of men in communion for the same end, observe not the indispensable rules of societies, they cannot, as such, be ordinarily preserved in their being and communion.

II. The way and order laid down is directed unto, warranted, and confirmed, by general rules of the Scripture.

1. On the part of the church supposed to err in its administrations. There are sundry general rules which declare it to be their duty to give an account unto other churches of their proceedings therein, and to consider their advice. Some of these may be named, as,—

(1.) That they “give none offence to the church of God,” 1 Cor. x. 32. “Give not offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed,” 2 Cor. vi. 3. Upon a supposition, or information, or com-
plaint of maladministration of any ordinance, offence may be taken, and that, if accompanied (as it may be) with much appearing evi-
dence, justly. And in this case the church hath no way to clear itself from having indeed given offence but by giving an account of their proceedings, and the reason thereof. And without this it can-
not be avoided but that offences will be multiplied amongst the churches of Christ, and that to the utter ruin of their mutual com-
munion. Thus when Peter, by the special command and direction of God, went and preached the gospel to the Gentiles, many, not knowing the grounds of his so doing, nor his warrant for it, took off-
ence at it, and charged him with irregular walking, Acts xi. 2, 3. In this case, he doth not defend himself by his apostolical authority and privilege, nor in a few words tell them he had a warrant for what he did; but, to remove all doubts, questions, and causes of off-
ence, he distinctly repeats the whole matter, and all the circum-
stances of it;—an example of so great importance, that the Holy Ghost thought meet at large to express his account and defence, though the matter of it was set down immediately before, Acts x., xi.

(2.) That they “be ready always to give an answer” (that is, an account) “to every man that asketh them a reason of the hope that is in them” (and, consequently, of their practice suitable thereunto) “with meekness and fear,” 1 Pet. iii. 15. This proves it “a minore ad majus;” if they should be ready thus to answer every man, much more many churches of God, and that in and about things of their mutual edification.

(3.) That, in particular, they clear themselves when suffering under any imputation, or being in danger of so doing: “What care-
fulness it wrought in you, what clearing of yourselves! In all things
ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter," 2 Cor. vii. 11. And this on many accounts is the duty of a church in the case proposed. The glory of God, the honour of Christ, their own peace and edification, with the peace and credit of all other churches, require it of them. Nor can this duty be any otherwise performed but by this giving an account of their own proceedings, and receiving the advice of other churches therein. And if this be not done freely, with readiness and submission of mind, there is no way left to preserve the peace and communion of churches. Those who suppose they may in such cases act in a way of jurisdiction and church-power can attain the end by them aimed at, by virtue of the censures which they do administer. But in this way of counsel and advice, unless those who are concerned to give an account of themselves will do it with meekness, gentleness, mutual trust and confidence, suitable unto the conduct of the Spirit of Christ, in obedience unto his institutions, the whole end of it will be in danger to be frustrated.

2. On the part of other churches.

(1.) All churches walking in the same order and fellowship of the gospel are mutually debtors to each other for their good and edification: "Their debtors they are," Rom. xv. 27. And this debt, in this case, can no otherwise be paid but by the way prescribed.

(2.) What the apostles did, might do, and ought to do, towards one another, who were all equal by virtue of their common interest in the same work, that one church may do, and ought to do, towards another, or many churches towards one; but one apostle might take cognizance of the ways and walking of another, and withstand, advise, or reprove him, if in any thing he failed, and walked not with a right foot, Gal. ii. 11, 14.

Corol. General rules, containing the grounds and reasons of particular institutions, are sure guidance and direction in and unto their observation.

III. The way and order expressed is warranted by necessity, as that without which the peace of communion and edification of the churches cannot be preserved and carried on; as—

1. On the part of the church whose administrations are questioned. The persons censured (which is ordinary) may, in their own vindication, or by way of undue reflection, not to be discovered without a just examination, impair their reputation with other churches, or many members of them, whereby they may suffer and be exposed to sundry inconveniences. In this case, a church can have no relief but by reporting the matter unto other churches, so seeking their advice and counsel; whereby they may receive great encouragement, comfort, and boldness in the Lord, if found to have proceeded according unto rule.
2. On the part of other churches. A church may, either causelessly or with just cause, cast out or withdraw communion from such a number of their members as, bearing themselves on their own innocency and right, may continue in a society, and plead that the power, authority, and privilege of the church do abide with them. How, in this case, shall other churches know with which of these societies they may and ought to hold communion, unless they may and ought to examine and consider the causes of the dissension between them? And they may justly, and ought to withhold communion from that party of them, which shall refuse to tender their case unto such consideration.

3. On the part of the persons supposed to be injured, and that either for their restoration or their conviction and humiliation; for,—

(1.) If they are innocent, it is meet that they should be heard (as the Israelites heard the Reubenites), and necessary that they should be restored. Now, it being supposed that the church which hath rejected them will not rescind their own act without new light and evidence,—which, for many reasons, is not likely to spring from among themselves,—this is the only way left for that necessary relief which the Lord Christ requires to be given; for what is our duty towards a person repenting, in reference to his restoration, is certainly our duty towards a person who hath not sinned, when his innocency shall be discovered.

(2.) For their conviction and humiliation, if they be found offenders. Whilst they see not right the regularity of the church's proceedings with them, whilst they are able to justify themselves in their own consciences, and their hearts condemn them not, it is not to be expected that the sentence of excommunication, which works only by the means of men's light and conviction, will have its effect upon them. But when there shall be the concurrence of many churches in the approbation of the censure inflicted on them, which probably will be accompanied with a contribution of new light and conviction, it is a most useful means to bring them to humiliation and repentance. It was an aggravation of the censure inflicted on the incestuous Corinthian that it was given out against him by "many," 2 Cor. ii. 6,—that is, by the common consent of the church; and it will add thereunto when the censure shall be confirmed and approved by the concurrent advice of many churches.

Corol. The Lord Christ having provided all things necessary for the peace and edification of his church in all things that are evidently of that importance, his mind and will is diligently to be inquired after.

IV. This whole order and practice are grounded on especial warrant and approbation, recorded Acts xv.; concerning which we may observe,—
1. That the occasion there mentioned fell out in the providence of God, and the practice upon it was guided by the Holy Ghost, that it might be an example and rule for the churches of Christ in cases of a like concernment unto them in all ages, and so have the force and warranty of an institution: as it was in the case that gave occasion unto deacons, Acts vi.,—a matter of fact, wherein was some disorder, rectified by a practice answering the necessity of the church, became an institution for order in all future ages.

2. That in that synod things were not determined by immediate inspiration, but the truth was searched out, and the mind of the Holy Ghost searched into by reasonings, arguings, and the consideration of Scripture testimonies; whereby they were guided in their conclusion and determination.

3. That the institution and rule given is not in its exercise to be confined to that particular case and instance there mentioned (which to do would overthrow many other rules and observations which we admit), but it is to be extended, in proportion and parity of reason, unto all cases of a like nature: for the reason of any law is the rule of its interpretation; and so it is of any institution. That that which gives offence and trouble unto any church,—that wherein many churches are concerned, that which in any church hinders edification and disturbs the faith or peace of any of its members, whether it be in doctrine or practice, that which is not or cannot be composed in any one church,—should be considered, advised upon, and determined, by more churches holding communion together, and meeting for that purpose by their messengers, is the sense, meaning, design, and importance of this institution.

Corol. To deny an institution of so great necessity to the peace and edification of the churches, will give great countenance unto men who, supposing such defects, are ready to supply them with their own inventions.

V. The order asserted is confirmed by the practice of the first churches, after the decease of the apostles; for when the church of Corinth had, by an undue exercise of discipline, deposed some of their elders, the church of Rome, taking cognizance of it, wrote unto them reproving their rashness, and advised their restoration. And when the church of Antioch was afterward troubled with the pride and false opinions of Paulus Samosatenus, the neighbouring bishops or elders came unto the church, and joined their consent in his deposition.

Some things are, or may be, objected unto this course of proceeding amongst the churches of Christ; which shall therefore be briefly considered and answered.

Objection 1. This way of proceeding will abridge the liberty and
destroy the privileges of particular churches, which ought to be care-
fully preserved, as the ground and foundation of the whole super-
struction of church-order.

Ans. 1. Particular churches have certainly no liberties or pri-
ileges that are inconsistent with and do contradict either the light
of nature, moral equity, general rules of the Scripture, or the rea-
sions and ends of all institutions, and the edification of the whole
body of Christ. And on these, as hath been declared, is this way
and course of proceeding grounded.

2. Other churches taking care about their own concernments and
duty, according to the will and appointment of Christ,—namely, in
considering whom they receive into, and whom they are to deny
communion unto, with the causes thereof,—do not, nor can truly,
abridge the liberties or privileges of any church whatever; for the
duty of many churches will never interfere with the due liberty of
any one. And this is all upon the matter that they do in this case;
which must be granted them, unless we will say that the actings of
one church, and those it may be irregular, shall not only abridge all
other churches of their liberty, but hinder them also from perform-
ing their duty.

3. I do not see how counsel and advice can abridge the liberty of
any church or person. Certainly to guide, direct, and assist any in
the acting of their liberty, is not to abridge it, but rather to strengthen
it; for liberty acted not according to rule is licentiousness. A man
in the use of his liberty may be going to do himself some notable
injury; he that shall stop him by counsel and persuasion, with the
prevailency and authority of reason, doth not take away his liberty,
but guide him aright in the use of it.

4. Wherein is the abridgment pretended? Is a church by this
means hindered from the free use and acting of its own judgment,
in taking in what members to it seems good, in watching over them
according to the rule, in admonishing, reproving, or casting them
out, if it find just and sufficient cause so to do? To hinder or ob-
struct a church in any of these acts or actings, by any authority, sen-
tence, or determination, by any act or acts whatever, is utterly dis-
claimed: so that this is but a pretence.

5. When a case hath difficulty in it,—and such mostly, if not uni-
versally, have all cases wherein there will be found the least appear-
ance of a grievance in the execution of censures, or pretence for seek-
ing redress,—a church hath not liberty, hath no privilege, to secure it
from previously seeking the advice of other churches; which is their
duty by many rules of Scripture. We must not pretend unbounded
liberty against known duty. And as a church doth not seek previous
advice from other churches, that they may obtain power to execute
their censures, which they have in themselves, no more doth this following advice any way cut them short in the use or execution of their power, but only direct them. And if a church have not this liberty by rule before censure in difficult cases, as it hath not, no more hath it after a censure, whereby the necessity of advice and counsel may be increased.

Obj. 2. This way of proceeding will erect a jurisdiction or judicature in some churches over others; which is not to be allowed.

So some have spoken, who have not, it may be, duly weighed either what jurisdiction, properly so called, is, or how great an evil it is to cast a reproach upon the right ways of the Lord. In answer I say,—

Ans. 1. Excommunication itself, whatever men may suppose, is no proper act of jurisdiction; for jurisdiction in any sense is an adjunct of office, and the acts of it are acts of office and power. But so is not excommunication; for it is not an authoritative act of the officers of the church, but a judicial sentence of the whole church. Now the whole church is not in office; the whole body is not an eye. What is done, then, by it is no act of office-power, but a declaration of a judgment according to especial institution. And if excommunication itself may be exercised without any jurisdiction, surely that exercise may be consulted and advised about without any pretence thereunto.

2. To constitute a jurisdiction, it is required that there be, first, an office-power stated in them that claim it, and a duty in others on the same account to submit unto them; secondly, an authoritative acting by virtue of that office-power, with an obligation from that authority, formally considered, unto obedience; with sundry other things, which in this matter are utterly disclaimed.

3. A right understanding of the true state of the question, of what is granted and what asserted in this matter, will, with them that love peace and truth, fully obviate such objections as these; for,—

(1.) It is granted that all church power and authority, for the administration of all the ordinances and institutions of the gospel, is intrusted with a particular congregation.

(2.) That there is no judicature, no church assembly, vested with church power and authority, without, above, or beyond a particular church, that should either contribute authority unto such a church for its actings, or authoritatively control it in its actings, to order or change its proceeding in any thing, as by virtue of any authority received unto that purpose.

(3.) That in case any person be not satisfied with the administration of the church whereof he is a member, but finds himself ag-
grieved thereby, he cannot appeal unto any church, or churches, or assemblies of churches, as having power or authority to revoke or disannul the sentence or act of the church wherewith he is offended, either in pretence that the church without their concurrence and consent had not power to pass any such act, or that they have authority to control their acts, or can on any account authoritatively interpose in their administrations.

(4.) It is granted, then, that the power of excommunication, in the preceding acts unto it and full execution of it, is placed in a particular congregation, without respect unto any superior authority but that of Christ and his word. These things are acknowledged. But that it should hence follow, that, in case of supposed maladministration of ordinances, and the complaint of persons pretending to be injured thereby, other churches are not, by virtue of Scripture rules, institution of our Lord Jesus, warrant of the light of nature, on their communion and common interest, to inquire into the matter and take cognizance of it, that no offence be given or taken, that they may know how to discharge aright their duty towards both the church and the persons aggrieved, and give their advice in the common concernment of all the churches, there is no pretence to surmise. And for a church to say that because they have power to do what they do, they will therefore in such things neither desire advice, nor take advice, nor hearken unto counsel, nor give account of their proceedings to them that are or may be offended or that require an account of them, is scarce agreeable to the Spirit of Christ or the rule of his word.

Obj. 3. This is the way to frustrate the sentence of excommunication, and to prevent the due efficacy of it upon the persons censured, yea, to harden them in their sin and offence.

Ans. 1. Concerning whom are these things feared? Were the advice mentioned, and the counsel to be had and given, to be among heathens, enemies of the church or of the ways of Christ, or of the especial way and order of church-fellowship which in this discourse is supposed, such events might be feared: but to pretend to fear that other churches of Christ, walking in the same order and communion with ourselves, and whom we ought to look on in all things as like-minded with ourselves, as to their aim at the glory of God and edification of the church, should, by their counsel and advice, frustrate the end of any ordinance of Christ, is a surmise that ought not to be indulged unto; yea, we have herein cause to admire the wisdom and bless the care of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath provided this help for us, to strengthen and confirm us in the ways of truth and righteousness, or to direct us where we are or may be mistaken.

2. Where excommunication is not administered but in a due man-
ner and for just causes, there will appear little trouble or difficulty in this matter. Let the cause or matter of it be as it ought to be,—such a sin or sins as the mind or conscience of a believer, of an enlightened person, free from open prejudices, will at first view condemn in himself and others; and this or these sins persisted in after due admonition,—and there will indeed be left no pretence of grievance or complaint in those that are censured. But if it be administered in dubious cases, we shall find that this way of counsel is so far from being an obstruction of its efficacy as that it is the only means to render it effectual.

3. No man will complain, or address himself unto the relief declared, if he be convinced in his conscience that he is not injured, but that he is indeed guilty of the crimes charged on him, and that by Scripture rule they are such as deserve that censure. In this case no man will be so foolish or obstinate as to seek for relief; and if he should do so, he can possibly expect nothing but to have his bands made strong. But now suppose that a person be not so convinced, neither before nor after sentence denounced against him, but looks on himself as innocent and injured, either in part or in whole, in matter or manner of proceeding,—what effect can be expected of his excommunication? We are deceived if we look that this ordinance should have any effect upon men but by the conviction of their minds and consciences. It worketh doctrinally only, though peculiarly by virtue of especially institution. And in this case it is evident how this way may further, and that it cannot possibly obstruct, the effects of this censure; as was in part before declared.

4. The address being but once to be made, this is the only way to bind the guilty person, and that without delay, and to give him a sense of his sin, which it is supposed that before he had not.

5. It is our duty not to cast even persons that are excommunicated under new temptations. Now, he that is aggrieved with the sentence denounced against him, and supposeth himself injured (which whilst he doth so he cannot be humbled for his sin), if he suppose he hath no way of relief left unto him,—that is, that his case can no more come under advice or counsel,—he will be exposed unto temptations to irregular ways, and so cast off the yoke which he supposeth grievous and injurious.

Obj. 4. The pattern urged for this course of proceeding, Acts xv., concerneth only doctrines, and not the administration of censures, which was not then or there in question; and therefore in the like case only may the like course be taken.

Ans. 1. The way of mutual counsel and advice amongst churches pleaded for is not built only upon that instance and example, as hath before been evinced. There are many more grounds of it, reasons
for it, and directions about it, than what are or can be comprised in any one particular instance.

2. There is frequently, if not always, some doctrinal mistake in the bottom of all maladministration; for whereas the nature of the sin proceeded against, and the rule proceeded by, ought in the first place to be doctrinally and dogmatically stated, here usually is the beginning of the mistake and error of any church. This, therefore, falls confessedly under that example of Acts xv.

3. Though that assembly made a doctrinal determination of the things in difference, yet the formal reason of the consideration of those things was the offence that was given, and that the churches were troubled: so that the pattern is to be extended unto all things whereby the peace of the church is disturbed.

4. Maladministration may tend to the subversion of the church, and the ruin of the souls of men, no less than false doctrines; as suppose a church should admit known Arians or Socinians into their society, supposing they have liberty so to do, may not other churches both consider the fact, and, unless they alter their proceeding, withhold communion from them? Instances innumerable of the same kind may be given.

Obj. 5. Churches have the sole power of admitting members into their society; by virtue of which admission they are not only received into a participation of the privileges of the church in that particular society whereof they are members, but also into the communion of all other churches of Christ. Now, this is daily practised by churches, without any further inspection into their actions by others. Those admitted are received upon their testimony unto their admission. And why shall not churches have the same trust reposed in them as to the exclusion of any members from them, and expect that their testimony alone to the fact should satisfy for their exclusion from all other churches and their communion?

Ans. 1. The cases, indeed, are parallel, and the power of every church is no less for the exclusion of any of their members than for their admission, nor ought their testimony to be of less weight in the one [case] than in the other.

2. Ordinarily, and where there is no ground of further consideration, the actings of a church of Christ in both these cases are, and ought to be, granted and taken to be according unto rule, so that other churches do acquiesce as to their concernsments in the judgment of all the several churches of their communion.

3. There may be mistakes in [the] admission as well as in the exclusion of members; and some there are who do very much scruple complete communion with many churches principally upon this account, that they proceed not on right grounds in their admission of mem-
bers; and such cannot but grant that, on occasion, the grounds of their own admission may and ought to be questioned and examined.

4. No church hath such an absolute power in the admission of members, but that in cases of difficulty, and such as may in their determination one way or other give offence, they are bound to seek and to take the advice of other churches with whom they hold communion.

5. Suppose it be reported or intimated, by any of the ways that were before mentioned, that a church in communion with others had admitted into their society an Arian or Socinian, a seducer or a person of a flagitious life, given to corrupt the manners of others; shall not the other churches of the same communion, to whom the matter is so reported or declared, and who are offended thereat, require an account of that church's proceeding therein, to know whether it be as it is reported or no? And is not that church so represented or reported of obliged to give a full and punctual account of their proceedings, and to receive advice thereupon? Let any consider the instances before given, the nature of the thing itself, the rule of the Scripture in such cases, and determine. The case is directly the same as to excommunication. “But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God,” 1 Cor. xi. 16.
I.

AN ANSWER UNTO TWO QUESTIONS:

WITH

TWELVE ARGUMENTS AGAINST ANY CONFORMITY TO WORSHIP NOT OF DIVINE INSTITUTION.

Should ye not hear the words which the Lord hath cried by the former prophets?—Zec. vii. 7.
Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.—Rom. xiv. 22.

II.

OF MARRying AFTER DIVORCE IN CASE OF ADULTERY.

III.

OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.
Mr. Owen thus explains the origin and history of the following treatise, which first appeared in the Sermons of Owen, published by Marshall, in 1720:—"About the time of the Doctor's death, a small manuscript was handed about, containing twelve arguments against conformity to worship not of divine institution. The leading object of these arguments is to point out the unlawfulness of those who had separated from the Church of England uniting in its public services, as those services are of a very different nature from the worship which Christ hath appointed. This manuscript occasioned a very violent discussion. It was sent to Baxter, as that which had satisfied many of the impropriety of joining in the liturgy. 'I hastily answered them,' he says, 'but found after that it had been most prudent to have omitted his name; for on that account a swarm of revilers in the city poured out their keenest censures, and three or four wrote against me, whom I answered.' No wonder that Owen's friends were displeased, as he was scarcely in his grave when this attempt was made by Baxter to convict him of no less than forty-two errors in the space of ten pages! It reminds us of the controversy between Erasmus and Natalis Bedda. The latter extracted from the writings of Erasmus two hundred erroneous propositions; who revenged himself in the same way, by calculating that Bedda had been guilty of a hundred and eighty-one lies, three hundred and ten calumnies, and forty-seven blasphemies! Owen's Twelve Arguments are printed in the octavo edition of his Sermons, published in 1720. Baxter's reply is in his 'Defence of Catholic Communion.' The occasional conformity controversy gave a great deal of trouble to the Dissenters, both then and afterwards, to which Baxter's conduct and writings very largely contributed. Owen's tract is one of the best things on the other side."

II. AND III.

The tracts on "Marriage," etc., and on "Infant Baptism," etc., were published in the folio volume of "Sermons and Tracts" by Owen, which was printed in 1721.—Ed.
AN ANSWER UNTO TWO QUESTIONS.

QUESTION I.

Whether persons who have engaged unto reformation and another way of divine worship, according to the word of God, as they believe, may lawfully go unto and attend on the use of the Common-prayer book in divine worship?

ANSWER.

1. We suppose herein all that hath been pleaded against that kind of service, as to its matter, form, imposition, use, end, and consequences; which are all of them duly to be considered before the practice inquired after can be allowed. But,—

2. The present question is not about the lawfulness or unlawfulness of forms of prayer in general; nor about the lawfulness of that form or those forms which are prescribed in the Common-prayer book, as unto their matter and manner of composure, absolutely considered; nor yet about the expediency of the whole system of worship limited thereunto: but it respects all these things, and the like, with reference unto the persons described in the inquiry. And as unto the persons intended in the inquiry, we judge this practice unlawful unto them, as contrary unto sundry rules of the Scripture, and wherein it is condemned.

1. It is contrary unto that general rule in those cases given us by the apostle, Gal. ii. 18, "If I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor." To "destroy" or dissolve any thing in the worship of God, is to lay it aside and remove it out of that worship, as that which we have no divine obligation unto: so the apostle destroyed the legal ceremonies whereof he there speaks, and no otherwise. To "build again," is to admit into the worship of God as useful unto the edification of the church. And these are contrary, so that if the one be a duty, the other, in the same case, or with respect unto the same things, is a sin. If it were a duty to destroy, it is a sin to build; and if it be a duty to build, it was a sin to destroy. He that doth both makes himself unavoidably a transgressor.

VOL. XVI.
But we have in this sense, as unto ourselves, destroyed this form of worship; that is, we have omitted it, and left it out in the service of the church, as that which we had no divine obligation unto, and as that which was not unto edification. If we now build it again, as it is done in the practice inquired after, we make ourselves transgressors, either by destroying or building.

And there is strength added unto this consideration, in case that we have suffered any thing on the account of the forbearance of it; as the same apostle speaks in the same case, "Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain," Gal. iii. 4. It is a great folly to lose our own sufferings: "Are ye so foolish?" verse 3.

2. It is contrary unto that great rule, "Whatsoever is not of faith is sin," Rom. xiv. 23; for that any thing which a man doth in the worship of God may be of faith, it is necessary that he be convinced or persuaded that it is his duty so to do, Matt. xxviii. 20; Isa. i. 12; Deut. iv. 2.

It is no rule in the worship of God, that we should do what we can, or that we have a liberty to do this or that, which we yet suppose, all circumstances considered, that we are not divinely obliged to do. In all things in general, and in particular duties or instances, we must have an obligation on our consciences from the authority of God that so we ought to do, and that our not doing of it is a neglect of a duty, or it is not of faith. The performance of any thing in the worship of God hath in it the formal nature of a duty, given it by its respect unto divine authority; for a duty to God that is not an act of obedience with respect unto his authority is a contradiction.

Wherefore, no man can (that is, lawfully and without sin) go to and attend on this kind of religious worship but he who judgeth his so doing to be a duty that God requireth of him, and which it would be his sin to omit, every time he goes unto it. God will not accept of any service from us on other terms. Whether this be the judgment of those who make the inquiry as unto what they do, they may do well to consider.

3. It is contrary to the rule delivered, Mal. i. 13, 14, "Ye brought that which was torn, and the lame, and the sick; thus ye brought an offering: should I accept this of your hand? saith the Lord. But cursed be the deceiver, which hath in his flock a male, and voweth, and sacrificeth unto the Lord a corrupt thing: for I am a great King, saith the Lord of hosts." We are obliged, by all divine laws, natural, moral, and positive, to serve God always with our best. The obligations hereunto are inseparable from all just conceptions of the divine nature, and our relation thereunto. No man can think aright of God, and that it is his duty to serve him, but must think it to be so with the best that he hath. To offer him any thing when we
have that which is better, or which we judge to be better, is an act of profaneness and not obedience. In all sacrifices the blood and the fat were to be offered unto God. Wherefore, he that attends unto this service doth avow to God that it is the best that he hath; and if it be not so, he is a deceiver.

If it be objected, hereon, that "by virtue of this rule, so understood as that we are always obliged to the use of that which we judge best in the worship of God, we are bound to leave this or that ministry or church, if we judge that the administrations are better amongst others," it is answered, that the rule respects not degrees, where the whole administration is according to the mind of God, but different kinds of worship, as worshipping by a limited prescribed form and worshipping by the assistance of the Spirit of God are.

4. It is contrary unto that rule, "Let all things be done unto edifying," 1 Cor. xiv. 26. Whatsoever doth not promote edification is excluded out of the worship of the church by virtue of this rule, nor can it be a duty in us to give countenance thereunto or to make use of it. It is said that "prayer is the worship of God; these forms of it are only a determination of the manner of it, or an outward means of that worship." Let it be supposed so; although it be certain that, as prescribed, they are parts of the service. They are therefore means that are a help and furtherance unto edification in prayer, or they are an hinderance of it, or they are of no use or signification one way or the other. If it be said that "they are a help unto edification, and are found so by experience, in the exclusion of any other way of worship," then I ask why they are not constantly used?—why do we at any time, in any place, refuse the aid and help of them unto this great end of all things that are done in the church? But this can be pleaded only by those who contend for the constant use of them in the worship of God, with whom at present we are not concerned. If it be acknowledged that "indeed they are an hinderance unto edification, which is more promoted without them, yet are they not in themselves unlawful," I say, as before, that is not the present question; we inquire only whether the use of them by those who judge them hinderances unto edification be not contrary to the rule mentioned, "Let all things be done unto edifying." For the things of the third sort, that are of no use nor signification at all, they can have no place nor be of any consideration in the worship of God.

5. It is inconsistent with that sincerity in profession that is required of us. Our public conjunction with others in acts and duties of religious worship is a part of that profession which we make; and our whole profession is nothing but the declaration of the subjection of our souls unto the authority of Christ, according unto the gospel.
Wherefore, in this conjunction in worship we do profess that it is divinely required of us, and that it is part of that obedience which we owe to Jesus Christ; and if we do not so judge it, we are hypocritical in what we do, or the profession that we make. And to deny that our practice is our profession in the sight of God and men, is to introduce all manner of licentiousness into religion.

6. Such a practice is, in very many instances, contrary unto the great rule of not giving offence [1 Cor. x. 32]; for it is unavoidable but that many will be given and taken, and some of them of pernicious consequence unto the souls of men. In particular,—

First, "Woe will be unto the world because of these offences:" for hence our adversaries will take occasion to justify themselves in their most false and injurious charges against dissenters, unto the hardening of them in their ways; as,—(1.) They accuse them as factious and seditious, in that they will not do what they can do, and what, by the present practice, they own to be the mind of God that they should do (or else expressly play the hypocrite), for the sake of peace, order, and obedience unto magistrates. (2.) That they pretend conscience wherein indeed it is not concerned in their own judgment, seeing, on outward considerations which conscience can have no regard unto, they can do what is required. On these apprehensions they will justify themselves in their security, and harden themselves in their sins, it may be to their perdition. Woe be unto them by whom such offences come!

Secondly, By this practice we cast in our suffrage on the part of persecutors against the present sufferers in the nation; for we justify what is done against them, and condemn them in their sufferings, as having no just cause or warranty for what they do, as we declare by our practice of what they refuse. There is no man who complies in this matter but it is a part of his profession that those who refuse so to do, and are exposed to sufferings thereon, do not suffer according to the will of God, nor do their sufferings redound unto his glory; and no offence or scandal can be of a higher nature.

Thirdly, Differences and divisions will on this practice unavoidably arise between churches themselves and members of the same church, which will be attended with innumerable evil consequences, unto the dishonour of the gospel, and, it may be, to the loss of all church-communion.

Fourthly, Many will be induced, on the example of others, especially if they be persons of any reputation in the church who shall so practise, to follow them against their own light, having the great weight of the preservation of their liberties and goods lying on the same side; and experience will quickly show what will be the event hereof, either in total apostasy, or that terror of conscience which
they will find no easy relief under, as it hath fallen out with some already. And,—

Fifthly, It is a justification of our adversaries in the cause wherein we are engaged,—(1.) In their church-state; (2.) In a reading ministry; (3.) In their casting us out of communion on the present terms; (4.) In their judgment concerning us on the point of schism; as might easily be manifested.

Lastly, There is in this practice a visible compliance with the design of the prescription of this form of service unto the sole use of the church in the duties of divine worship. And this, in the nature of the thing itself, is an exclusion of the exercise of the gifts of the Holy Spirit in that worship, which is given and continued by Christ to this very end, that the church may be edified in divine worship and the due performance of it. And whether this answers our loyalty unto Christ in his kingly office ought to be well inquired into.

And we shall hereby, on a mere act of outward force, join with them in church-communion who have cast us out of their communion by the imposition of principles and practices in divine worship no way warranted by the Scripture or authority of Christ, who allow us no church-state among ourselves, nor will join in any one act of church-communion with us! who persecute us even unto death, and will not be satisfied with any compliance without a total renunciation of our principles and practice in the worship of God, and giving away our whole cause about the state of the church and other divine institutions! Besides, we shall seem to be influenced by a respect unto their excommunications; which, as they are managed and administered at present, are not only a high profanation of a sacred ordinance, but suited to expose Christian religion unto scorn and contempt.

QUESTIONS.

A second inquiry is, Whether the persons before mentioned and described may lawfully, and in a consistency with, or without a renunciation of, their former principles and practice, go to and receive the sacrament of the Lord's supper in the parish churches, under their present constitution and administration?

ANSWER.

It appears that they may not, or cannot so do; for,—

1. Their so doing would be an ecclesiastical incorporation in the church wherein they do partake; for a voluntary conjunction in the highest act of communion with any church, according to its order
and institution, warranted by its own authority, is an express incorporation with it, whereby a man is constituted a formal member of it unto all ends and purposes of privilege, right, and duty. The church-state is owned hereby, its authority submitted unto in its right and exercise; nor is it otherwise interpreted of them unto whom they so join themselves. But this is a virtual, yea, an express renunciation of their own present church-state in any other society, and necessitates a relinquishment of their former practice.

It will be said that "a member of one particular church may partake of the sacrament of the Lord's supper in another, without incorporating or becoming a stated member of that church wherein he doth so partake."

It is answered, that he may so by virtue of that communion which is between the church whereof he is a member and that church wherein he doth so partake; for he is admitted unto that participation by virtue of that communion, and not on his own personal account. If it be otherwise, where any one is received unto the participation of this ordinance, there he is admitted unto entire membership, and is engaged unto all the duties thereunto belonging. And thus is it in this case; for those unto whom they join themselves herein, if but occasionally, do,—(1.) Own no church-state in this nation but their own; (2.) Admit of none unto this sacrament by virtue of their communion with any other church, or any churches not of their own constitution; nor, (3.) Will administer it unto any but those whom they claim to be their own, as living in their parishes, in opposition unto any other church-state whatever.

Wherefore, it is impossible that any man should be a member of one church and communicate in this ordinance with another which condemns that whereof he is [a member] as schismatical, and receiveth him as one belonging unto itself only, but he doth professedly renounce the communion of that church wherein he was, and is by them that receive him esteemed so to do. And no reserves of a contrary judgment or resolution in his own mind will relieve any man, in conscience or reputation, against the testimony of his practical profession.

2. They do hereby profess a spiritual incorporation with those or that church wherein they do so communicate,—namely, that they are "one bread and one body" with them, that they all "drink into one Spirit," 1 Cor. x. 17, xii. 13. How they can do this in those places where they judge the generality of them to be profane and ignorant, without sinning against their own light, is not to be understood.

It is said that "no persons, in this or any other ordinance of divine worship, are polluted or made guilty by the sins of others with whom they do communicate." It is answered, that this is not at present
inquired into. That which such persons are charged with is their own sin only, in making a profession of spiritual incorporation, or becoming of one body, one bread with them, and of drinking into the same Spirit with them, when they do not esteem them so to be, in the exercise of love without dissimulation. The neglect also of other express duties, which we owe unto those who stand in that union with us, will necessarily follow hereon. Neither do such persons as so communicate intend to take on themselves an obligation unto all those duties which are required of them towards those with whom they profess themselves to be one spiritual body; which is an open prevarication against Scripture rule.

3. They would hereby not only justify the whole service of the liturgy, but the ceremonies also enjoined to be used in the administration of the sacrament; for the rule of the church wherewith they join is that whereby they are to be judged. Any abatement that may be made of them in practice is on both sides an unwarrantable self-deceiving, inconsistent with Christian ingenuity and sincerity. But hereby they do not only condemn all other present dissenters, but all those also of former days and ages, ministers and others, who suffered under deprivation, imprisonment, and banishment, in their testimony against them.

If they shall say they do not approve what is practised by others, though they join in the same worship and duties of it with them, I say this is contrary to the language of their profession, unto Scripture rule, Rom. xiv. 22, and is indefensible in the sight of God and good men, and unworthy of that plain, open, bold sincerity which the gospel requireth in the professors of it.

4. The posture of kneeling in the receiving of this sacrament is a peculiar act of religious adoration, which hath no divine institution or warranty; and is therefore at best an act of will-worship, not to be complied withal.

It is said that “kneeling is required not as an act of worship or religious adoration, but only as a posture decent and comely, because the sacrament is delivered with a prayer unto every one.” But,—

(1.) That delivery of it with a prayer unto every one is uninstituted, without primitive example, contrary to the practice at the first institution of the ordinance, unsuited unto the nature of the communion required, and a disturbance of it.

(2.) He that prays stands, and he that doth not pray kneels, which must be on another consideration; for,—

(3.) Prayer is not the proper exercise of faith in the instant of receiving of this sacrament, as is evident from the nature and use of it.

(4.) The known original of this rite doth render it not only justly to be suspected, but to be avoided.
On these considerations, which might be enlarged, and many others that might be added, it is evident that the practice inquired into, with respect unto the persons at first intended, is unlawful, and includes in it a renunciation of all the principles of that church-communion wherein they are engaged. And whereas some few have judged it not to be so, they ought to rectify their mistake in their future walking.

TWELVE ARGUMENTS AGAINST ANY CONFORMITY OF MEMBERS OF SEPARATE CHURCHES TO THE NATIONAL CHURCH.

Position.—It is not lawful for us to go to and join in public worship by the Common-prayer, because that worship itself, according to the rule of the gospel, is not lawful.

Some things must be premised to the confirmation of this position; as,—

1. The whole system of liturgical worship, with all its inseparable dependencies, are intended; for as such it is established by law, and not in any part of it only, and as such it is required that we receive it and attend unto it. It is not in our power, it is not left to our judgment or liberty, to close with or make use of any part of it, as we shall think fit.

There are in the Mass-book many prayers and praises directed to God only by Jesus Christ; yet it is not lawful for us thereon to go to mass, under a pretence of joining only in such lawful prayers. As we must not affect their drink-offerings of blood, so we must not take up their names into our lips, Ps. xvi. 4; we must have no communion with them.

2. It is to be considered as armed with laws;—first, such as declare and enjoin it as the only true worship of the church; secondly, such as prohibit, condemn, and punish, all other ways of the worship of God in church-assemblies. By our communion and conjunction in it, we justify those laws.

3. This conjunction by communion in the worship of the liturgy is a symbol, pledge, and token of an ecclesiastical incorporation with the church of England in its present constitution. It is so in the law of the land,¹ it is so in the common understanding of all men. And by these rules must our profession and practice be judged, and

¹ In the canon of the church.
not by any reserves of our own, which neither God nor good men will allow of.

4. Wherefore, he that joineth in the worship of the Common-prayer doth, by his practice, make profession that it is the true worship of God, accepted by him, and approved of him, and wholly agreeable to his mind; and to do it with other reserves is hypocrisy, and worse than the thing itself without them. "Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth," Rom. xiv. 22.

5. There may be a false worship of the true God as well as a worship of a false god: such was the worship of Jehovah the Lord by the calf in the wilderness, Exod. xxxii. 5, 6; such was the feast unto the Lord ordained by Jeroboam "in the eighth month, on the fifteenth day of the month," the which "he devised of his own heart," 1 Kings xii. 32, 33.

On these suppositions, the proposition laid down is proved by these following arguments:—

FIRST ARGUMENT.—Religious worship not divinely instituted and appointed is false worship, not accepted with God; but the liturgical worship intended is a religious worship not divinely instituted nor appointed: ergo, not accepted of God.

The proposition is confirmed by all the divine testimonies wherein all such worship is expressly condemned; that especially where the Lord Christ restraineth all worship to his alone command, Deut. iv. 2, xii. 32; Prov. xxx. 6; Jer. vii. 31; Isa. xxxix. 13; Matt. xxviii. 20.

It is answered to the minor proposition, "That the liturgical worship is of Christ's appointment as to the substantialis of it, namely, prayers and praises, though not as to its accidentals, not as unto its outward rites and forms, which do not vitiate the whole." But it is replied,—

1. There is nothing accidental in the worship of God; every thing that belongs to it is part of it, Matt. xxiii. 23. Some things are of more use, weight, and importance, than others, but all things that duly belong unto it are parts of it, or of its substance. Outward circumstances are natural and occasional, not accidental parts of worship.

2. Prayers and praises, absolutely considered, are not an institution of Christ; they are a part of natural worship, common to all mankind. His institution respecteth only the internal form of them, and the manner of their performance; but this is that which the liturgy taketh on itself,—namely, to supply and determine the matter, to prescribe the manner, and to limit all the concerns of them to modes and forms of its own; which is to take the work of Christ out of his hands!

3. Outward rites and modes of worship divinely instituted and
determined do become thereby necessary parts of divine worship, Lev. i. 1–6; therefore such as are humanly instituted, appointed, and
determined, are thereby made parts of worship,—namely, of that
which is false, for want of a divine institution.

4. Prayer and praise are not things prescribed and enjoined in
and by the liturgy; it is so far from it, that thereby all prayers and
praises in church-assemblies, merely as such, are prohibited;—but
it is its own forms, ways, and modes, with their determination and
limitation alone, that are instituted, prescribed, and enjoined by it;
but these things have no divine institution, and therefore are so far
false worship.

SECOND ARGUMENT.—That which was in its first contrivance,
and hath been in its continuance, an invention or engine to defeat
or render useless the promise of Christ unto his church of sending
the Holy Spirit in all ages, to enable it unto a due discharge and
performance of all divine worship in its assemblies, is unlawful to be
complied withal, nor can be admitted in religious worship; but such
is the liturgical worship: ergo, etc.

That the Lord Jesus Christ did make such a promise, that he
doeth make it good, that the very being and continuance of the church
(without which it is but a dead machine) doth depend thereon, I
suppose will not be denied; it hath been sufficiently proved. Hereon
the church lived and acted for sundry ages, performing all divine
worship in its assemblies by virtue of the gifts and graces of the
Holy Spirit, and no otherwise.

When these things were neglected, when the way of attaining
them and the exercise of them appeared too difficult to men of car-
nal minds, this way of worship by a prescribed liturgy was insen-
sibly brought in, to render the promise of Christ and the whole work
of the Holy Spirit in the administration of gifts useless; and there-
upon two things did follow:—

1. A total neglect of all the gifts of the Holy Spirit in the adminis-
tration of church worship and ordinances.

2. When a plea for the work of the Holy Spirit began to be re-
vived, it produced all that enmity, hatred, and contempt of and
against the Spirit of God himself, and his whole work in the church,
which the world is now filled withal. All the reproaches that are
daily cast upon the Spirit of prayer, all that contempt and scorn
which all duties of religious worship performed by his aid and assist-
ance are entertained withal, arise from hence alone,—namely, from
a justification of this devised way of worship as the only true way
and means thereof. Take away this, and the wrath and anger of
men against the Spirit of God and his work in the worship of the
church will be abated, yea, the necessity of them will be evident.
This we cannot comply with, lest we approve of the original design of it, and partake in the sins which proceed from it.

Third Argument.—That in religious worship which derogates from the kingly office of Jesus Christ, so far as it doth so, is false worship.

Unto this office of Christ it inseparably belongs that he be the sole lawgiver of the church in all the worship of God. The rule of his government herein is, "Teach men to observe and do whatsoever I command." But the worship treated about consistseth wholly in the institutions, commands, prescriptions, orders, and rules of men; and on the authority of men alone do all their impositions on the practice of the church depend. What is this but to renounce the kingly office of Christ in the church?

Fourth Argument.—That which giveth testimony against the faithfulness of Christ in his house as a Son, and Lord of it, above that of any servant, is not to be complied withal; let all his disciples judge.

Unto this faithfulness of Christ it doth belong to appoint and command all things whatever in the church that belong to the worship of God, as is evident from his comparison with Moses herein, and his preference above him. But the institution and prescription of all things in religious worship, of things never instituted or prescribed by Christ, in the forms and modes of them, ariseth from a supposition of a defect in the wisdom, care, and faithfulness of Christ; whence alone a necessity can arise of prescribing that in religious worship which he hath not prescribed.

Fifth Argument.—That which is a means humanly invented for the attaining of an end in divine worship which Christ hath ordained a means for, unto the exclusion of the means so appointed by Christ, is false worship, and not to be complied withal.

The end intended is the edification of the church in the administration of all its holy ordinances. This the Service-book is ordained and appointed by men for, or it hath no end or use at all. But the Lord Christ hath appointed other means for the attaining the end, as is expressly declared, "He hath given gifts unto men, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body," Eph. iv. 8, 12; that is, in all gospel administrations: but the means ordained by Christ,—namely, the exercise of spiritual gifts in gospel administrations, unto the edification of the church,—are excluded, yea, expressly prohibited, in the prescription of this liturgical worship. The pretence of men's liberty to use their gifts in prayer before their sermons, and in preaching, is ridiculed; they are excluded in all the solemn worship of the church.

Sixth Argument.—That which hath been and is obstructive of
the edification of the church, if it be in religious worship, it is false worship, for the end of all true worship is edification; but such hath been and is this liturgical worship: for,—
1. It putteth an utter stop to the progress of the reformation in this nation, fixing bounds to it that it could never pass.
2. It hath kept multitudes in ignorance.
3. It hath countenanced and encouraged many in reviling and reproaching the Holy Spirit and his work.
4. It hath set up and warranted an ungifted ministry.
5. It hath made great desolations in the church:—(1.) In the silencing of faithful and painful ministers; (2.) In the ruin of families innumerable; (3.) In the destruction of souls!

It is not lawful to be participant in these things, yea, the glory of our profession lies in our testimony against them.

Seventh Argument.—That practice whereby we condemn the suffering saints of the present age, rendering them false witnesses for God, and the only blamable cause of their own sufferings, is not to be approved; but such is this practice. And where this is done on a pretence of liberty, without any plea of necessary duty on our part, it is utterly unlawful.

Eighth Argument.—That practice which is accompanied with unavoidable scandal, engaged in only on pretence of liberty, is contrary to the gospel; but such is our joining in the present public worship.

It were endless to reckon up all the scandals which will ensue hereon. That which respecteth our enemies must not be omitted. Will they not think, will they not say, that we have only falsely and hypocritically pretended conscience for what we do, when we can, on outward considerations, comply with that which is required of us? Woe to the world because of such offences!—but woe to them also by whom they are given!

Ninth Argument.—That worship which is unsuited to the spiritual relish of the new creature, which is inconsistent with the conduct of the Spirit of God in prayer, is unlawful; for the nature, use, and benefit of prayer are overthrown hereby in a great measure.

Now, let any one consider what are the promised aids of the Holy Spirit with respect unto the prayers of the church, whether as to the matter of them, or as to the ability for their performance, or as to the manner of it, and he shall find that they are all rejected and excluded by this form of worship, comprising (as is pretended) the whole matter, limiting the whole manner, and giving all the abilities for prayer that are needful or required; and this hath been proved at large.

Tenth Argument.—That which overthrows and dissolves our
church-covenant, as unto the principal end of it, is, as unto us, unlawful.

This end is, the professed joint subjection of our souls and consciences unto the authority of Christ, in the observation of all whatever he commands, and nothing else, in the worship of God. But by this practice this end of the church-covenant is destroyed, and thereby the church-covenant itself is broken, for we do and observe that which Christ hath not commanded; and while some stand unto the terms of the covenant which others relinquish, it will fill the church with confusion and disorder.

Eleventh Argument.—That which contains a virtual renunciation of our church-state, and of the lawfulness of our ministry and ordinances therein, is not to be admitted or allowed.

But this also is done by the practice inquired into, for it is a professed conjunction with them in church communion and worship by whom our church state and ordinances are condemned as null. And this judgment they make of what we do, affirming that we are gross dissemblers if, after such a conjunction with them, we return any more into our own assemblies. In this condemnation we do outwardly and visibly join.

Twelfth Argument.—That which depriveth us of the principal plea for the justification of our separation from the church of England in its present state ought not justly to be received or admitted; but this is certainly done by a supposition of the lawfulness of this worship, and a practice suitable thereunto, as is known to all who are exercised in this case. Many other heads of arguments might be added to the same purpose, if there were occasion.
OF MARRYING AFTER DIVORCE IN CASE OF ADULTERY.

It is confessed by all that adultery is a just and sufficient cause of a divorce betwixt married persons.

This divorce, say some, consists in a dissolution "vinculi matrimonialis," and so removes the marriage relation as that the innocent person divorcing or procuring the divorce is at liberty to marry again.

Others say that it is only a separation "a mensa et thoro," and that on this account it doth not nor ought to dissolve the marriage relation.

I am of the judgment of the former; for,—

First, This divorce "a mensa et thoro" only is no true divorce, but a mere fiction of a divorce, of no use in this case, nor lawful to be made use of, neither by the law of nature nor the law of God; for,—

1. It is, as stated, but a late invention, of no use in the world, nor known in more ancient times: for those of the Roman church who assert it do grant that divorces by the law of nature were "a vinculo," and that so they were also under the old testament; and this fiction they would impose on the grace and state of the gospel, which yet makes indeed no alteration in moral relations and duties, but only directs their performance.

2. It is deduced from a fiction,—namely, that marriage among Christians is a sacrament of that signification as renders it indissoluble; and therefore they would have it to take place only amongst believers, the rest of mankind being left to their natural right and privilege. But this is a fiction, and as such in sundry cases they make use of it.

Secondly, A divorce perpetual "a mensa et thoro" only is no way useful to mankind, but hurtful and noxious; for,—

1. It would constitute a new condition or state of life, wherein it is not possible that a man should either have a wife, or not have a wife lawfully, in one of which estates yet really every man capable of the state of wedlock is and must be, whether he will or no; for a man may, as things may be circumstantiated, be absolutely bound in
conscience not to receive her again who was justly repudiated for adultery, nor can he take another on this divorce. But into this estate God calls no man.

2. It may, and probably will, cast a man under a necessity of sinning: for suppose he hath not the gift of continency, it is the express will of God that he should marry for his relief; yet on this supposition, he sins if he does so, and in that he sins if he doth not so.

Thirdly, It is unlawful; for if the bond of marriage abide, the relation still continues. This relation is the foundation of all mutual duties; and whilst all that continues, none can dispense with or prohibit from the performance of those duties. If a woman do continue in the relation of a wife to a man, she may claim the duties of marriage from him. Separation there may be by consent for a season, or upon other occasions, that may hinder the actual discharge of conjugal duties; but to make an obligation unto such duties void, whilst the relation doth continue, is against the law of nature and the law of God. This divorce, therefore, supposing the relation of man and wife between any, and no mutual duty thence to arise, is unlawful.

Fourthly, The light of nature never directed to this kind of divorce. Marriage is an ordinance of the law of nature; but in the light and reason thereof there is no intimation of any such practice. It still directed that they who might justly put away their wives might marry others. Hence some, as the ancient Grecians, and the Romans afterward, allowed the husband to kill the adulteress. This among the Romans was changed "lege Julia," but the offence [was] still made capital. In the room hereof, afterward, divorce took place purposely to give the innocent person liberty of marriage. So that this kind of divorce is but a fiction.

The first opinion, therefore, is according to truth; for,—

First, That which dissolves the form of marriage and destroys all the forms of marriage doth dissolve the bond of marriage; for take away the form and end of any moral relation, and the relation itself ceaseth. But this is done by adultery, and a divorce ensuing thereon. For the form of marriage consisteth in this, that two become "one flesh," Gen. ii. 24; Matt. xix. 6;—but this is dissolved by adultery; for the adulteress becometh one flesh with the adulterer, 1 Cor. vi. 16, and no longer one flesh in individual society with her husband, and so it absolutely breaks the bond or covenant of marriage. And how can men contend that is a bond which is absolutely broken, or fancy a "vinculum" that doth not bind? and that it absolutely destroys all the forms of marriage will be granted. It therefore dissolves the bond of marriage itself.
Secondly, If the innocent party upon a divorce be not set at liberty, then,—

1. He is deprived of his right by the sin of another; which is against the law of nature;—and so every wicked woman hath it in her power to deprive her husband of his natural right.

2. The divorce in case of adultery, pointed by our Saviour to the innocent person to make use of, is, as all confess, for his liberty, advantage, and relief. But on supposition that he may not marry, it would prove a snare and a yoke unto him; for if hereon he hath not the gift of continency, he is exposed to sin and judgment.

Thirdly, Our blessed Saviour gives express direction in the case, Matt. xix. 9, “Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery.” Hence it is evident, and is the plain sense of the words, that he who putteth away his wife for fornication and marrieth another doth not commit adultery. Therefore the bond of marriage in that case is dissolved, and the person that put away his wife is at liberty to marry. While he denies putting away and marrying again for every cause, the exception of fornication allows both putting away and marrying again in that case; for an exception always affirms the contrary unto what is denied in the rule wherunto it is an exception, or denies what is affirmed in it in the case comprised in the exception; for every exception is a particular proposition contradictory to the general rule, so that when the one is affirmative, the other is negative, and on the contrary. The rule here in general is affirmative: He that putteth away his wife and marries another committeth adultery. The exception is negative: But he that putteth away his wife for fornication and marrieth another doth not commit adultery. Or they may be otherwise conceived, so that the general rule shall be negative, and the exception affirmative: It is not lawful to put away a wife and marry another; it is adultery. Then the exception is: It is lawful for a man to put away his wife for fornication, and marry another. And this is the nature of all such exceptions, as I could manifest in instances of all sorts.

It is to no purpose to except that the other evangelists (Mark x. 11, 12, Luke xvi. 18) do not express the exception insisted on; for,—

1. It is twice used by Matthew, chap. v. 32, and chap. xix. 9, and therefore was assuredly used by our Saviour.

2. It is a rule owned by all, that where the same thing is reported by several evangelists, the briefer, short, more imperfect expressions, are to be measured and interpreted by the fuller and larger. And every general rule in any place is to be limited by an exception annexed unto it in any one place whatever; and there is scarce any general rule but admitteth of an exception.
It is more vain to answer that our Saviour speaketh with respect unto the Jews only, and what was or was not allowed among them; for,—

1. In this answer he reduces things to the law of creation and their primitive institution. He declares what was the law of marriage and the nature of that relation antecedent to the law and institution of Moses; and so, reducing things to the law of nature, gives a rule directive to all mankind in this matter.

2. The Pharisees inquired of our Saviour about such a divorce as was absolute, and gave liberty of marriage after it; for they never heard of any other. The pretended separation "a mensa et thoro" only was never heard of in the old testament. Now, if our Saviour doth not answer concerning the same divorce about which they inquired, but another which they knew nothing of, he doth not answer them, but delude them;—they ask after one thing, and he answers another in nothing to their purpose. But this is not to be admitted; it were blasphemy to imagine it. Wherefore, denying the causes of divorce which they allowed, and asserting fornication to be a just cause thereof, he allows, in that case, of that divorce which they inquired about, which was absolute and from the bond of marriage.

Again: the apostle Paul expressly sets the party at liberty to marry who is maliciously and obstinately deserted, affirming that the Christian religion doth not prejudice the natural right and privilege of men in such cases: 1 Cor. vii. 15, "If the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases." If a person obstinately depart, on pretence of religion or otherwise, and will no more cohabit with a husband or wife, it is known that, by the law of nature and the usage of all nations, the deserted party, because, without his or her default, all the ends of marriage are frustrated, is at liberty to marry. But it may be it is not so among Christians. What shall a brother or a sister that is a Christian do in this case, who is so departed from? Saith the apostle, "They are not in bondage, they are free,—at liberty to marry again."

This is the constant doctrine of all protestant churches in the world; and it hath had place in the government of these nations, for Queen Elizabeth was born during the life of Queen Katharine, from whom her father was divorced.
OF INFANT BAPTISM AND DIPPING.

OF INFANT BAPTISM.

I. The question is not whether professing believers, Jews or Gentiles, not baptized in their infancy, ought to be baptized; for this is by all confessed.

II. Neither is it whether, in such persons, the profession of saving faith and repentance ought not to go before baptism. This we plead for beyond what is the common practice of those who oppose us.

Wherefore, testimonies produced out of authors, ancient or modern, to confirm these things, which consist with the doctrine of infant baptism, are mere tergiversations, that belong not to this cause at all; and so are all arguments produced unto that end out of the Scriptures.

III. The question is not whether all infants are to be baptized or not; for, according to the will of God, some are not to be baptized, even such whose parents are strangers from the covenant. But hence it will follow that some are to be baptized, seeing an exception confirms both rule and right.

IV. The question is only concerning the children or infant seed of professing believers who are themselves baptized. And,—

First, They by whom this is denied can produce no testimony of Scripture wherein their negation is formally or in terms included, nor any one asserting what is inconsistent with the affirmative; for it is weak beneath consideration to suppose that the requiring of the baptism of believers is inconsistent with that of their seed. But this is to be required of them who oppose infant baptism, that they produce such a testimony.

Secondly, No instance can be given from the Old or New Testament since the days of Abraham, none from the approved practice of the primitive church, of any person or persons born of professing believing parents, who were themselves made partakers of the initial seal of the covenant, being then in infancy and designed to be brought up in the knowledge of God, who were not made partakers with them of the same sign and seal of the covenant.

Thirdly, A spiritual privilege once granted by God unto any cannot be changed, disannulled, or abrogated, without an especial divine
revocation of it, or the substitution of a greater privilege and mercy in the room of it; for,—

1. Who shall disannul what God hath granted? What he hath put together who shall put asunder? To abolish or take away any grant of privilege made by him to the church, without his own express revocation of it, is to deny his sovereign authority.

2. To say a privilege so granted may be revoked, even by God himself, without the substitution of a greater privilege and mercy in the room of it, is contrary to the goodness of God, his love and care unto his church, [and] contrary to his constant course of proceeding with it from the foundation of the world, wherein he went on in the enlargement and increase of its privileges until the coming of Christ. And to suppose it under the gospel is contrary to all his promises, the honour of Christ, and a multitude of express testimonies of Scripture.

Thus was it with the privileges of the temple and the worship of it granted to the Jews; they were not, they could not be, taken away without an express revocation, and the substitution of a more glorious spiritual temple and worship in their room.

But now the spiritual privilege of a right unto and a participation of the initial seal of the covenant was granted by God unto the infant seed of Abraham, Gen. xvii. 10, 12.

This grant, therefore, must stand firm for ever, unless men can prove or produce,—

1. An express revocation of it by God himself; which none can do either directly or indirectly, in terms or any pretence of consequence.

2. An instance of a greater privilege or mercy granted unto them in the room of it; which they do not once pretend unto, but leave the seed of believers, whilst in their infant state, in the same condition with those of pagans and infidels; expressly contrary to God's covenant.

All this contest, therefore, is to deprive the children of believers of a privilege once granted to them by God, never revoked, as to the substance of it, assigning nothing in its room; which is contrary to the goodness, love, and covenant of God, especially derogatory to the honour of Jesus Christ and the gospel.

Fourthly, They that have the thing signified have right unto the sign of it, or those who are partakers of the grace of baptism have a right to the administration of it: so Acts x. 47.

But the children of believers are all of them capable of the grace signified in baptism, and some of them are certainly partakers of it, namely, such as die in their infancy (which is all that can be said of professors): therefore they may and ought to be baptized. For,—
1. Infants are made for and are capable of eternal glory or misery, and must fall, dying infants, into one of these estates for ever.

2. All infants are born in a state of sin, wherein they are spiritually dead and under the curse.

3. Unless they are regenerated or born again, they must all perish inevitably, John iii. 3. Their regeneration is the grace whereof baptism is a sign or token. Wherever this is, there baptism ought to be administered.

Fifthly, God having appointed baptism as the sign and seal of regeneration, unto whom he denies it, he denies the grace signified by it. Why is it the will of God that unbelievers and impenitent sinners should not be baptized? It is because, not granting them the grace, he will not grant them the sign. If, therefore, God denies the sign unto the infant seed of believers, it must be because he denies them the grace of it; and then all the children of believing parents dying in their infancy must, without hope, be eternally damned. I do not say that all must be so who are not baptized, but all must be so whom God would have not baptized.

But this is contrary to the goodness and law [love?] of God, the nature and promises of the covenant, the testimony of Christ reckoning them to the kingdom of God, the faith of godly parents, and the belief of the church in all ages.

It follows hence unavoidably that infants who die in their infancy have the grace of regeneration, and consequently as good a right unto baptism as believers themselves.

Sixthly, All children in their infancy are reckoned unto the covenant of their parents, by virtue of the law of their creation.

For they are all made capable of eternal rewards and punishments, as hath been declared.

But in their own persons they are not capable of doing good or evil.

It is therefore contrary to the justice of God, and the law of the creation of human kind, wherein many die before they can discern between their right hand and their left, to deal with infants any otherwise but in and according to the covenant of their parents; and that he doth so, see Rom. v. 14.

Hence I argue,—

Those who, by God’s appointment, and by virtue of the law of their creation, are, and must of necessity be, included in the covenant of their parents, have the same right with them unto the privileges of that covenant, no express exception being put in against them. This right it is in the power of none to deprive them of, unless they can change the law of their creation.

Thus it is with the children of believers with respect unto the
covenant of their parents, whence alone they are said to be holy, 1 Cor. vii. 14.

Seventhly, Christ is "the messenger of the covenant," Mal. iii. 1, —that is, of the covenant of God made with Abraham; and he was the "minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers," Rom. xv. 8. This covenant was, that he would be "a God unto Abraham and to his seed."

Now if this be not so under the new testament, then was not Christ a faithful messenger, nor did confirm the truth of God in his promises.

This argument alone will bear the weight of the whole cause against all objections; for,—

1. Children are still in the same covenant with their parents, or the truth of the promises of God to the fathers was not confirmed by Christ.

2. The right unto the covenant, and interest in its promises, wherever it be, gives right unto the administration of its initial seal, that is, to baptism, as Peter expressly declares, Acts ii. 38, 39. Wherefore,—

The right of the infant seed of believers unto baptism, as the initial seal of the covenant, stands on the foundation of the faithfulness of Christ as the messenger of the covenant, and minister of God for the confirmation of the truth of his promises.

In brief, a participation of the seal of the covenant is a spiritual blessing. This the seed of believers was once solemnly invested in by God himself. This privilege he hath nowhere revoked, though he hath changed the outward sign; nor hath he granted unto our children any privilege or mercy in lieu of it now under the gospel, when all grace and privileges are enlarged to the utmost. His covenant promises concerning them, which are multiplied, were confirmed by Christ as a true messenger and minister; he gives the grace of baptism unto many of them, especially those that die in their infancy, owns children to belong unto his kingdom, esteems them disciples, appoints households to be baptized without exception. And who shall now rise up, and withhold water from them?

This argument may be thus further cleared and improved:—

Christ is "the messenger of the covenant," Mal. iii. 1,—that is, the covenant of God with Abraham, Gen. xvii. 7; for,—

1. That covenant was with and unto Christ mystical, Gal. iii. 16; and he was the messenger of no covenant but that which was made with himself and his members.

2. He was sent, or was God's messenger, to perform and accomplish the covenant and oath made with Abraham, Luke i. 72, 73.

3. The end of his message and of his coming was, that those to whom he was sent might be "blessed with faithful Abraham," or that
"the blessing of Abraham," promised in the covenant, "might come upon them," Gal. iii. 9, 14.

To deny this, overthrows the whole relation between the old testament and the new, the veracity of God in his promises, and all the properties of the covenant of grace, mentioned 2 Sam. xxiii. 5.

It was not the covenant of works, neither originally nor essentially, nor the covenant in its legal administration; for he confirmed and sealed that covenant whereof he was the messenger, but these he abolished.

Let it be named what covenant he was the messenger of, if not of this. Occasional additions of temporal promises do not in the least alter the nature of the covenant.

Herein he was the "minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers," Rom. xv. 8; that is, undeniably, the covenant made with Abraham, enlarged and explained by following promises. This covenant was, that God would be "a God unto Abraham and to his seed;" which God himself explains to be his infant seed, Gen. xvii. 12,—that is, the infant seed of every one of his posterity who should lay hold on and avouch that covenant as Abraham did, and not else. This the whole church did solemnly for themselves and their posterity; whereon the covenant was confirmed and sealed to them all, Exod. xxiv. 7, 8. And every one was bound to do the same in his own person; which if he did not, he was to be cut off from the congregation, whereby he forfeited all privileges unto himself and his seed.

The covenant, therefore, was not granted in its administrations unto the carnal seed of Abraham as such, but unto his covenanted seed, those who entered into it and professedly stood to its terms.

And the promises made unto the fathers were, that their infant seed, their buds and offspring, should have an equal share in the covenant with them, Isa. xxii. 24, xliv. 3, lxi. 9. "They are the seed of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them," chap. lxv. 23. Not only themselves, who are the believing, professing seed of those who were blessed of the Lord, by a participation of the covenant, Gal. iii. 9, but their offspring also, their buds, their tender little ones, are in the same covenant with them.

To deny, therefore, that the children of believing, professing parents, who have avouched God's covenant, as the church of Israel did, Exod. xxiv. 7, 8, have the same right and interest with their parents in the covenant, is plainly to deny the fidelity of Christ in the discharge of his office.

It may be it will be said, that although children have a right to the covenant, or do belong unto it, yet they have no right to the initial seal of it. This will not suffice; for,—
1. If they have any interest in it, it is either in its grace or in its administration. If they have the former, they have the latter also, as shall be proved at any time. If they have neither, they have no interest in it;—then the truth of the promises of God made unto the fathers was not confirmed by Christ.

2. That unto whom the covenant or promise doth belong, to them belongs the administration of the initial seal of it, is expressly declared by the apostle, Acts ii. 38, 39, be they who they will.

3. The truth of God’s promises is not confirmed if the sign and seal of them be denied; for that whereon they believed that God was a God unto their seed as well as unto themselves was this, that he granted the token of the covenant unto their seed as well as unto themselves. If this be taken away by Christ, their faith is overthrown, and the promise itself is not confirmed but weakened, as to the virtue it hath to beget faith and obedience.

Eighthly, Particular testimonies may be pleaded and vindicated, if need be, and the practice of the primitive church.¹

---

A VINDICATION OF TWO PASSAGES IN IRENÆUS AGAINST THE EXCEPTIONS OF MR TOMBS.

The passages are these:—

Adversus Hæreses, lib. ii. cap. xxii. sect. 4: “Magister ergo existens, magistri quoque habebat ætatem, non reprobans nec supergrediens hominem, neque solvens suam legem in se humani generis, sed omnem ætatem sanctificans per illum quæ ad ipsum erat similitudinem. Omnes enim venit per semetipsum salvare, omnes, inquam, qui per eum reascentur in Deum, infantes, et parvulos, et pueros, et juvenes, et seniores. Ideo per omnem venit ætatem; et infantibus infans factus, sanctificans infantes; in parvulis, parvulus, sanctificans hanc ipsam habentes ætatem, simul et exemplum illis pietatis effectus, et justitiae et subjectionis; in juvenibus juvenis, exemplum juvenibus fiens, et sanctificans Domino; sic et senior in senioribus, ut sit perfectus magister in omnibus, non solum secundum expositionem veritatis, sed et secundum ætatem sanctificans simul et seniores, exemplum ipsis quoque fiens; deinde et usque ad mortem pervenit, ut sit primogenitus ex mortuis, ipse primatum tenens in omnibus, princeps vitæ, prior omnium, et præcedens omnes.”

Lib. i. cap. xviii. : “Ὅσοι γὰρ εἴσι ταύτης τῆς γνώμης μυσταγωγοί, τοσαῦται καὶ ἀσολυτρῶσεις. "Ὅτι μὲν εἶς ἐξάρμην τοῦ βαστίσματος τῆς εἰς θεὸν

¹ See also Dr Owen on the Hebrews, vol. i. Exercitation the sixth, and vol. ii. p. 256; in which place he gives further light into this truth of infant baptism. [This note is appended by the editors of the folio edition of Owen’s Sermons and Tracts, published in 1721. The second passage referred to occurs in the exposition of chap. iv. ver. 9.—Ed.]
OF INFANT BAPTISM.

Mr Tombs tells us, "This not infant baptism, because though it be granted that in Justin Martyr, and others of the ancients, to be regenerated is to be baptized, yet it doth not appear that Irenæus meant it so in this place, unless it were proved it is so only meant by him and the ancients. Nor doth Irenæus, lib. i. cap. xviii., term baptism 'regeneration;' but saith thus, 'To the denying of baptism of that regeneration which is unto God.' But that indeed the word 'renasceunt,' 'are born again,' is not meant of baptism is proved from the words and the scope of them; for,—

"1. The words are, 'Per eum renasceunt,' 'By him,' that is, Christ, 'are born again.' And it is clear, from the scope of the speech about the fulness of his age, as a perfect master, that 'By him' notes his person according to his human nature. Now, if then, 'By him are born again,' be as much as 'By him are baptized,' this should be Irenæus' assertion, that by Christ himself, in his human body, infants, and little ones, and boys, and young men, and elder men, are baptized unto God. But this speech is most manifestly false; for neither did Christ baptize any at all in his own person, (John iv. 1, 2, 'Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,') nor did the disciples baptize any infant at all, as may be gathered from the whole New Testament.

"2. The word which Irenæus expresseth whereby persons are born again to God by Christ is applied to the example of his age, as the words and scope show. But he was not in his age an example of every age by his baptism, as if he did by it sanctify every age, for then he should have been baptized in every age; but in respect of the holiness of his human nature, which did remain in each age, and so exemplarily sanctify each age to God, so as that there was no age but was capable of holiness by conformity to his example.

"3. Irenæus' words are, 'Omnes enim venit per semetipsum salvare, omnes, inquam, qui per eum renasceuntur in Deum, infantes, et parvulos,' etc. Now, if the meaning were; that Christ came to save all that were baptized by him or by his appointment, then he came to save Simon Magus, or whoever are or have been baptized rightly. But in that sense the proposition is most palpably false; and therefore that sense is not to be attributed to his words.

"4. Christ is by Irenæus said to sanctify as 'a perfect master,—not only according to the exposition of truth, but also as an example to them of piety, justice, and subjection.' But this is to be understood not in respect of his baptism only, but his whole life, in which he was an example; even as an infant, for then he did willingly empty himself,—'Took upon him the form of a servant,' etc., Phil. ii. 7, 8.
"By all which reasons," saith Mr Tombs, "I presume the readers who are willing to see truth will perceive this passage of Irenæus to be wrested by Pedobaptists against its meaning, to prove a use of pedobaptism in his time."

Ans. 1. The phrase of "Renascuntur in Deum" is so constantly used by the ancients for baptism that it may be referred to the conscience of Mr Tombs or any one who hath been conversant in their writings, whether they would not have judged and granted that it was here intended, if mention had not been made of infants and little ones. The ensuing exceptions, therefore, are an endeavour to stifle light in favour of an opinion;—which is not unusual with some.

2. "Per eum" is the same with "Per semetipsum," in the words immediately foregoing; that is, "By himself," in his mediation, grace, and ordinances. And to suppose that if baptism be intended, he must baptize them in his own person, is a mere cavil; for all that are born to God by baptism to this day are so by him.

3. The words, Ἐις ἐξάρμενην τοῦ ἐκτίτισματος τῆς εἰς θεὸν ἀναγεννήσεως, "Unto the denial of the baptism of regeneration unto God," do plainly declare that by "renascuntur" he intends the baptism of regeneration, as being the means and pledge of it, in allusion to that of the apostle, Γενέσεως τοῦ παληγενεσίας, Tit. iii. 5.

4. It is remarkable in the words of Irenæus, that in expressing the way and means of the renascency of infants, he mentions nothing of the example of Christ, which he adds unto that of all other ages.

5. The example of Christ is mentioned as one outward means of the regeneration of them who were capable of its use and improvement. Of his being an example of baptism nothing is spoken. Nor was Christ in his own person an example of regeneration unto any; for as he was not baptized in all ages, so he was never regenerated in any, for he needed no regeneration.

6. It is well that it is so positively granted that Christ doth sanctify infants; which, seeing he doth not do so to all universally, must be those of believing parents; which is enough to end this controversy.

7. The meaning of Irenæus is no more but that Christ, passing through all ages, evidenced his design to exclude no age, to communicate his grace unto all sorts and ages; and he mentioneth old men, because his judgment was that Christ was fifty years old when he died.

8. It was the constant opinion of the ancients that Christ came to save all that were baptized; not intending his purpose and intention with respect unto individuals, but his approbation of the state of baptism, and his grant of the means of grace.
OF DIPPING.

Βάπτω, used in these scriptures, Luke xvi. 24, John xiii. 26, Rev. xix. 13, we translate "to dip." It is only "to touch one part of the body." That of Rev. xix. 13 is better rendered, "stained by sprinkling."

In other authors it is "tingo, immergo, lavo," or "abluo;" but in no other author ever signifies "to dip," but only in order to washing, or as the means of washing. It is nowhere used with respect unto the ordinance of baptism.

The Hebrew word, בָּדַּם, is rendered by the LXX., Gen. xxxvii. 31, by μολῶν, "to stain by sprinkling" or otherwise; mostly by βαπτῶ. 2 Kings v. 14 they render it by βαπτίζω, and nowhere else. In verse 10, Elisha commands Naaman "to wash," therefore that in verse 14 is that "he washed." Exod. xii. 22 is, to put the top of the hyssop into blood, to sprinkle it; 1 Sam. xiv. 27, is to take a little honey with the top of a rod. In neither place can dipping or plunging be intended. Lev. iv. 6, 17, ix. 9, and in other places, it is only to touch the blood, so as to sprinkle it.

Βαπτίζω signifies "to wash," and instances out of all authors may be given,—Suidas, Hesychius, Julius Pollux, Phavorinus, and Eustathius.

It is first used in the Scripture, Mark i. 8, John i. 33, and to the same purpose, Acts i. 5. In every place it either signifies "to pour," or the expression is equivocal. "I baptize you with water, but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost;" which is the accomplishment of that promise, that the Holy Ghost should be poured on them.

For the other places, Mark vii. 3, 4, νίπτω and βαπτίζω are plainly the same, both "to wash." Luke xi. 38 is the same with Mark vii. 3. No one instance can be given in the Scripture wherein βαπτίζω doth necessarily signify either "to dip" or "plunge."

Βαπτίζω may be considered either as to its original, natural sense, or as to its mystical use in the ordinance.

This distinction must be observed concerning many other words in the New Testament, as ἐκκλησία, κείμενον, and others, which have a peculiar sense in their mystical use.

In this sense, as it expresseth baptism, it denotes "to wash" only, and not "to dip" at all: for so it is expounded, Tit. iii. 5; Eph. v. 26; Heb. x. 22; 1 Pet. iii. 21. And it signifies that communication of the Spirit which is expressed by "pouring out" and "sprinkling," Ezek. xxxvi. 25, and expresseth our being washed in the blood of Christ, Tit. ii. 14; Heb. ix. 14, 19, 23.

Wherefore, in this sense, as the word is applied unto the ordi-
nance, the sense of dipping is utterly excluded. And though as a mere external mode it may be used, provided the person dipped be naked, yet to urge it as necessary overthrows the nature of the sacrament.

For the original and natural signification of it, it signifies "to dip, to plunge, to dye, to wash, to cleanse."

But I say,—1. It doth not signify properly "to dip" or "plunge," for that in Greek is *ιπτω* and *ιπτιζω*. 2. It nowhere signifies "to dip," but as a mode of and in order to washing. 3. It signifies the "dipping" of a finger, or the least touch of the water, and not plunging the whole. 4. It signifies "to wash," also, in all good authors.

I have not all those quoted to the contrary. In the quotations of them whom I have, if it be intended that they say it signifies "to dip," and not "to wash" or "to dip" only, there is neither truth nor honesty in them by whom they are quoted.

Scapula is one, a common book, and he gives it the sense of "lavo, abluo," "to wash," and "wash away."

Stephanus is another, and he expressly, in sundry places, assigns "lavo" and "abluo" to be also the sense of it.

Aquinas is for dipping of children, provided it be done three times, in honour of the Trinity; but he maintains pouring or sprinkling to be lawful also, affirming that Laurentius, who lived about the time 250, so practised. But he meddles not with the sense of the word, as being too wise to speak of that which he understood not; for he knew no Greek.

In Suidas, the great treasury of the Greek tongue, it is rendered by "madefacio, lavo, abluo, purgo, mundo."

The places in the other authors being not quoted, I cannot give an account of what they say. I have searched some of them in every place wherein they mention baptism, and find no one word to the purpose. I must say, and will make it good, that no honest man who understands the Greek tongue can deny the word to signify "to wash," as well as "to dip."

It must not be denied but that in the primitive times they did use to baptize both grown persons and children oftentimes by dipping, but they affirmed it necessary to dip them stark naked, and that three times; but not one ever denied pouring water to be lawful.

The apostle, Rom. vi. 3–5, is dehorting from sin, exhorting to holiness and new obedience, and gives this argument from the necessity of it and our ability for it,—both taken from our initiation into the virtue of the death and life of Christ, expressed in our baptism,—that by virtue of the death and burial of Christ we should be dead unto sin, sin being slain thereby, and by virtue of the resurrec-
of Christ we should be quickened unto newness of life; as Peter declares, 1 Pet. iii. 21. Our being "buried with him," and our being "planted together in the likeness of his death" and "in the likeness of his resurrection," Rom. vi. 4, 5, is the same with "our old man being crucified with him," and the "destroying of the body of sin," verse 6, and our being raised from the dead with him; which is all that is intended in the place.

There is not one word nor one expression that mentions any resemblance between dipping under water and the death and burial of Christ, nor one word that mentions a resemblance between our rising out of the water and the resurrection of Christ. Our being "buried with him by baptism into death," verse 4, is our being "planted together in the likeness of his death," verse 5. Our being "planted together in the likeness of his death" is not our being dipped under water, but "the crucifying of the old man," verse 6. Our being "raised up with Christ from the dead" is not our rising from under the water, but our "walking in newness of life," verse 4, by virtue of the resurrection of Christ, 1 Pet. iii. 21.

That baptism is not a sign of the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ, is clear from hence, because an instituted sign is a sign of gospel grace participated, or to be participated. If dipping be a sign of the burial of Christ, it is not a sign of a gospel grace participated; for it may be where there is none, nor any exhibited.

For the major: If all gospel ordinances are signs and expressions of the communication of the grace of Christ, then baptism is so; but this is the end of all gospel ordinances, or else they have some other end, or are vain and empty shows.

The same individual sign cannot be instituted to signify things of several natures; but the outward burial of Christ, and a participation of the virtue of Christ's death and burial, are things of a diverse nature, and therefore are not signified by one sign.

That interpretation which would enervate the apostle's argument and design, our comfort and duty, is not to be admitted; but this interpretation, that baptism is mentioned here as the sign of Christ's burial, would enervate the apostle's argument and design, our comfort and duty: and therefore it is not to be admitted.

The minor is thus proved: The argument and design of the apostle, as was before declared, is to exhort and encourage unto mortification of sin and new obedience, by virtue of power received from the death and life of Christ, whereof a pledge is given us in our baptism. But this is taken away by this interpretation; for we may be so buried with Christ and planted into the death of Christ by dipping, and yet have no power derived from Christ for the crucifying of sin and for the quickening of us to obedience.
REFLECTIONS

ON

A SLANDEROUS LIBEL AGAINST DR OWEN;

IN

A LETTER TO SIR THOMAS OVERBURY.
PREFATORY NOTE.

In vol. xv., p. 446, a reference will be found to a pamphlet entitled "A Letter to a Friend concerning some of Dr Owen’s Principles and Practices." It was written against Dr Owen’s “Short Catechism,” by the Rev. George Vernon, a rector in Gloucestershire, who had received his education at Oxford University while Owen presided over it. It was full of calumnious charges of blasphemy and perjury. Our author, under the form of a Letter to Sir Thomas Overbury, replies to it in vehement terms,—terms perhaps more vehement than the absurdity of the charges at all required. In those days of slow communication, however, railing accusations, especially coming from one in the position of a rector, were fitted to work considerable mischief; and there was such a lack of all the decencies of controversy in Vernon’s lucubrations that he deserved a sharp reprimand. In the hands of Owen, he was but a fly broken on the wheel.

While he was vice-chancellor of Oxford, a story was raised against Owen, that he had spoken contemptuously of the Lord’s Prayer, and that he had put on his hat when it was on some occasion repeated at the close of the services in Christ Church. The slander was widely propagated, and Owen published a denial of the story, in English and French, in 1655. Meric Casaubon, nevertheless, published in 1660 a work in defence of the Lord’s Prayer, and against their “ungrounded zeal who are so strict for the observation of the Lord’s Day and make so light of the Lord’s Prayer.” Vernon, too, revived the slander, and Owen again gives it an emphatic contradiction in the following Letter; and yet Anthony Wood persists in it!—En.
REFLECTIONS ON A SLANDEROUS LIBEL.

Sir,

It is upon your desire, and not in any compliance with my own judgment or inclination, that I have taken a little consideration of a late slanderous libel published against me. I have learned, I bless God, to bear and pass by such reproaches without much trouble to myself or giving the least unto others. My mind and conscience are not at all concerned in them; and so far as my reputation seems to be so, I am very willing to let it go, for I cannot entertain a valuation of their good opinion whose minds are capable of an impression from such virulent calumnies. Besides, I know that there is nothing absolutely new in these things under the sun. Others also have met with the like entertainment in the world in all ages; whose names I shall not mention, to avoid the envy in comparing myself with them. I acknowledge that it is a dictate of the law of nature, that where others do us open wrong, we should do ourselves right so far as we lawfully may; but I know also that it is in the power of every one to forego the prosecution of his own right and the vindication of himself, if thereby there arise no detriment unto others. That which alone in this case may be feared is, lest offence should be taken against my person to the disadvantage of other endeavours wherein I desire to be useful in the world.

But against this also I have the highest security, from that indignation and contempt wherewith this libel is entertained by all persons of ingenuity and sobriety. Not out of any respect, therefore, to myself or my own name (things of little or no consideration in or to the world), nor out of a desire that this paper should ever pass farther than to your own hand and thence to the fire, but to give you some account of this pamphlet, whose author it seems is known unto you, I have both perused it and made some short reflections upon it, which I have herewith sent unto you.

The whole design of this discourse is, "per fas et nefas," to endeavour the defamation of a person who, to his knowledge, never saw the author of it, and is fully assured never gave him the least provocation unto any such attempt; for when I am told who he is, I am as wise and knowing unto all his concerns and as I was before.
And yet it is not only my reputation, but, considering my present state and condition, with the nature of his libellous aspersions, my further outward trouble in the world, that he aimeth at; from which he seemeth to be much displeased that I am secured by the righteousness of the government and laws under which I live. Now, however he pleased himself in this attempt, yet there is no man but may give as tolerable an account, by the law of God, the customs of civilized nations, and in the estimation of wise and honest men, of robbing persons on the highway and spoiling them of their goods, as he can do of this undertaking. It is true, some others have of late dealt not much otherwise with me; wherein how far they have satisfied themselves and others time will discover. But yet, according to the present custom and manner of men, they may give some tolerable pretence to what they have done; for they sufficiently declare that they were provoked by me,—though no such thing was intended,—and it is abundantly manifest that they had no other way left them to give countenance unto some fond imaginations, which they have unadvisedly published, but by petulant reviling of him by whom they thought they were detected. And such things have not been unfrequent in the world. But as for this author, one wholly unknown to me, without the compass of any pretence of the least provocation from me, to accommodate the lusts and revenges of others with that unruly evil, a mercenary tongue, full of deadly poison, without the management of any difference, real or pretended, merely to calumniate and load me with false aspersions (as in the issue they will prove), is an instance of such a depraved disposition of mind, such a worthless baseness of soul, such a neglect of all rules of morality and principles of human conversation, such a contempt of Scripture precepts innumerable, as, it may be, can scarcely be paralleled in an age amongst the vilest of men. Something, I confess, of this nature is directed unto in the casuistical divinity or modern policy of the Jesuits: for they have declared it lawful to reproach and calumniate any one who hath done them an injury, or otherwise reflected on the honour of their society; and notable instances of their management of this principle are given us by the ingenious discoverer of their mysteries. But they always require a previous injury or provocation to justify themselves in this filthy kind of revenge. And hereby is our author freed from the suspicion of having been influenced by their suggestions; for he hath gone in a way whereon they never attempted to set a foot before him, and, scorning a villainy that hath a precedent, he seems to design himself an example in the art of sycophantry. However, the same author hath directed men unto the best way of returning an answer unto false and calumnious accusations, whatever be their occasion; for he tells us that Valerianus
Magnus, an honest Capuchin friar, being so dealt withal by a Jesuit, made not any defence of his own innocency any further than by ad-
joining unto all the instances of his charge, "Mentiris impudentissi-
me"! And this you will immediately find to be the substance of that answer which this book deserves; for, setting aside things re-
lating to the former public troubles and disorders in these nations from the venom of all reflections,—from which I am secured by the government, law, and interest of the kingdom, all which in this re-
vival of them are notoriously abused and trampled on,—and there is no one thing charged on me in the whole libel but that, either in the matter or manner of its relation, is notoriously false. The task, I acknowledge, of making this discovery would be grievous and irk-
some unto me, but that I must not account any thing so which may fall out amongst men in the world, and do remember him who, after he had done some public services, whereof others had the advantage, was forced to defend his own house against thieves and robbers.

The whole discourse is a railing accusation, such as the angel durst not bring against the devil, but such as hath many characters and lineaments upon it of him who was a false accuser and murderer from the beginning; neither is it capable of a distribution into any other parts but those of railing and false accusations. And for the first, seeing he hath manifested his propensity unto it and delight in it, he shall by me be left to the possession of that honour and reputa-
tion which he hath acquired thereby. Besides, his way of mana-
gery hath rendered it of no consideration: for had it been condited to the present gust of the age, by language, wit, or drollery, it might have found some entertainment in the world; but downright dirty railing is beneath the genius of the times, and by common consent condemned to the bear-garden and Billingsgate. His charges and accusations,—wherein, doubtless, he placed his principal hopes of success, though I much question whether he knew what he aimed at in particular or no,—may in so many instances be called over as to discover unto you with what little regard to Christianity, truth, or honesty, they have been forged and managed by him.

I shall begin with what he calls my practices, and then proceed to the principles he mentions; which is the best order his confused rhapsody of slanders can be reduced unto, though inverting that which he projected in his title.

I. One of the first charges I meet withal, upon the first head, is page 9, that I " was one of them who promised Cromwell his life upon his last sickness, and assured him that his days should be pro-
longed." This, I confess, he manageth somewhat faintly and dubi-
ously; the reason whereof I cannot guess at, it being as true as those other tales in the report whereof he pretends to more confidence.
And I have no answer to return but that of the friar before mentioned,—"Mentitur impudentissime;" for I saw him not in his sickness, nor in some long time before. Of the same nature is what he affirms, p. 28, of my being the instrument in "the ruin of his son" Richard; with whose setting up and pulling down I had no more to do than himself. And such are the reasons which he gives for that which never was; for the things he instanceth in were my own choice, against all importunities to the contrary! so that the same answer must be returned again,—"Mentitur impudentissime." Page 10, he charges me that, in writing against the Papists, I reflected upon the authority of the king, as to his power in matters of religion; which he repeats again, p. 34, and calls it "A covert undermining of the just authority of the king." Still the same answer is all that can be given. His majesty's supremacy, as declared and established by law, is asserted and proved in the book he intends, p. 404-406 [vol. xiv. p. 378-392]; nor is there any word in the places quoted by him in his margin that will give the least countenance to this false calumny. Besides, the book was approved by authority, and that by persons of another manner of judgment and learning than this pitiful scribbler, who are all here defamed by him. Page 12, he chargeth me with countenancing an accusation against the reverend Bishop of Chester, then warden of Wadham College; which is a known lie,—and such I believe the bishop, if he be asked, will attest it to be. And so, p. 14, he says, I received a commission from Oliver to carry "gladium ferri;" but "mentitur impudentissime," for I never received commission from any man or company of men in this world, nor to my remembrance did I ever wear a sword in my life. His whole 34th page, had there been any thing of wit or ingenuity in fiction in it, I should have suspected to have been borrowed from Lucian's "Vera Historia," concerning which he affirmed that he wrote that which he had never seen, nor heard, nor did any one declare unto him; for it is only a confused heap of malicious lies, which all that read and know laugh at with scorn. Such likewise is the ridiculous story he tells, p. 66, of my ordering things so that members of parliament should have a book, which he calls mine, laid in theirlodgings by unknown hands; whereof there is not any thing, in substance or circumstance, that can lay the least pretence to truth, but it is an entire part of his industrious attempt to carry the whetstone.† The same must be said concerning what he reports of passages between me and the then lord chancellor; which as I have good witness to prove the mistake that fell out between us not to have been occasioned by me, so I much question whether this author was informed of the untruths he reports by Doctor Barlow,  

† "Whetstone," an ancient reward for the person who told the greatest lie.—Ed.
or whether ever he gave him his consent to use his name publicly for a countenance unto such a defamatory libel. It were endless and useless to cull out the remaining instances of the same kind, whereof I think there is scarce a page free in his book, unless it be taken up with quotations; and I am sure that whosoever will give the least credit unto any of his stories and assertions will do it at the utmost peril of being deceived. And where any thing he aims at hath the least of truth in it, he doth but make it a foundation to build a falsehood upon. Such are his ingenious repetitions of some things I should say fourteen or fifteen years ago in private discourses; which yet, supposing them true, in the terms by him reported, as they are not, contain nothing of immorality, nothing of injury unto or reflection on others. Surely this man must be thought to study the adorning and freedom of conversation, who thus openly traduceth a person for words occasionally and it may be hastily spoken, without the least injury to any or evil in themselves, fourteen or fifteen years after! And these also are such as he hath taken upon mere reports; for I believe he will not say that ever he spake one word with me himself in his life. How any one can safely converse with a man of this spirit and humour I know not.

I shall wholly pass by his malicious wrestling and false applications of the passages he hath quoted out of some things published by me: for as for the greatest part of those small perishing treatises, whence he and others have extracted their pretended advantages, it is many years since I saw them,—some of them twenty at the least; nor do I know how they have dealt in repeating their "excerta," which with so much diligence they have collected; that they are several times wrested and perverted by this malicious scribbler unto things never intended by me, that I do know. One discourse, about Communion with God, I find there is much wrath stirred up against; and yet, upon the severe scrutiny which it hath in several hands undergone, nothing can be found to lay to its charge but one passage concerning some differences about external worship, which they needed not to have put themselves to so much trouble to have found out and declared. But as for this man, he makes such inferences from it and applications of it as are full of malice and poison,—being not inferior in these good qualifications unto any of his other prodigious tales: for from what I speak concerning the purity of instituted worship, he concludes that I judge that all who in the worship of God make use of the Common-prayer are not loyal to Christ, nor have communion with God, nor can promote the interest of the gospel; all which are notoriously false, never thought, never spoken, never written by me. And I do believe that many that have used that book in the public administrations have been as loyal
to Christ, had as much communion with God, and been as zealous to promote the interest of the gospel, as any who have lived in the world these thousand years; for men are accepted with God according to what they have, and not according to what they have not.

The next charge I can meet withal in this confused heap,—which is like the grave, a place of darkness, without any order,—is no less than of perjury; and this principally he doth on such an account as is not at all peculiar to me, but the reproach he manageth is equally cast on the greatest part of the kingdom by this public defamer. And I suppose others do, though I do not, know the prudence of encouraging such a slanderous libeller to cast fire-brands among peaceable subjects, and to revive the remembrance of things which the wisdom, clemency, and righteousness of his majesty, with and by the law of the land, upon the best and most assured principles of piety and policy, have put into oblivion. And it also seems strange to me how bold he and some other scribblers make by their interesting the sacred name of his majesty and his concerns in their impertinent squabblings, as they do on all occasions. But such things are of another cognizance, and there I leave them. What is peculiar to myself in this charge is represented under a double instance:—

1. Of the oath of canonical obedience, which I took and violated; and, 2. Of the university oath.

For the first, although I could easily return an answer unto the thing itself, yet, as to what concerns me, I shall give no other but "Mentitur impudentissime," I never took any such oath.

And for the other, I doubt not to speak with some confidence that the intention and design of the oath was observed by me with as much conscience and diligence as by any who have since acted in the same capacity wherein I was at that time reflected on. And upon the provocation of this man, whoever he be, I do not fear to say, that, considering the state and condition of affairs at that time in the nation and the university, I do not believe there is any person of learning, ingenuity, or common modesty, who had relation in those days unto that place, but will grant, at least, that notwithstanding some lesser differences from them about things of very small importance, I was not altogether useless to the interests of learning, morality, peace, and the preservation of the place itself; and further I am not concerned in the ingratitude and envy of a few illiterate and malicious persons, as knowing that "Obsectatio est stultorum thesaurus, quem in linguis gerunt."

But if all these attempts prove successless, there is that yet behind which shall justify the whole charge, or at least the author, in filling up his bill with so many prodigious falsities; and this is my "blas-
pheming the Lord's prayer;" which is exaggerated with many tragical expressions and hideous exclamations;—as, indeed, who can lay too heavy a load on so horrid a crime? But how if this should not prove so? how if, by all his outeries, he should but adorn and set forth his own forgeries? This I know, that I do, and ever did, believe that that prayer is part of the canonical Scripture; which I would not willingly blaspheme. I do believe that it was composed by the Lord Jesus Christ himself, and have vindicated it from being thought a collection and composition of such petitions as were then in use among the Jews, as some learned men had, I think unadvisedly, asserted it to be. I do, and ever did, believe it the most perfect form of prayer that ever was composed, and the words of it so disposed by the divine wisdom of our blessed Saviour that it comprehends the substance of all the matter of prayer to God. I do, and did always, believe that it ought to be continually meditated on, that we may learn from thence both what we ought to pray for and in what manner; neither did I ever think a thought or speak a word unsuitable to these assertions. Wherein, then, doth this great blasphemy lie? Unto two heads it must be reduced:—

1. That I judge not that our Lord Jesus Christ, in the giving of this prayer unto his disciples, did prescribe unto them the precise use or repetition of those words, but only taught them what to pray for or how.

Now, although it may be this man doth not, yet all men of any tolerable learning or reading know that this assertion, relating only to the different interpretations of one expression, indeed of one word, in one of the evangelists, hath been owned and allowed by learned men of all parties and persuasions. He may, if he please, consult Grotius, Musculus, and Cornelius à Lapide (to name one of a side), for his information. But,—

2. I have delivered other things concerning the use of it in my book against the Socinians.

Whereunto I shall only say, that he who differs from others in the manner of the use of any thing may have as reverent an esteem of the thing itself as they; and herein I shall not give place unto any man that lives on the earth with respect unto the Lord's prayer. It is true, I have said that there were manifold abuses in the rehearsal of it amongst people ignorant and superstitious; and I did deliver my thoughts, it may be, too freely and severely, against some kind of repetition of it. But as for the ridiculous and impudent charge of blasphemy hence raised by this pitiful calumniator, I am no way concerned in it; no more am I with that lie which hath been now reported to the satiety of its first broachers and promoters,—namely, that I should "put on my hat upon the repetition of it."
It was, as I remember, about fifteen years ago that such a rumour was raised; by I know not whom, nor on what occasion. It was somewhat long before I heard any whisper of it,—as is the manner in such cases. But so soon as I did attain a knowledge that such a slander had been reported and scattered abroad, I did cause to be published, in English and French, a declaration of its notorious falsity, in the year 1655. But so prone are many to give entertainment to false reproaches of them whom on any account they are displeased with, so unwilling to part with a supposed advantage against them, though they know it to have been put into their hand by the mistakes, folly, or malice of others, that the same untruth hath been several times since repeated and republished, without the least taking notice that it was publicly denied, condemned, and the authors of it challenged to give any tolerable account of their report. Only of late one learned person meeting it afresh, where its admittance would have been to his advantage (namely, Mr Durel, in his answer unto the apology of some nonconformists), had the ingenuity to acknowledge the public disclaimure of any such practice so long since made and published, and therewith at least to suspend his assent to the report itself.

I am, sir, quite weary of repeating the instances of this man's notorious falsehoods and unjust accusations; I shall therefore overlook the remainder of them on this head, that I may give you one of his intolerable weakness and ignorance, and this lies in his attempt to find out contradictions between what I have written in several places about toleration and liberty of conscience, p. 67. For because I say that "pernicious errors are to be opposed and extirpated, by means appointed, proper and suitable thereunto," as also that "it is the duty of the magistrate to defend, protect, countenance, and promote, the truth," the man thinks that these things are inconsistent with liberty of conscience, and such a toleration or forbearance as at any time I have pleaded for. But if any man should persuade him to let those things alone which either he hath nothing to do withal or doth not understand, it may be he would accommodate him with a sufficient leisure, and more time than he knows well how to dispose of.

II. His last attempt is upon some sayings which he calls my "principles;" in the representation whereof whether he hath dealt with any greater regard to truth and honesty than are the things we have already passed through shall be briefly considered.

The first, as laid down in the contents prefixed to this sorry chapter, is in these words: "That success in business doth authorize its cause; and that if God's providence permit a mischief, his will approves it."
There are two parts, you see, of this principle, whereof the first is, "That success will justify a cause in business,"—that is, as I take it, any one; and secondly, "That which God permits, he doth approve." Now, as both parts of this principle are diabolically false, so in their charge on me also; so that I must betake myself again to the example of the friar, and say, "Mentitur impudentissime." A cause is good or bad before it hath success one way or other; and that which hath not its warranty in itself can never obtain any from its success. The rule of the goodness of any public cause is the eternal law of reason, with the just legal rights and interests of men. If these make not a cause good, success will never mend it. But when a cause on these grounds is so indeed, or is really judged such by them that are engaged in it, not to take notice of the providence of God in prospering men in the pursuit of it, is to exclude all thoughts of him and his providence from having any concern in the government of the world. And if I or any other have at any time applied this unto any cause not warranted by the only rule of its justification, it no way reflects on the truth of the principle which I assert, nor gives countenance to the false one which he ascribes unto me. For the latter clause of this pretended principle, "That if God's providence permit a mischief, his will approves it," I suspect there is some other ingredient in it besides lying and malice,—namely, stupid ignorance; for it is mischief in a moral sense that he intends, nothing being the object of God's approbation or disapprobation on any other account. It would therefore seem very strange how any one who hath but so much understanding as to know that this principle would take away all differences between good and evil should provide himself with so much impudence as to charge it on me.

Another principle, in pursuit of the same design, he lays down as mine, p. 46, namely, "That saints may retain their holiness in the act of sinning; and that whatever law they violate, God will not impute it to them as a sin."

There seem to be two parts of this principle also. The first is, "That saints may retain their holiness in the act of sinning." I know not well what he means by this part of his principle; and yet do, for some reasons, suppose him to be more remote from the understanding of it than I am, although the words are his own. If he mean that the act of sinning is not against, or an impeachment of holiness, it is a ridiculous contradiction. If he mean that every actual sin doth not deprive the sinner of all holiness, he is ridiculous himself if he assert that it doth, seeing "there is no man that doeth good, and sinneth not." The framing of the last clause of this principle smells of the same cask, and, as it is charged on me, is false. Whatever law of God any man breaks, it is a sin, is so judged of God, and by
him imputed so far unto the sinner as to judge him guilty thereof, whoever he be; but God doth not impute every sin unto believers unto judgment and condemnation. And if he can understand any thing in the books quoted by him, he will find that there is no more in them towards what he reflects upon, but that God will by his grace preserve true believers from falling into such sins as whereby they should totally and finally lose their faith, fall from grace, and be cast out of God's covenant. This principle I own, and despise his impotent, ignorant, and ridiculous defamation of it.

His third principle is about praying by the Spirit, which he chargeth at the highest rate, as that which will destroy all government in the world! I know well enough whence he hath learned this kind of arguing; but I have no reason to concern myself particularly in this matter. The charge, for aught I know, as here proposed, falls equally on all Christians in the world; for whether men pray by a book or without a book, if they pray not by the Spirit,—that is, by the assistance of the Spirit of God,—they pray not at all. Let, therefore, the Scripture and Christianity answer for themselves; at present in this charge I am not particularly concerned.

Thus, sir, I have complied with your desire unto a perusal of this confused heap of malicious calumnies; which otherwise I had absolutely in silence put off to the judgment of the great day. It may be this author hath scarce yet cast up his account, nor considered what it is to lend his fingers to others to thrust into the fire, which they would not touch themselves; for whilst they do, or may if they please, enjoy their satisfaction in his villany and folly, the guilt and shame of them will return in a cruciating sense upon his own understanding and conscience. When this shall befall him, as it will do assuredly, if he be not utterly profligate, he will find no great relief in wishing that he had been better advised, nor in considering that those who rejoice in the calumny do yet despise the sycophant.

—I am, Sir, your, etc.,

J. O.
OF THE

DIVINE ORIGINAL, AUTHORITY, SELF-EVIDENCING LIGHT, AND POWER OF THE SCRIPTURES;

WITH AN ANSWER TO THAT INQUIRY, HOW WE KNOW THE SCRIPTURES TO BE THE WORD OF GOD.

ALSO,

A VINDICATION OF THE PURITY AND INTEGRITY OF THE HEBREW AND GREEK TEXTS OF THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT;

IN SOME CONSIDERATIONS ON THE PROLEGOMENA AND APPENDIX TO THE LATE "BIBLIA POLYGLOTTA."

WHEREUNTO ARE SUBJOINED

SOME EXERCITATIONS ABOUT THE NATURE AND PERFECTION OF THE SCRIPTURE, THE RIGHT OF INTERPRETATION, INTERNAL LIGHT, REVELATION, ETC.

'Ερωτάτε τας γραφάς.—JOHN v. 39.

OXFORD: 1659.
PREFATORY NOTE.

The Epistle Dedicatory to the three following treatises is full of curious information, and deserves to be read, in order to understand our author's true position in his controversy with Brian Walton, the learned editor of the London Polyglott. Surprise has been expressed that under one general title Owen should have included tracts on subjects so different in their nature as the divine origin of Scripture, the purity of the Hebrew and Greek text of Scripture, and the doctrinal errors of the Society of Friends. The last tract, too, was first written, and on the subordinate title prefixed to it bears date 1655, whereas the others belong to the succeeding year. The bond of connection among the treatises is, however, sufficiently plain. In refuting the doctrine of the inward light, as held by the Quakers, he was discriminating his own profound and original views of the self-evidencing power of the Word from a dogma with which they might be confounded; and as in the first treatise he had expressed himself in language rather unguarded and too unqualified, about the providential care of God over every letter and syllable of revelation, he was prompted to question some features in Walton's Polyglott, which had just been published, and in which thousands of various readings were exhibited. These various readings seemed to refute the position he had taken, that the Scriptures had been providentially kept in their original integrity. How far he erred on this point, and to what extent his views have been misapprehended, are discussed in the prefatory note to the "Considerations on the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta."

As this Polyglott was the occasion of the following Epistle and of the tract to which we have just alluded, it may be necessary to glance at its history and character. It appears that Walton issued the description and prospectus of it in 1652, and before the close of that year nearly £4,000 had been raised by subscription for the work. The Council of State promised to advance £1,000, and the paper to be used for it was exempted from duty. In May 1653 the subscriptions had risen to £9,000, and in the autumn of that year the impression was begun. Next year the first volume was completed, containing Prolegomena which are still a treasure of sacred criticism, and have been thrice republished separately, and the Pentateuch in the Hebrew, the Vulgate, the Septuagint, the Syriac, the Targum of Onkelos, the Samaritan, and the Arabic: in 1655 the second volume appeared, comprising the historical books in the same languages and versions, with the exception of the Samaritan; in 1656 the third, comprehending the poetic and prophetic books from Job to Malachi, with the addition of an Ethiopic version of the Book of Psalms: and in 1657 the fourth, containing all the apocryphal books; the fifth, including all the books of the New Testament, in the Greek, Syriac, Persic, Vulgate, Arabic, and Ethiopic; and the sixth, composed of various readings, critical remarks, etc. Walton's assistants in this magnificent work were Ussher, Castell, Hyde, Pococke, Lightfoot, Huish, Samuel Clarke, De Dieu, and others. The terms in which Cromwell is mentioned in the preface are as follow: "Primo autem commemorandi, quorum favere chartam a vectigalibus immunem habuimus, quod quinque abhine annis a Concilio secretori primo concessum, postea à serenissimo D. Protectore ejusque Concilio, operis promovendi causi, benigne confirmatum et continuatum erat." About the time of the Restoration two leaves of the preface were cancelled, the name of Cromwell was expunged from the list of benefactors, and a dedication to Charles II. prefixed, stigmatizing Cromwell as "the great dragon," and insinuating that he wished to extort from Walton the honour of the dedication: "Insidiabatur partu nostro draco ille magnum, et per tyrannidis suae mancipia hoc agebat, ut in ipso partu opprimereetur, nisi ipsi ut patrono et protectori dicaretur." The change could surely have been effected in a way more honourable to Walton, and without needless reflections on the memory of the Protector, his obligations to whom could not be concealed and should not have been forgotten. He was rewarded in 1660 with the bishopric of Chester; which he enjoyed only for the short space of a year. There are few names on the bright roll of British scholarship and learning to which Biblical literature has been more indebted.—Ep.
TO MY REVEREND AND WORTHY FRIENDS,

THE PREBENDS OF CHRIST CHURCH COLLEGE IN OXFORD,

WITH ALL THE STUDENTS IN DIVINITY IN THAT SOCIETY.

The reason of my inscribing the ensuing pleas for the authority, purity, and perfection of the Scripture, against the pretences of some to the contrary in these days, unto you, is, because some of you value and study the Scripture as much as any I know; and it is the earnest desire of my heart that all of you would so do. Now, whereas two things offer themselves unto me, to discourse with you by the way of preface,—namely, the commendation of the Scripture and an exhortation to the study of it, on the one hand; and a discovery of the reproach that is cast upon it, with the various ways and means that are used by some for the lessening and depressing of its authority and excellency, on the other,—the former being to good purpose by one or other almost every day performed, I shall insist at present on the latter only: which also is more suited to discover my aim and intention in the ensuing discourses. Now, herein, as I shall, it may be, seem to exceed that proportion which is due unto a preface to such short discourses as these following, yet I know I shall be more brief than the nature of so great a matter as that proposed to consideration doth require; and, therefore, ἀνὰ προσμίως καὶ παθῶς, I shall fall upon the subject that now lies before me.

Many there have been, and are, who, through the craft of Satan and the prejudice of their own hearts, lying under the power of corrupt and carnal interest, have engaged themselves to decry and disparage that excellency of the Scripture which is proper and peculiar unto it. The several sorts of them are too many particularly to be considered; I shall only pass through them in general, and fix upon such instances by the way as may give evidence to the things insisted on.

Those who in this business are first to be called to an account,—whose filth and abominations, given out in gross, others have but parcelled among themselves—are they of the synagogue of Rome. These pretend themselves to be the only keepers and preservers of the Word of God in the world, the only “pillar and ground of truth.” Let us, then, a little consider, in the first place, how it hath discharged this trust; for it is but equal that men should be called to an account upon their own principles; and those who, supposing themselves to have a trust reposed in them, do manifest a treacherous mind, would not be one whit better if they had so indeed.

What, then, have these men done in the discharge of their pretended trust? Nay, what hath that synagogue left unattempted? Yea, what hath it left unfinished that may be needful to convince it of perfidiousness? That says the Scripture was committed to it alone; and would, if it were able, deprive all others of the possession of it, or of their lives. What Scripture, then, was this, or when was this deed of trust made unto them? The oracles of God, they tell us, committed to the Jews under the Old Testament, and all the writings of the New; and that this was done from the first foundation of the church by Peter, and so on to the
finishing of the whole canon. What now have they not done, in adding, detracting, corrupting, forging, aspersing those Scriptures, to falsify their pretended trust? They add more books to them, never indited by the Holy Ghost, as remote from being διακοσμητα, δος ουμαινει, αυτω παινει: so denying the self-evidencing power of that Word, which is truly εστι αυτων, by mixing it with things εστι ανθρωπων, of a human rise and spring; manifesting themselves to have lost the Spirit of discerning, promised with the Word to abide with the true church of God for ever. (Isa. lx. 21.) They have taken from its fulness and perfection, its sufficiency and excellency, by their Masora, their oral law, or verbum ἄγγελος, their unknown, endless, bottomless, boundless treasure of traditions,—that σάπισαν θάρμακας for all their abominations. The Scripture itself (as they say, committed to them) they plead, to their eternal shame, to be in the original languages corrupted, vitiating, interpolated; so that it is no stable rule to guide us throughout in the knowledge of the will of God. The Jews, they say, did it whilst they were busy in burning of Christians. Therefore, in the room of the originals, they have enthroned a translation that was never committed to them,—that came into the world they know neither how, nor when, nor by whom; so that one says of its author, “Si quis percontetur Gallus fuerit an Sarmata, Judæus an Christianus, vir an mulier, nihil habiaturi sint ejus patroni quod expedite respondeant.” All this to place themselves in the throne of God, and to make the words of a translation authentic from their stamp upon them, and not from their relation unto and agreement with the words spoken by God himself. And yet further, as if all this were not enough to manifest what trustees they have been, they have cast off all subjection to the authority of God in his Word, unless it be resolved into their own, denying that any man in the world can know it to be the Word of God unless they tell him so: it is but ink and paper, skin of parchment, a dead letter, a nose of wax, a Lesbian rule,—of no authority unto us at all. O faithful trustees! holy mother church! infallible chair! can wickedness yet make any farther progress? Was it ever heard of, from the foundation of the world, that men should take so much pains as these men have done to prove themselves faithless and treacherous in a trust committed to them? Is not this the sum and substance of volumes that have even filled the world: “The Word of God was committed to us alone, and no others: under our keeping it is corrupted, depraved, vitiating: the copies delivered unto us we have rejected, and taken up one of our own choice: nor let any complaint of us:—it was in our power to do worse. This sacred depositum had no κεισθαι, whereby it might be known to be the Word of God; but it is upon our credit alone that it passes in the world or is believed! We have added to it many books upon our own judgment; and yet think it not sufficient for the guidance of men in the worship of God, and the obedience they owe unto him?” Yet do they blush? are they ashamed as a thief when he is taken? nay, do they not boast themselves in their iniquity, and say they are sold to work all these abominations? The time is coming, yea, it is at hand, wherein it shall repent them for ever that they have lifted up themselves against this sacred grant of the wisdom, care, love, and goodness of God!

Sundry other branches there are of the abominations of these men besides those enumerated, all which may be reduced to these three corrupt and bloody fountains:—

1. That the Scripture at best, as given out from God, and as it is to us continued, was and is but a partial revelation of the will of God, the other part of it (which how vast and extensive it is no man knows:—for the Jews have given us their διακοσμητα in their Mishna and Gemara; these kept them locked up in the breast or chair of their holy futher) being reserved in their magazine of traditions.

1 Erasmus.
2. That the Scripture is not able to evince or manifest itself to be the Word of God, so as to enjoy and exercise any authority in his name over the souls and consciences of men, without an accession of testimony from that combination of politic, worldly-minded men that call themselves the Church of Rome.

3. That the original copies of the Old and New Testaments are so corrupted ("ex ore tuo, serve nequam") that they are not a certain standard and measure of all doctrines, or the touch-stone of all translations.

Now, concerning these things, you will find somewhat offered unto your consideration in the ensuing discourses; wherein I hope, without any great altercation or disputes, to lay down such principles of truth as that their idol imaginations will be found cast to the ground before the sacred ark of the Word of God, and to lie naked without wisdom or power.

It is concerning the last of these only that at present I shall deliver my thoughts unto you; and that because we begin to have a new concernment therein, wherewith I shall afterward acquaint you. Of all the inventions of Satan to draw off the minds of men from the Word of God, this of decrying the authority of the originals seems to me the most pernicious. At the beginning of the Reformation, before the council of Trent, the Papists did but faintly, and not without some blushing, defend their Vulgar Latin translation. Some openly preferred the original before it, as Cajetan, Erasmus, Vives, and others; yea, and after the council also, the same was done by Andradius, Ferrarius, Arias Montanus, Masius, and others. For those who understood nothing but Latin amongst them, and scarcely that, whose ignorance was provided for in the council, I suppose it will not be thought meet that in this case we should make any account of them. But the state of things is now altered in the world, and the iniquity which first wrought in a mystery, being now discovered, casts off its vizard and grows bold: "Nihil est audacius istis depressursionis." At first the design was managed in private writings. Melchior Canus, Gulielmus Lindanus, Bellarminus, Gregorius de Valentia, Leo Castrius, Huntlaeus, Hanstelius, with innumerable others, some on one account, some on another, have pleaded that the originals were corrupted,—some of them with more impudence than others. Leo Castrius, as Pineda observes, raves almost wherever he falls on the mention of the Hebrew text. "Sed is est author," saith he, "in hujusmodii Ebraizaciones incidit, vix sui compos; et bono licet zelo, tamen vel ignorance reorum quarundam, vel vehementior aliquo affectione, extra fines veritatis et modestiae raptur: et si ex hujusmodi tantum ungubus Leonem illum estimaremus, non etiam ex aliis praecellaris conatibus, aut murem aut vulpem censeremus, aut canem aut quiddam aliud ignobilium." Yea, Morinus, who seems to be ashamed of nothing, yet shrinks a little at this man's impudence and folly. "Apologetici libros," saith he, "sex bene longos scriptis, quibus nihil quam Judaeorum voluntariorum et malignarum depravationes monstrare nittitur; zelo sané pio scriptis Castrius, sed libris Hebraicis ad tantum opus quod moliebatur parum erat instructus." In the steps of this Castrius walks Huntley, a subtle Jesuit, who, in the treatise above cited, ascribes the corruption of the Hebrew Bible to the good providence of God, for the honour of the Vulgar Latin! But these, with their companions, have had their mouths stopped by Reynolds, Whitaker, Junius, Lubbertus, Rivetus, Chamierus, Gerardus, Amosius, Glassius, Al sedius, Amama, and others: so that a man would have thought this

---

fire put to the house of God had been sufficiently quenched. But after all the
endeavours hitherto used, in the days wherein we live it breaks out in a greater
flame; they now print the original itself and defame it, gathering up translations
of all sorts, and setting them up in competition with it. When Ximénes put
forth the Complutensian Bible, Vatablus his, and Arias Montanus those of the
king of Spain, this cockatrice was not hatched, whose fruit is now growing to a
fiery flying serpent. It is now but saying, “The ancient Hebrew letters are changed
from the Samaritan to the Chaldean; the points or vowels, and accents, are but
lately invented, of no authority; without their guidance and direction nothing is
certain in the knowledge of that tongue; all that we know of it comes from the
translation of the LXX.; the Jews have corrupted the Old Testament; there are
innumerable various lections both of the Old and New; there are other copies
differing from those we now enjoy that are utterly lost.” So that upon the matter
there is nothing left unto men but to choose whether they will be Papists or
Atheists.

Here that most stupendous fabric that was ever raised by ink and paper, termed
well by a learned man, “Magnificentissimum illud, quod post homines natos in
lucem prodiit unquam, opus biblicum,”—I mean the Parisian Bibles,—is prefaced by
discourse of its erector, Michael Le Jay, wherein he denies the Hebrew text,
prefers the Vulgar Latin before it, and resolves that we are not left to the Word
for our rule, but to the Spirit that rules in their church: “Pro certo igitur atque
indabitato apud nos esse debet, vulgam editionem, qua communi catholice eccle-
siae lingua circumfertur verum esse et genuinum sacra Scripturae fontem; hanc
consulendam ubique, inde fidei dogmata repetenda; ex quo insuper consentaneum
est, vera ac certissima fidei Christianæ autographa in Spiritu ecclesiae residere,
neque ab ejus hostium manibus repetenda.

Et certè quaeque unque pietatis speciem praevent, non religione quapam, aut
sincera in Scripturam sacram veneratione aguntur, dum eam unicum, quasi in-
clusibilitem salutis regulam, ussurnant, neque spiritus evangelici veritatem investi-
gare decererunt; dum, ad autographa curiosius recurrentes, ex quibus, præter
perplexa quaedam vestigia, vix aliquid superest, vel capitales fidei hostes, vel eos
qui ecclesiae minus faverint, de contextuum interpretatione ac germano sacrorum
codicum sensu consultunt. Sicicet non alia est opportunior via ad regio illius itinere
secedendi, neque in privatarum opinionum placitis blandius possunt acquirere,
quas velut unicis doctrinæ suæ regulas sectari plerumque censuerunt. Apage
cæcum animorum libidinem! Non jam in institutionem nostram subsistit litera,
sed ecclesiae spiritus; neque è sacris codicibus hauriendum quidquam, nisi quod
illa communicatum esse nobis num voluerit.”

So he, or Morinus in his name. And if this be indeed the true state of things,
I suppose he will very hardly convince men of the least usefulness of this great
work and undertaking. To usher those Bibles into the world, Morinus puts forth his
Exercitations, entitled, “Of the Sincerity of the Hebrew and Greek Texts”—indeed
to prove them corrupt and useless. He is now the man amongst them that under-
takes to defend this cause; in whose writings whether there be more of Pyrgopo-
lynices or Rabshakeh is uncertain. But dogs that bark loud seldom bite deep; nor
do I think many ages have produced a man of more confidence and less judgment.
A prudent reader cannot but nauseate at all his leaves, and the man is well laid
open by a learned person of his own party. By the way, I cannot but observe,
that in the height of his boasting he falls upon his mother church, and embraces
her to death. Exercit. i. cap. i. p. 11, that he might vaunt himself to be the first
and only discoverer of corruptions in the original of the Old Testament, with the

3 Simeon de Muis, Assertio Verit. Heb.
causes of them, he falls into a profound contemplation of the guidance of his church, which being ignorant of any such cause of rejecting the originals as he hath now informed her of, yet continued to reject them, and prefer the Vulgar Latin before them. "Hic admirare lector," saith he, "Dei Spiritum ecclesiæ praæsentissimum, illam per obscura, perplexa, et invia queque, inoffenso pede agentem: quamquam incognita esset Rabbinorum supina negligentia, portentosa ignorantia, fœdaque librorum Judaicorum corruptela, et Hæretici contraria his magnâ verborum pompâ audacter jactarent; adduci tamen non potuit ecclesia, ut versio, quâ solâ per mille ferè et centum annos uss fuerit, ad normam et amissim Hebrei textus iterum reeduceretur." But is it so indeed, that their church receives its guidance in a stupid, brutish manner, so as to be fixed obstinately on conclusions without the least acquaintance with the premises? It seems she loved not the originals, but she knew not why; only she was obstinate in this, that she loved them not! If this be the state with their church, that when she hath neither Scripture, nor tradition, nor reason, nor new revelation, she is guided she knows not how, as Socrates was by his demon, or by a secret and inexpressible species of pertinacity and stubbornness falling upon her imagination, I suppose it will be in vain to contend with her any longer. For my own part, I must confess that I shall as soon believe a poor, deluded, fanatical Quaker, pretending to be guided by an infallible Spirit, as their pope with his whole conclave of cardinals, upon the terms here laid down by Morinus.

But, to let these men pass for a season, had this leprosy kept itself within that house which is thoroughly infected, it had been of less importance; it is but a further preparation of it for the fire. But it is now broken forth among Protestants also; with what designs, to what end or purpose, I know not.—οἰς οἰς, "God knows," and "the day will manifest." To declare at large how this is come about, "longa esset historia,"—too long for me to dwell upon; some heads of things I shall briefly touch at. It is known to all that the reformation of religion and restoration of good learning were begun and carried on at the same time, and mostly by the same persons. There was, indeed, a triumvirate among the Papists of men excellently skilled in rabbinical learning before the Reformation. Raymundus Martinus, Porchetus de Sylvaticis, and Petrus Galatimus, are the men; of the which the last dedicated his book to Maximilian the emperor, after that Zuinglius and Luther had begun to preach. Upon the matter, these three are but one: great are the disputes whether Galatimus stole his book from Raymundus or Porchetus, saith Morinus, and calls his work, "Plagium portentosum, cui vix simile unquam factum est." (Exerc. i. cap. 2.) From Raymundus, saith Scaliger (Epist. ii. 41), mistaking Raymundus Martinus for Raymundus Sebon, but giving the first tidings to the world of that book. From Raymundus also saith Josephus de Voysin, in his prolegomena to the Pugio Fidei; and from him Hornbeck, in his proleg. ad Jud. I shall not interpose in this matter. The method of Galatimus and his style are peculiar to him, but the coincidences of his quotations too many to be ascribed to common accident. That Porchetus took his "Victoria adversus impios Judæos" for the most part from Raymundus, he himself confesseth in his preface. However, certain it is Galatimus had no small opinion of his own skill, and, therefore,—according to the usual way of men who have attained, as they think, to some eminency in any one kind of learning, laying more weight upon it than it is able to bear,—he boldly affirms that the original of the Scripture is corrupted, and not to be restored but by the Talmud; in which one concession he more injures the cause he pleads for against the Jews than he advantageth it by all his books beside. Of his κατὰ τῶν of Rabbi Hakkadosh there is no more news as yet in the world than what he is pleased to acquaint us withal. At the same time, Erasmus, Reuchlin, Vives, Xantes Pagninus, and others, moved effectually
for the restoration of the Hebrew, Greek, and Latin. But the work principally prospered in the hands of the first reformers, as they were all of them generally skilled in the Hebrew,—some of them, as Capito, Bibliander, Fagius, Munster, to that height and usefulness that they may well be reckoned as the fathers and patriarchs of that learning. At that time lived Elias Levita, the most learned of the Jews of that age, whose grammatical writings were of huge importance in the studying of that tongue. This man, as he was acquainted with many of the first reformers, so he lived particularly with Paulus Fagius, as I have elsewhere declared. Now, in one book which in those days he published, called "Masoreth Hamma-
soreth," he broached a new opinion, not much heard of, at least not at all received, among the Jews, nor, for aught that yet appears, once mentioned by Christians before, namely, that the points or vowels, and accents, used in the Hebrew Bible were invented by some critical Jew or Masorete, living at Tiberias about five or six hundred years after Christ. No doubt the man's aim was to reduce the world of Christians to a dependence on the ancient Rabbins for the whole sense of the Scripture. "Hinc prima mali labes." Here lies the first breach in this matter. The fraud being not discovered, and this opinion being broached and confirmed by the great and almost only master of the language of that age, some even of the first reformers embraced his fancy. Perhaps Zuingleius had spoken to it before; justly I know not. After a while, the poison of this error beginning to operate, the Papists, waiting on the mouths of the reformers, like the servants of Benhadad on Ahab, to cast at every word that might fall from them to their advantage, began to make use of it. Hence Cochleus (lib. de Auth. Scripture, cap. v.) applauds Luther for saying the Jews had corrupted the Bible with points and distinc-
tions; as well he might, for nothing could be spoken more to the advantage of his cause against him. Wherefore other learned men began to give opposition to this error; so did Munster, Junius, and others, as will be shown in the ensuing discourse. Thus this matter rested for a season. The study of the Hebrew tongue and learning being carried on, it fell at length on him who undoubtedly hath done more real service for the promotion of it than any one man whatever, Jew or Christian; I mean Buxtorfius the elder. His Thesaurus Grammaticus, his Tiberias, or Commentarius Masorethicus, his Lexicons and Concordances, and many other treatises, whereof some are not yet published, evince this to all the world. Even Morinus saith that he is the only man among Christians that ever thoroughly understood the Masora; and Simeon de Muis acknowledgeth his prof-
ing by him and learning from him. Other Jews who undertake to be teachers know nothing but what they learn of him. To omit the testimony of all sorts of learned men, giving him the pre-eminence in this learning, it may suffice that his works praise him. Now, this man, in his Tiberias, or Commentarius Masorethic-
cus, printed with the great Rabbinical Bible of his own correct setting forth at Basil, anno 1620, considereth at large this whole matter of the points, and dis-
covereth the vanity of Elias' pretension about the Tiberian Masoretes. But we must not, it seems, rest here; within a few years after, to make way for another design, which then he had conceived, Ludovicus Cappellus published a discourse in the defence of the opinion of Elias (at least so far as concerned the rise of the punctuation), under the title of "Aereanum Punctationis Revelatum." The book was published by Erpenius, without the name of the author. But the person was sufficiently known; and Rivetus not long after took notice of him, and saith he was his friend, but concealed his name. (Isag. ad Scrip., i. cap. 8.) This new attempt immediately pleaseth some. Among others, our learned professor, Dr Prideaux, reads a public lecture, on the vespers of our Comitia, on that subject; wherein, though he prefaceth his discourse with an observation of the advantage the Papists make of that opinion of the novelty of the points, and the danger of it, yet upon
the matter he falls in wholly with Cappellus, though he names him not. Among the large encomiums of himself and his work, printed by Cappellus in the close of his "Critica Sacra," there are two letters from one Mr Eyre here in England; in one whereof he tells him that without doubt the Doctor read on that subject by the help of his book, as indeed he useth his arguments and quotes his treatise, under the name of "Sud Hanisebboth Hanagealah." But that, I say, which seems to me most admirable in the Doctor's discourse is, that whereas he had prefixed it with the weight of the controversy he had in hand, by the advantage the Papists make of the opinion of the novelty of the points, citing their words to that purpose, himself in the body of his Exercitations falls in with them, and speaks the very things which he seemed before to have blamed. And by this means this opinion, tending so greatly to the disparagement of the authority of the originals, is crept in amongst Protestants also. Of the stop put unto its progress by the full and learned answer of Buxtorfius the younger (who alone in this learning, in this age, seems to answer his father's worth) unto Cappellus, in his discourse, "De Punctorum Vocalium Antiquitate," I shall speak more afterward. However, it is not amiss fallen out that the masters of this new persuasion are not at all agreed among themselves. Cappellus would have it easy to understand the Hebrew text, and every word, though not absolutely by itself, yet as it lies in its contexture, though there were no points at all. Morinus would make the language altogether unintelligible on that account. The one saith that the points are a late invention of the Rabbins; and the other, that without them the understanding of the Hebrew is ἡ ἐνταξεία: yet though they look diverse ways, there is a firebrand between them. But we have this brand brought yet nearer to the church's bread-corn in the Prolegomena to the Biblia Polyglotta, lately printed at London. The solemn espousal of this opinion of the Hebrew punctuation in that great work was one chief occasion of the second discourse, as you will find it at large declared in the entrance of it. I dare not mention the desperate consequences that attend this imagination, being affrighted, among other things, by a little treatise lately sent me (upon the occasion of a discourse on this subject) by my worthy and learned friend, Dr Ward, entitled "Fides Divina;" wherein its author, whoever he be, from some principles of this nature, and unwary expressions of some learned men amongst us, labours to eject and cast out as useless the whole Scripture or Word of God. I should have immediately returned an answer to that pestilent discourse, but that upon consideration I found all his objections obviated or answered in the ensuing treatises, which were then wholly finished. And this, as I said, was the first way whereby the poison of undervaluing the originals crept in among Protestants themselves.

Now, together with the knowledge of the tongues, the use of that knowledge in critical observations did also increase. The excellent use of this study and employment, with the fruits of it in the explanation of sundry difficulties, with many other advantages, cannot be easily expressed. But as the best things are apt to be most abused, so in particular it hath fallen out with this kind of learning and study. Protestants here also have chiefly managed the business. Beza, Camerarius, Scaliger, Casaubon, Drusius, Goumarus, Ussher, Grotius, Heinsius, Fuller, Dieu, Mede, Cameron, Glassius, Cappellus, Anama, with innumerable others, have excelled in this kind. But the mind of man being exceedingly vain-glorious, curious, uncertain, after a door to reputation and renown by this kind of learning was opened in the world, it quickly spread itself over all bounds and limits of sobriety. The manifold inconveniences, if not mischiefs, that have ensued on the boldness and curiosity of some in criticising the Scripture, I shall not now insist upon; and of what it might yet grow unto I have often heard the great Ussher expressing his fear. Of the success of Grotius in this way we have VOL. XVI.
a solid account weekly in the lectures of our learned professor; which I hope he will in due time benefit the public withal. But it is only one or two things that my present design calls upon me to remark.

Among other ways that sundry men have fixed on to exercise their critical abilities, one hath been the collecting of various lections both in the Old Testament and New. The first and most honest course fixed on to this purpose was that of consulting various copies, and comparing them among themselves; wherein yet there were sundry miscarriages, as I shall show in the second treatise. This was the work of Erasmus, Stephen, Beza, Arias Montanus, and some others. Some that came after them, finding this province possessed, and no other world of the like nature remaining for them to conquer, fixed upon another way, substituting to the service of their design as pernicious a principle as ever, I think, was fixed on by any learned man since the foundation of the church of Christ, excepting only those of Rome. Now this principle is, that, upon many grounds (which some of them are long in recounting), there are sundry corruptions crept into the originals, which, by their critical faculty, with the use of sundry engines, those especially of the old translations, are to be discovered and removed. And this also receives countenance from those Prolegomena to the Biblia Polyglotta, as will afterward be shown and discussed. Now, this principle being once fixed, and a liberty of criticising on the Scripture, yea, a necessity of it, thence evinced, it is inconceivable what springs of corrections and amendments rise up under their hands. Let me not be thought tedious if I recount some of them to you:—

1. It is known that there is a double consonancy in the Hebrew consonants among themselves,—of some in figure that are unlike in sound, of some in sound that are unlike in figure. Of the first sort are ב and ב, ה and ה, נ and נ, ו and ו, י and נ; of the latter are ב and ב, ה and ה, נ and נ, ו and ו; of the latter are ב and ב, ה and ה, נ and נ, ו and ו. Now, this is one principle of our new critics, that the scribes of the Bible were sometimes mistaken by the likeness of the letters in respect of figure, sometimes by their likeness in respect of sound, and so, remembering the words they wrote, oftentimes put one for another; so that whether they used their eyes or their memories, they failed on one hand or another: though the Jews deny any copy amongst them to be written but exactly by pattern, or that it is lawful for a man to write one word in a copy but by pattern, though he could remember the words of the whole Bible. Now, whereas the signification of every word is regulated by its radix, it often falls out that, in the formation and inflection of words, by reason of letters that are defective, there remains but one letter of the radix in them, at least that is pronounced. How frequent this is in this tongue, those who have very little skill in it may guess by only taking a view of Frobenius’ Bible, wherein the radical letters are printed in a distinct character from all the prefixes and affixes in their variations. Now, if a man hath a mind to criticise and mend the Bible, it is but taking his word or words that he will fix upon, and try what they will make by the commutation of the letters that are alike in figure and sound. Let him try what ב will do in the place of ב, or the contrary,—which as they are radical or as they are prefixed will sufficiently alter the sense; and so of all the rest mentioned. If by this means any new sense that is tolerable and pleaseth the critic doth emerge, it is but saying the scribe was mistaken in the likeness of the letters or in the affinity of the sound, and then it is no matter though all the copies in the world agree to the contrary, without the least variation. It is evident that this course hath stood Cappellus and Grotius in very good stead; and Simeon de Muis tells us a pretty story of himself to this purpose (Assertio Verit. Heb.) Yea, this is the most eminent spring of the criticisms on the Old Testament that these times afford. A thousand instances might be given to this purpose.
2. But in case this course fail, and no relief be afforded this way, then the
transposition of letters offers its assistance. Those who know any thing of this
language know what alteration in the sense of words may be made by such a way
of procedure; frequently words of contrary senses, directly opposite, consist only
of the same letters diversely placed. Every lexicon will supply men with instances
that need not to be here repeated.

3. The points are taken into consideration; and here bold men may even satisfy
their curiosity. That word or those three letters ÆÆÆ are instanced by Jerome
to this purpose. (Hom. ix. 12.) As it may be pointed, it will afford eight several
senses: ÆÆÆ is *verbum,* and ÆÆÆ *pestis*; as far distant from one another as life
and death. Those letters in that order may be read with æ and æ and æ and æ
and æ. The Jews give instances how by this means men may destroy the world.
But,—

4. Suppose that this ground proves barren also, it is but going to an old trans-
lation, the Septuagint, or Vulgar Latin, and where any word likes us, to consider
what Hebrew word answers unto it, and if it discover an agreement in any one
letter, in figure or sound, with the word in that text, then to say that so they
read in that copy; yea, rather than fail, be the word as far different from what is
read in the Bible as can be imagined, aver it to yield the more convenient sense,
and a various lection is found out.

And these are the chief heads and springs of the criticisms on the Old Testa-
ment, which, with so great a reputation of learning, men have boldly obtruded on
us of late days. It is not imaginable what prejudice the sacred truth of the
Scripture, preserved by the infinite love and care of God, hath already suffered
hereby; and what it may further suffer, for my part I cannot but tremble to
think. Lay but these two principles together—namely, that the points are a late
invention of some Judaical Rabbins (on which account there is no reason in the
world that we should be bound unto them), and that it is lawful to gather various
lections by the help of translations, where there are no diversities in our present
copies (which are owned in the Prolegomena to the Bibliia Polyglotta),—and for
my part I must needs cry out Δίς πιὸ στάω, as not seeing any means of being de-
levered from utter uncertainty in and about all sacred truth. Those who have
more wisdom and learning, and are able to look through all the digladiations that
are likely to ensue on these principles, I hope will rather take pains to instruct
me, and such as I am, than be angry or offended with us that we are not so wise
or learned as themselves.

In the meantime, I desire those who are shaken in mind by any of the specious pretences of Cappellus and others, to consider the
specimen given us of reconciling the difficulties that they lay as the ground of their
conjectures, in the Miscellany Notes or Exercitations of the learned Mr
Pococke,—as useful and learned a work as is extant in that kind, in so few sheets
of paper. The dangerous and causeless attempts of men to rectify our present
copies of the Bible, the reader may there also find discovered and confuted.

But we have not as yet done. There is a new invention of Cappellus greatly
applauded amongst the men of these opinions. He tells us (Crit. Sacr. lib. vi.
cap. 10): "Planum est omnem quam hodie est in terrarum orbe linguae Hebraicae
cognitionem servandam tandem esse et ascribendum Graece ταῦτα LXX. Sacrorum
Bibliorum translationis." This is greedily taken up by Morinus (as nothing could
be spoken more to his purpose), who also tells us that the learned prefacer to these
Biblia Polyglotta is of the same judgment. (Morin. Praefat. ad opus. Hebr.
Samarit.) Hereupon he informs us, that in the translation of the Pentateuch he
went for the meaning of sundry words unto Jerome and the translation of the
LXX. But it is not unknown to these learned persons that Jerome, whom one
of them makes his rule, tells us over and over, that notwithstanding the transla-
tion of the LXX., he had his knowledge of the Hebrew tongue from the Hebrew itself, and the help of such Hebrews as he hired to his assistance. And [as] for Cappellus, is not that the Helena for which he contends, and in fact the only foundation of his sacred work of criticising on the Scripture, that there was a succession of learned men of the Jews at Tiberias until a hundred years after Jerome, who invented the points of the Hebrew Bible, and that not in an arbitrary manner, but according to the tradition they had received from them who spoke that language in its purity? Shall these men be thought to have had the knowledge of the Hebrew tongue from the translation of the LXX.? Certainly they would not, then, have hated it so, as he informs us they did. But this thing is plainly ridiculous. The language gives us the knowledge of itself. Considering the helps that by Providence have been in all ages and at all times afforded thereunto, ever since the time wherein, Cappellus says, some knew it so well as to invent and affix the present punctuation, there hath been a succession of living or dead masters to further the knowledge of it. And this will not seem strange to them who have given us exact translations of the Persian and Ethiopic pieces of Scripture. In the Ἰησοῦς λαομοῦ we are a little assisted by the LXX. The chiefest seeming help unto this tongue is from the Arabic.

And thus have I given you a brief account how, by the subtlety of Satan, there are principles crept in even amongst Protestants, undermining the authority of the “Hebrew verity,” as it was called of old, wherein Jerusalem hath justified Samaria, and cleared the Papists in their reproaching of the Word of God. Of the New Testament I shall speak particularly in the second discourse ensuing. Morinus, indeed, tells us (De Heb. et Græc. Tex. Sinc. Exercit., i. cap. i., p. 5), “It is a jocose thing that the heretics, in their disputations, do grant that there are corruptions and various lections in the Greek and Latin copies of the Scripture, but deny it as to the Hebrew.” But why, I pray, is this so ridiculous? It is founded on no less stable bottom than this experience, that whereas we evidently find various lections in the Greek copies which we enjoy, and so grant that which ocular inspection evinces to be true, yet although men discover such virulent and bitter spirits against the Hebrew text as this Morinus doth, calling all men fools or knaves that contend for its purity, they are none of them able to show, out of any copies yet extant in the world, or that they can make appear ever to have been extant, that ever there were any such various lections in the originals of the Old Testament. And is there any reason that we should be esteemed ridiculous, because, believing our own eyes, we will not also believe the testimony of some few men of no credit with us, asserting that for truth which we have abundant cause to believe to be utterly false? But of these men so far.

I thought, at the entrance of my discourse, to have also insisted on some other ways whereby Satan in these days assaults the sacred truth of the Word of God, in its authority, purity, integrity, or perfection, especially in the poor, deluded, fanatical souls amongst us, commonly called Quakers, for the instruction of the younger sort against whose abominations I have subjoined the theses in the close of the other treatises; but I am sensible how far I have already exceeded the bounds of a preface unto so small treatises as these ensuing, and therefore, giving a brief account of my undertaking in this cause of God and his Word, for the vindication of the authority and integrity of it, I shall put a close to this discourse.

It may be some of you have heard me professing my unwillingness to appear any more in the world this way. I have not, in some things, met with such pleasing entertainment as to encourage me unto it. When I have been for peace, others have made themselves ready for war; some of them, especially one of late,

1 Gilles Firmin, who replied to a work of Dr Owen’s upon Schism.—Ed.
neither understanding me nor the things that he writes about,—but his mind for opposition was to be satisfied. This is the manner of not a few in their writings: they measure other men by their own ignorance, and what they know not themselves they think is hid to others also. Hence, when any thing presents itself new to their minds, as though they were the first that knew what they then first know, and which they have only an obscure glimpse of, they rest not until they have published it to their praise. Such are the discourses of that person, partly trivial, partly obviated and rendered utterly useless to his purpose by that treatise which he ventured weakly to oppose. I wish I could prevail with those whose interest compels them to choose rather to be ignorant than to be taught by me to let my books alone. Another, after two or three years' consideration, in answer to a book of near a hundred and forty sheets of paper, returns a scoffing reply to so much of it as was written in a quarter of an hour. I am, therefore, still minded to abstain from such engagements. And I think I may say, if there were less writing by some, there would be more reading by others, at least to more purpose. Many books full of profound learning lie neglected, whilst men spend their time on trifles; and many things of great worth are suppressed by their authors, whilst things of no value are poured out one on the neck of another. One of yourselves I have often solicited for the publishing of some divinity lectures read at solemn times in the university; which (if I know aught) are, to say no more, worthy of public view. I yet hope a short time will answer my desire and expectation. Of my present undertaking there are three parts. The first is a subject that, having preached on, I was by many urged to publish my thoughts upon it, judging it might be useful. I have answered their requests. What I have performed, through the grace of Christ, in the work undertaken, is left to the judgment of the godly, learned reader. The second concerns the Prolegomena and Appendix to the late Biblia Polyglotta. Of this I said often, "Ab alio quovis hoc fieri mallem, quàm à me, sed à me tamen potius quàm à nemine." The reasons of my engaging in that work are declared at large in the entrance of it. The theses in the close were drawn in by their affinity in subject to the other discourses; and, to complete the doctrine of the Scripture concerning the Scripture, I endeavoured to comprise in them the whole truth about the Word of God, as to name and thing, opposed by the poor fanatical Quakers, as also to discover the principles they proceed upon in their confused opposition to that truth.

I have no more to add, but only begging I may have the continuance of your prayers and assistance in your several stations for the carrying on the work of our Lord and Master in this place committed unto us, that I may give in my account with joy and not with grief to Him that stands at the door, I commend you to the powerful word of his grace, and remain, your fellow-labourer and brother, in our dear Lord Jesus,

J. O.

From my Study,
September 22, 1655.

1 This refers to the elaborate treatise on the "Perseverance of the Saints," which Dr Owen had written in opposition to John Goodwin, and to which that celebrated Arminian replied.—Ed.
2 Dr Henry Wilkinson, public reader of divinity in the university.
OF

THE DIVINE ORIGINAL,

AUTHORITY, SELF-EVIDENCING LIGHT, AND POWER

OF

THE SCRIPTURES:

WITH

AN ANSWER TO THAT INQUIRY,

HOW WE KNOW THE SCRIPTURES TO BE THE WORD OF GOD.
This interesting treatise originated in the request of several persons, who had heard Owen preaching on the subject, that he would publish the substance of what he had preached. It broaches the great argument of the experimental evidence in favour of the Christian revelation, which he afterwards developed more fully in his "Reason of Faith" (see vol. iv., p. 4), in connection with which the present treatise should be studied. A similar train of reasoning has been prosecuted by Professor Halyburton, in the appendix to his work on Natural and Revealed Religion; by President Edwards, in his treatise on Religious Affections; and by Dr Chalmers, in his Theological Institutes. The last-mentioned author, in a preface to the following work, has recorded his high opinion of its merits:—"Dr Owen's Treatise 'On the Divine Original,' etc., embraces a distinct but most important species of evidence; and this article will be held in high estimation by those who desiderate a satisfactory conviction of the claims of the Bible to divine inspiration, of which he adjoins the most solid and indubitable proof." Comparing it with other treatises on the evidences, by Leslie, Lyttelton, Doddridge, Bates, and Baxter, and after awarding a due meed of praise to these writers, he proceeds: "Yet do we hold Dr Owen to have rendered a more essential service to the cause of divine revelation, when, by his clear and irresistible demonstrations, he has proved that the written Word itself possesses a self-evidencing light and power for manifesting its own divine original, superior to the testimony of eye-witnesses, or the evidence of miracles, or those supernatural gifts with which the first teachers of Christianity were endowed for accrediting their divine mission."

ANALYSIS.

Starting with the principle that the authority of revelation depends on its divine origin, he exhibits the claim of the Old Testament Scriptures to this high authority, and unfolds the special providence through which they have been transmitted to us without corruption or mutilation. The same claim is advanced for the New Testament, chap. i. Having proved that the Scriptures are to be received in the exercise of faith, resting directly on the authority of God as its foundation, or as the formal reason of our assent to them as his word, he defines their authority to be their right and power to command, and require obedience in the name of God. He enumerates three ways by which their divine origin, and, consequently, their divine authority, are proved:—I. By a general induction, which consists of analogical arguments, to the effect that as the stamp of a divine authorship is impressed on creation, so that, apart from any separate and independent testimony from God, it teems with evidence of a divine original, so in the Word the intrinsic evidence of a divine original may reasonably be expected, and is actually to be found, chap. ii.; II. By the testimonies which the Word itself contains to its own character and claims; and, III. By innate arguments, evidence springing intrinsically from the Word, in the influence with which it operates on the mind and conscience. This self-evidencing property of Scripture is unfolded under a reference to the light which it imparts, and its spiritual efficacy to renew and sanctify, chap. iii., iv. He explains what is meant by "the testimony of the Spirit," discriminating it from popish and fanatical errors: he proceeds to reject the authority of tradition, and to indicate the true place of miracles in the evidences of Christianity, chap. v. Two supplementary arguments close the treatise, designed to prove still further the self-evidencing power of the Word, and derived,—1. From the nature of the doctrines contained in the Word, such as their universal adaptation and peculiarly glorious character; and, 2. From the harmony and connection subsisting among all the parts of Scripture.—Ed.
The divine original of the Scripture.

CHAPTER I.

The divine original of the Scripture the sole foundation of its authority—The original of the Old Testament—The peculiar manner of the revelation of the word—The written word, as written, preserved by the providence of God—Cappellus' opinion about various lections considered—The Scripture not φανερώς—The true meaning of that expression—Entirely from God, to the least tittle—Of the Scriptures of the New Testament, and their peculiar prerogative.

That the whole authority of the Scripture in itself depends solely on its divine original, is confessed by all who acknowledge its authority. The evincing and declaration of that authority being the thing at present aimed at, the discovery of its divine spring and rise is, in the first place, necessarily to be premised thereunto. That foundation being once laid, we shall be able to educe our following reasons and arguments, wherein we aim more at weight than number, from their own proper principles.

As to the original of the Scripture of the Old Testament, it is said, God spake, τέλαι εν τοῖς προφήταις. (Heb. i. 1,) "of old, or formerly, in the prophets." From the days of Moses the lawgiver, and downwards, unto the consignation and bounding of the canon delivered to the Judaical Church, in the days of Ezra and his companions, the "men of the great congregation"—so God spake. This being done only among the Jews, they, as his church, εἰς τοῦτον τὰ λόγια τοῦ Θεοῦ, (Rom. iii. 2, ix. 4,) were "intrusted with the oracles of God." God spake, εν τοῖς προφήταις; εν for διὰ, (Chrysostom, Theophylact,) in for by: διὰ τῶν προφητῶν, "by the prophets," as Luke i. 70, διὰ στόματος τῶν ἀγίων προφητῶν, "by the mouth of the holy prophets." But there seems to be somewhat further intended in this expression.

In the exposition, or giving out the eternal counsel of the mind and will of God unto men, there is considerable [to be considered]: 1. His speaking unto the prophets; and, 2. His speaking by them unto us. In this expression, it seems to be that ἐν τῇ, or filia vocis—that voice from heaven that came to the prophets—which is understood. So God spake in the prophets; and in reference thereunto there is propriety in that expression, εν τοῖς προφήταις—"in the pro-
phets." Thus the Psalms are many of them said to be, To this or that man. מִקְרָ֣הּ מֵאֱלֹהֶ֔י Мы "A golden psalm to David"—that is, from the Lord; and from thence their tongue was as the "pen of a writer." (Ps. xlv. 1.) So God spake in them, before he spake by them.

The various ways of special revelation, by dreams, visions, audible voices, inspirations, with that peculiar one of the lawgiver under the Old Testament called פָּנָּ֣יוֹן אֶלֹהִים פָּנָ֣יוֹן אֶלֹהִים, "face to face," (Exod. xxxiii. 11; Deut. xxxiv. 10) and קֵֽי מֵאֱלֹהִים, (Numb. xii. 8,) with that which is compared with it and exalted above it (Heb. i. 1–3) in the New, by the Son, viz., εἰς κόλπον τοῦ πατρός, "from the bosom of the Father," (John i. 17, 18,) are not of my present consideration—all of them belonging to the manner of the thing inquired after, not the thing itself.

By the assertion, then, laid down, of God "speaking in the prophets of old," from the beginning to the end of that long tract of time (consisting of one thousand years) wherein he gave out the writings of the Old Testament, two things are ascertained unto us, which are the foundation of our present discourse.

1. That the laws they made known, the doctrines they delivered, the instructions they gave, the stories they recorded, the promises of Christ, the prophecies of gospel times they gave out and revealed, were not their own, not conceived in their minds, not formed by their reasonings, not retained in their memories from what they heard, not by any means beforehand comprehended by them, (1 Pet. i. 10, 11,) but were all of them immediately from God—there being only a passive concurrence of their rational faculties in their reception, without any such active obedience as by any law they might be obliged unto. Hence,

2. God was so with them, and by the Holy Ghost so spake in them—as to their receiving of the Word from him, and their delivering of it unto others by speaking or writing—as that they were not themselves enabled, by any habitual light, knowledge, or conviction of truth, to declare his mind and will, but only acted as they were immediately moved by him. Their tongue in what they said, or their hand in what they wrote, was רֶפֶה וְנֶגֶר, no more at their own disposal than the pen is in the hand of an expert writer.

Hence, as far as their own personal concernsments, as saints and believers, did lie in them, they are said רְפֶה וְנֶגֶר, "to make a diligent inquiry into, and investigation of," the things which ἐδόθην τῷ ἐν αὐτῷ Πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ, the "Spirit of Christ that spake in themselves did signify." (1 Pet. i. 10, 11,) Without this, though their visions were express, so that in them their eyes were said to be open, (Numb. xxiv. 3, 4,) yet they understood them not. Therefore, also, they studied the writings and prophecies of one another. (Dan. ix. 2.) Thus they attained a saving, useful, habitual knowledge of the truths delivered
by themselves and others, by the illumination of the Holy Ghost, through the study of the Word, even as we. (Ps. cxix. 104.) But as to the receiving of the Word from God, as God spake in them, they obtained nothing by study or meditation, by inquiry or reading. (Amos vii. 15.) Whether we consider the matter or manner of what they received and delivered, or their receiving and delivering of it, they were but as an instrument of music, giving a sound according to the hand, intention, and skill of him that strikes it.

This is variously expressed. Generally, it is said ἡ λέξις τῆς ἡμέρας, "the word was" to this or that prophet, which we have rendered "the word came" unto them. Ezek. i. 3: ἡ λέξις τῆς ἡμέρας, it "came expressly;" "essendo fuit"—it had a subsistence given unto it, or an effectual in-being, by the Spirit’s entering into him. (Ver. 14.) Now, this coming of the word unto them had oftentimes such a greatness and expression of the majesty of God upon it, as filled them with dread and reverence of him, (Hab. iii. 16,) and also greatly affected even their outward man. (Dan. viii. 27.) But this dread and terror (which Satan strove to imitate in his filthy tripods, and ἐγγαστριμωθεὶς) was peculiar to the Old Testament, and belonged to the pedagogy thereof. (Heb. xii. 18–21.) The Spirit, in the declaration of the New Testament, gave out his mind and will in a way of more liberty and glory. (2 Cor. iii.) The expressness and immediacy of revelation was the same; but the manner of it related more to that glorious liberty in fellowship and communion with the Father, whereunto believers had then an access provided them by Jesus Christ. (Heb. ix. 8, x. 19, 20, xii. 22–24.) So our Saviour tells his apostles, (Matt. x. 20,) οὐχ ἤμας ἢστε οἱ λαλοῦντες, “You are not the speakers” of what you deliver, as other men are, the figment and imagination of whose hearts are the fountain of all that they speak; and he adds this reason, Τὸ γὰρ Πνεῦμα τοῦ πατρὸς τὸ λαλοῦν ἐν ὑμῖν, “The Spirit of the Father is that which speaketh in you.” Thus, the word that came unto them was a book which they took in and gave out without any alteration of one tittle or syllable. (Ezek. ii. 8–10, iii. 3; Rev. x. 9–11.)

Moreover, when the word was thus come to the prophets, and God had spoken in them, it was not in their power to conceal it, the hand of the Lord being strong upon them. They were not now only, on a general account, to utter the truth they were made acquainted with, and to speak the things they had heard and seen, (which was their common preaching work,) according to the analogy of what they had received, (Acts iv. 20,) but, also, the very individual words that they had received were to be declared. When the word was come to them, it was as a fire within them, that must be delivered, or it would consume them. (Ps. xxxix. 3; Jer. xx. 9; Amos iii. 8, vii. 15, 16.) So
Jonah found his attempt to hide the word that he had received to be altogether vain.

Now, because these things are of great importance, and the foundation of all that doth ensue—viz., the discovery that the Word is come forth unto us from God, without the least mixture or intervenience of any medium obnoxious to fallibility, (as is the wisdom, truth, integrity, knowledge, and memory, of the best of all men)—I shall further consider it from one full and eminent declaration thereof, given unto us, 2 Pet. i. 20, 21. The words of the Holy Ghost are, Τούτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες, ὅτι πᾶσα προφητεία γραφῆς, ἱδιὰς ἐπιλύσεως ὑπὸ γίνεται ὡς γὰρ Θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἡνίχκη τοῖς προφητεία, ἀλλ' ὠτὶ Πνεύματος ἁγίου φερό- μενοι ἐξάλησαν ὁ Ἑγεὶ Θεοῦ ἀνθρώπων—"Knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation; for the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost."

That which he speaks of is προφητεία γραφῆς, the "prophecy of Scripture," or written prophecy.

There were then traditions among the Jews to whom Peter wrote, exalting themselves into competition with the written Word, and which not long after got the title of an oral law, pretending to have its original from God. These the apostle tacitly condemns; and also shows under what formality he considered that which (verse 19) he termed λόγος προφητικός, the "word of prophecy;" viz., as written. The written Word, as such, is that whereof he speaks. Above fifty times is ἡ γραφή, or αἱ γραφαί, in the New Testament, put absolutely for the Word of God. And ἡ γραφή is so used in the Old for the word of prophecy. (2 Chron. xxii. 12.) It is the ἡ γραφή that is Ἑβδομαστὸς, (2 Tim. iii. 16,) "the writing, or word written, is by inspiration from God." Not only the doctrine in it, but the γραφή itself, or the "doctrine as written," is so from him.

Hence, the providence of God hath manifested itself no less concerned in the preservation of the writings than of the doctrine contained in them; the writing itself being the product of his own eternal counsel for the preservation of the doctrine, after a sufficient discovery of the insufficiency of all other means for that end and purpose. And hence the malice of Satan hath raged no less against the book than against the truth contained in it. The dealings of Antiochus under the Old Testament, and of sundry persecuting emperors under the New, evince no less. And it was no less crime of old to be traditor libri than to be abnegator fidei. The reproach of chartacea scripta, and membranae, (Coster. Enchirid., cap. i.), reflects on its author. It is true, we have not the Ἀντίγραφα of Moses and the prophets, of the

1 Hebrewa volumina nec in una dictione corrupta invenies. Sant. Pag. lovo 12, ἦ μία κηραία ὕπο μὴ σαβαδιτ. (Matt. v. 18.)
apostles and evangelists; but the ἀπόγραφα or “copies” which we have contain every iota that was in them.

There is no doubt but that in the copies we now enjoy of the Old Testament there are some diverse readings, or various lections. The ἀπόγραφα, the μετάφορα, the μεταφορά, (for the μετάφορα are of another nature,)—the various lections of Ben Asher, or Rabbi Aaron the son of Rabbi Moses of the tribe of Asher, and Ben Naphtali, or Rabbi Moses the son of David of the tribe of Naphtali—the lections also of the eastern and western Jews, which we have collected at the end of the great Bible with the Masora—evince it. But yet we affirm, that the whole Word of God, in every letter and tittle, as given from him by inspiration, is preserved without corruption. Where there is any variety it is always in things of less, indeed of no, importance. God by his providence preserving the whole entire, suffered this lesser variety to fall out, in or among the copies we have, for the quickening and exercising of our diligence in our search into his Word.

It was an unhappy attempt, (which must afterward be spoken unto,) that a learned man hath of late put himself upon, viz., to prove variations in all the present ἀπόγραφα of the Old Testament in the Hebrew tongue from the copies used of old, merely upon uncertain conjectures and the credit of corrupt translations. Whether that plea of his be more unreasonable in itself and devoid of any real ground of truth, or injurious to the love and care of God over his Word and church, I know not; sure I am, it is both in a high degree. The translation especially insisted on by him is that of the LXX. That this translation—either from the mistakes of its first authors, (if it be theirs whose name and number it bears,) or the carelessness, or ignorance, or worse, of its transcribers—is corrupted and gone off from the original in a thousand places twice told, is acknowledged by all who know aught of these things. Strange that so corrupt a stream should be judged a fit means to cleanse the fountain; that such a Lesbian rule should be thought a fit measure to correct the original by; and yet on the account hereof, with some others not one whit better, (or scarce so good,) we have one thousand eight hundred and twenty-six various lections exhibited unto us, with frequent insinuations of an infinite number more yet

1 Reading, in the margin, and writing, in the line.
2 Ablatio scribarum, or the amendment of some small apiculi in eighteen places.
3 Ablatio scribarum, or a note of the redundancy of in five places. (Vid. Raymond., Pugio Fid. Petrus Galat., lib. i. cap. 8.)
4 Hebræi V. T. Codices per universum terrarum orbem, per Europam, Asiam, et Africam, ubique sibi sunt similes, codémque modo ab omnibus scribuntur et leguntur; si forte exigus quasdam apiculum quorundam differentias excipias, quæ ipse tamen nullam varietatem efficiunt. (Bux. Vin. Vor. Heb. ii. cap. 14.)
5 Ludovicus Cappellus, in his “Critica Sacra.”
to be collected. It were desirable that men would be content to show
their learning, reading, and diligence, about things where there is less
danger in adventures.

Nor is the relief Cappellus provides against the charge of bringing
things to an uncertainty in the Scripture, (which he found himself
obnoxious unto,) less pernicious than the opinion he seeks to palliate
thereby; although it be since taken up and approved by others.¹

"The saving doctrine of the Scripture," he tells us,² "as to the matter
and substance of it, in all things of moment, is preserved in the copies
of the original and translations that do remain."

It is indeed a great relief against the inconvenience of corrupt
translations, to consider that although some of them be bad enough,
yet, if all the errors and mistakes that are to be found in all
the rest should be added to the worst of all, every necessary, sav-
ing, fundamental truth, would be found sufficiently testified unto
therein. But to depress the sacred truth of the originals into such
a condition as wherein it should stand in need of this apology, and
that without any colour or pretence from discrepancies in the copies
themselves that are extant, or any tolerable evidence that there ever
were any other in the least differing from these extant in the world,
will at length be found a work unbecoming a Christian, Protestant
divine. Besides the injury done hereby to the providence of God
towards his church, and care of his Word, it will not be found so
easy a matter, upon a supposition of such corruption in the originals
as is pleaded for, to evince unquestionably that the whole saving
doctrine itself, at first given out from God, continues entire and incor-
rupt. The nature of this doctrine is such, that there is no other
principle or means of its discovery, no other rule or measure of
judging and determining any thing about or concerning it, but only
the writing from whence it is taken; it being wholly of divine
revelation, and that revelation being expressed only in that writing.
Upon any corruption, then, supposed therein, there is no means of
rectifying it. It were an easy thing to correct a mistake or cor-
rupution in the transcription of any problem or demonstration of
Euclid, or any other ancient mathematician, from the consideration
of the things themselves about which they treat being always the
same, and in their own nature equally exposed to the knowledge and

¹ Proleg. ad Bibl. Polyglot.
² Satis ergo est quod eadem salutaris doctrina qua fuit à Mose, prophetis, apos-
tolis et evangelistis in suis autographis primum literis consignata, eadem omnino
pariter in textibus Graeco et Hebraeo, et in translationibus cum veteribus, tum
recentibus, clare certò et sufficienter inveniatur. Pariter illæ omnes utcùm
textibus Graeco et Hebraeo sunt et dici possunt authenticae, sacrae, divinae,
Síntuostet—respectu materiaric, &c. Sunt in Scripturis multa alia non usque adeo
scita necessaria, &c. (Cappel. Critic. Sac., lib. vi, cap. 5, § 10, 11.)
understanding of men in all ages. In things of pure revelation—
whose knowledge depends solely on their revelation—it is not so. Nor
is it enough to satisfy us, that the doctrines mentioned are preserved
entire; every tittle and iota in the Word of God must come under
our care and consideration, as being, as such, from God. But of these
things we shall treat afterward at large. Return we now to the
apostle.

This ἤφθον τοῦ γεγενημένου, this written prophecy, this λόγος προφητικός,
saith he, ἵδιας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται—"is not of any private interpre-
tation." Some think that ἐπιλύσεως is put for ἐπιθέμενος or ἐπιθετός,
which, according to Hesychius, denotes affliction, inspiration, concep-
tion within: so Calvin. In this sense, the importance of the words
is the same with what I have already mentioned, viz., that the
prophets had not their private conceptions, or self-fancied enthuz-
siasms, of the things they spake. To this interpretation assents
Grotius. And ἐπιλύσεως for ἐπιλύσεως is reckoned amongst the various
lections that are gathered out of him, in the appendix to the Biblia
Polyglotta. Thus ἵδιας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται is the other side of that
usual expression, ἑπιθέμεν εἰς τὸν λόγον, or τὸ νεώμα. Camero con-
tends for the retaining of ἐπιλύσεως; and justly. We begin a little
too late to see whither men's bold conjectures, in correcting the
original text of the Scriptures, are like to proceed. Here is no colour
for a various lection. One copy, it seems, by Stephen, read διαλύσεως,
without ground, by an evident error; and such mistakes are not to be
allowed the name or place of various readings. But yet, says
Camero, ἐπιλύσεως is such a "resolution" and interpretation as is made
by revelation. He adds, that in that sense ἐπιθέμεν is used by the
LXX. in the business of Joseph's interpretation of Pharaoh's dream,
(Gen. xl.), which was by revelation. But indeed the word is not used
in that chapter. However, he falls in with this sense—as do Calvin
and Grotius—that ἵδιας ἐπιλύσεως is not to be referred to our inter-
pretation of the prophets, but to the way and manner of their receiv-
ing the counsel and will of God.

And, indeed, ἵδιας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται—taking ἐπιλύσεως for an inter-
pretation of the word of prophecy given out by writing, as our trans-
lation bears it—is an expression that can scarcely have any tolerable
sense affixed unto it. Γίνεται, or οὐ γίνεται, relates here to προφητεία
γραφῆς, and denotes the first giving out of the Word, not our after-
consideration of its sense and meaning. And without this sense it
stands in no coherence with, nor opposition to, the following sen-
tence, which, by its causal connection to this, manifests that it ren-
ders a reason of what is herein affirmed in the first place; and in
the latter—turning with the adversative ἄλλα— an opposition unto it:
Οὐ γὰρ ἔστησεν ἄνθρωπον ἦν ἡχόν ποτε προφητεία, ἄλλα ὡς Πνεύματος ἄγιου
“For prophecy came not at any time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” What reason is in the first part of this verse why the Scripture is not of our private interpretation? or what opposition in the latter to that assertion? Nay, on that supposal, there is no tolerable correspondency of discourse in the whole περιφέρεια. But take the word to express the coming of the prophecy to the prophets themselves, and the sense is full and clear.

This, then, is the intention of the apostle: The prophecy which we have written—the Scripture—was not an issue of men’s fancied enthusiasms, not a product of their own minds and conceptions, not an interpretation of the will of God by the understanding of man—that is, of the prophets themselves. Neither their rational apprehensions, inquiries, conceptions of fancy, or imaginations of their hearts, had any place in this business; no self-afflation, no rational meditation, managed at liberty by the understanding and will of men, had place herein.

Of this saith the apostle, Τοῦτο πρῶτον γνώσκοντες—“Knowing, judging, and determining this in the first place:” “this is a principle to be owned and acknowledged by every one that will believe any thing else.” γνώσκω is not only to know, to perceive, to understand; but also to judge, own, and acknowledge. This, then, in our religion, is to be owned, acknowledged, submitted unto, as a principle, without further dispute. To discover the grounds of this submission and acknowledgment is the business of the ensuing discourse.

That this is so indeed, as before asserted, and to give a reason why this is to be received as a principle, he adds, (verse 21,) οὐ γὰρ Θελήματι ἀνθρώπου ἡνίχωση ποτὶ προφητείαν. That word of prophecy which we have written, is not ἴδιας ἐπιλέσεως—“of private conception”—“for it came not at any time by the will of man.” ἡνίχωσι, which is the passive conjugation of φέρω from ἔνιγμα, denotes at least to be “brought in”—more than merely it “came”—it was brought into them by the will of God. The affirmative, as to the will of God, is included in the negative, as to the will of man; or it came as the voice from heaven to our Saviour on the mount. (Verse 18, where the same word is used.) So Ezek. i. 3, יבר נתן הנ, “essendo fuit verbum,” it was brought into him, as was showed before. Thus God brought the word to them, and spake in them, in order of nature, before he spake by them. As ἡνίχωσι, it was brought to them, it was נתן לוע, “the voice of the Lord,” (Gen. iii. 8,) or לוע נצ, as the Jews call it: as spoken by them, or written, it was properly נתן לוע, “verbum Dei,” “the word of God,” which by his immediate voice he signified to the prophets. Thus some of them, in visions, first ate a written book and then prophesied, as was instanced before. And this is the first spring
of the Scripture—the beginning of its emanation from the counsel and will of God. By the power of the Holy Ghost it was brought into the organs or instruments that he was pleased to use, for the revelation and declaration of it unto others.

That which remains for the completing of this dispensation of the Word of God unto us is added by the apostle: 'πνεύματος άγίου σεφήμουν ἐν άληθείᾳ άγίων. When the word was thus brought to them, it was not left to their understandings, wisdoms, minds, memories, to order, dispose, and give it out; but they were borne, acted, [acted] carried out by the Holy Ghost, to speak, deliver, and write all that, and nothing but that—to every tittle—that was so brought to them. They invented not words themselves, suited to the things they had learned, but only expressed the words that they received. Though their mind and understandings were used in the choice of words, (whence arise all the differences—that is, in their manner of expression—for they did use 三亚νι “words of will,” or choice,) yet they were so guided, that their words were not their own, but immediately supplied unto them. And so they gave out 三亚νι νεώς, the "writing of uprightness," and ἡ ἔπαθμα, "words of truth" itself. (Eccles. xii. 10.) Not only the doctrine they taught was the word of truth—truth itself, (John xvii. 17,)—but the words whereby they taught it were words of truth from God himself. Thus, allowing the contribution of passive instruments for the reception and representation of words—which answer the mind and tongue of the prophets, in the coming of the voice of God to them—every apex of the written Word is equally divine, and as immediately from God as the voice wherewith, or whereby, he spake to or in the prophets; and is, therefore, accompanied with the same authority in itself, and unto us.

What hath been thus spoken of the scripture of the Old Testament, must be also affirmed of the New, with this addition of advantage and pre-eminence, viz., that ἀρχὴν ἐλαβεν πάλινδιου διὰ τοῦ Κυρίου, (Heb. ii. 3,) "it received its beginning of being spoken by the Lord himself." God spake in these last days, εν τω τῷ, "in the Son." (Heb. i. 2.)

Thus God, who himself began the writing of the Word with his own finger, (Exod. xxxi. 18)—after he had spoken it, (Exod. xx.,) appointing or approving the writing of the rest that followed, (Deut. xxxi. 12; Josh. xxiii. 6; 1 Kings ii. 3; 2 Kings xiv. 6, xvii. 13; 1 Chron. xii. 13; 2 Chron. xxv. 4; Ezek. ii. 8-10; Hab. ii. 2; Luke xvi. 29; John v. 39, xx. 31; Acts xvii. 11,)—doth lastly command the close of the immediate revelation of his will to be written in a book; (Rev. i. 11;) and so gives out the whole of his mind and counsel unto us in writing, as a merciful and stedfast relief against all that confusion, darkness, and uncertainty, which the vanity, folly, and looseness of the minds of men—drawn out and heightened by the unspeak-
able alterations that fall out amongst them—would otherwise have certainly run into.

Thus we have laid down the original of the Scriptures from the Scripture itself. And this original is the basis and foundation of all its authority. Thus is it from God—entirely from him. As to the doctrine contained in it, and the words wherein that doctrine is delivered, it is wholly his; what that speaks, he speaks himself. He speaks in it and by it; and so it is vested with all the moral authority of God over his creatures.

CHAPTER II.

The main question proposed to consideration—How we may know assuredly the Scripture to be the word of God—The Scripture to be received by divine faith—The authority of God the foundation—The way whereby that authority is evidenced or made known—The various ways of God’s revealing himself and his mind—1. By his works; 2. By the light of nature; 3. By his word—All of these evince themselves to be from him, his word especially.

Having laid, in the foregoing chapter, the foundation that we are to build and proceed upon, I come now to lay down the inquiry, whose resolution must thence be educed. That, then, which we are seeking after, is, how we, and the rest of men in the world, who, through the merciful dispensation of God, have the book or books wherein the scripture given out from him (as above declared) is contained, or said to be contained—we, who live so many ages from the last person who received any part of it immediately from God, or who have not received it immediately ourselves—may come to be ascertained, [assuredly] as to all ends and purposes wherein we may be concerned therein, that the whole and entire written word in that book, or those books, hath the original, and consequently the authority, that it pleads and avows—viz., that it is εἰς ὕψινου, and not εἰς ἅπαντιάν, from God, in the way and manner laid down, and not the invention of men, attending to συστασιμόνος μύθος, (2 Pet. i. 16,) or “cunningly devised fables.”

Now, seeing it is expected from us, and required of us, by God himself, and that on the penalty of his eternal displeasure if we fail in our duty, (2 Thess. i. 7–10,) that we receive the Scripture not as we do other books—in relation to their authors—with a firm opinion, built on prevailing probable arguments, prevalent against any actual conclusions to the contrary—but with divine and supernatural faith—omitting all such inductions as serve only to ingenerate a persuasion not to be cast out of the mind by contrary reasonings or objections—it is especially inquired, What is the foundation and formal reason of our doing so, if we so do? Whatever that be, it returns an answer to this important question, “Why, or on what account, do you
believe the Scriptures, or books of the Old and New Testament, to be the word of God?" Now the formal reason of things being but one—whatever consideration may be had of other inducements or arguments to beget in us a persuasion that the Scripture is the word of God, yet they have no influence on that divine faith where-with we are bound to believe them. They may, indeed, be of some use to repel the objections that are, or may be, raised against the truth we believe—and so indirectly cherish and further faith itself—but as to a concurrence unto the foundation, or formal reason, of our believing, it is not capable of it.

Having, then, laid down the divine original of the Scriptures, and opened the manner of the Word's coming forth from God, an answer shall now, on that sole foundation, be returned to the inquiry laid down. And this I shall do in the ensuing position:—

The authority of God, the supreme Lord of all, the first and only absolute Truth, whose word is truth—speaking in and by the penmen of the Scriptures—evinced singly in and by the Scripture itself—is the sole bottom and foundation, or formal reason, of our assenting to those Scriptures as his word, and of our submitting our hearts and consciences unto them with that faith and obedience which morally respect him, and are due to him alone.

God speaking in the penmen of the Scripture, (Heb. i. 1,) his voice to them was accompanied with its own evidence, which gave assurance unto them; and God speaking by them or their writings unto us, his word is accompanied with its own evidence, and gives assurance unto us. His authority and veracity did, and do, in the one and the other, sufficiently manifest themselves, that men may quietly repose their souls upon them, in believing and obedience. Thus are we built εἰς τῷ Ἐρεμίῳ τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν, (Eph. ii. 20,) "on the foundation of the apostles and prophets," in our believing.

That, then, which (to the establishment of the souls of believers) I shall labour to prove and evince, is plainly this, viz., that the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament do abundantly and uncontrollably manifest themselves to be the word of the living God; so that, merely on the account of their own proposal of themselves unto us in the name and majesty of God, as such—without the contribution of help or assistance from tradition, church, or any thing else without themselves—we are obliged, upon the penalty of eternal damnation, (as are all to whom by any means they come, or are brought,) to receive them, with that subjection of soul which is due to the word of God. The authority of God shining in them, they afford unto us all the divine evidence of themselves which God is willing to grant unto us, or can be granted us, or is any way needful for us. So, then, the authority of the written Word—in itself
and unto us—is from itself, as the Word of God; and the evocation of that authority unto us, is by itself.

When the authority of the Scripture is inquired after, strictly its power to command and require obedience, in the name of God, is intended. To ask, then, whence it hath its authority, is to ask whence it hath its power to command in the name of God. Surely men will not say, that the Scripture hath its power to command in the name of God from any thing but itself. And it is, indeed, a contradiction for men to say that they give authority to the Scriptures. Why do they do so? why do they give this authority to that book rather than another? They must say, Because it is the Word of God. So the reason why they give authority unto it is the formal reason of all its authority, which it hath antecedently to their charter and concession of power: "O λόγος ὁ θεός ἀληθινός ἐστι, (John xvii. 17,) "Thy word is truth."

Some say, indeed, that the Scripture hath its authority in itself, and from itself, or its own divine original, but not quoad nos, "in respect of us;" [that in order] that it may reach us, that we may know, and understand, and submit to its authority, it must be testified unto aliunde, "from some other person or thing," appointed thereunto.

Ans. 1. But may not this be said of God himself, as well as of his Word? If God reveal himself to us, it must be by means; and if those means may not be understood to reveal him unless they are testified unto from somewhere else, God cannot reveal himself to us.

"Si Deus hominibus non placuerit, utique Deus non erit." If God and his Word will keep themselves within themselves, to themselves, they may be God and his Word still, and keep their authority; but if they will deal with us, and put forth their commands to us, let them look that they get the church's testimonials—or, on this principle, they may be safely rejected! But,

2. Authority is a thing that no person or thing can have in him or itself, that hath it not in respect of others. In its very nature it relates to others that are subject unto it. All authority arises from relation, and answers to it throughout. The authority of God over his creatures, is from their relation to him as their Creator. A king's authority is in respect of his subjects; and he who hath no subjects hath no kingly authority in himself, but is only a stoical king. The authority of a minister relates to his flock; and he who hath no flock hath no authority of a minister: if he have not a ministerial authority, in reference to a flock, a people, a church, he hath none, he can have none in himself. So is it in this case; if the Scripture hath no authority from itself in respect of us, it hath none in itself, nor can have. If it hath it in itself, it hath it in respect of us. Such a respect—that is, a right to command and oblige to obedience—is as inseparable from authority, or a moral power, as heat is from
fire. It is true, a man may have, de jure, a lawful authority over those whom, de facto, he cannot force or compel to obedience. But want of force doth not lessen authority. God loseth not his authority over men though he put not forth towards them ἵππες ὑπάλληλον μέσας τῆς δύναμος, or ἐνέργειας τοῦ χράτους τῆς ἰσχύος, "the greatness of his power, or the efficacy of the might of his strength," to cause them to obey. It is fond, [foolish,] then, to imagine that a man, or any thing, should have an authority in himself or itself, and yet not have that authority in respect of them who are to be subject thereunto. That is not a law properly at all, which is not a law to some. Besides, all the evil of disobedience relates to the authority of him that requires the obedience. (James ii. 10, 11.) No action is disobedience, but from the subjection of him who performs it unto him who requires obedience. And, therefore, if the Scripture hath not an authority in itself towards us, there is no evil in our disobedience unto its commands, or in our not doing what it commandeth; and our doing what it forbiddeth is not disobedience, because it hath not an authority over us. I speak of it as considered in itself, before the accession of the testimony pretended [to be] necessary to give it an authority over us. Hitherto, then, have we carried this objection—

To disobey the commands of the Scripture before the communication of a testimony unto it by men is no sin. Credat Apella.

The sense, then, of our position, is evident and clear; and so our answer to the inquiry made. The Scripture hath all its authority from its Author, both in itself and in respect of us. That it hath the Author and original pleaded for, it declares itself, without any other assistance—by the ways and means that shall afterward be insisted on. The truth whereof I shall now confirm—1st, By one general induction; 2d, By testimonies; 3d, By arguments, expressing the ways and means of its revelation of itself.

There are three ways whereby God, in several degrees, revealeth himself, his properties, his mind, and will, to the sons of men.

1. He doth it by his works, both of creation and providence. "All thy works praise thee." (Ps. cxlv. 10, &c.) "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world." (Ps. xix. 1-4, &c.) So Job xxxvii., xxxviii., xxxix., throughout. "God, who made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein, in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways; yet he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness."
(Acts xiv. 15-17.) And, "God, that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; and hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation," ζητεῖ τὸν Κύριον ἐν ἅγιοις ὑπολογίζουσιν αὐτὸν καὶ ὑπορεῖν, "that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him." (Acts xvii. 24-27.) "For that which may be known of God is manifest in them, for God hath showed it unto them; for the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead." (Rom. i. 18-20.) All which places (God assisting) shall be opened, before long, in another treatise. The sum of them amounts to what was before laid down, viz., that God reveals and declares himself unto us by the works of his hands.

2. God declares himself—his sovereign power and authority, his righteousness and holiness—by the innate (or ingrafted) light of nature, and principles of the consciences of men. That indispensable moral obedience which he requireth of us, as his creatures, and subject to his law, is in general thus made known unto us. For "the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law; these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves; which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another." (Rom. ii. 14, 15.) By the light that God hath indelibly implanted in the minds of men—accompanied with a moral instinct of good and evil, seconded by that self-judgment which he hath placed in us, in reference to his own judgment over us—doth he reveal himself unto the sons of men.

3. God reveals himself by his Word, as is confessed. It remains, then, that we inquire how we may know and be ascertained that these things are not deceivable pretences, but that God doth indeed so reveal himself by them.

The works of God (as to what is his will to teach and reveal of himself by them) have that expression of God upon them—that stamp and character of his eternal power and Godhead—that evidence with them that they are his—that, wherever they are seen and considered, they undeniably evince that they are so, and that what they teach concerning him, they do it in his name and authority. There is no need of traditions, no need of miracles, no need of the authority of any churches, to convince a rational creature that the works of God are his, and his only; and that he is eternal and infinite in

1 Θεουγοβίαν, sive De Natura, Ortu, et Studoli Theologia.
power that made them. They carry about with them their own authority. By being what they are, they declare whose they are. To reveal God by his works, there is need of nothing but that they be by themselves represented, or objected to the consideration of rational creatures.

The voice of God in nature is in like manner effectual. It declares itself to be from God by its own light and authority. There is no need to convince a man by substantial witnesses, that what his conscience speaks, it speaks from God. Whether it bear testimony to the being, righteousness, power, omniscience, or holiness of God himself—or whether it call for that moral obedience which is eternally and indispensably due to Him, and so shows forth the “work of the law in the heart”—it so speaks and declares itself, that without further evidence or reasoning, without the advantage of any considerations but what are by itself supplied, it discovers its Author, from whom it is, and in whose name it speaks. Those προλ.ψεις, “those common notions and general presumptions” of Him and His authority, that are inlaid in the natures of rational creatures by the hand of God, to this end, that they might make a revelation of Him as to the purposes mentioned, are able to plead their own divine original, without the least contribution of strength or assistance from without.

And thus is it with those things. Now, the Psalmist says unto God, (Ps. cxxxviii. 2,) “Thou hast magnified “over all thy name, thy Word” [which] thou hast spoken. The name of God is all that whereby he makes himself known. Over all this God magnifies his Word. It all lies in a subserviency thereunto. The name of God is not here God himself, but every thing whereby God makes himself known. Now, it were very strange, that those low, dark, and obscure principles and means of the revelation of God and his will, which we have mentioned, should be able to evince themselves to be from him, without any external help, assistance, testimony, or authority; and [that] which is by God himself magnified above them—which is far more noble and excellent in itself, and, in respect of its end and order, hath far more divinely conspicuous and glorious impressions and characters of his goodness, holiness, power, grace, truth, than all the creation—should lie dead, obscure, and have nothing in itself to reveal its Author, until this or that superadded testimony be called in to its assistance. We esteem them to have done no service unto the truth, who, amongst innumerable other bold denials, have insisted on this also—that there is no natural knowledge of God, arising from the innate principles of reason, and the works of God proposing themselves to the consideration thereof. Let now the way to the progress of supernatural revelation be obstructed, by denying that it is able to
evinced itself to be from God, and we shall quickly see what banks are cut, to let in a flood of atheism upon the face of the earth.

Let us consider the issue of this general induction: As God, in the creation of the world, and all things therein contained, hath so made and framed them, hath left such characters of his eternal power and wisdom in them and upon them, filled them with such evidences of their Author, suited to the apprehensions of rational creatures, that without any other testimony from himself, or any else—under the naked consideration and contemplation of what they are—they so far declare their Creator, that they are left wholly inexcusable who will not learn and know him from thence; so in the giving out of his Word to be the foundation of that world which he hath set up in this world, as נאשנ ויתמ פסונ, "a wheel within a wheel"—his church—he hath, by his Spirit, implanted in it and impressed on it such characters of his goodness, power, wisdom, holiness, love to mankind, truth, faithfulness, with all the rest of his glorious excellencies and perfections, that at all times, and in all places, when יתק, "the expansion" of it, is stretched over men by his providence—without any other witness or testimony given unto it—it declares itself to be his, and makes good its authority from him; so that the refusal of it upon its own evidence brings unavoidable condemnation on the souls of men. This comparison is insisted on by the Psalmist, Ps. xix.; where, as he ascribeth רס and ר, a "voice" and "line," to the creatures, so רס, &c., light, power, stability, and permanency, like that of the heavens and sun, (in commutation of properties,) to the Word, and in an inexpressible exaltation of it above them; the light of one day of this sun being unspeakably more than that of seven others, as to the manifestation of the glory of God.

This, then, is fixed as a principle of truth: Whatever God hath appointed to reveal himself by, as to any special or general end—that those whom he intends to discover himself unto may either be effectually instructed in his mind and will, according to the measure, degree, and means of the revelation afforded, or be left inexcusable for not receiving the testimony that he gives of himself, by any plea or pretence of want of clear, evident, manifest revelation—that whatever it be, hath such an impression of his authority upon it, as undeniably to evince that it is from him. And this, now, concerning his Word, comes further to be confirmed by testimonies and arguments.
CHAPTER III.

Arguments of two sorts—Inartificial arguments, by way of testimony to the truth—
To whom these arguments are valid—Of Σαρκοστροφια—The rejection of a plea of
Σαρκοστροφια, wherein it consists—Of miracles, their efficacy to beget faith com-
pared with the word.

Having declared the divine original and authority of the Scripture, and explained the position laid down as the foundation of our ensuing discourse, way is now made for us to the consideration of those self-
evidences of its divine rise, and consequently authority, that it is attended withal, [and] upon the account whereof we receive it, as (believing it to be) the Word of God.

The arguments whereby any thing is confirmed are of two sorts; inartificial, by the way of testimony; and artificial, by the way of deductions and inferences. Whatever is capable of contributing evidence unto truth falls under one of these two heads. Both these kinds of proofs we make use of in the business in hand. Some profess they own the authority of the Scriptures, and also urge others so to do; but they will dispute on what grounds and accounts they do so. With those we may deal, in the first way, by testimony from the Scriptures themselves; which upon their own principles they cannot refuse. When they shall be pleased to inform us that they have relinquished those principles, and do no longer own the Scripture to be the word of God, we will withdraw the witnesses, upon their exceptions, whom for the present we make use of. Testimonies that are innate and ingrafted in the Word itself, used only as mediums of artificial arguments to be deduced from them, (which are of the second sort,) may be used towards them who at present own not the authority of the Scripture on any account whatever, or who are desirous to put on themselves the persons of such men, to try their skill and ability for the management of a controversy against the Word of God.

In both these cases the testimony of the Scripture is pleaded, and is to be received, or cannot with any pretence of reason be refused. In the former, upon the account of the acknowledged authority and veracity of the witness, though speaking in its own case; in the latter, upon the account of that self-evidence which the testimony insisted on is accompanied withal, made out by such reasonings and arguments as, for the kind of them, persons who own not its authority cannot but admit. In human things, if a man of known integrity and unspotted reputation bear witness in any cause, and give uncontrollable evidence to his testimony, from the very nature and order of the things whereof he speaks, as it is expected that those who know and admit of his integrity and reputation do acquiesce in his assertion, so those to whom he is a stranger, who are not moved by his authority, will yet be overcome to assent to what is witnessed by
him, from the nature of the things he asserts, especially if there be an coincidence of all such circumstances as are any way needful to give evidence to the matter in hand.

Thus it is in the case under consideration. For those who profess themselves to believe the Scriptures to be the word of God, and so own the credit and fidelity of the witness, it may reasonably be expected from them, yea, in strict justice demanded of them, that they stand to the testimony that they give to themselves and their own divine original. By saying that the Scripture is the word of God, and then commanding us to prove it so to be, they render themselves obnoxious unto every testimony that we produce from it that so it is, and that it is to be received on its own testimony. This witness they cannot waive without disavowing their own professed principles; without which principles they have not the least colour of imposing this task on us.

As for them with whom we have not the present advantage of their own acknowledgment, it is not reasonable to impose upon them with the bare testimony of that witness concerning whom the question is, Whether he be worthy the acceptation pleaded for? but yet arguments taken from the Scripture—from what it is and doth, its nature and operation, by which the causes and springs of all things are discovered—are not to be refused.

But it is neither of these that principally I intend to deal withal; my present discourse is rather about the satisfaction of our own consciences, than the answering of others' objections. Only we must satisfy our consciences upon such principles as will stand against all men's objections. This, then, is chiefly inquired after, viz., what it is that gives such an assurance of the Scriptures being the word of God, as that, relying thereon, we have a sure bottom and foundation for our receiving them as such; and from whence it is that those who receive them not in that manner are left inexcusable in their damnable unbelief. This, we say, is in and from the Scripture itself; so that there is no other need of any further witness or testimony, nor is any, in the same kind, to be admitted.

It is not at all in my purpose to insist largely at present on this subject, and, therefore, I shall content myself with instancing some few testimonies and arguments, beginning with one or two of the first sort. Isa. viii. 20: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, there is no light in them." Whatever any one says—be it what or who it will, church or person—if it be in or about the things of God, concerning his will or worship, with our obedience to him, it is to be tried by the law and testimony. Hither we are sent; this is asserted to be the rule and standard, the touchstone of all speakings whatever. Now, that must speak alone
for itself which must try the speaking of all but itself, yea, its own also.

But what doth this law and testimony—that is, this written Word—plead, on the account whereof it should be thus attended unto? What doth it urge for its acceptation? Tradition, authority of the church, miracles, consent of men? or doth it speak ἀντικρατορικῶς, and stand only upon its own sovereignty? The apostle gives us his answer to this inquiry, (2 Tim. iii. 16,) Πᾶσα γραφὴ ἡ ἣν πλεῖον ἰδεῖται. Its plea for reception—in comparison with and opposition unto all other ways of coming to the knowledge of God, his mind and will—founded wherein it calls for attendance and submission with supreme, uncontrollable authority, is its ἡ ἡγεμονία, or "divine inspiration." It remains, then, only to be inquired, whether, when ἡ ἡγεμονία is pleaded, there be any middle way, but either that it be received with divine faith or rejected as false.

Suppose a man were ἡ ἡγεμονία, "divinely inspired," and should so profess himself in the name of the Lord, as did the prophets of old; (Amos vii.) supposing, I say, he were so indeed, it will not be denied but that his message were to be received and submitted unto on that account. The denial of it would justify them who "rejected and slew those that spake unto them in the name of the Lord." And that is to say, in plain terms, we may reject them whom God sends. Though miracles were given only with respect to persons, not things, yet most of the prophets who wrought no miracles insisted on this, that being ἡ ἡγεμονία, "divinely inspired," their doctrine was to be received as from God. On their so doing, it was sin, even unbelief and rebellion against God, not to submit to what they spake in his name. And it always so fell out—to fix our faith on the right bottom—that scarce any prophet that spake in the name of God had any approbation from the church in whose days he spake. (Matt. v. 12, xxiii. 29; Luke xi. 47, 48; Acts vii. 52; Matt. xxi. 33-39.) It is true, ἔγειναι ἡ ἡγεμονία ἑβοδοροφηταὶ ἐν τῷ λαῷ, (2 Pet. ii. 1,) "there were false prophets among the people," that spake in the name of the Lord, when he sent them not. (Jer. xxiii. 21.) Yet were those whom he did send to be received on pain of damnation: on the same penalty were the others to be refused. (Jer. xxiii. 28, 29.) The foundation of this duty lies in the τὸ Ἴδεν that accompanied the word that was ἐν ἡ ἡγεμονίᾳ: of which afterward. And, without a supposal hereof, it could not consist with the goodness and righteousness of God to require of men—under the penalty of his eternal displeasure—to make such a discrimination, where he had not given them τέκμήρια, "infallible tokens," to enable them so to do.

But that he had and hath done so, he declares, (Jer. xxiii. 26-29,) "How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy
lies? that are prophets of the deceit of their own heart, which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams, which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the Lord. Is not my word like a fire? saith the Lord, and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?” In the latter days of that church, when the people were most eminently perplexed with false prophets—both as to their number and subtlety—yet God lays their eternal and temporal safety or ruin on their discerning aright between his word and that which was only pretended so to be. And that they might not complain of this imposition, he tenders them security of its casiness of performance. Speaking of his own word comparatively, as to every thing that is not so, he says it is as wheat to chaff, which may infallibly—by being what it is—be discerned from it; and then absolutely, that it hath such properties as that it will discover itself—even light, and heat, and power. A person, then, who was truly Θεότυκειος, was to be attended unto because he was so.

As, then, it was said before, the Scriptures being Θεότυκειος, is not the case the same as with a man that was so? Is there any thing in the writing of it by God’s command that should impair its authority? Nay, is it not freed from innumerable prejudices that attended it in its first giving out by men, arising from the personal infirmities and supposed interests of them that delivered it? (Jer. xliii. 3; John ix. 29; Acts xxiv. 5.)

This being pleaded by it, and insisted on, its testimony is received, or it is not. If it be received on this account, there is in it, we say, the proper basis and foundation of faith, whereon it hath its θεότυκειος, or “subsistence.” If it be rejected, it must be not only with a refusal of its witness, but also with a high detestation of its pretence to be from God. What ground or plea for such a refusal and detestation any one hath, or can have, shall be afterward considered. If it be a sin to refuse it, it had been a duty to receive it; if a duty to receive it as the word of God, then was it sufficiently manifested so to be. Of the objection arising from them who pretend to this inspiration falsely, we have spoken before; and we are as yet dealing with them that own the book whereof we spake to be the word of God, and only call in question the grounds on which they do so, or on which others ought so to do. As to these, it may suffice, that—in the strength of all the authority and truth they profess to own and acknowledge in it—it declares the foundation of its acceptance to be no other but its own divine inspiration. Hence it is λόγος πάσης ἀποδοχῆς Ἀξιος.
Again, in that dispute that was between Abraham and the rich man, (Luke xvi. 31,) about the best and most effectual means of bringing men to repentance: the rich man in hell, speaking his own conception, fixes upon miracles—if one rise from the dead and preach, the work will be done. Abraham is otherwise minded—that is, Christ was so, the author of that parable; he bids them attend to Moses and the prophets, the written Word, as that which all faith and repentance was immediately to be grounded on. The inquiry being, how men might be best assured that any message is from God, did not the Word manifest itself to be from him, this direction had not been equal.

The ground of the request for the rising of one from the dead, is laid in the common apprehension of men not knowing the power of God in the Scriptures; who think that if an evident miracle were wrought, all pretences and pleas of unbelief would be excluded. Who doth not think so? Our Saviour discovers that mistake, and lets men know that those who will not own or submit to the authority of God in the Word, would not be moved by the most signal miracles imaginable. If a holy man, whom we had known assuredly to have been dead for some years, should rise out of his grave and come unto us with a message from God, could any man doubt whether he were sent unto us of God or no? I suppose not. The rising of men from the dead was the greatest miracle that attended the resurrection of our Saviour; (Matt. xxvii. 52, 53;) yea, greater than his own, if the Socinians may be believed, viz., in that he raised not himself by his own power: yet the evidence of the mission of such a one, and the authority of God speaking in him—our Saviour being judge—is not of an efficacy to enforce belief, beyond that which is in the written Word, nor a surer foundation for faith to repose itself upon.

Could we hear a voice from heaven, accompanied with such a divine power as to evidence itself to be from God, should we not rest in it as such? I suppose men think they would. Can we think that any man should withdraw his assent, and say, Yea, but I must have some testimony that this is from God? All such evasions are precluded, in the supposition wherein a self-evidencing power is granted. What greater miracle did the apostles of Christ ever behold, or hear, than that voice that came ὅτι τῆς μεγαλοπρεποῦς δόξης, “from the excellent glory”—“This is my beloved Son?” Yet Peter, who heard that voice, tells us that, comparatively, we have greater security from and by the written Word than they had in and by that miraculous voice. We have βεβαιώτερον τὸν προφητικὸν λόγον. We heard, saith he, that voice indeed; but we have “a more sure word of prophecy” to attend unto—more sure, not in itself, but in its giving
out its evidence unto us. And how doth it appear so to be? The reason he alleges for it was before insisted on. (2 Pet. i. 18–21.)

Yea, suppose that God should speak to us from heaven as he spake to Moses, or as he spake to Christ; or from some certain place, as Numb. vii. 89; how should we be able to know it to be the voice of God? Cannot Satan cause a voice to be heard in the air, and so deceive us? or, may not there be some way (in this kind) found out, whereby men might impose upon us with their delusions? Pope Celestine thought he heard a voice from heaven, when it was but the cheat of his successor. Must we not rest at last in that τὸ Ἴδιον which accompanies the true voice of God evidencing itself, and ascertaining the soul beyond all possibility of mistake? Now, did not this τεκμηρίων accompany the written Word at its first giving forth? If it did not, as was said, how could any man be obliged to discern it from all delusions? If it did, how came it to lose it? Did God appoint his Word to be written, that so he might destroy its authority? If the question be, whether the doctrines proposed to be believed are truths of God, or "cunningly devised fables," we are sent to the Scripture itself, and that alone, to give the determination.

CHAPTER IV.

Innate arguments in the Scripture of its divine original and authority—Its self-evidencing efficacy—All light manifests itself—The Scripture light—Spiritual light evidential—Conseptories from the premises laid down—What the self-evidencing light of the Scripture peculiarly is—Power self-evidencing—The Scripture the power of God, and powerful—How this power exerts itself—The whole question resolved.

Having given some few instances of those many testimonies which the Scripture, in express terms, bears to itself, and the spring, rise, and fountain of all that authority which it claims among and over the sons of men—which all those who pretend, on any account whatever, to own and acknowledge its divinity, are bound to stand to, and are obliged by—the second thing proposed, or the innate arguments that the Word of God is furnished withal for its own manifestation, and whereby the authority of God is revealed, for faith to repose itself upon, comes in the next place into consideration. Now, these arguments contain the full and formal grounds of our answer to that inquiry before laid down, viz., why and wherefore we do receive and believe the Scripture to be the word of God. It being the formal reason of our faith, that whereon it is built and whereinto it is resolved, that is inquired after, we answer as we said before, We do so receive, embrace, believe, and submit unto it, because of the authority of God who speaks it, or gave it forth as his mind and will, evidencing itself by the Spirit in and with that Word,
unto our minds and consciences: or, because that the Scripture, being
brought unto us by the good providence of God, in ways of his
appointment and preservation, it doth evidence itself infallibly unto
our consciences to be the word of the living God.

The self-evidencing efficacy of the Scripture, and the grounds of it—which consist in common mediums, that have an extent and
latitude answerable to the reasons of men, whether as yet they
acknowledge it to be the word of God or no—are those, then, which, in
the remainder of this discourse, I shall endeavour to clear and
vindicate. This only I shall desire to premise, that whereas some
grounds of this efficacy seem to be placed in the things themselves
contained in the Scripture, I shall not consider them abstractedly as
such, but under the formality of their being the Scripture or written
Word of God; without which consideration and resolution the
things mentioned would be left naked, and utterly divested of their
authority and efficacy pleaded for, and be of no other nature and
importance than the same things found in other books. It is the
writing itself that now supplies the place and room of the persons
in and by whom God originally spake to men. As were the persons
speaking of old, so are the writings now. It was the word spoken
that was to be believed, yet as spoken by them from God; and it is
now the word written that is to be believed, yet as written by the
command and appointment of God.

There are, then, two things that are accompanied with a self-
evidencing excellency; and every other thing doth so, so far as it is
partaker of their nature, and no otherwise. Now, these are—1st,
Light; 2d, Power, for or in operation.

1. Light manifests itself. Whatever is light doth so; that is, it
doeth whatever is necessary on its own part for its manifestation and
discovery. Of the defects that are or may be in them to whom this
discovery is made we do not as yet speak; and “whatever manifests
itself is light”—τὰν γὰρ τὸ φανερώμενον φῶς ἢστι. (Eph. v. 13.) Light
requires neither proof nor testimony for its evidence. Let the sun
arise in the firmament, and there is no need of witnesses to prove
and confirm, unto a seeing man, that it is day. A small candle will
so do. Let the least child bring a candle into a room that before
was dark, and it would be a madness to go about to prove by sub-
stantial witnesses—men of gravity and authority—that light is brought
in. Doth it not evince itself with an assurance above all that can
be obtained by any testimony whatever? Whatever is light, either
naturally or morally so, is revealed by its being so. That which
evidenceth not itself is not light.

That the Scripture is a light we shall see immediately. That it is so,
or can be called so, unless it hath this nature and property of light, to
evidence itself as well as to give light unto others, cannot in any tolerable correspondence of speech be allowed. Whether light spiritual and intellectual regarding the mind, or natural with respect to bodily sight, be firstly and properly light, from whence the other is by allusion denominated, I need not now inquire. Both have the same properties in their several kinds. \( \phi \varepsilon \ \alpha \lambda \theta \varepsilon \iota \nu \nu \nu \ \phi \alpha \iota \iota \nu - " \) True light shineth." 'O \( \Theta \varepsilon \ \phi \varepsilon \ \iota \varepsilon \iota \iota - " \) God is light," and he inhabiteth \( \phi \varepsilon \ \alpha \pi \rho \tau \iota \sigma \tau \omicron \nu \) (1 Tim. vi. 16,) not a shining, glistering brightness, as some grossly imagine, but the glorious, unsearchable majesty of his own being, which is inaccessible to our understandings. So Isaiah, (livi. 15,) "God inhabiteth eternity." So \( \pi \rho \alpha \nu \ \nu \sigma \tau \iota \) saith the Psalmist, (civ. 2,) "Thou clodest thyself with light;" and Daniel, (ii. 22,) \( \alpha \nu \nu \ \tau \iota \mu \iota \rho \iota \ \alpha \nu \tau \iota \) the "light remaineth with him." God is light essentially, and is, therefore, known by the beaming of his eternal properties in all that outwardly is of him. And light abides with him as the fountain of it, he communicating light to all others. This being the fountain of all light, the more it participates of the nature of the fountain, the more it is light; and the more properly, as the properties and qualities of it are considered. It is, then, spiritual, moral, intellectual light, with all its mediums, that hath the preeminence, as to a participation of the nature and properties of light.

Now, the Scripture, the Word of God, is light. Those that reject it are called (Job xxiv. 13) \( \rho \iota \alpha \nu \alpha \nu \alpha \nu \) "light's rebels"—men resisting the authority which they cannot but be convinced of. (Ps. xix. 8, xliii. 3, cxix. 105, 130; Prov. vi. 23; Isa. ix. 2; Hos. vi. 5; Matt. iv. 16, v. 14; John iii. 20, 21.) It is a light so shining with the majesty of its Author, as that it manifests itself to be his, (2 Pet. i. 19,) "a light shining in a dark place," with an eminent advantage for its own discovery, as well as unto the benefit of others. Let a light be ever so mean and contemptible, yet if it shines, casts out beams and rays in a dark place, it will evidence itself. If other things be wanting in the faculty, the light, as to its innate glory and beauty, is not to suffer prejudice. But the Word is a glorious, shining light, as hath been showed; an illuminating light, compared to and preferred above the light of the sun. (Ps. xix. 5-8; Rom. x. 18.) Let not, then, a reproach be cast upon the most glorious light in the world, the most eminent reflection of uncreated light and excellencies, that will not be fastened on any thing that, on any account, is so called. (Matt. v. 16.)

Now, as the Scripture is thus a light, we grant it to be the duty of the church, of any church, of every church, to hold it up,

1 John Biddle, the father of English Socinians, in a catechism which he published in 1654.—Eb.
whereby it may become the more conspicuous. It is a pillar and
ground to set this light upon. (1 Tim. iii. 15.) \( \Sigma \tau \iota \lambda \omicron \nu \varsigma \varsigma \kappa \alpha i \iota \varepsilon \rho \alpha \iota \iota \mu \mu a \tau \gamma v \theta e i a s, \) may refer to the mystery of godliness in the next words
following, in good coherence of speech, as well as to the church;
but granting the usual reading, no more is affirmed but that the
light and truth of the Scripture are held up and held out by the
church. It is the duty of every church so to do—almost the whole
of its duty. And this duty it performs ministerially, not authorita-
tively. A church may bear up the light—it is not the light. It
bears witness to it, but kindles not one divine beam to further its
discovery. All the preaching that is in any church, its administra-
tion of ordinances, all its walking in the truth, hold up this light.

Nor doth it in the least impair this self-evidencing efficacy of the
Scripture, that it is a moral and spiritual, not a natural light. The
proposition is universal to all kinds of light; yea, more fully appli-
cable to the former than the latter. Light, I confess, of itself, will
not remove the defect of the visible faculty. It is not given for that
end. Light is not eyes. It suffices that there is nothing wanting on
its own part for its discovery and revelation. To argue that the sun
cannot be known to be the sun, or the great means of communicating
external light unto the world, because blind men cannot see it, nor
do know any more of it than they are told, will scarce be admitted;
nor doth it in the least impeach the efficacy of the light pleaded for,
that men stupidly blind cannot comprehend it. (John i. 5.)

I do not assert from hence, that wherever the Scripture is brought,
by what means soever, (which, indeed, is all one,) all that read it, or
to whom it is read, must instantly of necessity assent unto its divine
original. Many men who are not stark blind may have yet so
abused their eyes, that when a light is brought into a dark place
they may not be able to discern it. Men may be so prepossessed
with innumerable prejudices—principles received by strong traditions
—corrupt affections making them hate the light—that they may not
behold the glory of the Word when it is brought to them. But it is
nothing to our present discourse, whether any man living be able by
and of himself to discern this light, whilst the defect may be justly
cast on his own blindness. 2 Cor. iv. 2–4: "By manifestation
of the truth, commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the
sight of God. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are
lost: in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them
which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who
is the image of God, should shine unto them." There is, in the dis-
ensation of the Word, an evidence of truth commending itself to the
consciences of men. Some receive not this evidence. Is it for want
of light in the truth itself? No; that is a glorious light that shines

VOL. XVI.
into the hearts of men. Is it for want of testimony to assert this light? No; but merely because the god of this world hath blinded the eyes of men, that they should not behold it.

From what, then, hath been laid down, these two things may be inferred:—That as the authority of God—the first and only absolute truth in the Scripture—is that alone which divine faith rests upon, and is the formal object of it—so wherever the Word comes, by what means soever, it hath in itself a sufficiency of light to evidence to all (and will do it eventually to all that are not blinded by the god of this world) that authority of God its author; and the only reason why it is not received, by many in the world to whom it is come, is the advantage that Satan hath to keep them in ignorance and blindness, by the lusts, corruptions, prejudices, and hardness of their own hearts.

The Word, then, makes a sufficient proposition of itself, wherever it is; and he to whom it shall come, who refuses it because it comes not so or so testified, will give an account of his atheism and infidelity. He that hath the witness of God need not stay for the witness of men, for the witness of God is greater.

Wherever the Word is received indeed, as it requireth itself to be received, and is really assented unto as the Word of God, it is so received upon the evidence of that light which it hath in itself, manifestly declaring itself so to be. It is all one by what means, by what hand—whether of a child or a church, by accident or tradition, by common consent of men or peculiar providence—the Scripture comes unto us: come how it will, it hath its authority in itself and towards us by being the word of God—and hath its power of manifesting itself so to be from its own innate light.

Now, this light in the Scripture, for which we contend, is nothing but the beaming of the majesty, truth, holiness, and authority of God, given unto it and left upon it by its author, the Holy Ghost—an impress it hath of God's excellency upon it, distinguishing it by infallible τεκμήρια from the product of any creature. By this it dives into the consciences of men, into all the secret recesses of their hearts; guides, teaches, directs, determines, and judges in them, upon them, in the name, majesty, and authority of God. If men who are blinded by the god of this world, will yet deny this light because they perceive it not, it shall not prejudice them who do. By this self-evidencing light, I say, doth the Scripture make such a proposition of itself as the word of God, that whoever rejects it, doth it at the peril of his eternal ruin; and thereby a bottom or foundation is tendered for that faith which it requireth to repose itself upon.

For the proof, then, of the divine authority of the Scriptures unto him or them who, as yet, on no account whatever do acknowledge
it—I shall only suppose that, by the providence of God, the book itself be so brought unto him or them, as that he or they be engaged to the consideration of it, or do attend to the reading of it. This is the work of God's providence in the government of the world. Upon a supposal hereof I leave the Word with them, and if it evidence not itself unto their consciences, it is because they are blinded by the god of this world, which will be no plea for the refusal of it at the last day; and they who receive it not on this ground, will never receive it on any, as they ought.

2. The second sort of things that evidence themselves, are things of an effectual powerful operation in any kind. So doth fire by heat, the wind by its noise and force, salt by its taste and savour, the sun by its light and heat; so do also moral principles that are effectually operative. (Rom. ii. 14, 15.) Men in whom they are, ενδείκνυται τῷ ἐργῷ, "do manifest the work" of them, or manifest them by their work and efficacy. Whatever it be that hath an innate power in itself, that will effectually operate on a fit and proper subject—it is able to evidence itself, and its own nature and condition.

To manifest the interest of the Scripture to be enrolled among things of this nature—yea, (under God himself, who is known by his great power, and the effects of it,) to have the pre-eminence—I shall observe only one or two things concerning it, the various improvement whereof would take up more time and greater space than I have allotted to this discourse.

It is absolutely called the "power of God," and that unto its proper end; which way lies the tendency of its efficacy in operation. (Rom. i. 16.) It is δύναμις Θεοῦ, "vis, virtus Dei"—the "power of God." 'Ο λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ, the "word concerning the cross"—that is, the gospel—is δύναμις Θεοῦ, (1 Cor. i. 18,) the "power of God." And faith, which is built on that Word, without other helps or advantages, is said to stand in the "power of God;" (1 Cor. ii. 5;) that is, effectually working in and by the Word, it worketh ἐν ἄποδειξει Πνεύματος καὶ δυνάμεως, "in the demonstration of the Spirit and of power;" ἐν διά δυνοῦ—its spiritual power gives a demonstration of it. Thus it comes not as a naked word, (1 Thess. i. 5,) but in "power, and in the Holy Ghost;" and ἐν πληροφορίᾳ πολλῇ giving all manner of assurance and full persuasion of itself, even by its power and efficacy. Hence it is termed ὁ ῥῆμα, "the rod of power" or strength, (Ps. cx. 2,) denoting both authority and efficacy. Surely that which is thus the power and authority of God, is able to make itself known so to be.

It is not only said to be δύναμις, "power," the power of God in itself; but also δύναμεως, "able and powerful" in respect of us. "Thou
hast learned,” saith Paul to Timothy, τά ἰερὰ γράμματα, “the sacred letters,” (the written Word,) τὰ δυνάμενα οἱ σοφίαι εἰς σωτηρίαν, “which are able to make thee wise unto salvation.” They are powerful and effectual to that purpose. It is λόγος δυνάμεως σώσει τὰς ψυχὰς, (James i. 21,) “The word that hath power in it to save souls.” So Acts xx. 32: “I commend you” λόγῳ τῷ δυναμένῳ, “to the able, powerful word.” And that we may know what kind of power it hath, the apostle tells us that it is ζων πατὶ ἐνεργής—it is “living and effectual,” (Heb. iv. 12,) and “sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.” It is designed of God to declare τὰν ἐνεργειαν τῆς δυνάμεως, “the effectual working of his power.” (See John vi. 68, 69; 1 Cor. vi. 14, xv. 57; Gal. ii. 8.) By virtue of this power, it brought forth fruit in all the world. (Col. i. 6.) Without sword, without (for the most part) miracles, without human wisdom or oratory, without any inducements or motives but what were merely and solely taken from itself, consisting in things that “eye had not seen, nor ear heard, nor could enter into the heart of man to conceive,” hath it exerted this its power and efficacy to the conquest of the world—causing men of all sorts, in all times and places, so to fall down before its divine authority, as immediately to renounce all that was dear to them in the world, and to undergo whatever was dreadful, terrible, and destructive to nature in all its dearest concerns.

It hath been the work of many to insist on the particulars wherein this power exerts itself; so that I shall not enlarge upon them. In general, they have this advantage, that as they are all spiritual, so they are such: as have their seat, dwelling, and abode, in the hearts and consciences of men, whereby they are not liable to any exception, as though they were pretended. Men cannot harden themselves in the rejection of the testimony they give, by sending for magicians to do the like; or by any pretence that it is a common thing that is befallen them on whom the Word puts forth its power. The seat or residence of these effects is safe-guarded against all power and authority but that of God. Its diving into the hearts, consciences, and secret recesses of the minds of men; its judging and sentencing of them in themselves; its convictions, terrors, conquests, and killing of men; its converting, building up, making wise, holy, obedient; its administering consolations in every condition, and the like effects of its power, are usually spoken unto.

These are briefly the foundations of the answer returned to the inquiry formerly laid down, which might abundantly be enlarged—How know we that the Scripture is the word of God; how may others come to be assured thereof? The Scripture, say we, bears
testimony to itself that it is the word of God; that testimony is the witness of God himself, which whoso doth not accept and believe, he doth what in him lies to make God a liar. To give us an infallible assurance that, in receiving this testimony, we are not imposed upon by cunningly devised fables, the \( \alpha \iota \gamma \rho \alpha \rho \alpha i \), the \( \iota \varepsilon \alpha \gamma \rho \alpha \mu \alpha \tau \alpha \), “the Scriptures,” have that glory of light and power accompanying them, as wholly distinguisheth them by infallible signs and evidences from all words and writings not divine; conveying their truth and power into the souls and consciences of men with an infallible certainty. On this account are they received as from God by all that receive them, who have any real, distinguishing foundation of their faith, which would not be—separated from these grounds—as effectual an expedient for the reception of the Koran.

CHAPTER V.

Of the testimony of the Spirit—Traditions—Miracles.

Before I proceed to the consideration of those other testimonies, which are as arguments drawn from those innate excellencies and properties of the Word which I have insisted on, some other things, whose right understanding is of great importance in the cause under debate, must be laid down and stated. Some of these refer to that testimony of the Spirit that is usually and truly pleaded as the great ascertaining principle, or that on the account whereof we receive the Scriptures to be the word of God. That it may be seen in what sense that is usually delivered by our divines, and how far there is a coincidence between that assertion and what we have delivered—I shall lay down what that testimony is, wherein it consists, and what is the weight or stress that we lay upon it.

That the Scripture be received as the word of God, there is required a twofold efficacy of the Spirit. The first respects the subject, or the mind of man that assents unto the authority of the Scripture. Now, concerning this act or work of the Spirit, whereby we are enabled to believe the Scripture, on the account whereof we may say that we receive the Scripture to be the word of God—or upon the testimony of the Spirit—I shall a little inquire, what it is, and wherein it doth consist.

First, then, It is not an outward or inward vocal testimony concerning the Word, as the Papist would impose upon us to believe and assent. We do not affirm that the Spirit immediately, by himself, saith unto every individual believer, This book is, or contains, the
word of God. We say not that the Spirit ever speaks to us of the Word, but by the Word. Such an enthusiasm as they fancy is rarely pretended; and where it is so, it is for the most part quickly discovered to be a delusion. We plead not for the usefulness, much less the necessity, of any such testimony. Yea, the principles we have laid down—resolving all faith into the public testimony of the Scriptures themselves—do render all such private testimonies altogether needless.

Secondly, This testimony of the Spirit consists not in a persuasion that a man takes up, he knows not well how or why; only this he knows, he will not depose it [lay it aside] though it cost him his life. This would be like that which by Morinus¹ is ascribed to the Church of Rome, which, though it knew no reason why it should prefer the vulgar Latin translation before the original, yet, by the guidance of the Spirit, would do so—that is, unreasonably. But if a man should say, that he is persuaded that the Scripture is the word of God, and that he will die a thousand times to give testimony thereunto; and, not knowing any real ground of this persuasion that should bear him out in such a testimony, shall ascribe it to the Spirit of God—our concernment lies not in that persuasion. This may befall men by the advantage of traditions, whereof men are usually zealous, and obstinate in their defence. Education in some constitutions will give pertinacity in most vain and false persuasions. It is not, then, a resolution and persuasion induced into our minds we know not how, built we know not upon what foundation, that we intend in the assignation of our receiving the Scripture to be the word of God to the effectual work and witness of the Holy Ghost.

Two things, then, we intend by this work of the Spirit upon the mind of man.

1. His communication of spiritual light; by an act of His power, enabling the mind to discern the saving truth, majesty, and authority of the Word—πνευματικά πνευματικῶς. There is a blindness, a darkness, upon the minds of men πνεῦμα μη ἐξοντων, that not only enables them from discerning the things of God in their certainty, evidence, necessity, and beauty, (for ἤνθρωπος ἐνθρωπος οὐ δέχεται τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ), but also causes them to judge amiss of them, as things weak and foolish, dark, unintelligible, not answering to any principle of wisdom whereby they are guided. (1 Cor. ii.) Whilst this γλαύκωμα abides on the minds of men it is impossible that they should, on any right abiding foundation, assent to the Word of God. They may have a prejudicate opinion—they have no faith concerning it. This darkness, then, must be removed by the communication of light by the

Holy Ghost; which work of his illumination is commonly by others spoken unto, and by me also in another place.  

2. The Holy Ghost, together with and by his work of illumination, taking off the perverse disposition of mind that is in us by nature, with our enmity to and aversion from the things of God, effectually also persuades the mind to a receiving and admitting of the truth, wisdom, and authority of the Word. Now, because this perverse disposition of mind, possessing the τὸ ἠγεμονίαν of the soul, influences the will also into an aversion and dislike of that goodness which is in the truth proposed to it, it is removed by a double act of the Holy Ghost. 

(1.) He gives us wisdom—understanding—a spiritual judgment—whereby we may be able to compare spiritual things with spiritual, in a spiritual manner, and to come thereby to a clear and full light of the heavenly excellency and majesty of the Word; and so enables us to know of the doctrine whether it be of God. Under the benefit of this assistance all the parts of the Scripture in their harmony and correspondency, all the truths of it in their power and necessity, come in together to give evidence one to another, and all of them to the whole; I mean as the mind is enabled to make a spiritual judgment of them.

(2.) He gives αἰδοθην τρεματικὴ, a spiritual sense, a taste of the things themselves upon the mind, heart, and conscience; when we have αἰσθητρία γεγυμασημέα, “senses exercised” to discern such things. These things deserve a more full handling, and to be particularly exemplified from Scripture, if the nature of our present design would admit thereof.

As in our natural estate, in respect of these things of God, the mind is full of vanity, darkness, blindness, yea, is darkness itself, so that there is no correspondency between the faculty and the object—and the will lies in an utter unacquaintedness, yea, impossibility of any acquaintance, with the life, power, savour, sweetness, relish, and goodness, that are in the things proposed to be known and discerned, under the dark shades of a blind mind; so, for a removal of both these, the Holy Ghost communicates light to the understanding, whence it is able to see and judge of the truth as it is in Jesus—and the will being thereby delivered from the dungeon wherein it was, and quickened anew, performs its office, in embracing what is proper and suited unto it in the object proposed. The Spirit, indeed, discovereth to every one ἕκαστος βοήστωμι, according to the counsel of his will; but yet in that way, in the general, whereby the sun gives out his light and heat, the former making way for the latter. But these things must not now be insisted on.

1 Dr Owen treats of this subject in his Pneumatologia, or Discourse concerning the Holy Spirit.—Ed.
Now, by these works of the Spirit he doth, I say, persuade the mind concerning the truth and authority of the Scripture, and therein leave an impression of an effectual testimony within us; and this testimony of his, as it is authoritative and infallible in itself, so [is it] of inconceivably more efficacy, power, and certainty, unto them that do receive it, than any voice or internal word, boasted of by some, can be. But yet this is not the work of the Spirit at present inquired after.

3. There is a testimony of the Spirit that respects the object, or the Word itself; and this is a public testimony, which, as it satisfies our souls in particular, so it is, and may be, pleaded in reference unto the satisfaction of all others to whom the Word of God shall come. The Holy Ghost speaking in and by the Word—imparting to it virtue, power, efficacy, majesty, and authority—affords us the witness that our faith is resolved into. And thus, whereas there are but two heads whereunto all grounds of assent do belong—viz., authority of testimony and the self-evidence of truth—they do here both concur in one. In the same Word, we have both the authority of the testimony of the Spirit and the self-evidence of the truth spoken by him; yea, so that both these are materially one and the same, though distinguished in their formal conceptions. I have been much affected with those verses of Dante, the Italian poet, which somebody hath thus, word for word, turned into Latin:

——— "Larga pluvia
Spiritus sancti quae est diffusa
Super veteres, et super novas membranas,
Est syllogismus qui eam mihi conclusit
Acute adeo ut pra e illa
Omnis demonstratio mihi videatur obtusa."

The Spirit's communication of his own light and authority to the Scripture, as evidence of its original, is the testimony pleaded for.

When, then, we resolve our faith into the testimony of the Holy Ghost, it is not any private whisper, word, or voice, given to individual persons; it is not the secret and effectual persuasion of the truth of the Scriptures that falls upon the minds of some men, from various involved considerations of education, tradition, and the like, whereof they can give no particular account; it is not the effectual work of the Holy Ghost upon the minds and wills of men, enabling them savingly to believe, that is intended; (the Papists, for the most part, pleading about these things, do but show their ignorance and malice;) but it is the public testimony of the Holy Ghost given unto all, of the Word, by and in the Word, and its own divine light, efficacy, and power.

Thus far, then, have we proceeded: The Scripture, the written
Word, hath its infallible truth in itself: 'Ο λόγος ὁ ἀληθινός ἡμῶν ἦσσιν. (John xvii. 17.) From whence it hath its verity, thence it hath its authority; for its whole authority is founded in its truth. Its authority in itself, is its authority in respect of us; nor hath it any whit more in itself than, de jure, it hath towards and over all them to whom it comes. That, de facto, some do not submit themselves unto it, is their sin and rebellition. This truth, and consequently this authority, is evidenced and made known to us by the public testimony which is given unto it by the Holy Ghost speaking in it, with divine light and power, to the minds, souls, and consciences of men; being therein by itself proposed unto us, we being enlightened by the Holy Ghost, (which, in the condition wherein we are, is necessary for the apprehension of any spiritual thing or truth in a spiritual manner,) we receive it, and religiously subject our souls unto it, as the word and will of the ever-living, sovereign God and Judge of all. And if this be not a bottom and foundation of faith, I here publicly profess that, for aught I know, I have no faith at all.

Having laid this stable foundation, I shall, with all possible brevity, consider some pretences and allegations for the confirmation of the authority of the Scripture, invented and made use of by some to divert us from that foundation, the closing wherewith will, in this matter alone, bring peace unto our souls. And so this chapter shall, as it were, lay in the balance and compare together, the testimony of the Spirit before mentioned and explained, and the other pretences and pleas that shall now be examined.

1. Some say—when, on other accounts they are concerned so to say—that we “have received the Scripture from the Church of Rome, which received it by tradition; and this gives a credibility unto it.” Of tradition in general—without this limitation (which destroys it) of the Church of Rome—I shall speak afterward. Credibility either keeps within the bounds of probability, as that may be heightened to a manifest uncontrollableness, whilst yet its principles exceed not that sphere—in which sense it belongs not at all to our present discourse; or it includes a firm, suitable foundation for faith, supernatural and divine. Have we, in this sense, received the Scripture from that church, as it is called? Is that church able to give such a credibility to any thing? or doth the Scripture stand in need of such a credibility to be given to it from that church? Is not the first most false, and is not the last blasphemous? To receive a thing from a church as a church, is to receive it upon the authority of that church. If we receive any thing from the authority of a church, we do it not because the thing itself is ὀποδοξία ἰξιος, “worthy of acceptation,” but because of the authority alleged. If, then, we thus receive the Scriptures from the Church of Rome, why
(in particular) do we not receive the apocryphal books also which she receives? How did the Church of Rome receive the Scriptures? Shall we say that she is authorized to give out what seems good to her as the Word of God? No; but she hath received them by tradition. So she pleads that she hath received the apocryphal books also. We, then, receive the Scriptures from Rome—Rome by tradition; we make ourselves judges of that tradition; and yet Rome saith this is one thing that she hath by the same tradition, viz., that she alone is judge of what she hath by tradition. But the common fate of liars is befallen that harlot. She hath so long, so constantly, so desperately lied, in many, the most, things that she professeth pretending tradition for, that indeed she deserves not to be believed when she telleth the truth. Besides, she pleads that she received the Scriptures from the beginning, when it is granted that the copies of the Hebrew of the Old and the Greek of the New Testament were only authentic; these she pleads, now under her keeping, to be woefully corrupted, and yet is angry that we believe not her tradition.

2. Some add, that we receive the Scripture to be the word of God upon the account of the miracles that were wrought at the giving of the Law and of the New Testament; which miracles we have received by universal tradition. But, first, I desire to know whence it comes to pass, that, seeing our Saviour Jesus Christ wrought many other miracles besides those that are written, (John xx. 30, xxi. 25,) and the apostles likewise, they cannot, by all their traditions, help us to so much as an obscure report of any one that is not written; (I speak not of legends;) which yet at their performance were no less known than those that are, nor were less useful for the end of miracles than they. Of tradition in general afterward: but is it not evident that the miracles whereof they speak are preserved in the Scripture, and no otherwise? And if so, can these miracles operate upon the understanding or judgment of any man, unless he first grant the Scripture to be the word of God—I mean to the begetting of a divine faith of them, even that there were ever any such miracles? Suppose these miracles, alleged as the ground of our believing of the Word, had not been written, but, like the sibyl's leaves, had been driven up and down by the worst and fiercest wind that blows in this world—the breath of man;—those who should keep them by tradition (that is, men) are by nature so vain, foolish, malicious—such liars, adders, detracters—have spirits and minds so unsuited to spiritual things, so liable to alteration in themselves, and to contradiction one to another—are so given to impostures, and are so apt to be imposed upon—have been so shuffled and driven up and down the world in every generation—
have, for the most part, so utterly lost the remembrance of what themselves are, whence they came, or whither they are to go—that I can give very little credit to what I have nothing but their authority to rely upon for, without any evidence from the nature of the thing itself.

Abstracting, then, from the testimony given in the Scriptures to the miracles wrought by the prime revealers of the mind and will of God in the Word, no tolerable assurance as to the business in hand, where a foundation for faith is inquired after, can be given, that ever any such miracles were wrought. If numbers of men may be allowed to speak, we may have a traditional testimony given to the blasphemous figments of the Koran, under the name of true miracles. But the constant tradition of more than a thousand years, carried on by innumerable multitudes of men, great, wise, and sober, from one generation to another, doth but set open the gates of hell for the Mohammedans. Yet, setting aside the authority of God in his Word, and what is resolved thereinto, I know not why they may not vie traditions with the rest of the world. The world, indeed, is full of traditions flowing from the Word—that is, a knowledge of the doctrines of the Word in the minds of men; but a tradition of the Word not resolved into the Word—a tradition referred to a fountain of sense in seeing and hearing, preserved as an oral law in a distinct channel and stream by itself—when it is evidenced, either by instance in some particular preserved therein, or in a probability of securing it through the generations past, by a comparison of some such effect in things of the like kind, I shall be ready to receive it.

Give me, then, as I said before, but the least obscure report of any one of those many miracles that were wrought by our Saviour and the apostles, which are not recorded in the Scriptures, and I shall put more valuation on the pretended traditions than I can as yet persuade myself unto. Besides, many writers of the Scripture wrought no miracles, and by this rule their writings are left to shift for themselves. Miracles, indeed, were necessary to take off all prejudices from the persons that brought any new doctrine from God; but the doctrine still evidenced itself. The apostles converted many, where they wrought no miracles; (Acts xvi.—xviii.) and where they did so work, yet they were received for their doctrine, and not the doctrine on their account. And the Scripture now hath no less evidence and demonstration in itself of its divinity, than it had when by them it was preached.

But because this tradition is pretended with great confidence as a sure bottom and foundation for receiving of the Scriptures, I shall a little further inquire into it. That which in this case is intended by this Masora, or "tradition," is a report of men, which those who are
present have received from them that are gone before them.¹ Now, this may be either of all the men of the world, or only of some of them; if of all, either their suffrages must be taken in some convention, or gathered up from the individuals as we are able and have opportunity. If the first way of receiving them were possible, which is the utmost improvement that imagination can give the authority inquired after, yet every individual of men being a liar, the whole convention must be of the same complexion, and so not be able to yield a sufficient basis to build a faith upon, cui non potest subesse falsum—that is, infallible, and that “cannot possibly be deceived:” much less is there any foundation for it in such a report as is the emergency of the assertion of individuals.

But now if this tradition be alleged as preserved only by some in the world—not the half of rational creatures—I desire to know what reason I have to believe those who have that tradition, or plead that they have it, before and against them who profess they have no such report delivered to them from their forefathers. Is the reason hereof, because I live among those who have this tradition, and they are my neighbours whom I know? By the same rule those who live among the other parts of men are bound to receive what they deliver them upon tradition; and so men may be obliged to believe the Koran to be the word of God.

It is more probable, it will be answered, that their testimony is to be received because they are the church of God. But it doth not yet appear that I can any other way have any knowledge of them so to be, or of any authority that any number of men (more or less) can have in this case, under that name or notion, unless by the Scripture itself. And if so, it will quickly appear what place is to be allotted to their testimony, who cannot be admitted as witnesses unless the Scripture itself be owned and received; because they have neither plea nor claim to be so admitted but only from the Scripture. If they shall aver, that they take this honour to themselves, and that, without relation to the Scripture, they claim a right of authoritative witness-bearing in this case—I say again, upon the general grounds of natural reason and equity, I have no more inducements to give credit to their assertions than to an alike number of men holding out a tradition utterly to the contrary of what they assert.

But yet suppose that this also were granted, and that men might be allowed to speak in their own name and authority, giving testimony to themselves—which, upon the hypothesis under consideration, God himself is not allowed to do—I shall desire to know whether, when the church declares the Scriptures to be the word of God unto

¹ Hinc Masora sive Massoreth Traditio, vel rei de manu in manum, aut doctrinae ex animo in annum, mediante docentis voce, qua seu manu doctrina alteri traditur. (Buxtor. Comment. Mas.)
us, it doth apprehend any thing in the Scripture as the ground of
that judgment and declaration, or no? If it says, No, but that it is
proposed upon its sole authority—then surely, if we think good to
acquiesce in this decision of this doubt and inquiry, it is full time
for us to lay aside all our studies and inquiries after the mind of God,
and seek only what that man [says.] or those men say, who are
intrusted with this authority—as they say, and as they would have us
believe them, though we know not at all how or by what means they
came by it, seeing they dare not pretend any thing from the Scrip-
ture, lest thereby they direct us to that in the first place.

If it be said that they do upon other accounts judge and believe
the Scripture to be true, and to be the word of God—I suppose it
will not be thought unreasonable if we inquire after those grounds
and accounts, seeing they are of so great concernment unto us. All
truths in relations consisting in their consonancy and agreement to
the nature of the things they deliver, I desire to know how they came
to judge of the consonancy between the nature of the things delivered
in the Scripture and the delivery of them therein. The things whereof
we speak being heavenly, spiritual, mysterious, and supernatural, there
cannot be any knowledge obtained of them but by the Word itself.
How, then, can they make any judgment of the truth of that Scripture
in the relation of these things which are no where to be known (I
speak of many of them) in the least, but by that Scripture itself?

If they shall say that they found their judgment and declaration
upon some discovery that the Scripture makes of itself unto them,
they affirm the same that we plead for; only they would very desir-
ously appropriate to themselves the privilege of being able to discern
that discovery so made in the Scripture. To make good this claim,
they must either plead somewhat from themselves or from the Scrip-
ture. If from themselves, it can be nothing but that they see, (like
the men of China,) and all others are blind, or have but one eye at
the best—being wiser than any others, and more able to discern than
they. Now, though I shall easily grant them to be very subtle and
cunning, yet that they are so much wiser than all the world besides—
that they are meet to impose upon their belief things that they
neither do nor can discern or know—I would not be thought to admit,
until I can believe myself and all others, not of their society or com-
bination, to be beasts of the field, and they as the serpent amongst
us. If it be from the Scripture that they seek to make good this
claim, then as we cause them there to make a stand—which is all we
aim at—so their plea must be from the promise of some special assis-
tance granted to them for that purpose. If their assistance be that
of the Spirit, it is either of the Spirit that is promised to believers
to work in them, as before described and related, or it is some private
testimony that they pretend is afforded to them. If the former be affirmed, we are in a condition wherein the necessity of devolving all on the Scripture itself, to decide and judge who are believers, lies in every one’s view; if the latter, who shall give me assurance that when they pretend that witness and testimony, they do not lie and deceive? We must here certainly go either to the Scripture or to some cunning man to be resolved. (Isa. viii. 19, 20.)

I confess the argument is of great force and efficacy which hath, not long since, been singled out, and dexterously managed, by an able and learned pen, viz., of proving the truth of the doctrine of the Scripture from the truth of the story, and the truth of the story from the certainty there is that the writers of the books of the Bible were those persons whose names and inscriptions they bear; so pursuing the evidence, that what they wrote was true and known to them so to be, from all requisita that may possibly be sought after for the strengthening of such evidence. It is, I say, of great force and efficacy as to the end for which it is insisted on—that is, to satisfy men’s rational inquiries; but as to a ground of faith, it hath the same insufficiency with all other arguments of the like kind. Though I should grant that the apostles and penmen of the Scripture were persons of the greatest industry, honesty, integrity, faithfulness, holiness, that ever lived in the world, as they were; and that they wrote nothing but what themselves had as good assurance of as what men by their senses of seeing and hearing are able to attain: yet such a knowledge or assurance is not a sufficient foundation for the faith of the church of God. If they received not every word by inspiration, and that evidencing itself unto us otherwise than by the authority of their integrity, it can be no foundation for us to build our faith upon.

Before the committing of the Scriptures to writing, God had given the world an experiment what keepers men were of this revelation by tradition. Within some hundreds of years after the flood, all knowledge of him, through the craft of Satan and the vanity of the minds of men, which is unspeakable, was so lost, that nothing but as it were the creation of a new world, or the erection of a new church-state by new revelations, could relieve it. After that great trial, what can be further pretended on the behalf of tradition, I know not.

The sum of all is: The merciful, good providence of God having, by divers and various means—using therein, amongst other things, the ministry of men and churches—preserved the writings of the Old and New Testament in the world, and by the same gracious disposal afforded them unto us, they are received and submitted unto by us,

1 D. Ward, Essay, &c.
upon the grounds and evidences of their divine original before ins-
isted on.

Upon the whole matter, then, I would know, if the Scripture should be brought to any man when or where he could not possibly have it attested to be the word of God—by any public or private authority of man or church, tradition or otherwise—whether he were bound to believe it or no? whether he should obey God in believing, or sin in the rejecting of it? Suppose he do but take it into consider-
ration, do but give it the reading or hearing, seeing in every place it avers itself to be the word of God, he must of necessity either give credit unto it or disbelieve it; to hang in suspense—which ariseth from the imperfect actings of the faculties of the soul—is in itself a weakness, and, in this case, being reckoned on the worst side, is interpretatively a rejection. If you say it were the duty of such a one to believe it, you acknowledge in the Scripture itself a sufficient evidence of its own original authority—without which it can be no man’s duty to believe it. If you say it would not be his sin to reject and refuse it, to disbelieve all that it speaks in the name of God, then this is what you say—God may truly and really speak unto a man, (as he doth by the Scripture,) and yet that man not be bound to believe him. We deal not thus with one another.

To wind up, then, the plea insisted on in the foregoing chapter, concerning the self-evidencing light and power of the Scripture, from which we have diverted, and to make way for some other considera-
tions that tend to the confirmation of their divine original, I shall close this discourse with the two general considerations following:—

1. Then, laying aside these failing pleas, there seems to be a moral impossibility that the Word of God should not manifest its own original, and its authority from thence. “Quaelibet herba Deum.” There is no work of God, as was showed, but reveals its author. A curious artificer imparts that of form, shape, proportion, and comeliness, to the fruit of his invention and work of his hands, that every
one that looks upon it must conclude that it comes from skill and ability. A man in the delivery of his mind in the writing of a book, will give it such an impression of reason, that though you cannot conclude that this or that man wrote it, yet you must that it was the product of a man or rational creature; yea, some individual men of excellency in some skill are instantly known by them that are able to judge in that art or skill by the effects of their skill. This is the piece, this is the hand, the work of such a one. How easy is it for those who are conversant about ancient authors to discover an author by the spirit and style of his writings! Now, certainly, this is strange beyond all belief, that almost every agent should give an impress to his work whereby it may be appropriated unto him; and only the
Word—wherein it was the design of the great and holy God to give us a portraiture, as it were, of his wisdom, holiness, and goodness, so far as we are capable of an acquaintance with him in this life—is not able to declare and evince its original. That God, who is prima Veritas, "the first and sovereign Truth," infinitely separated and distinguished from all creatures, on all accounts whatever, should write a book, or at least immediately indite it, commanding us to receive it as his under the penalty of his eternal displeasure, and yet that book not make a sufficient discovery of itself to be his, to be from him, is past all belief. Let men that live on things received by tradition from their fathers—who perhaps never had sense of any real transaction between God and their souls, who scarce ever perused the Word seriously in their lives, nor brought their consciences to it—please themselves in their own imaginations; the sure anchor of a soul that would draw nigh to God, in and by his Word, lies in the things laid down.

I suppose it will not be denied but that it was the mind and will of God that those to whom his Word should come should own it and receive it as his; if not, it were no sin in them to reject it unto whom it doth so come. If it were, then either he hath given those characters unto it, and left upon it that impression of his majesty, whereby it might be known to be his, or he hath not done so; and that either because he would not or because he could not. To say the latter, is to make him more infirm than a man or other worm of the earth—than any naturally effectual cause. He that saith the former, must know that it is incumbent on him to yield a satisfactory account why God would not do so, or else he will be thought blaspheemously to impute a want of that goodness and love of mankind unto Him which he hath in infinite grace manifested to be in himself. That no man is able to assign any such reason, I shall firmly believe, until I find some attempting so to do—which, as yet, none have arrived at that height of impudence and wickedness as to own.

2. How horrible is it to the thoughts of any saint of God, that the Scripture should not have its authority from itself! Tertullian objects this to the Gentiles: (Apol., cap. v.) "Facit et hoc ad causam nostram, quod apud vos de humano arbitratu divinitas pensatitur; nisi homini Deus placuerit, Deus non erit; homo jam Deo propitius esse debet." Would it be otherwise in this case, if the Scripture must stand to the mercy of man for the reputation of its divinity, nay, of its verity? for whence it hath its authority, thence it hath its verity also, as was observed before; and many more words of this nature might be added.
CHAPTER VI.

Consequential considerations, for the confirmation of the divine authority of the Scripture.

I said, in the former chapter, that I would not employ myself willingly to enervate or weaken any of the reasons or arguments that are usually insisted on to prove the divine authority of the Scripture. Though I confess I like not to multiply arguments that conclude to a probability only, and are suited to beget a firm opinion at best, where the principle intended to be evinced is de fide, and must be believed with faith divine and supernatural; yet because some may haply be kept to some kind of adherence to the Scriptures by mean grounds, that will not in their own strength abide, until they get footing in those that are more firm, I shall not make it my business to drive them from their present station, having persuaded them by that which is better.

Yea, because, on supposition of the evidence formerly tended, there may be great use, at several seasons, of some consequential considerations and arguments to the purpose in hand, I shall insist on two of that kind; which, to me who have the advantage of receiving the Word on the fore-mentioned account, seem not only to persuade, and in a great measure to convince to undeniable probability, but also to prevail irresistibly on the understanding of unprejudiced men to close with the divine truth of it.

The first of these is taken from the nature of the doctrine itself contained in the Scripture; the second, from the management of the whole design therein: the first is innate, the other of a more external and rational consideration.

For the first of them, there are two things considerable in the doctrine of the Scripture, that are powerful, and, if I may so say, uncontrollably prevalent as to this purpose.

First, Its universal suitableness, upon its first clear discovery and revelation, to all the entanglements and perplexities of the souls of men, in reference to their relation to and dependence upon God. If all mankind have certain entanglements upon their hearts and spirits in reference unto God—which none of them that are not utterly brutish do not wrestle withal, and which all of them are not able in the least to assoil [acquit] themselves in and about—certainly that doctrine which is suited universally to satisfy all their perplexities, to calm and quiet their spirits in all their tumultuatuings, and doth break in upon them with a glorious efficacy to that purpose, in its discovery and revelation, must needs be from that God with whom we have
to do, and none else. From whom else, I pray, should it be? He that can give out the Word ille mihi semper erit Deus.

Now, there are three general heads of things, that all and every one of mankind, not naturally brutish, are perplexed withal, in reference to their dependence on God and relation to him.

1. How they may worship him as they ought.

2. How they may be reconciled and at peace with him, or have an atonement for that guilt which naturally they are sensible of.

3. What is the nature of true blessedness, and how they may attain it, or how they may come to the enjoyment of God.

That all mankind are perplexed and entangled with and about these considerations—that all men ever were so, without exception, more or less, and continue so to be to this day—that of themselves they miserably grope up and down in the dark, and are never able to come to any satisfaction, neither as to what is present nor as to what is to come—I could manifest, from the state, office, and condition of conscience, the indelible προσαμεμφανίζω, "presumptions," about them, that are in the hearts of all by nature. The whole history of all religion which hath been in the world, with the design of all ancient and present philosophy, with innumerable other uncontrollable convictions, (which also, God assisting, I shall in another treatise declare,) do manifest this truth.

That, surely, then, which shall administer to all and every one of them, equally and universally, satisfaction as to all these things—to quiet and calm their spirits, to cut off all necessity of any further inquiries—give them that wherein they must acquiesce and wherewith they will be satiated, unless they will cast off that relation and dependence on God which they seek to confirm and settle; surely, I say, this must be from the all-seeing, all-satisfying Truth and Being, and from none else. Now, this is done by the doctrine of the Scripture, with such a glorious, uncontrollable conviction, that every one to whom it is revealed, the eyes of whose understanding are not blinded by the god of this world, must needs cry out "Εὐφηνα—I have found" that which in vain I sought elsewhere, waxing foolish in my imaginations.

It would be too long to insist on the several—take one instance in the business of atonement, reconciliation, and acceptance with God. What strange, horrible fruits and effects have men's contrivances on this account produced! What have they not invented? what have they not done? what have they not suffered? and yet continued in dread and bondage all their days. Now, with what a glorious, soul-appeasing light doth the doctrine of satisfaction and atonement by the blood of Christ, the Son of God, come in upon such men! This first astonisheth, then conquereth, then ravisheth
and satiateth the soul. This is that they looked for, this they were sick for, and knew it not. This is the design of the apostle’s discourse in the three first chapters of the Epistle to the Romans. Let any man read that discourse from chap. i. 18, and onward, and he will see with what glory and beauty, with what full and ample satisfaction, this doctrine breaks out. (Chap. iii. 21–26.)

It is no otherwise as to the particulars of present worship or future blessedness. This meets with men in all their wanderings, stops them in their disquisitions, convinces them of the darkness, folly, uncertainty, falseness, of all their reasonings about these things; and that with such an evidence and light as at once subdues them, captivates their understanding, and quiets their souls. So was that old Roman world conquered by it; so shall the Mohammedan be, in God’s good and appointed time.

Of what hath been spoken this is the sum: All mankind, that acknowledge their dependence upon God and relation to him, are naturally (and cannot be otherwise) grievously involved and perplexed in their hearts, thoughts, and reasonings, about the worship of God, acceptation with him, (having sinned,) and the future enjoyment of him. Some with more clear and distinct apprehensions of these things, some under more dark and general notions of them, are thus exercised. To extricate themselves, and to come to some issue in and about these inquiries, hath been the great design of their lives—the aim they had in all things they did, as they thought, well and laudably in this world. Notwithstanding all which, they were never able to deliver themselves, no, not one of them, or attain satisfaction of their souls, but waxed vain in their imaginations, and their foolish hearts were more and more darkened. In this estate of things, the doctrine of the Scripture coming in with full, unquestionable satisfaction to all these—suited to the inquirings of every individual soul, with a largeness of wisdom and depth of goodness not to be fathomed—it must needs be from that God with whom we have to do. And those who are not persuaded hereby, that will not cast anchor in this harbour, let them put to sea once more, if they dare; turn themselves loose to other considerations, and try if all the fore-mentioned perplexities do not inevitably return.

Another consideration of the doctrine of the Scripture to this purpose regards some particulars of it. There are some doctrines of the Scripture, some revelations in it, so sublimely glorious, of so profound and mysterious an excellency, that at the first proposal of them, nature startles, shrinks, and is taken with horror, meeting with that which is above it, too great and too excellent for it, which it could desirously avoid and decline; but yet, gathering itself up to them, it yields, and finds that unless they are accepted and submitted
unto, though unsearchable, not only all that hath been received must be rejected, but also the whole dependence of the creature on God be dissolved, or rendered only dreadful, terrible, and destructive to nature itself. Such are the doctrines of the Trinity, of the incarnation of the Son of God, of the resurrection of the dead, of the new birth, and the like. At the first revelation of these things nature is amazed, cries, "How can these things be?" or gathers up itself to opposition: "This is babbling"—like the Athenians; "Folly"—as all the wise Greeks. But when the eyes of reason are a little confirmed, though it can never clearly behold the glory of this sun, yet it confesseth a glory to be in it above all that it is able to apprehend. I could manifest, in particular, that the doctrines before mentioned, and several others, are of this importance; namely, though great above and beyond the reach of reason, yet, upon search, found to be such, as, without submission to them, the whole comfortable relation between God and man must needs be dissolved.

Let us take a view in our way of one of the instances. What is there, in the whole book of God, that nature at first sight doth more recoil at, than the doctrine of the Trinity? How many do yet stumble and fall at it! I confess the doctrine itself is but sparingly—yet it is clearly and distinctly—delivered unto us in the Scripture. The sum of it is: That God is one—his nature or his being one: that all the properties or infinite essential excellencies of God, as God, do belong to that one nature and being: that this God is infinitely good, holy, just, powerful; he is eternal, omnipotent, omnipresent; and these things belong to none but him—that is, that one God: that this God is the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; which are not diverse names of the same person, nor distinct attributes or properties of the same nature or being, but one, another, and a third, all equally that one God, yet really distinguished between themselves by such incommunicable properties as constitute the one to be that one, and the other to be that other, and the third to be that third. Thus, the Trinity is not the union nor unity of three, but it is a trinity in unity, or the ternary number of persons in the same essence; nor doth the Trinity, in its formal conception, denote the essence, as if the essence were comprehended in the Trinity, which is in each person; but it denotes only the distinction of the persons comprised in that number.

This, I say, is the sum of this doctrine, as it is delivered unto us in the Scripture. Here reason is entangled; yet, after a while, finds evidently, that unless this be embraced, all other things wherein it hath to do with God will not be of value to the soul. This will quickly be made to appear. Of all that communion which is here between God and man, founded on the revelation of his mind and
will unto him, which makes way for his enjoyment in glory, there are these two parts:—1st, God's gracious communication of his love, goodness, &c., with the fruits of them, unto man; 2d, The obedience of man unto God, in a way of gratitude for that love, according to the mind and will of God revealed to him. These two comprise the whole of the intercourse between God and man. Now, when the mind of man is exercised about these things, he finds at last that they are so wrapped up in the doctrine of the Trinity, that without the belief, receiving, and acceptance of it, it is utterly impossible that any interest in them should be obtained or preserved.

For the first, or the communication of God unto us in a way of love and goodness, it is wholly founded upon and inwrapped in this truth, both as to the eternal spring and actual execution of it. A few instances will evince this assertion. The eternal fountain of all grace, flowing from love and goodness, lies in God's election, or predestination. This being an act of God's will, cannot be apprehended but as an eternal act of his Wisdom or Word also. All the eternal thoughts of its pursuit lie in the covenant that was between the Father and the Son, as to the Son's undertaking to execute that purpose of his. This I have at large elsewhere declared.

Take away, then, the doctrine of the Trinity, and both these are gone; there can be no purpose of grace by the Father in the Son—no covenant for the putting of that purpose in execution: and so the foundation of all fruits of love and goodness is lost to the soul.

As to the execution of this purpose, with the actual dispensation of the fruits of grace and goodness unto us, it lies wholly in the unspeakable condescension of the Son unto incarnation, with what ensued thereon. The incarnation of the eternal Word by the power of the Holy Ghost, is the bottom of our participation of grace. Without it, it was absolutely impossible that man should be made partaker of the favour of God. Now, this inwraps the whole doctrine of the Trinity in its bosom, nor can once be apprehended without its acknowledgment. Deny the Trinity, and all the means of the communication of grace, with the whole of the satisfaction and righteousness of Christ, fall to the ground. Every tittle of it speaks this truth; and they who deny the one reject the other.

Our actual participation of the fruits of this grace is by the Holy Ghost. We cannot ourselves seize on them, nor bring them home to our own souls. The impossibility hereof I cannot now stay to manifest. Now, whence is this Holy Ghost? Is he not sent from the Father by the Son? Can we entertain any thought of his effectual working in us and upon us, but it includes this whole doctrine? They, therefore, who deny the Trinity, deny the efficacy of its operation also.
So is it as to our obedience unto God, whereby the communion between God and man is completed. Although the formal object of divine worship be the nature of God, and the persons are not worshipped as persons distinct, but as they are each of them God; yet, as God, they are every one of them distinctly to be worshipped. So is it as to our faith, our love, our thanksgiving, all our obedience, as I have abundantly demonstrated in my treatise of distinct communion with the Father in love, the Son in grace, and the Holy Ghost in the privileges of the gospel. Thus, without the acknowledgment of this truth, none of that obedience which God requireth at our hands can in a due manner be performed.

Hence, the Scripture speaks not of any thing between God and us but what is founded on this account. The Father worketh, the Son worketh, and the Holy Ghost worketh. The Father worketh not but by the Son and his Spirit; the Son and Spirit work not but from the Father. The Father glorifieth the Son, the Son glorifieth the Father, and the Holy Ghost glorifieth them both. Before the foundation of the world the Son was with the Father, and rejoiced in his peculiar work for the redemption of mankind. At the creation, the Father made all things, but by the Son and the power of the Spirit. In redemption, the Father sends the Son; the Son, by his own condescension, undertakes the work, and is incarnate by the Holy Ghost. The Father, as was said, communicates his love and all the fruits of it unto us by the Son, as the Holy Ghost doth the merits and fruits of the mediation of the Son. The Father is not known nor worshipped, but by and in the Son; nor Father nor Son, but by the Holy Ghost, &c.

Upon this discovery, the soul that was before startled at the doctrine in the notion of it, is fully convinced that all the satisfaction it hath sought after, in its seeking unto God, is utterly lost if this be not admitted. There is neither any foundation left of the communication of love to him, nor means of returning obedience unto God. Besides, all the things that he hath been inquiring after appear, on this account, in their glory, beauty, and reality, unto him; so that that which most staggered him at first in the receiving of the truth, because of its deep, mysterious glory, doth now most confirm him in the embracing of it, because of its necessity, power, and heavenly excellency.

And this is one argument of the many belonging to the things of the Scripture, that, upon the grounds before mentioned, hath in it, as to my sense and apprehension, an evidence of conviction not to be withstood.

Another consideration of the like efficacy may be taken from a brief view of the whole Scripture, with the design of it. The consent
of parts, or harmony of the Scripture in itself, and every part of it with each other and with the whole, is commonly pleaded as an evidence of its divine original. This much, certainly, it doth evince, beyond all possible contradiction, that the whole proceedeth from one and the same principle, hath the same author, and be wise, discerning, able to comprehend the whole compass of what he intended to deliver and reveal. Otherwise, or by any other, that oneness of spirit, design, and aim, in unspeakable variety and diversity of means of its delivery—that absolute correspondency of it to itself, and distance from any thing else—could not have been attained. Now, it is certain that this principle must be sumnum in its kind—either bonum or malum. If the Scripture be what it reveals and declares itself to be, it is then unquestionably the "word of the living God," truth itself; for that it professeth of itself from the beginning to the ending—to which profession, all that it reveals answers absolutely and unquestionably in a tendency to his glory alone. If it be not so, it must be acknowledged that the author of it had a blasphemous design to hold forth himself to be God, who is not so—a malicious design to deceive the sons of men, and to make them believe that they worship and honour God, and obey him, when they do not, and so to draw them into everlasting destruction; and that to compass these ends of blasphemy, atheism, and malice, he hath laid out, in a long course of time, all the industry and wisdom that a creature could be made partaker of. Now, he that should do thus must be the devil, and none else: no other creature can possibly arrive at that height of obstinacy in evil. Now, certainly, whilst God is pleased to continue unto us any thing whereby we are distinguished from the beasts that perish, whilst there is a sense of a distance between good and evil abiding amongst men, it cannot fall upon the understanding of any man that that doctrine which is so holy and pure—so absolutely leading to the utmost improvement of whatever is good, just, commendable, and praiseworthy—so suitable to all the light of God, of good and evil, that remains in us—could proceed from any one everlastingly hardened in evil, and that in the pursuit of the most wicked design that that wicked one could possibly be engaged in, namely, to enthrone himself, and maliciously to cheat, cozen, and ruin the souls of men; so that upon necessity the Scripture can own no author but him whose it is—even the living God.

As these considerations are far from being the bottom and foundation of our faith, in our assenting to the authority of God in the Word, so, on the supposition of what is so, they have a usefulness, as to support in trials and temptations, and the like seasons of difficulty: but of these things so far.
OF THE INTEGRITY AND PURITY

OF THE

HEBREW AND GREEK TEXT OF THE SCRIPTURE;

WITH

CONSIDERATIONS ON THE PROLEGOMENA AND APPENDIX TO THE LATE "BIBLIA POLYGLOTTA."

PREFATORY NOTE.

There is a tendency to acquiesce in the general verdict against our author for the part he took in the controversy with Walton on the subject of the London Polyglott, without any very careful inquiry into the grounds on which it rests. Dr Owen, we are convinced, has been the victim of unintentional misrepresentation on this point, partly through the dextrous management of Walton, partly through his own want of caution in properly defining his position, and partly because on some points he was completely in error. Dr Twells, in his biography of Pococke, accuses Owen of writing against the Polyglott; and Mr Todd, in his biography of Walton, bitterly re-echoes the charge. Even his friendly biographer, Mr Orme, intimates that he viewed the Polyglott "with jealousy or disprobation." No statement could be more unfounded. Transparent honesty and perfect truthfulness were leading features of his character; and we cannot think of him as speaking in any other terms but those of warm and unfeigned admiration, when he eulogizes the Polyglott as "a noble collection," "a great and useful work," "which he much esteemed," and when he declares that he "would never fail, on all just occasions, to commend the usefulness of the work, and the learning, diligence, and pains, of the worthy persons that have brought it forth." Dr Chalmers, also, in reference to this controversy, censures Owen as "illiterate" for the views he expressed in it, and contrasts "the lordly insolence of the prelate" with "the outrageous violence of the puritan." There is more of alliteration than truth in the contrast. Walton's short-lived prelacy did not begin till after his controversy with Owen; and the charge of "outrageous violence" against the latter appears to have been suggested by the misrepresentation of his antagonist. Owen professed a desire to conduct the dispute "with Christian candour and moderation of spirit;" and, on the whole, he redeemed his pledge.

On the minute and multifarious details of biblical literature, our author assuredly must yield the palm to Walton. It was not his province. But the real merits of the controversy between them involve two questions, and by his opinions on these it must be judged whether the condemnation so unsparingly heaped on him is altogether well founded. These questions relate to the various readings in the original text of Scripture, and to the antiquity of Hebrew punctuation.

1. On the subject of various readings, Owen had submitted, in the epistle dedicatory, at the beginning of the former treatise, ample evidence that Papists had resorted on a great scale to the artifice of magnifying the corruption of the text, in order to exalt the Vulgate and support the claim of their church to infallibility. As critical research multiplied the various readings by the inspection of the ancient codices, Protestant divines took alarm, and, trembling for the ark of truth, discountenanced such inquiries. That Owen was altogether free from the panic cannot be affirmed. We must sympathize,
however, with any pious jealousy for the honour of the holy oracles, in an age when sound principles of criticism had not been clearly established. It will be new, moreover, to many readers, who have hitherto assumed as true the charge against Owen of ignorant antipathy to the duties and advantages of sacred criticism, when they are told that he not only admitted the existence of various readings, but held that if any others could be discovered from a collation of manuscripts, they "deserved to be considered;" differing in this respect from Dr Whitby, who, at a later period, in 1716, published his "Examem Variantium Lectionum," in opposition to Mill's edition of the New Testament, taking up ground from which Owen would have recoiled, and insisting that every word in the common text stood as originally written,—"in its omnibus lectionem textus defendi posse." Owen acknowledged and proclaimed the fact, that in spite of all the variety in the readings, not a single doctrine was vitally affected by them. In regard to them, he objected to the unnecessary multiplication of very trivial differences,—an objection of no moment, stated in a single sentence, and never afterwards pressed. He objected further to the practice of Cappell, in making innovations on the received text by the authority of translations only, on the ground that these translations were made from copies essentially different from any now extant. He exonerates Walton from this error, but deems him not sufficiently careful to refrain from admitting into his Polyglott readings gathered from such a source. It was against Cappell's theory that he chiefly wrote; and some strong expressions used in regard to it are quoted by Walton, in his reply to the following treatise, as directed sweepingly against the Polyglott. Few now would ratify the innovations of Cappell. Dr Davidson, in his standard work on biblical criticism, "signs over the groundless conjectures introduced into parts of the Old Testament text by Cappell." Owen's main objection, however, reproduced frequently in the course of his tract, was against the attempt to amend the text by mere conjecture. There is still a diversity of opinion as to the legitimacy of this source of criticism. Griesbach repudiated the use of it in his edition of the New Testament. Marsh would avail himself of it in regard to the Old Testament, but not in regard to the New. Davidson reckons the cautious use of it lawful in regard to both. At all events, Walton himself professed to discard it as an instrument of criticism; and yet, as Owen shows, he admitted into the Polyglott the conjectural emendations of Grotius. Even Simon, an admirer of Grotius, while commending his notes, complains that he "sometimes multiplies the various readings without necessity." So far, therefore, as it was a question of principle between them, Walton was not in advance of Owen. So far as it was a question of fact, Owen had rather the best of the dispute.

2. As to Hebrew punctuation, Owen held the points to be part of Scripture, and as sacred and ancient as the other elements of the text. Here he may have erred, but it was in honourable company,—with the Buxtors, Gerard, Glass, Voet, Flacius Illyricus, Lightfoot, Leusden, and others. Cappell, in 1624, though wrong on the question of criticism, adopted the opinions of a learned Jew, Elias Levita, who wrote in 1520, and of some Jewish and Christian writers even before the days of Levita, and first took strong ground in denying the antiquity of the Hebrew points, and tracing them to the school of the Masoretes. Still, the question was not determined. Schultens, in 1737, followed by Michaelis, adopted an intermediate course, contending that some points had been in use from the earliest ages of the language. Elchhorn and Gesenius were inclined to believe in the existence of some points before the Talmud and the days of Jerome. It was only in 1830 that Hupfeld is considered to have set the question at rest, by proving the Masoretic punctuation to have been unknown both to the authors of the Talmud and to Jerome. It is a question which it has taken the discussion of centuries to settle, and some may even yet be disposed to think that all the difficulties connected with Hupfeld's view are not eliminated from it, and that some apparatus corresponding to the points must have been needed to secure uniformity in Hebrew pronunciation during successive ages, and in all parts of the world, wherever in ancient times there were Jews to speak their own tongue or read their own Scriptures.

Owen erred in various matters of detail; but the same allegation, though not to the same extent, might be made respecting Walton, who advanced opinions in the controversy which no modern scholar would endorse with his sanction. Owen erred also in betraying a nervous sensitiveness, lest an imposing array of various readings should invalidate the authority of the sacred text. The spirit in which Walton replied, however, cannot be justified,—transmuting the hypothetical reasons of his adversary into positive averments, and applying to the Polyglott what he wrote against Bellarmine, Leo Castrius, Morin, and Cappell, whose principles of criticism were notoriously un-
CHAPTER I.

The occasion of this discourse—The danger of supposing corruptions in the originals of the Scripture—The great usefulness of the Biblia Polyglotta—The grounds of the ensuing animadversions—The assertions proposed to be vindicated laid down—Their weight and importance—Sundry principles in the Prolegomena prejudicial to the truth contended for laid down—Those principles formerly asserted by others—Reasons of the opposition made to them.

When this whole little precedent treatise had finished and ready to be given out unto the stationer, there came to my hands the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta lately published. Upon the first sight of that volume, I was somewhat startled with that bulky collection of various readings which the appendix tenders to the view of every one that doth but cast an eye upon it. Within a while after, I found that others also, men of learning and judgment, had apprehensions of that work not unlike those which my own thoughts had suggested unto me. Afterward, considering what I had written about the providence of God in the preservation of the original copies of the Scripture in the foregoing discourse, fearing lest, from that great appearance of variations in the original copies, and those of all the translations, published with so great care and diligence, there might some unconquerable objections against the truth of what I had asserted be educed, I judged it necessary to stop the progress of those thoughts until I could get time to look through the Appendix and the various lections in that great volume exhibited unto us, with the grounds and reasons of them in the Prolegomena. Having now discharged that task and (as things were stated) duty, I shall crave leave to deliver my thoughts to some things contained in them, which possibly men of perverse minds may wrest to the prejudice of my former assertions,—to the prejudice of

1 The treatise "Of the Divine Original, etc., of the Scriptures."
the certainty of divine truth, as continued unto us, through the providence of God, in the originals of the Scripture.

What use hath been made, and is as yet made, in the world, of this supposition, that corruptions have befallen the originals of the Scripture, which those various lections at first view seem to intimate, I need not declare. It is, in brief, the foundation of Mohammedanism (Alcor. Azoar. 5), the chiefest and principal prop of Popery, the only pretence of fanatical anti-scripturists, and the root of much hidden atheism in the world. At present there is sent unto me by a very learned person, upon our discourse on this subject, a treatise in English, with the Latin title of "Fides Divina," wherein its nameless author, on this very foundation, labours to evert and utterly render useless the whole Scripture. How far such as he may be strengthened in their infidelity by the consideration of these things time will manifest.

Had there not been, then, a necessity incumbent on me either utterly to desist from pursuing any thoughts of publishing the foregoing treatise, or else of giving an account of some things contained in the Prolegomena and Appendix, I should, for many reasons, have abstained from this employment. But the truth is, not only what I had written in the first chapter about the providence of God in the preservation of the Scripture, but also the main of the arguments afterward insisted on by me concerning the self-evidencing power and light of the Scripture, receiving, in my apprehension, a great weakening by the things I shall now speak unto, if owned and received as they are proposed unto us, I could not excuse myself from running the hazard of giving my thoughts upon them.

The wise man tells us that he considered "all travail, and every right work, and that for this a man is envied of his neighbour;" which, saith he, is "vanity and vexation of spirit," Eccles. iv. 4. It cannot be denied but that this often falls out, through the corruption of the hearts of men, that when works, right works, are with most sore travail brought forth in the world, their authors are repaid with envy for their labour; which mixes all the issues of the best endeavours of men with vanity and vexation of spirit. Jerome of old and Erasmus of late are the usual instances in this kind. That I have any of that guilt in a peculiar manner upon me in reference to this work of publishing the Biblia Polyglotta, which I much esteem, or the authors and contrivers of it, whom I know not, I can with due consideration, and do, utterly deny. The Searcher of all hearts

---

2 Since my writing of this, some of the chief overseers of the work, persons of singular worth, are known to me.
knows I lie not. And what should possibly infect me with that leaven? I neither profess any deep skill in the learning used in that work, nor am ever like to be engaged in any thing that should be set up in competition with it, nor did I ever know that there was such a person in the world as the chief author of this edition of the Bible but by it. I shall, then, never fail, on all just occasions, to commend the usefulness of this work, and the learning, diligence, and pains, of the worthy persons that have brought it forth; nor would be wanting to their full praise in this place, but that an entrance into this discourse with their due commendations might be liable to misrepresentations. But whereas we have not only the Bible published, but also private opinions of men, and collections of various readings (really or pretendedly so we shall see afterward), tending some of them, as I apprehend, to the disadvantage of the great and important truth that I have been pleading for, tendered unto us, I hope it will not be grievous to any, nor matter of offence, if, using the same liberty that they or any of them whose hands have been most eminent in this work have done, I do, with, I hope, Christian candour and moderation of spirit, briefly discover my thoughts upon some things proposed by them.

The renownedly learned prefacer to the Arabic translation in this edition of it tells us that the work of translating the Pentateuch into that language was performed by a Jew, who took care to give countenance to his own private opinions, and so render them authentic by bringing them into the text of his translation.

It is not of any such attempt that I have any cause to complain, or shall so do in reference to these Prolegomena and Appendix; only I could have wished (with submission to better judgments be it spoken) that, in the publishing of the Bible, the sacred text, with the translations, and such naked historical accounts of their originals and preservation as were necessary to have laid them fair and open to the judgment of the reader, had not been clogged with disputes and pleas for particular private opinions, imposed thereby with too much advantage on the minds of men by their constant neighbourhood unto canonical truth.

But my present considerations being not to be extended beyond the concernment of the truth which in the foregoing discourse I have pleaded for, I shall first propose a brief abstract thereof, as to that part of it which seems to be especially concerned, and then lay down what to me appears in its prejudice in the volumes now under debate, not doubting but a fuller account of the whole will by some or other be speedily tendered unto the learned and impartial readers of them. The sum of what I am pleading for, as to the particular head to be vindicated, is, That as the Scriptures of the Old and New
Testament were immediately and entirely given out by God himself; his mind being in them represented unto us without the least inter-
veniency of such mediums and ways as were capable of giving change or alteration to the least iota or syllable; so, by his good and merciful providential dispensation, in his love to his word and church, his whole word, as first given out by him, is preserved unto us entire in the original languages; where, shining in its own beauty and lustre (as also in all translations, so far as they faithfully re-
present the originals), it manifests and evidences unto the consciences of men, without other foreign help or assistance, its divine original and authority.

Now, the several assertions or propositions contained in this posi-
tion are to me such important truths, that I shall not be blamed in the least by my own spirit, nor I hope by any others, in contending for them, judging them fundamental parts of the faith once delivered to the saints; and though some of them may seem to be less weighty than others, yet they are so concatenated in themselves, that by the removal or destruction of any one of them, our interest in the others is utterly taken away. It will assuredly be granted that the persuas-
ion of the coming forth of the word immediately from God, in the way pleaded for, is the foundation of all faith, hope, and obedience. But what, I pray, will it advantage us that God did so once deliver his word, if we are not assured also that that word so delivered hath been, by his special care and providence, preserved entire and uncor-
rupt unto us, or that it doth not evidence and manifest itself to be his word, being so preserved? Blessed, may we say, were the ages past, who received the word of God in its unquestionable power and purity, when it shone brightly in its own glorious native light, and was free from those defects and corruptions which, through the de-
fault of men in a long tract of time, it hath contracted; but for us, as we know not well where to lay a sure foundation of believing that this book rather than any other doth contain what is left unto us of that word of his, so it is impossible we should ever come to any certainty almost of any individual word or expression whether it be from God or no. Far be it from the thoughts of any good man, that God, whose covenant with his church is that his word and Spirit shall never depart from it, Isa. lix. 21, Matt. v. 18, 1 Pet. i. 25, 1 Cor. xi. 23, Matt. xxviii. 20, hath left it in uncertainties about the things that are the foundation of all that faith and obedience which he requires at our hands.

As, then, I have in the foregoing treatise evinced, as I hope, the self-evidencing light and power of the Scripture, so let us now can-
didly, for the sake and in the pursuit of truth,—dealing with a mind freed from prejudices and disquieting affection, save only the
trouble that arises from the necessity of dissenting from the authors of so useful a work,—address ourselves to the consideration of what seems in these Prolegomena and Appendix to impair the truth of the other assertions about the entire preservation of the word as given out from God in the copies which yet remain with us. And this I shall do, not doubting but that the persons themselves concerned will fairly accept and weigh what is conscientiously tendered.

As, then, I do with all thankfulness acknowledge that many things are spoken very honourably of the originals in these Prolegomena, and that they are in them absolutely preferred above any translation whatever,¹ and asserted in general as the authentic rule of all versions, contrary to the thoughts of the publisher of the great Parisian Bibles, and his infamous hyperaspistes, Morinus; so, as they stand in their aspect unto the Appendix of various lections, there are both opinions and principles, confirmed by suitable practices, that are of the nature and importance before mentioned.

1. After a long dispute to that purpose, it is determined that the Hebrew points or vowels, and accents, are a novel invention of some Judaical Rabbins, about five or six hundred years after the giving out of the gospel.² Hence,—

(1.) An antiquity is ascribed to some translations, two or three at the least, above and before the invention of these points; whose agreement with the original cannot, therefore, by just consequence, be tried by the present text, as now pointed and accented.

(2.) The whole credit of our reading and interpretation of the Scripture, as far as regulated by the present punctuation, depends solely on the faithfulness and skill of those Jews whose invention this work is asserted to be.

2. The₪₪۷۰۷۲۷۰۷۲۷۰۷۲۷۰۷۲, of which sort are above eight hundred in the Hebrew Bibles, are various lections, partly gathered by some Judaical Rabbins out of ancient copies, partly their critical amendments.³ And, therefore,—

After these various lections, as they are esteemed, are presented unto us in their own proper order, wherein they stand in the great Bibles (not surely to increase the bulk of diverse readings, or to present a face of new variety to a less attentive observer, but) to evidence that they are such various lections as above described, they are given us over a second time, in the method whereinto they are cast by Cappellus, the great patriarch of these mysteries.⁴

3. That there are such alterations befallen the original as, in many places, may be rectified by the translations that have been made of old.⁵

¹ Proleg. 7, sect. 17. ² Ibid. 3, sect. 8, et seq. ³ Ibid. 8, sect. 23, etc. ⁴ Append. p. 5. ⁵ Proleg. 7, sect. 12.
And therefore,—

Various lections may be observed and gathered out of those translations, by considering how they read in their copies, and wherein they differed from those which we now enjoy.¹

4. It is also declared, that where any gross faults or corruptions are befallen the originals, men may by their faculty of critical conjecturing, amend them, and restore the native lections that were lost; though in general, without the authority of copies, this may not be allowed.²

And therefore,—

A collection of various readings out of Grotius, consisting for the most part in such conjectures, is in the Appendix presented unto us.

5. The voluminous bulk of various lections, as nakedly exhibited, seems sufficient to beget scruples and doubts in the minds of men about the truth of what hath been hitherto by many pretended concerning the preservation of the Scripture through the care and providence of God.

It is known to all men acquainted with things of this nature that in all these there is no new opinion coined or maintained by the learned prefacer to these Bibles; the severals mentioned have been asserted and maintained by sundry learned men. Had the opinion about them been kept in the ordinary sphere of men's private conceptions, in their own private writings, running the hazard of men's judgments on their own strength and reputation, I should not from my former discourse have esteemed myself concerned in them. Every one of us must give an account of himself unto God. It will be well for us if we are found holding the foundation. If we build hay and stubble upon it, though our work perish, we shall be saved. Let every man in these things be fully persuaded in his own mind; it shall be to me no offence. It is their being laid as the foundation of the usefulness of these Biblia Polyglotta, with an endeavour to render them catholic, not in their own strength, but in their appendage to the authority that on good grounds is expected to this work, that calls for a due consideration of them. All men who will find them stated in these Prolegomena may not perhaps have had leisure, may not perhaps have the ability, to know what issue the most of these things have been already driven unto in the writings of private men.

As I willingly grant, then, that some of these things may, without any great prejudice to the truth, be candidly debated amongst learned men, so taking them altogether, placed in the advantages they now enjoy, I cannot but look upon them as an engine suited to the destruction of the important truth before pleaded for, and as a fit

¹ Proleg. 6, sect. 8-10. ² Ibid. 6, sect. 12.
weapon put into the hands of men of atheistical minds and principles, such as this age abounds withal, to oppose the whole evidence of truth revealed in the Scripture. I fear, with some, either the pretended infallible judge or the depth of atheism will be found to lie at the door of these considerations. "Hoc Ithacus vellet." But the debate of the advantage of either Romanists or Atheists from hence belongs to another place and season. Nor is the guilt of any consequences of this nature charged on the workmen, which yet may be feared from the work itself.

CHAPTER II.

Of the purity of the originals—The αὐτόγραφα of the Scripture lost—That of Moses, how and how long preserved—Of the book found by Hilkiah—Of the αὐτόγραφα of the New Testament—Of the first copies of the originals—The scribes of those copies not διάτυποι—What is ascribed to them—The great and incomparable care of the scribes of it—The whole word of God, in every tittle of it, preserved entire in the copies of the original extant—Heads of arguments to that purpose—What various lections are granted in the original of the Old and New Testaments—Sundry considerations concerning them, manifesting them to be of no importance—That the Jews have not corrupted the text—The most probable instances considered.

Having given an account of the occasion of this discourse, and mentioned the particulars that are, all or some of them, to be taken into further consideration, before I proceed to their discussion, I shall, by way of addition and explanation to what hath been delivered in the former treatise, give a brief account of my apprehensions concerning the purity of the present original copies of the Scripture, or rather copies in the original languages, which the church of God doth now and hath for many ages enjoyed as her chiefest treasure; whereby it may more fully appear what it is we plead for and defend against the insinuations and pretences above mentioned.

First, then, it is granted that the individual αὐτόγραφα of Moses, the prophets, and the apostles, are in all probability, and as to all that we know, utterly perished and lost out of the world; as also the copies of Ezra. The reports mentioned by some to the contrary are open fictions.¹ The individual ink and parchment, the rolls or books that they wrote, could not without a miracle have been preserved from mouldering into dust before this time. Nor doth it seem improbable that God was willing by their loss to reduce us to a nearer

consideration of his care and providence in the preservation of every tittle contained in them. Had those individual writings been preserved, men would have been ready to adore them, as the Jews do their own ἀτίγραφα in their synagogues.

Moses, indeed, delivered his original copy of the Pentateuch in a public assembly unto the Levites (that is, the sons of Korah), to be put into the sides of the ark, and there kept for a perpetual monument, Deut. xxxi. 25, 26. That individual book was, I doubt not, preserved until the destruction of the temple. There is, indeed, no mention made of the book of the law in particular, when the ark was solemnly carried into the holy place after the building of Solomon's temple, 2 Chron. v. 4, 5; but the tabernacle of the congregation continued until then. That, and all that was in it, are said to be "brought up," verse 5. Now, the placing of the book by the sides of the ark being so solemn an ordinance, it was no doubt preserved; nor is there any pretence to the contrary. Some think the book found by Hilkiah in the days of Josiah was this καλὴ παρευθηκη, or ἀτίγραφον of Moses, which was placed by the sides of the ark. It rather seems to have been some ancient sacred copy, used in the service of the temple, and laid up there, as there was in the second temple,¹ which was carried in triumph to Rome: for besides that he speaks of his finding it in general in the house of the Lord, upon the occasion of the work which was then done, 2 Chron. xxxiv. 15, which was not in or about the holy place, where he, who was high priest, knew full well this book was kept, it doth not appear that it was lawful for him to take that sacred depositum from its peculiar archives to send it abroad, as he dealt with that book which he found; nay, doubtless, it was altogether unlawful for him so to have done, it being placed there by a peculiar ordinance, for a peculiar or special end. After the destruction of the temple, all inquiry after that book is in vain. The author of the Second Book of Maccabees mentions not its hiding in Nebo by Jeremiah, with the ark and altar, or by Josiah, as say some of the Talmudists; nor were it of any importance if they had. Of the Scripture preserved in the temple at its last destruction, Josephus gives us a full account, De Bell. Jud. lib. vii. cap. xxiv.

Secondly, For the Scriptures of the New Testament, it doth not appear that the ἀτίγραφα of the several writers of it were ever gathered into one volume, there being now no one church to keep them for the rest. The epistles, though immediately transcribed for the use of other churches, Col. iv. 16, were doubtless kept in the several churches whereunto they were directed. From those πρωτοτυπα there were quickly ἐκτυπωμενα, "transcribed copies," given out

¹ Joseph. de Bell. Jud. lib. vii. cap. xxiv.
to "faithful men," 2 Tim. ii. 1, whilst the infallible Spirit yet continued his guidance in an extraordinary manner.

For the first transcribers of the original copies, and those who in succeeding ages have done the like work from them, whereby they have been propagated and continued down to us, in a subserviency to the providence and promise of God, we say not, as is vainly charged by Morinus and Cappellus, that they were all or any of them ἀναμάτητοι and Ἀνάστυνσαι, "infallible and divinely inspired," so that it was impossible for them in any thing to mistake. It is known, it is granted, that failings have been amongst them, and that various lections are from thence risen; of which afterward. Religious care and diligence in their work, with a due reverence of Him with whom they had to do, is all we ascribe unto them. Not to acknowledge these freely in them, without clear and unquestionable evidence to the contrary, is high uncharitableness, impiety, and ingratitude. This care and diligence, we say, in a subserviency to the promise and providence of God, hath produced the effect contended for; nor is any thing further necessary thereunto. On this account to argue, as some do, from the miscarriages and mistakes of men, their oscitancy and negligence in transcribing the old heathen authors, Homer, Aristotle, Tully, we think it not tolerable in a Christian, or any one that hath the least sense of the nature and importance of the word, or the care of God towards his church. Shall we think that men who wrote out books wherein themselves and others were no more concerned than it is possible for men to be in the writings of the persons mentioned, and others like them, had as much reason to be careful and diligent in that they did as those who knew and considered that every letter and tittle that they were transcribing was part of the word of the great God, wherein the eternal concernment of their own souls and the souls of others did lie? Certainly, whatever may be looked for from the religious care and diligence of men lying under a loving and careful aspect from the promise and providence of God, may be justly expected from them who undertook that work. However, we are ready to own all their failings that can be proved. To assert in this case without proof is injurious.

The Jews have a common saying among them,—that to alter one letter of the law is no less sin than to set the whole world on fire; and shall we think that in writing it they took no more care than a man would do in writing out Aristotle or Plato, who for a very little portion of the world would willingly have done his endeavour to get both their works out of it? Considering that the word to be transcribed was, every iota and tittle of it, the word of the great God; that that which was written, and as written, was proposed as his, as from him; that if any failings were made, innumerable eyes of men,
owning their eternal concernment to lie in that word, were open upon it to discover it, and thousands of copies were extant to try it by; and all this known unto and confessed by every one that undertook this work,—it is no hard matter to prove their care and diligence to have outgone that of other common scribes of heathen authors. The truth is, they are prodigious things that are related of the exact diligence and reverential care of the ancient Jews in this work, especially when they intrusted a copy to be a rule for the trial and standard of other private copies. Maimonides in הָלָכָת פָּרֶס הַוָּיוֹת הַיְחִידי, chap. viii. 3, 4, tells us that Ben Asher spent many years in the careful, exact writing out of the Bible. Let any man consider the twenty things which they affirm to profane a book or copy, and this will further appear. They are repeated by Rabbi Moses, Tractat. de Libro Legis cap. x. One of them is, שֶׁהֶרֶס אַף לֵא לַא הָאֹת אֶחָד, “If but one letter be wanting;” and another, “If but one letter be redundant.” Of which more shall be spoken if occasion be offered.

Even among the heathen, we will scarce think that the Roman pontifices, going solemnly to transcribe the Sibyls’ verses, would do it either negligently or treacherously, or alter one tittle from what they found written; and shall we entertain such thoughts of them who knew they had to do with the living God, and that in and about that which is dearer to Him than all the world besides? Let men, then, clamour as they please, and cry out of all men as ignorant and stupid which will not grant the corruptions of the Old Testament which they plead for, which is the way of Morinus; or let them propose their own conjectures of the ways of the entrance of the mistakes that they pretend are crept into the original copies, with their remedies, which is the way of Cappellus; we shall acknowledge nothing of this nature but what they can prove by undeniable and irrefragable instances,—which, as to any thing as yet done by them or those that follow in their footsteps, appears upon the matter to be nothing at all. To this purpose take our sense in the words of a very learned man: “Ut in iis libris qui sine vocalibus conscripti sunt, certum constantemque exemplarium omnium, tum excusarum scrip tionem similemque omnino comperimus, sic in omnibus etiam iis quibus puncta sunt addita, non aliam cuipiam nec discrepantem aliis punctationem observavimus; nec quisquam est qui ullo in loco diversa lectionis Hebraicæ exemplaria ab iis quæ circumseruntur, vidisse se asserat, modo grammaticam rationem observavatam dicat. Et quidem Dei consilio ac voluntate factum putamus, ut cum magna Græcorum Latinorumque fere omnium ejusdem auctoris exemplarium, ac præsertim manuscriptorum pluribus in locis varietas deprehendatur, magna tamen in omnibus Hebraicis, quæcumque nostro sæculo inveniuntur, Bibliis, scriptionis æqualitas, similitudo atque
constantia servetur quocunque modo scripta illa sint, sive solis consonantibus content, sive punctis etiam instructa visantur," Arias Montan. praefat. ad Biblia. Interlin. de Varia Hebraicorum Librorum Scriptione et Lectione.

It can, then, with no colour of probability be asserted¹ (which yet I find some learned men too free in granting), namely, that there hath the same fate attended the Scripture in its transcription as hath done other books. Let me say without offence, this imagination, asserted on deliberation, seems to me to border on atheism. Surely the promise of God for the preservation of his word, with his love and care of his church, of whose faith and obedience that word of his is the only rule, requires other thoughts at our hands.

Thirdly, We add, that the whole Scripture, entire as given out from God, without any loss, is preserved in the copies of the originals yet remaining; what varieties there are among the copies themselves shall be afterward declared. In them all, we say, is every letter and tittle of the word. These copies, we say, are the rule, standard, and touchstone of all translations, ancient or modern, by which they are in all things to be examined, tried, corrected, amended; and themselves only by themselves. Translations contain the word of God, and are the word of God, perfectly or imperfectly, according as they express the words, sense, and meaning of those originals. To advance any, all translations concurring, into an equality with the originals,—so to set them by it as to set them up with it on even terms,—much more to propose and use them as means of castigating, amending, altering any thing in them, gathering various lections by them, is to set up an altar of our own by the altar of God, and to make equal the wisdom, care, skill, and diligence of men, with the wisdom, care, and providence of God himself. It is a foolish conjecture of Morinus, from some words of Epiphanius, that Origen in his Octapla placed the translation of the LXX. in the midst, to be the rule of all the rest, even of the Hebrew itself, that was to be regulated and amended by it: "Media igitur omnium catholica editio collocata erat, ut ad eam Hebraeæ ætæque editiones exigerentur et emendarentur," Exercit. lib. i. cap. iii. p. 15. The truth is, he placed the Hebrew, in Hebrew characters, in the first place, as the rule and standard of all the rest; the same in Greek characters in the next place; then that of Aquila; then that of Symmachus; after which, in the fifth place, followed that of the LXX., mixed with that of Theodotion.

The various arguments giving evidence to this truth that might be produced are too many for me now to insist upon, and would take up more room than is allotted to the whole discourse, should

¹ Proleg. 7, sect. 12.
I handle them at large, and according to the merit of this cause. 1. The providence of God in taking care of his word, which he hath magnified above all his name, as the most glorious product of his wisdom and goodness, his great concernment in this word answering his promise to this purpose; 2. The religious care of the church (I speak not of the Romish synagogue) to whom these oracles of God were committed; 3. The care of the first writers in giving out authentic copies of what they had received from God unto many, which might be rules to the first transcribers; 4. The multiplying copies to such a number that it was impossible any should corrupt them all, wilfully or by negligence; 5. The preservation of the authentic copies, first in the Jewish synagogues, then in the Christian assemblies, with reverence and diligence; 6. The daily reading and studying of the word by all sorts of persons, ever since its first writing, rendering every alteration liable to immediate observation and discovery, and that all over the world; with, 7. The consideration of the many millions that looked on every letter and tittle in this book as their inheritance, which for the whole world they would not be deprived of: and in particular, for the Old Testament (now most questioned), 8. The care of Ezra and his companions, the men of the great synagogue, in restoring the Scripture to its purity when it had met with the greatest trial that it ever underwent in this world, considering the paucity of the copies then extant; 9. The care of the Masoretes from his days and downward, to keep perfect and give an account of every syllable in the Scripture,—of which see Buxtorfius, Com. Mas.; 10. The constant consent of all copies in the world, so that, as sundry learned men have observed, there is not in the whole Mishna, Gemara, or either Talmud, any one place of Scripture found otherwise read than as it is now in our copies; 11. The security we have that no mistakes were voluntarily or negligently brought into the text before the coming of our Saviour, who was to declare all things, in that he not once reproves the Jews on that account, when yet for their false glosses on the word he spares them not; 12. Afterward the watchfulness which the two nations of Jews and Christians had always one upon another,—with sundry things of the like importance, might to this purpose be insisted on. But of these things I shall speak again, if occasion be offered.

Notwithstanding what hath been spoken, we grant that there are

1 Hieroculumis Babylonica expugnatione deletis, omne instrumentum Judaice literaturae per Esdram constat restauratum."—Tertull. lib. de Hab. Mul. cap. iii.

2 "Quod si aliquid dixerit Hebraeos libros ad Judaeos esse falsatos, audiat Origenem, quid in octavo volume explanationum Esiae respondent queasiumcula; quod nunquam dominus et apostoli qui cetera crimina arguunt in Scribis et Pharisieis, de hoc crimen quod erat maximum reticent. Sin autem dixerint post adventum Domini et prae-dicationem apostolorum libros Hebraeos fuisse falsatos cachinnum tenere non potero."—Hierom. in cap. vi. Esiae.
and have been various lections in the Old Testament and the New. For the Old Testament, the Keri and Ketib, the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews, evince it. Of the בֵּיתְנֵֽי יִרְחָן I shall speak particularly afterward. They present themselves to the view of every one that but looks into the Hebrew Bible. At the end of the great Rabbinical Bibles (as they are called) printed by Bombergus at Venice, as also in the edition of Buxtorfius at Basel, there is a collection of the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews;—we have them also in this Appendix. For the two first mentioned, they are called among the Jews, one of them, R. Aaron, the son of R. Moses, of the tribe of Asher; the other, R. Moses, the son of David, of the tribe of Naphtali. They flourished, as is probable, among the Jews, about the year of Christ 1030, or thereabouts, and were teachers of great renown, the former in the west or Palestina, the latter in the east or Babylon. In their exact consideration of every letter, point, and accent of the Bible, wherein they spent their lives, it seems they found out some varieties. Let any one run them through as they are presented in this Appendix, he will find them to be so small, consisting for the most part in unnecessary accents, of no importance to the sense of any word, that they deserve not to be taken notice of. For the various readings of the oriental or Babylonian, and occidental or Palestine Jews, all that I know of them (and I wish that those that know more of them would inform me better) is, that they first appeared in the edition of the Bible by Bombergus, under the care of Felix Pratensis, gathered by R. Jacob Ben Chajim, who corrected that impression. But they give us no account of their original, nor (to profess my ignorance) do I know any that do: it may be some do, but in my present haste I cannot inquire after them. But the thing itself proclaims their non-importance; and Cappellus, the most skilful and diligent improver of all advantages for impairing the authority of the Hebrew text, so to give countenance to his "Critica Sacra," confesses that they are all trivial, and not in matters of any moment. Besides these, there are no other various lections of the Old Testament. The conjectures of men conceited of their own abilities to correct the word of God are not to be admitted to that title. If any others can be gathered, or shall be hereafter, out of ancient copies of credit and esteem, where no mistake can be discovered as their cause, they deserve to be considered. Men must here deal by instances, not conjectures. All that yet appears impairs not in the least the truth of our assertion, that every letter and tittle of the word of God remains in the copies preserved by his merciful providence for the use of his church.

As to Jews, besides the mad and senseless clamour in general for
corrupting the Scriptures, three things are with most pretence of
reason objected against them:—The קסוס תikkun sopherim,
or “correctio scribarum,” by which means it is confessed by Elias
that eighteen places are corrected. But all things are here uncen-
tain: uncertain that ever any such things were done; uncertain who
are intended by their sopherim,—Ezra and his companions most
probably; nor do the particular places enumerated discover any
such correction. They are all in particular considered by Glassius,
lib. i. tract. 1; but the whole matter is satisfactorily determined by
Buxtorfius in his letters to Glassius, printed by him, and repeated
again by Amama, Anti. Barb. Bib. lib. i. p. 30, 31. Because this
thing is much insisted on by Galatinus to prove the Jews’ corrupting
of the text, it may not be amiss to set down the words of that great
master of all Jewish learning:—

"Ad tertium quæsitum tuum, de tikkun sopherim, 18 voces hanc
censuram subjisse Massora passim notat. Recensio locorum in ven-
título libri Numerorum, et Ps. cvi. Utrobique non nisi 16 recen-
sentur, sed in Num. xii. 12 duo exempla occurrunt, ut notat R.
Solomon. Deest ergo unus locus mihi, quem ex nullo Judæo hacte-
tenus, expiscari potui, nec magnus ille Mercerus eum invenit. Ga-
latinus hoc thema non intellexit, et aliena exempla admiscet. Sic et
alii qui corruptiones ista esse putant. Nec ullam hactenus ex nostris
sive evangelicis sive catholicis vidi, qui explicarit, quæ fuerint scribæ
isti, et quales היברניס ipsorum. Quam antiquæ habe notas de tikkun
sint, liquido mihi nondum constat. Antiquior ipsarum memoria est
in libro רסומם, qui ante Talmud Babylonicum furtur consecratus. Dis-
sentiunt tamen Hebræi de ejus autore et tempore. In Talmud neutro
ulla plane istius tikkun mentio fit, cum alias היעש והספירה longe
minoris negotii in Talmud commenoretur. Si aliter ista loca fuisse
sent aliquando scripta, Onkelos et Jonathan id vel semel expressis-
sent. Nec Josephus reticuisset, qui contrarium Hebræis adscriptit,
nulum scilicet unquam literam mutatam fuisse in lege ab Hebræis
popularibus suis, lib. i. contra Apionem. Talmudistæ in Lev. xxvii.
vers. ult. diversis locis notat, nec prophetae uti licitum fuisse vel
minimum in lege mutare vel innovare. Quomodo ergo scribæ qui-
dam vulgares hanc audaciam sibi arrogassent, textuum sacrum in
literis et sensu corrigere? In silentio itaque omnium, in aurem tibi
dico, Sopherim hosce fuisse ipsos autores sacros, Mosen et Prophetas,
qui nunquam aliter scripserunt quam hodie scriptum legitur. At
sapientes Hebræorum nasutiores, animadvertentes inconvenientiam
quandam in istis locis, scripserunt, aliter istos autores loqui debuisse,
et secundum cohærentiam propositi textus, sic vel sic scribere, sed
pro eo maluisse sic scribere, et id sic efférerre, ut illud hodie in textu
est. Veluti Gen. xviii. 22, lectum scriptum, 'Et Abraham adhuc sta-
OF THE PURITY OF THE ORIGINALS.

bat coram Domino.' Itane? ubi legitur, inquirit sapientes, quod Abraham venerit ad Dominum, et steterit coram eo; contrarium dictur in praecedentibus, Deus scilicet venit ad Abraham, et dixit ad eum, 'Num ego celo ab Abrahamo,' etc. 'Clamor Sodomae et Gomorrhae magnus est,' etc. Ideoque Moses scribere debutit, 'Et Dominus adhuc stabat coram Abrahamo.' At ita serviliter de Deo loqui non descinit Mosen, unde תְּנוֹך אֲרֶץ corretit et mutavit styllum sermonis, honoris majoris causa, et dixit, 'Et Abraham adhuc stabat,' etc. Hinc R. Salamo adjicit auctoribus scribendum ipsi (Mosi) erat, (Seu) scribere debebat, 'Et Dominus stabat;' non quod aliter sic scripserit antea, et postea id ab alis scribis correctum sit, aut corruptum. Hinc R. Aben Ezra, ad aliquot loca irredit nasutos, inquienis, nullo tikkun opusuisse, id est, nihil esse, quod nasuti isti sapientes putarent, autorem debuisse aliter ibi loqui vel scribere. Vide et eum Job. xxxii. 3. Habeas mysterium prolixe explicatum, in quo et multi Hebraeorum impergerunt.' Thus far Buxtorfius.

The יִשְׂרָאֵל מְסָפְּרוֹי are insisted on by the same Galatinus; but these are only about the use of the letter י four or five times, which seem to be of the same rise with them foregoing.

-But that which makes the greatest cry at present is the corruption of Ps. xxii. 17, where, instead of וַיִּתְנָה, which the LXX. translated ὦ γὰρ, "They digged" or "pierced,"—that is, "my hands and feet,"—the present Judaical copies, as the Antwerp Bibles also, read וַיִּתְנָה, "as a lion," so depraving the prophecy of our Saviour's suffering, "They digged (or pierced) my hands and my feet," leaving it no sense at all; "As a lion my hands and my feet." Simeon de Muis upon the place pleads the substitution of י for י to be a late corruption of the Jews; at least, וַיִּתְנָה was the Keri, and was left out by them. Johannes Isaac, lib. ii. ad Lindan., professes that when he was a Jew, he saw וַיִּתְנָה in a book of his grandfather's. Buxtorf affirms one to have been the Ketib, the other the Keri, and proves it from the Masora; and blames the Antwerp Bibles for printing וַיִּתְנָה in the line. With him agree Genebrard, Pagninus, Vatablus, Mercer, Rivet, etc. Others contend that Ca-ari, "as a lion," ought to be retained, repeating וַיָּתָן כְּשָׁוָה, the verb יִתְנָה, "They compassed me about," affirming also that word to signify, "to tear, rend, and strike;" so that the sense should be, "They tear my hands and feet as a lion." So Voetius, De Insolubil. Scripturae. But that וַיָּתָן cannot be here rendered "sicut leo" most evince, partly from the anomalous position of the prefix ו with Kamets, but chiefly from the Masora, affirming that that word is taken in another sense than it is used Isa. xxxviii. 13, where it expressly signifies, "as a lion." The shorter determination is, that from the radix הָלֶב by the epenthesis וָו, and the change which is used often of י into י (as in the
same manner it is Ezra x. 44), in the third person plural, the pre-
terperfect tense of kal is ἐνδιώκομεν, "perfoderunt," "they digged," or
"pierced through my hands and my feet." But to what purpose is
this gleaning after the vintage of Mr Pococke to this purpose in his
excellent Miscellanies?

The place of old instanced in by Justin Martyr, Ps. xcv.i. 10, where
he charges the Jews to have taken out these words, ἀπὸ δέντρου, "from
the wood," making the sense, "The Lord reigneth from the wood,"
or the tree, so pointing out the death of Christ on the cross, is ex-
ploded by all; for besides that he speaks of the Septuagint, not of
the Hebrew text, it is evident that those words were foisted into some
few copies of that translation, never being generally received, as is
manifested by Fuller, Miscellan. lib. iii. cap. xiii. And it is a pretty
story that Arias Montanus tells us of a learned man (I suppose he
means Lindanus) pretending that those words were found in a He-
b rew copy of the Psalms, of venerable antiquity, beyond all excep-
tion, here in England; which copy coming afterward to his hand,
he found to be a spurious, corrupt, novel transcript, wherein yet the
pretended words are not to be found! Arias Mont. Apparat. de Variis
Lec. Heb. et Mass. And I no way doubt, but that we want oppor-
tunity to search and sift some of the copies that men set up against
the common reading in sundry places of the New Testament, we
should find them not one whit better or of more worth than he found
that copy of the Psalms.

CHAPTER III.

Of various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament.

For various lections in the Greek copies of the New Testament,
we know with what diligence and industry they have been collected
by some, and what improvement hath been made of those collections
by others. Protestants, for the most part, have been the chiefest
collectors of them. Stephanus, Camerarius, Beza, Cameron, Gró-
tius, Drusius, Heinsius, De Dieu, Cappellus, all following Erasmus,
have had the prime hand in that work. Papists have ploughed with
their heifer to disparage the original, and to cry up the Vulgar Latin.
A specimen of their endeavours we have in the late virulent exer-
citations of Morinus. At first very few were observed. What a heap
or bulk they are now swelled unto we see in this Appendix. The
collection of them makes up a book bigger than the New Testament
itself! Of those that went before, most gave us only what they found
in some particular copies that themselves were possessors of; some,
those only which they judged of importance, or that might make some pretence to be considered whether they were proper or no. Here we have all that by any means could be brought to hand, and that whether they are tolerably attested for various lections or no; for as to any contribution unto the better understanding of the Scripture from them, it cannot be pretended. And whither this work may yet grow I know not.

That there are in some copies of the New Testament, and those some of them of some good antiquity, diverse readings, in things or words of less importance, is acknowledged. The proof of it lies within the reach of most, in the copies that we have; and I shall not solicit the reputation of those who have afforded us others out of their own private furniture. That they have been all needlessly heaped up together, if not to an eminent scandal, is no less evident. Let us, then, take a little view of their rise and importance.

That the Grecian was once as it were the vulgar language of the whole world of Christians is known. The writing of the New Testament in that language in part found it so, and in part made it so. What thousands, yea, what millions of copies of the New Testament were then in the world, all men promiscuously reading and studying of the Scripture, cannot be reckoned. That so many transcriptions, most of them by private persons, for private use, having a standard of correction in their public assemblies ready to relieve their mistakes, should be made without some variation, is in τῶν ἄδουνατων. From the copies of the first ages, others in the succeeding have been transcribed, according as men had opportunity. From those which are come down to the hands of learned men in this latter age, whereof very few or none at all are of any considerable antiquity, have men made it their business to collect the various readings we speak of; with what usefulness and serviceableness to the churches of God others that look on must be allowed their liberty to judge. We know the vanity, curiosity, pride, and naughtiness of the heart of man; how ready we are to please ourselves with things that seem singular and remote from the observation of the many, and how ready to publish them as evidences of our learning and diligence, let the fruit and issue be what it will. Hence it is come to pass,—not to question the credit of any man speaking of his manuscripts, which is wholly swallowed in this Appendix,—that whatever varying word, syllable, or tittle, could be by any observed, wherein any book, though of yesterday, varied from the common received copy, though manifestly a mistake, superfluous or deficient, inconsistent with the sense of the place, yea, barbarous, is presently imposed on us as a various lection.

As, then, I shall not speak any thing to derogate from the worth of their labour who have gathered all these various readings into one
body or volume, so I presume I may take liberty without offence to say, I should more esteem of theirs who would endeavour to search and trace out these pretenders to their several originals, and, reject-
ing the spurious brood that hath now spawned itself over the face of so much paper, that ought by no means to be brought into compet-
tition with the common reading, would reduce them to such a neces-
sary number, whose consideration might be of some other use than merely to create a temptation to the reader that nothing is left sound and entire in the word of God.

However, now Satan seems to have exerted the utmost of his malice, men of former ages the utmost of their negligence, of these latter ages of their diligence,—the result of all which we have in the present collection in this Appendix,—with them that rightly ponder things there ariseth nothing at all to the prejudice of our assertion; as may possibly, God assisting, be further manifested hereafter, in the particular consideration of some or all of these diverse readings therein exhibited unto us. Those which are of importance have been already considered by others, especially Glassius, tract. i, lib. i.

It is evident that the design of this Appendix was to gather to-
gether every thing of this sort that might by any means be afforded. At the present, that the reader may not be too much startled at the fruit of their diligence whose work and labour it was, I shall only remark concerning it some few things that, on a general view of it, occur unto me:

First, then, here is professedly no choice made nor judgment used in discerning which may indeed be called various lections, but all differences whatever that could be found in any copies, printed or written, are equally given out. Hence many differences that had been formerly rejected by learned men for open corruptions are here tendered us again. The very first observation in the treatise next printed unto this collection, in the Appendix itself, rejects one of the varieties as a corruption. So have some others of them been by Arias Montanus, Cameron, and many more. It is not every variety or difference in a copy that should presently be cried up for a various reading. A man might with as good colour and pretence take all the printed copies he could get of various editions, and gathering out the errata typographica, print them for various lections, as give us many, I shall say the most, of those in this Appendix under that name. It may be said, indeed, that the composers of this Appendix found it not incumbent on them to make any judgment of the readings which de facto they found in the copies they perused, but merely to represent what they so found, leaving the judgment of them unto others. I say also it may be so; and therefore, as I do not reflect on them nor their diligence, so I hope they or others
will not be offended that I give this notice of what judgment remains yet to be made concerning them.

Secondly, Whereas Beza, who is commonly blamed by men of all sides and parties for making too bold upon various lections, hath professedly stigmatized his own manuscript, that he sent unto Cambridge, as so corrupt in the Gospel of Luke that he durst not publish the various lections of it, for fear of offence and scandal (however, he thought it had not fallen into the hands of heretics, that had designedly depraved it), we have here, if I mistake not, all the corruptions of that copy given us as various readings; for though I have not seen the copy itself, yet the swelling of the various lections in that Gospel into a bulk as big or bigger than the collection of all the New Testament,—besides the [other] Gospels and Acts, wherein that copy is cited one thousand four hundred and forty times,—puts it out of all question that so we are dealt withal. Now, if this course be taken, and every stigmatized copy may be searched for differences, and these presently printed as various readings, there is no doubt but we may have enough of them to frighten poor unstable souls into the arms of the pretended infallible guide;—I mean as to the use that will be made of this work by such persons as Morinus.

Thirdly, I am not without apprehensions that "opere in longo ob-repist somnus," and that whilst the learned collectors had their hands and minds busied about other things, some mistakes did fall into this work of gathering these various lections. Some things I meet withal in it that I profess I cannot bring to any good consistency among themselves. To let pass particular instances, and insist on one only of a more general and eminent importance:—in the entrance unto this collection an account is given us of the ancient copies out of which these observations are made; among the rest one of them is said to be an ancient copy in the library of Emmanuel College in Cambridge: this is noted by the letters Em. throughout the whole collection. Now, whereas it is told us, in these preliminary cautions and observations, that it contains only Paul's Epistles, I wonder how it is come to pass that so many various lections in the Gospels and Acts as in the farrago itself are fixed on the credit of that book could come to be gathered out of a copy of Paul's Epistles. Certainly here must be some mistake, either in the learned authors of the previous directions, or by those employed to gather the varieties following. And it may be supposed that that mistake goes not alone; so that, upon a further consideration of particulars, it may be we shall not find them so clearly attested as at first view they seem to be. It would indeed be a miracle, if, in a work of that variety, many things should not escape the eye of the most diligent observer.

I am not, then, upon the whole matter, out of hopes but that, upon
a diligent review of all these various lections, they may be reduced to a less offensive and less formidable number. Let it be remembered that the vulgar copy we use was the public possession of many generations,—that upon the invention of printing it was in actual authority throughout the world with them that used and understood that language, as far as any thing appears to the contrary; let that, then, pass for the standard, which is confessedly its right and due, and we shall, God assisting, quickly see how little reason there is to pretend such varieties of readings as we are now surprised withal: for,—

1. Let those places be separated which are not sufficiently attested unto, so as to pretend to be various lections; it being against all pretence of reason that every mistake of every obscure, private copy, perhaps not above two or three hundred years old (or if older), should be admitted as a various lection, against the concurrent consent of, it may be, all others that are extant in the world, and that without any congruity of reason as to the sense of the text where it is fallen out. Men may, if they please, take pains to inform the world wherein such and such copies are corrupted or mistaken, but to impose their known failings on us as various lections is a course not to be approved.

2. Let the same judgment, and that deservedly, pass on all those different places which are altogether inconsiderable, consisting in accents or the change of a letter, not in the least intrenching on the sense of the place, or giving the least intimation of any other sense to be possibly gathered out of them but what is in the approved reading. To what end should the minds of men be troubled with them or about them, being evident mistakes of the scribes, and of no importance at all?

3. Let them also be removed from the pretence, which carry their own convicitions along with them that they are spurious, either;—
(1.) By their superfluity, or redundancy of unnecessary words; or, (2.) Their deficiency in words evidently necessary to the sense of their places; or, (3.) Their incoherence with the text in their several stations; or, (4.) [By giving] evidence of being intended as expository of difficulties, having been moved and assailed by some of the ancients upon the places, and their resolutions being intimated; or, (5.) Are foisted out of the Septuagint, as many places out of the New have been inserted into that copy of the Old; or, (6.) Are taken out of one place in the same penman and are used in another; or, (7.) Are apparently taken out of one Gospel and supplied in another, to make out the sense of the place; or, (8.) Have been corrected by the Vulgar Latin,—which hath often fallen out in some copies, as Lucas Brugensis shows us on Matt. xvii. 2, Mark i. 38, vii. 4, and sundry other places; or, (9.) Arise out of copies apparently corrupted, like that of Beza in Luke, and that in the Vatican boasted of by Huntley the Jesuit, which Lucas
Brugensis affirms to have been changed by the Vulgar Latin, and which was written and corrected, as Erasmus says, about the [time of the] council of Florence, when an agreement was patched up between the Greeks and Latins; or, (10.) Are notoriously corrupted by the old heretics, as 1 John v. 7. Unto which heads many, yea, the most of the various lections collected in this Appendix may be referred. I say, if this work might be done with care and diligence (whereunto I earnestly exhort some in this university, who have both ability and leisure for it), it would quickly appear how small the number is of those varieties in the Greek copies of the New Testament which may pretend unto any consideration under the state and title of various lections, and of how very little importance they are to weaken in any measure my former assertion concerning the care and providence of God in the preservation of his word. But this is a work of more time and leisure than at present I am possessor of; what is to come, Σεον εν γονοις κειται. In the meantime I doubt not but to hear tidings from Rome concerning this variety, no such collection having as yet been made in the world.

CHAPTER IV.

General premises—Opinions prejudicial to the authority of the originals in the Prolegomena enumerated—The just consequences of these premises—Others engaged in these opinions—Of Cappellus—Of Origen, Ximenes, Arias Montanus' editions of the Bible.

Having now declared in what sense, and with what allowance as to various lections, I maintain the assertion laid down in the foregoing treatise concerning the providential preservation of the whole book of God, so that we may have full assurance that we enjoy the whole revelation of his will in the copies abiding amongst us, I shall now proceed to weigh what may be objected further (beyond what hath already been insisted on) against the truth of it from the Prolegomena and Appendix to the Biblia Polyglotta, at the entrance of our discourse proposed to consideration:—

To speak somewhat of them in general, I must crave leave to say,—and it being but the representation of men's avowed judgments, I hope I may say without offence,—that together with many high and honourable expressions concerning the originals, setting aside the incredible figment of the Jews corrupting the Bible out of hatred to the Christians, which, being first supposed by Justin Martyr (though he speaks of the LXX. only), hath scarce found one or two since to own it, but is rejected by the universality of learned men, ancient and modern, unless some few Papists mad upon their idols, and the
thesis preferring in general this or that translation above the original, there is no opinion that I know of that was ever ventilated among Christians, tending to the depression of the worth or impairing the esteem of the Hebrew copies, which is not, directly or by just consequence, owned in these Prolegomena. Thence it is contended that the present Hebrew character is not that used by God himself and in the old church before the captivity of Babylon, but it is the Chaldean, the other being left to the Samaritans; that the points or vowels, and accents, are a late invention of the Tiberian Masoretes, long after sundry translations were extant in the world; that the Keri and Ketib are critical notes, consisting partly of various lections gathered by the late Masoretes and Rabbins; that considering how oftentimes, in likelihood, translators read the text before the invention of the points and accents, the present reading may be corrected and amended by them, and that because the old translators had other copies, or different copies from them which we now enjoy; that where gross faults are crept into the Hebrew text, men may by their own conjectures find out various lections whereby they may be amended,—and to this purpose an instance of such various lections, or rather corrections of the original, is in the Appendix exhibited unto us out of Grotius; that the books of the Scriptures having had the fate of other books,—by passing through the hands of many transcribers, they have upon them the marks of their negligence, ignorance, and sloth.

Now, truly, I cannot but wish that some other way had been found out to give esteem and reputation to this noble collection of translations than by espousing these opinions, so prejudicial to the truth and authority of the originals. And it may be justly feared, that where one will relieve himself against the uncertainty of the originals by the consideration of the various translations here exhibited unto us, being such as upon trial they will be found to be, many will be ready to question the foundation of all.

It is true, the learned prefacer owns not those wretched consequences that some have laboured to draw from these premises; yet it must be acknowledged, also, that sufficient security against the lawful deriving those consequences from these premises is not tendered unto us. He says not that because this is the state of the Hebrew language and Bible, therefore all things in it are dubious and uncertain, easy to be turned unto various senses, not fit to be a rule for the trial of other translations, though he knows full well who think this a just consequence from the opinion of the novelty of the vowels; and himself grants that all our knowledge of the Hebrew is taken from the translation of the LXX., as he is quoted to that purpose by Morinus, Præfat. ad Opusc. Hæbræ. Samarit. He
THE AUTHORITY OF THE ORIGINALS. 369

concludes not that on these accounts we must rely upon an 
infallible living judge, and the translation that he shall commend unto us,
though he knows full well who do so; and himself gives it for a rule,
that at the correction of the original we have the consent of the
guides of the church. I could desire then, I say, that sufficient
security may be tendered us against these inferences before the pre-
misses be embraced, seeing great and wise men, as we shall further
see anon, do suppose them naturally and necessarily to flow from
them.

It is confessed that some learned men, even among the Protestants,
have heretofore vented these or some of these paradoxes; especially
Cappellus, in his “Arcanum Punctuationis Revelatum,” “Critica
Sacra,” and other treatises; in the defence whereof, as I hear, he
still laboureth, being unwilling to suffer loss in the fruit of so great
pains. What will become of his reply unto Buxtorfius in the de-
fence of his Critica I know not. Reports are that it is finished; and
it is thought he must once more flee to the Papists by the help of
his son, a great zealot amongst them; as he did with his Critica, to
get it published. The generality of learned men among Protestants
are not yet infected with this leaven; nor, indeed, do I find his
boldness in conjecturing approved in these Prolegomena. But let it
be free for men to make known their judgments in the severals
mentioned. It hath been so, and may it abide so still. Had not
this great and useful work been prefaced with the stating of them,
it had not been of public concernment (as now it seems to be) to
have taken notice of them.

Besides, it is not known whither this inconvenience will grow.
Origen, in his Octapla, as was declared, fixed the Hebrew original
as the rule and measure of all translations. In the reviving of that
kind of work by Ximenes in the Complutensian Bibles, its station
is left unto it. Arias Montanus, who followed in their steps (con-
cerning whose performances under his master the king of Spain, I
may say, for sundry excellencies, “Nil oriturus alias, nil ortum tale”),
was religiously careful to maintain the purity of the originals, pub-
lishing the Hebrew verity (as it is called by Jerome, Austin, and
others of the ancients) as the rule of examining by it all translations
whatever; for which he is since accused of ignorance by a petulant
Jesuit,1 that never deserved to carry his books after him. Michael
Le Jay hath given a turn to this progress, and in plain terms exalts
a corrupt translation above the originals, and that upon the principle
under consideration, as is abundantly manifest from Morinus. And
if this change of judgment, which hath been long insinuating itself,
by the curiosity and boldness of critics, should break in also upon

1 Morin. Exercit. de IHeb. Text. Sinc. lib. i. exer. i. cap. iv.

VOL. XVI.

24
the protestant world, and be avowed in public works, it is easy to
conjecture what the end will be. We went from Rome under the
conduct of the purity of the originals; I wish none have a mind to
return thither again under the pretence of their corruption.

CHAPTER V.

The original of the points proposed to consideration in particular—The impor-
tance of the points to the right understanding of the Scripture—The testimony
of Morinus, Junius, Johannes Isaac, Cevallerius, and others—The use made by
the Papists of the opinion of the novelty of the points—The importance of the
points further manifested—The extreme danger of making the Hebrew punctu-
ation arbitrary—That danger evinced by instance—No relief against that danger
on the grounds of the opinion considered—The authors of the Hebrew punctu-
tation according to the Prolegomena; who and what—Morinus' folly—The
improbability of this pretence—The state of the Jews, the supposed inventors
of the points, after the destruction of the temple—Two attempts made by them
to restore their religion: the first under Barchoehab, with its issue; the
second under R. Judah, with its issue—The rise and foundation of the Tal-
muds—The state of the Jews upon and after the writing of the Talmuds—
Their rancour against Christ—Who the Tiberian Masoretes were that are
the supposed authors of the Hebrew punctuation; their description—That
figment rejected—The late testimony of Dr Lightfoot to this purpose—The
rise of the opinion of the novelty of the points—Of Elias Levi—The value of
his testimony in this case—Of the validity of the testimony of the Jewish
Rabbins—Some considerations about the antiquity of the points: the first,
from the nature of the punctuation itself, in reference unto grammatical rules;
[the second,] from the Chaldee paraphrase, and integrity of the Scripture as
now pointed.

This being, in my apprehension, the state of things amongst us,
I hope I may without offence proceed to the consideration of the
particulars before mentioned, from whence it is feared that objec-
tions may arise against the purity and self-evidencing power of the
Scriptures, pleaded for in the foregoing treatise. That which in the
first place was mentioned, is the assertion of the points or vowels,
and accents, to be a novel invention of some Rabbins of Tiberias in
Palestina. This the learned author of the Prolegomena defends with
Cappellus' arguments, and such other addictions as he was pleased
to make use of. To clear up the concernsments of our truth in this
particular, it will be necessary to consider;—1. What influence in
the right understanding of the text these points have, and neces-
sarily must have; 2. What is their original, or whom their invention
is ascribed unto in these Prolegomena. As to the assertive part of
this controversy, or the vindication of their true sacred original,
some other occasion may call for additions to what is now (by the way) insisted on. And as I shall not oppose them who maintain that they are coevoous with the letters,—which are not a few of the most learned Jews and Christians,—so I nowise doubt but that, as we now enjoy them, we shall yet manifest that they were completed by רוח הובלה, the men of the great synagogue, Ezra and his companions, guided therein by the infallible direction of the Spirit of God.

That we may not seem ἀνεφερόμενος, or to contend de luna caprina, the importance of these points as to the right understanding of the word of God is first to be considered, and that from testimony and the nature of the thing itself. Morinus, in his preface to his Hebrew Lexicon, tells us that without the points no certain truth can be learned from the Scriptures in that language, seeing all things may be read divers ways, so that there will be more confusion in that one tongue than was amongst all those at Babylon: “Nulla igitur certa doctrina poterit tradi de hac lingua, cum omnia possint diversimodo legi, ut futura sit major confusio unicae hujus linguae quam illa Babylonis.” Morinus plainly affirms that it is so indeed, instancing in the word דקד, which, as it may be variously pointed, hath at least eight several significations, and some of them as distant from one another as heaven and earth. And to make evident the uncertainty of the language on this account, he gives the like instance in c, r, s, in Latin. Junius, in the close of his animadversions on Bell. De Verbo Dei, lib. ii. cap. ii., commends that saying of Johannes Isaac against Lindanus, “He that reads the Scriptures without points is like a man that rides a horse ἄχαλνος, without a bridle; he may be carried he knows not whither.” Radulphus Cevallerius goes further: Rudiment. Ling. Heb. cap. iv., “Quod superest de vocalium et accentuum antiquitate, corum sententiae subscribo, qui linguam Heb- ream, tanquam omnium aliarum ἀπεικόσιν αὐτόσιν absolutissimum, plane ab initio scriptam confirmavit; quandoquidem qui contra sentiunt non modo authoritatem sacrae Scripturae dubiam efficient, sed radicitus (meo quidem judicio) convellant, quod absque vocalibus et distinctionum notis, nihil certi firmique habeat;”—“As for the antiquity of the vowels and accents,” saith he, “I am of their opinion who maintain the Hebrew language, as the exact pattern of all others, to have been plainly written with them from the beginning; seeing that they who are otherwise minded do not only make doubtful the authority of the Scriptures, but, in my judgment, wholly pluck it up by the roots, for without the vowels and notes of distinction it hath nothing firm and certain.”

In this man’s judgment (which also is my own), it is evident to all how obnoxious to the opinion now opposed the truth is that I am contending for.
To these also may be added the great Buxtorfs, father\(^1\) and son,\(^2\) Gerard,\(^3\) Glassius,\(^4\) Voetius,\(^5\) Flacius Illyricus,\(^6\) Polanus, Whitaker, Hassret,\(^7\) and Wolthius.\(^8\)

It is well known what use the Papists make of this conceit. Bellarmine maintains that there are errors crept into the original by this addition of the points: De Verb. Dei, lib. ii. cap. ii., "Hisce duabus sententiiis refutatis, restat tertia, quam ego verissimam puto, quae est, Scripturas Hebraicas non esse in universum depravatas opera et malitia Judæorum, nec tamen omnino esse integras et puras, sed habere suos errores quosdam, qui partim irreperserint negligentiam et ignorantiam librariorum, etc., partim ignorantiam Rabbinorum qui puncta addiderunt; itaque possimus, si volumus, puncta detrahere et aliter legere;"—"These two opinions being confuted, the third remaineth, which I suppose to be most true; which is, that the Hebrew Scriptures are not universally corrupted by the malicious work of the Jews, nor yet are wholly pure and entire, but that they have errors, which have crept in partly by the negligence and ignorance of the transcribers, partly by the ignorance of the Rabbins who added the points; whence we may, if we please, reject the points and read otherwise."

In the voluminous opposition to the truth made by that learned man, I know nothing more perniciously spoken, nor do yet know how his inference can be avoided on the hypothesis in question. To what purpose this insinuation is made by him is well known, and his companions in design exactly declare it. That their Hebrew text be corrected by the Vulgar Latin is the express desire of Gregory de Valentia, tom. i. disput. 5, q. 3; and that because the church hath approved that translation, it being corrected (says Huntley) by Jerome before the invention of points. But this is put out of doubt by Morinus, who from hence argues the Hebrew tongue to be a very nose of wax, to be turned by men which way they please, and to be so given of God on purpose that men might subject their consciences to their infallible church, Exercit. lib. i. exer. i. cap. ii. Great hath been the endeavour of this sort of men, wherein they have left no stone unturned, to decry the originals. Some of them cry out that the Old Testament is corrupted by the Jews, as Leo Castrius,\(^9\) Gordonius Huntlaus,\(^10\) Melchior Canus,\(^11\) Petrus Galatinus,\(^12\) Morinus,\(^13\) Salmeron, Pintus, Mersennus, Animad. in Problem. Georgii Venet, etc., p. 233;\(^14\)—that many corruptions have crept into it by negligence

---

and the carelessness of scribes, so Bellarmine,\(^3\) Genebrard,\(^4\) Sixtus Senensis,\(^5\) with most of the rest of them. In these things, indeed, they have been opposed by the most learned of their own side, as Arias Montanus,\(^4\) Johannes Isaac,\(^5\) Pineda,\(^6\) Masius,\(^7\) Ferrarius,\(^8\) Andradius, and sundry others, who speak honourably of the originals. But in nothing do they so pride themselves as in this conceit of the novelty of the Hebrew punctuation, whereby they hope, with Abimelech’s servants, utterly to stop the wells and fountains from whence we should draw our souls’ refreshment.

This may serve for a short view of the opinions of the parties at variance, and their several interests in these opinions. The importance of the points is on all hands acknowledged, whether aiming at the honour or dishonour of the originals. Vowels are the life of words; consonants without them are dead and immovable; by them are they carried to any sense, and may be to divers. It is true that men who have come to acquaintance with the Scriptures by the help of the vowels and accents, being in possession of an habitual notion and apprehension of that sense and meaning which ariseth from them, may possibly think that it were a facile thing to find out and fix upon the same sense by the help of the *matres lectionis נִנְיָא, and the consideration of antecedents and consequents, with such like assistances. But let them be all taken out of the way (as I shall manifest it is fit they should be, if they have the original assigned to them by the Prolegomena), and let men lay aside that advantage they have received from them, and it will quickly appear into what devious ways all sorts of such persons will run. Scarce a chapter, it may be a verse, or a word, in a short time, would be left free from perplexing, contradicting conjectures. The words are altogether innumerable whose significations may be varied by an arbitrary supplying of the points. And when the regulation of the punctuation shall be left to every single person’s conjectures upon antecedents and consequents (for who shall give a rule to the rest), what end shall we have of fruitless contests? What various, what pernicious senses shall we have to contend about! Suppose that men sober, modest, humble, pious, might be preserved from such miscarriages, and be brought to some agreement about these things (which yet in these days, upon many accounts, is not to be looked for, yea, from the nature of the thing itself seems impossible), yet this gives us but a human, fallible persuasion, that the readings fixed on by them are according to the mind of God; but to expect such an agreement is fond and foolish. Besides, who shall secure us against the luxuriant,

\(^1\) *De Verbo Dei, lib. i.*
\(^2\) *In Ps. xxi.*
\(^3\) *Biblio, lib. viii. Heres. 13.*
\(^4\) Prefat ad Bib. Interlin.
\(^5\) *Respons. ad Lindan.*
\(^6\) *De rebus Solom. cap. iv.*
\(^7\) *Praefat. ad Josu.*
\(^8\) *Proleg. Biblica.*
atheistical wits and spirits of these days, who are bold upon all advantages ἀξίνητα κνεῖν, and to break in upon every thing that is holy and sacred, that they will not, by their huckstering, utterly corrupt the word of God? How easy it is to foresee the dangerous consequents of contending for various readings, though not false nor pernicious, by men pertinaciously adhering to their own conjectures! The word of God, as to its literal sense, or reading of the words of it, hath hitherto been ἤγαγώνον, and the acknowledged touchstone of all expositions; render this now a μὴλον ἐριδος, and what have we remaining firm and unshaken?

Let men, with all their confidence as to the knowledge of the sense and meaning of the Scriptures which they have already received, by such helps and means as are all of them resolved into the present punctuation of the Bible (for all grammars, all lexicons, the whole Masora, all helps to this language, new and old in the world, are built on this foundation), reduce themselves to such an indifferency as some of late have fancied as a meet rise for knowledge, and fall seriously to the reading of some of the prophets, whose matter is sublime and mystical, and their style elliptical and abstruse, without the help of points and accents,—let them fix them, or any figures to answer their sounds, arbitrarily, merely on their judgment in the language and conjectures at the sense of the place, without any advantage from what they have been instructed in,—and let us see whether they will agree, as they fabulously report of the seventy translators! Whatever may be the issue of their industry, we need not fear quickly to find as learned as they that would lay their work level with the ground. I confess, considering the days we live in, wherein the bold and curious wits of men, under pretence of critical observations, alluring and enticing with a show of learning, have ventured to question almost every word in the Scripture, I cannot but tremble to think what would be the issue of this supposition, that the points or vowels, and accents, are no better guides unto us than may be expected from those who are pretended to be their authors. The Lord, I hope, will safeguard his own from the poison of such attempts. The least of its evil is not yet thoroughly considered. So that whereas, saving to myself the liberty of my judgment as to sundry particulars, both in the impression itself and in sundry translations, I acknowledge the great usefulness of this work, and am thankful for it, which I here publicly testify, yet I must needs say, I had rather that it, and all works of the like kind, were out of the world, than that this one opinion should be received, with the consequences that unavoidably attend it.

"But this trial needs not be feared. Grant the points to have the original pretended, yet they deserve all regard, and are of singular
use for the right understanding of the Scripture; so that it is not lawful to depart from them without urgent necessity, and evidences of a better lection to be substituted in the room of that refused." But as this relieves us not, but still leaves us within the sphere of rational conjectures, so whether it can honestly be pretended and pleaded in this case comes nextly to be discovered by the consideration of the supposed authors of this invention.

The founders of this story of the invention of the Hebrew points tell us that it was the work of some Rabbins living at Tiberias, a city in Galilee, about the year of Christ 500, or in the next century after the death of Jerome and the finishing of the Babylonian Talmud. The improbability of this story or legend I am not now to insist upon. Morinus makes the lie lower. He tells us that the Babylonian Talmud was finished but a little before the year 700, Exer. ii. cap. iii., par. poster.; and that the Masoretes (to whom he ascribes the invention of the points) wrote a long time after the finishing of the Talmud and the year 700, p. p. 5, cap. iii. This long time cannot denote less than some hundreds of years. And yet the same man in his preface to his "Samaritica Opuscula," boasting of his finding R. Jehuda Chiug, manifests that he was acquainted with the present punctuation, and wrote about it. Now, this rabbi was a gram- marian,—which kind of learning among the Jews succeeded that of the Masoretes,—and he lived about the year 1030; so that no room at all seems to be left for this work. That there was formerly a famous school of the Jews and learned men at Tiberias is granted. Jerome tells us that he hired a learned Jew from thence for his assistance, Epist. ad Chromat. Among others, Dr Lightfoot\(^1\) hath well traced the shadow of their sanhedrim, with their presidents in it, in some kind of succession, to that place. That they continued there in any esteem, number, or reputation, unto the time assigned by our authors for this work, is not made to appear from any history or record of Jews or Christians; yea, it is certain that about the time mentioned, the chiefest flourishing of the Jewish doctors was at Babylon, with some other cities in the east, where they had newly completed their Talmud, the great pandect of Jewish laws and constitutions, as themselves everywhere witness and declare. That any persons considerably learned were then in Tiberias is a mere conjecture; and it is most improbable, considering what destruction had been made of them at Diocesarea and Tiberias, about the year of Christ 352, by Gallus, at the command of Constantius. That there should be such a collection of them so learned, so authorized, as to invent this work and impose it on the world, no man once taking notice that any such persons ever were, is beyond all belief. Not-

---

1 Lightfoot, Fall of Hierus. sect. 3–5, etc.
withstanding any entanglements that men by their conjectures may put upon the persuasion of the antiquity of the points, I can as soon believe the most incredible figment in the whole Talmud as this fable. But this is not my business. Let it be granted that such persons there were. On the supposition under consideration, I am only inquiring what is the state and condition of the present Hebrew pointing, and what weight is to be laid thereon. That the reader, then, may a little consider what sort of men they were who are assigned in these Prolegomena as the inventors of this artifice of punctuation, I shall take a brief view of the state of the Jews after the destruction of the temple down to the days inquired after.

That the Judaical church-state continued not only de facto, but, in the merciful forbearance of God, so far that the many thousands of believers that constantly adhered to the Mosaical worship were accepted with God until the destruction of the temple; that that destruction was the ending of the world that then was by fire, and the beginning of setting up solemnly the new heaven and new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness,—I have at large elsewhere declared, and may, God assisting, yet further manifest in my thoughts on the Epistle of Paul to the Hebrews. From the time between the beginning of Christ's preaching to the utter desolation of the city and temple, an open, visible rejection of that church, as such, was made. Thereon an utter separation of the true Israel from it ensued; and the hardened residue became יְשֵׁעָלָם and הֵרָעָם אֲלֹ,—a people not in covenant or delight, but of curse and indignation. What their state was for a season onwards, both civil and religious, many have declared. I shall only insist on the heads of things. In general, then, they were most remote from accepting of the punishment of their sin, or considering that God was revenging upon them the quarrel of his covenant to the utmost, having broken both his staves, "Beauty and Bands." So far were they from owning their sin in selling of their Messiah, that, seeing an end put to all their former worship thereupon, there is nothing recorded of them but these two things, which they wholly, in direct opposition unto God, gave themselves up unto:—1. They increased in rage and madness against all the followers of Christ, stirring up persecution against them all the world over. Hereunto they were provoked by a great number of apostates, who, when they could no longer retain their Mosaical rites with the profession of Christ, being rejected by the churches, fell back again to Judaism or semi-Judaism. 2. A filthy lusting and desire after their former worship, now become abominable and a badge of infidelity, that so their table might become a snare unto them, and what had been for their safety might now become the
means of their utter ruin and hardening. Of the former, or their stirring up of persecution, all stories are full of examples and instances. The latter, or their desires and attempts for the restoration of their worship, as conducing to our present business, must be further considered.

For the accomplishment of a design to restore their old religion, or to furnish themselves with a new, they made two desperate attempts. The first of these was by arms, under their pseudo-Messiah, Barchochab, in the days of Hadrian. Under the conduct and encouragements of this man, to whom one of the chief Rabbins (Akiba) was armour-bearer, in the pursuit of a design to restore their temple and worship, they fell into rebellion against the Romans all the world over. In this work, after they had committed unheard-of outrages, massacres unparalleled, murders, spoils, and cruelties, and had shaken the whole empire, they were themselves in all parts of the world, especially in the city Bether, where was the head of their rebellion, ruined with a destruction seeming equal to that which befell them at Jerusalem in the days of Vespasian and Titus.

That the rise of this war was upon the twofold cause mentioned, namely, their desire to retain their former worship and to destroy the Christian, is evident. For the first, it is expressed by Dio Cassius: Hist. Rom. lib. lxi., in Vita Had., 'εξ δὲ τα’ ἱεροσόλυμα πόλιν αὐτοῦ ἀντὶ τῆς κατασκαφείας οἰκίας, ἡν καὶ Λύδιαν Καπιτωλίαν ἀνέκμασι καὶ εἰς τὸν Τεωπότον, ναὸν τῷ Δίῳ ἔτερον ἀναπτειγραντας, πόλεμος ὡτε μικρὸς εὖτ’ ἀληθερύμονος ἰκινήθη. Ἰουδαῖοι γὰρ, διενόμενοι τοὺς ἀλλοφύλους τινάς εἰς τὴν πόλιν σφών οἰκίαν ἤταν καὶ τὰ ἱερὰ ἀλλότρια ἐν αὐτῇ ἱδρυθήναι κ.τ.λ. It was the defiling of the soil whereon the temple stood (which God suffered on set purpose to manifest their utter rejection, and that the time was come wherein he would be no more worshipped in that place in the old manner) that put them in arms, as that author declares at large. And for the latter, Justin Martyr, who lived at that time, informs us of it: Apol. ii. ad Anton. Pium, Καὶ γὰρ ἐν τῷ νῦν γεγονότων Ἰουδαίων τολίμων Βαρκελόξεως ὁ τῆς Ἰουδαίων ἀποστάσεως ἐργασίας Χριστιανοὶ μένοι εἰς τιμωρίας δεινώς, εἰ μὴ ῥήματος Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν καὶ βλασφημοῦν, έκλεισαν ἀπάγεσθαι. His fury was in an especial manner against the Christians, whom he commanded to be tortured and slain, unless they would deny and blaspheme Jesus Christ. See Euseb. Chron. ad an. Christi 136. And this war they managed with such fury, and, for a while, success, that after Hadrian had called together against them the most experienced soldiers in the world, particularly Julius Severus out of England, and had slain of them five millions and eighty thousand in battle, with [while?] an infinite number besides, as the historian speaks, by famine, sickness, and fire, were consumed, he found himself to have sustained so much
loss by them that he began not his letter to the senate in the wonted manner, 

*Ei aútoi kai oi paídes ýmων ýmioínta, eù òn òxou ýgô kai tâ stra-
teíμata ýmioímen* he could not assure them that it was well with him and his army.

By this second desolation they were [brought] very low, made weak and contemptible, and driven into obscurity all the world over. In this state they wandered up and down for some season in all manner of uncertainty. They had not only lost the place of their solemn worship, seeing it was wholly defiled, the name of Jerusalem changed into Ælia, and themselves forbid to look towards it upon pain of death,† but also, being now unspeakably diminished in their number, all hope of contriving themselves into any condition of observing their old rites and worship was utterly lost.‡

Here they sat down amazed for a season, being at their wits' end, as was threatened to them in the curse. But they will not rest so. Considering, therefore, that their old religion could not be continued without a Jerusalem and a temple, they began a nefarious attempt against God, equal to that of the old world in building Babel, even to set up a new religion, that might abide with them wherever they were, and give them countenance in their infidelity and opposition to the gospel unto the utmost. The head of this new apostasy was one R. Judah, whom we may not unfitly call the Mohammed of the Jews. They term him Hannasi, the "prince;" and Hakkadosh, the "holy." The whole story of him and his companions, as reported by the Jews, is well collected by Joseph de Voysin, Observat. in Proœm. ad Pugi. Fidei. p. 26, 27. The sum of the whole concerning this work is laid down by Maimonides in his præfatio in Seder Zeraiim, p. 36, 37 of the edition of Mr Pococke; wherein also a sufficient account is given of the whole Mishna, with the names of the Rabbins either implied in it or occasionally mentioned. This man, about the year of Christ 190 or 200, when the temple had now lain waste almost three times as long as it did in the Babylonish captivity, being countenanced, as some of themselves report,† by Antoninus Pius, compiled the Jewish Koran, or the Mishna, as a rule

---


2 "Dispersi, palabundi et coeli et soli sui extrorsae, vagantur per orbem sine homine, sine Deo, rege, quibus nec advenarum jure terram patriam saltem vestigio salutare conceditur."—Tertull. Apol.

3 "Post hæc processu temporis ventum est ad Rabbīnū Hakkadōshī, cui pax, qui fuit seculi sui phœnix, etc. Ille legens in Israele confirmavit sententias, dictis, et diffi-

tentis ore traditis a Mose, usque ad tempora sua collectis, cum et ipse esset ex ilis qui ore tradita referabant. Collectis igitur sententias et dictis istis, manum admodum compendiae Mishnae, que omnium que in lege scripta sunt preceptorum explicati-

onem contineret, partim traditionibus a Mose (cui pax), or acceptis, partim conse-
of their worship and ways for the future. Only, whereas Mohammed afterward pretended to have received his figments by revelation (though, indeed, he had many of his abominations from the Talmud), this man pleaded the receiving of his by tradition,—the two main engines that have been set up against the word of God. Out of such pharisaical traditions as were indeed preserved amongst them, and such observances as they had learned and taken up from apostate Christians, as Aquila and others, with such figments as were invented by himself and his predecessors since the time of their being publicly rejected and cursed by God, this man compiled the מְסָפָר, —which is the text of their Talmud, and the foundation of their present religion,—under the name of the old oral law. That sundry Christian ceremonies and institutions, vilely corrupted, were taken up by the Jews of those days, many of them being apostates, as were also some of Mohammed's assistants in compiling of the Koran, I shall, God assisting, elsewhere endeavour to evince and manifest. That any gospel observances were taken from the Jews, as being in practice amongst them before their institution by Christ, will appear in the issue to be a bold and groundless fancy.

The foundation mentioned being laid in a collection of traditions and new invention of abominations, under the name of old traditions, by this Rabbi, the following Talmuds are an improvement of the same attempt of setting up a religion under the curse and against the mind and will of God, that, being rejected by him, and left "without king, without prince, without sacrifice, without image, without an ephod, and without teraphim," any kind of worship, true or false, they might have something to give them countenance in their unbelief. The Talmud of Jerusalem, so called (for it is the product of many comments on the Mishna in the city of Tiberias, where R. Judah lived) because it was compiled in the land of Canaan, whose metropolis was Jerusalem, was published about the year of Christ 230: so it is commonly received, though I find Dr Lightfoot of late, on supposition of finding in it the name of Diocletian the emperor, to give it a later date; but I confess I see no just ground for the alteration of his judgment from what he delivered in another treatise before. The Diclet mentioned by the Rabbins was beaten by the children of R. Judah Princeps, as himself observes, who lived in the days of one of the Antoninuses, a hundred years before Diocletian. Neither was ever Diocletian in a low condition in the east, being a Sarmatian born, and living in the western parts; only he went with Numerianus in that expedition into Persia, wherein he was made emperor at his return. But this is nothing to my purpose. See Lightfoot, Chorograph. cap. lxxxi. p. 144. The Babylonian Talmud, so called because compiled in the land of Babylon, in the cities of
Nahardea, Sora, and Pumbeditha, where the Jews had their synagogues and schools, was finished about the year 506 or 510. In this greater work was the mystery of their iniquity finished, and the engine of their own invention for their further obduration perfectly completed. These are now the rule of their faith, the measure of their exposition of Scripture, the directory of their worship,—the ground of their hope and expectation.

All this while the Jews enjoyed the letter of the Scriptures, as they do to this day; yea, they receive it sometimes with the honour and veneration due to God alone. God preserved it amongst them for our present use, their further condemnation, and means of their future conversion. But after the destruction of the temple, and rejection of their whole church-state, the word was no longer committed to them of God, nor were they intrusted with it, nor are to this day. They have it not by promise or covenant, as they had of old, Isa. lxix. 21. Their possession of it is not accompanied with the administration of the Spirit; without which, as we see in the instance of themselves, the word is a dead letter, of no efficacy for the good of souls. They have the letter amongst them, as at one time they had the ark in the battle against the Philistines, for their greater ruin.

In this state and condition they everywhere discover their rancour and malice against Christ, calling him, in contempt and reproach, מתייה, who is מתייה רביה ירושי בר רבי יוחנן פumbeditha, relating monstrous figments concerning him and their dealing with him, under the name of "Jesus the son of Pandira." Some deny that by Jesus, the son of Pandira and Stada, in the Talmud, the blessed Messiah is intended. So did Galatinus, Arcan. Relig. Cathol. lib. i. cap. vii.; and Reuchlinus Cabal. lib. i. p. 636; Guliel. Schickard., in Proem. Tarich. p. 83. The contrary is asserted by Reinoldus, Praelec. in lib. Apoc., praec. 103, p. 405, 406; Buxtorfius Lexic. Rab. voce נס בּ, and also in וְּשָׁרֵי נָשִׁי; Vorstius Not. ad Tzem. Dav. p. 264. And, in truth, the reason pleaded by Galatinus and others to prove that they did not intend our Saviour doth, upon due consideration, evince the contrary. The Jesus, say they, who is mentioned in the Talmud, lived in the days of the Maccabees, being slain in the time of Hyrcanus, or of Aristobulus, one hundred years before the death of the true Messiah; so that it cannot be he who is by them intended. But this is invented by the cursed wretches, that it should not appear that their temple was so soon destroyed after their wicked defection from God in killing of his Son. This is most manifest from what is cited by Genebrard from Abraham Levita, in his "Cabala Historie," where he says that Christians invented this story, that Jesus was crucified in the life of Herod (that is, the tetrarch), that it might appear that their temple was destroyed immediately thereupon;
ORIGIN OF THE HEBREW POINTS.

“when,” saith he, “it is evident from the Mishna and Talmud that he lived in the time of Alexander, and was crucified in the days of Aristobulus:” so discovering the true ground why they perverted the whole story of his time,—namely, lest all the world should see their sin and punishment standing so near together. But it is well that the time of our Saviour’s suffering and death was affirmed even by the heathens, before either their Mishna or Talmud were born or thought of: “Abolendo rumori” (he speaks of Nero, and of his firing Rome) “subdidit reos, et quæsitissimis poenis affectit, quos, per flagitia invisos, vulgus Christianos appellabat. Auctor nominis ejus Christus, Tiberio imperitante, per Procuratorem Pontium Pilatum supplicio affectus erat,” Tacit. Annal. lib. xv. cap. xlv. To return to our Jews: universally in all their old writings they have carried on a design of impugning him in his Gospel; for as we need not their testimony, nor any thing but the Scripture, for their conviction and αὐτοκατακρίσεως, so, to acknowledge the truth, the places cited out of their Talmuds and Gemara, from the Cabalists and other Rabbins, by Martinus Raymundus, Porchetus, Galatinus, Reuchlinus, and others (setting aside Galatinus his Gale Rezeia, which must be set aside), seem[ing] to be wrested the most of them beside their intentions, as things obscurely, metaphorically, and mystically written, are easily dealt withal. Their disputes about the Messiah, when they speak of him of set purpose, as in Lib. Sanhedrim, are foolish, contradictious triflings, wherein they leave all things as uncertain as if they were wrangling in their wonted manner, “de lana caprina.” So that, for my part, I am not much removed from the opinion of Hulsius (lib. i. p. 2, dic. sup. de Temp. Messiae), that Αἐσοπ’s Fables are of as much use in Christian religion as the Judaical Talmud. Whilst they keep the Scripture, we shall never want weapons out of their own armory for their destruction. Like the Philistines, they carry the weapon that will serve to cut off their own heads. Now, the Tiberian Masoretic, the supposed inventors of the points or vowels, and accents, which we now use, were men living after the finishing of the last Talmud, whose whole religion was built thereon.

Let us, then, a little, without prejudice or passion, consider who or what these men were, who are the supposed authors of this work:—

1. Men they were (if any such were) who had not the word of God committed to them in a peculiar manner, as their forefathers had of old, being no part of his church or people, but were only outwardly possessors of the letter, without just right or title to it, utterly uninterested in the promise of the communication of the Spirit, which is the great charter of the church’s preservation of truth, Isa. lix. 21.

2. Men so remote from a right understanding of the word, or the mind and will of God therein, that they were desperately engaged
to oppose his truth in the books which themselves enjoyed, in all matters of importance unto the glory of God or the good of their own souls, from the beginning to the ending; the foundation of whose religion was infidelity, and one of their chief fundamentals an opposition to the gospel. 3. Men under the special curse of God and his vengeance, upon the account of the blood of his dear Son. 4. Men all their days feeding themselves with vain fables, and mischievous devices against the gospel, labouring to set up a new religion under the name of the old, in despite of God; so striving to wrestle it out with his curse to the utmost. 5. Men of a profound ignorance in all manner of learning and knowledge but only what concerned their own dunghill traditions; as appears in their stories, wherein they make Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, help Nebuchadnezzar against Jerusalem, with innumerable the like fopperies. 6. Men so addicted to such monstrous figments, as appears in their Talmuds, as their successors of after ages are ashamed of, and seek to palliate what they are able; yea, for the most part idolaters and magicians, as I shall evince. Now, I dare leave it to the judgment of any godly, prudent person, not addicted to parties and names of men, who is at all acquainted with the importance of the Hebrew vowels and accents unto the right understanding of the Scripture, with what influence their present fixation hath upon the literal sense we embrace, whether we need not very clear evidence and testimony, yea, undeniable and unquestionable, to cast the rise and spring of them upon the invention of this sort of men.

Of all the fables that are in the Talmud I know none more incredible than this story, that men who cannot, by any story or other record, be made to appear that they ever were in rerum natura,—such men as we have described, obscure, unobserved, not taken notice of by any learned man, Jew or Christian,—should in a time of deep ignorance, in the place where they lived, amongst a people wholly addicted to monstrous fables, themselves blinded under the curse of God, find out so great, so excellent a work, of such unspeakable usefulness, not once advising with the men of their own profession and religion, who then flourished in great abundance at Babylon and the places adjacent, and impose it on all the world (that receive the Scriptures), and have every tittle of their work received, without any opposition or question from any person or persons, of any principle whatever; yea, so as to have their invention made the constant rule of all following expositions, comments, and interpretations. Credat Apella.

To draw, then, to the close of this discourse, I must crave liberty

1 Fundament. nonum. apud Maimen. prefat. ad Perck. Chelek. p. 175, edit.ROC.
2 Shobet Jehuda, p. 40.
to profess that if I could be thoroughly convinced that the present Hebrew punctuation were the figment and invention of these men, I should labour to the utmost to have it utterly taken away out of the Bible, nor should I (in its present station) make use of it any more. What use such an invention might be of under catholic rules, in a way of grammar, I shall not dispute; but to have it placed in the Bible as so great a part of the word of God is not tolerable. But blessed be God, things are not as yet come to that pass! I shall only add, that whereas some of the most eminently learned and exercised persons in all the learning and antiquity of the Jews that these latter ages have produced, have appeared in the confusion of this fancy of the invention of the points by some post-Talmudical Masoretes, I am sorry their respect to the Rabbins hath kept them from the management of this consideration, which is to me of so great importance.

To what I have spoken I shall add the words of learned Dr Lightfoot, in his late Centuria Chorograph., which came to my hands since the finishing of this discourse, cap. lxxxi. p. 146: "Sunt qui punctata Biblia credunt a sapientibus Tiberiensibus" (he means Elias only, for other Jews of this opinion there are none). "Ego impudentiam Judæorum, qui fabulam invenerunt, non miror; Christianorum credulitatem miror, qui applaudunt. Recognosc (queso) nomina Tiberiensium a sita illic primum academia ad eam expirantem, et quidnam tandem invenies nisi genus hominum pra Pharisaismo insaniens, traditionibus fascinans et fascinatum, cæcum, vārum, delirum; ignoscant, si dicam magicum et monstruosum? Ad opus tam divinum homines quam ineptos, quam stolidos! Perlege Talmud Hierosolymitanum, et nota qualiter illic se habeant R. Juda, R. Channath, Z. Judan, R. Hoshai, R. Chaija Rubba, R. Chaija Bar Ba, R. Jochanan, reliquique inter Tiberienses grandissimi doctores; quam serio nihil agunt; quam pueriliter seria; quanta in ipsorum disputationibus vafrities, spuma, venenum, fumus, nihil; et si punctata fuisse Biblia in istiusmodi schola potes credere, crede et omnia Talmudica. Opus Spiritus Sancti sapit punctatio Bibliorum, non opus hominum perditorum, excæcatorum, amentium." In the words of this learned person there is the sum of what I am pleading for. Saith he, "I do not admire the Jews' impudence, who found out that fable; I admire Christians' credulity, who applaud it. Recount, I pray, the names of the Tiberians from the first foundation of a university there to the expiring thereof, and what do you find but a sort of men being mad with (or above) the Pharisees, bewitching and bewitched with traditions, blind, crafty, raging; pardon me if I say magical and monstrous? What fools, what sots, as to such a divine work! Read over the Talmud of Jerusalem; consider how R. Juda, R. Channath, Z. Judan, R. Hoshai, R. Chaija
Rubba, R. Chaija Bar Ba, R. Jochanan, and the rest of the great doctors among the Tiberians, do behave themselves; how seriously they do nothing; how childish they are in serious things; how much deceitfulness, froth, venom, smoke, nothing, in their disquisitions: and if you can believe the points of the Bible to proceed from such a school, believe also their Talmuds. The pointing of the Bible savours of the work of the Holy Spirit, not of wicked, blind, and mad men."

The Jews generally believe these points to have been from mount Sinai, and so downward by Moses and the prophets, at least from Ezra and his companions, the men of the great synagogue; not denying that the knowledge and use of them received a great reviving by the Gemarists and Masoretes, when they had been much disused. So R. Azarias at large, Imre Binah, cap. lix.

Had it been otherwise, surely men stupendously superstitious in inquiring after the traditions of their fathers would have found some footsteps of their rise and progress. It is true, there is not only the opinion, but there are the arguments, of one of them to the contrary,—namely, Elias Levita. This Elias lived in Germany about the beginning of the Reformation, and was the most learned grammarian of the Jews in that age. Sundry of the first reformers had acquaintance with him. The task not only of reforming religion, but also of restoring good literature, being incumbent on them, they made use of such assistances as were to be obtained then to that purpose. This man (whom Thuanus takes notice of) lived with Paulus Fagius, and assisted him in his noble promotion of the Hebrew tongue. Hence haply it is that some of those worthies unwarily embraced his novel opinion, being either overborne with his authority, or not having leisure to search further after the truth. That the testimony of this one Elias should be able to outweigh the constant attestation of all other learned Jews to the contrary, as Cappellus affirms and pleads, and as is insinuated in our Prolegomena, is fond to imagine; and the premises of that learned man fight against his own conclusion. "It is known," saith he, "that the Jews are prone to insist on every thing that makes for the honour of their people and language; and therefore their testimony to the divine original of the present punctuation, being in their own case, is not to be admitted.

1 "Eodem fore tempore Palatinum abolita penticia authoritate doctrinam Lutheri receptit, caque de causa Paulum Fagium tabernis Rhenanis in Palatinatu natum海淀teram evocavit. Is sub Wolfgango Capitone perfectissimam lingue sancte cognitionem adeputus, cum egestate premoretur, Petri Bucsi teri locupletis Isme in quille docebat senatoris liberalitate sublevatus Heliam illum Judaeorum doctissimum accerendum curavit; et institutis typographicis officina maximum ad solidam rerum Hebraicarum cognitionem momentum atbalit."—Thuanus Hist. lib. ii. ad an. 1564, p. 540.

2 Proleg. 3, sect. 42.
Only Elias, who in this speaks against the common interest of his people, is presumed to speak upon conviction of truth." But the whole evidence in this cause is on the other side. Let us grant that all the Jews are zealous of the honour and reputation of their nation and language, as they are; let us grant that they greedily close with every thing that may seem to have a tendency thereunto: what will be the issue or natural inference from these premises? Why, as nothing could be spoken more honourably of the Jews whilst they were the church and people of God than that of Paul, that "to them were committed the oracles of God," so nothing can be imagined or fixed on more to their honour since their divorce from God than that their doctors and masters should make such an addition to the Scripture, so generally acknowledged to be unspeakably useful. And to this purpose Elias, who was the father of this opinion, was far from making such deductions thence as some do now-a-days, namely, that it is lawful for us to change the vowels and accents at our pleasure, but ties all men as strictly to them as if they had been the work of Ezra. It is Elias, then, that speaks in his own case; whose testimony is, therefore, not to be admitted. What was done of old and in the days of Ezra is ours, who succeed unto the privileges of that church; what hath been done since the destruction of the temple is properly and peculiarly theirs.

It may, perhaps, be thought that by the account given of the Rabbins, their state and condition of old and of late, I might have weakened one great argument which learned men make use of to confirm the sacred antiquity of the present Hebrew punctuation, taken from the universal consent and testimony of the Jewish doctors, ancient and modern, this one Elias excepted. Who can think such persons are in any thing to be believed? But, indeed, the case is quite otherwise. Though we account them wholly unmeet for the work that is ascribed unto them, and, on supposition that it is theirs, affirm that it had need undergo another manner of trial than as yet, out of reverence to its generally received antiquity, it hath met withal; yet they were men still who were full well able to declare what de facto they found to be so, and what they found otherwise. It cannot, I think, be reasonably supposed that so many men, living in so many several ages, at such vast distances from one another, who, some of them, it may be, never heard of the names of other some of them, should conspire to cozen themselves and all the world besides in a matter of fact not at all to their advantage. However, for my part, whatever can be proved against them I shall willingly admit. But to be driven out of such a rich possession as is the present Hebrew punctuation, upon mere surmises and conjectures, I cannot willingly give way or consent.

VOL. XVI.
It is not my design to give in arguments for the divine original of the present Hebrew punctuation; neither do I judge it necessary for any one so to do whilst the learned Buxtorfius' discourse, "De Origine et Antiquitate Punctorum," lies unanswered. I shall, therefore, only add one or two considerations which to me are of weight, and not, as I remember, mentioned by him or his father in his "Tiberias," or any other that I know of in their disputes to this purpose.

I. If the points or vowels, and accents, be coevious with the rest of the letters, or have an original before all grammar of that language (as, indeed, languages are not made by grammar, but grammars are made by languages), then the grammar of it and them must be collected from the observation of their use, as they were found in all their variety, before any such art was invented or used; and rules must be suited thereunto. The drawing into rules all the instances that, being uniform, would fall under such rules, and the distinct observation of anomalous words, either singly, or in exceptions comprehending many under one head that would not be so reduced, was the work of grammar. But, on the other side, if the vowels and accents were invented by themselves, and added to the letters, then the rule and art of disposing, transposing, and changing of them, must be constituted and fixed before the disposition of them; for they were placed after the rules made, and according to them. A middle way, that I know of, cannot be fixed on. Either they are of the original writing of the language, and have had rules made by their station therein, or they have been supplied unto it according to rules of art. Things are not thus come to pass by chance; nor was this world created by a casual concurrence of these atoms. Now, if the grammar or art was the ground and foundation, not the product of their use, as I am confident I shall never see a tolerable answer given to that inquiry of Buxtorfius the elder in his "Tiberias," why the inventors of them left so many words anomalous and pointed otherwise than according to rule or the constant course of the language, precisely reckoning them up when they had so done, and how often they are so used, as _ _ and _ for _ _, and _ for _ _, and the like, when they might, if they had so pleased, have made them all regular, to their own great ease, advantage of their language, and facilitating the learning of it to all posterity, the thing they seem to have aimed at: so I cannot be satisfied why, in that long, operose, and curious work of the Masoretes, wherein they have reckoned up every word in the Scripture, and have observed the irregularity of every letter and tittle, they never once attempt to give us out those catholic rules whereby they or their masters proceeded in affixing the points; or whence it came to pass that no learned Jew for
hundreds of years after should be able to acquaint us with that way, but in all their grammatical instructions should merely collect observations, and inculcate them a hundred times over, according as they present themselves to them by particular instances. Assuredly, had this wonderful art of pointing, which for the most part may be reduced to catholic rules, and might have wholly been so if it were an arbitrary invention, limited to no pre-existing writing, been found out first and established as the norma and canon of affixing the vowels, some footsteps of it would have remained in the Masora, or among some of the Jews, who spent all their time and days in the consideration of it.

2. In the days of the Chaldee paraphrast, when the prophecies of the humiliation and death of their Messiah were only not understood by them, yet we see into how many several ways and senses they are wrested by that paraphrast, to affix some tolerable meaning to them. Take an instance on Isa. liii. Jonathan there acknowledges the whole prophecy to be intended of Christ, as knowing it to be the common faith of the church; but not understanding the state of humiliation which the Messiah was to undergo, he wrests the words into all forms, to make that which is spoken passively of Christ, as to his suffering from others, to signify actively, as to his doing and exercising judgment upon others! But now, more than five hundred years after, when these points are supposed to be invented, when the Rabbins were awake and knew full well what use was made of those places against them, as also that the prophets (especially Isaiah) are the most obscure part of the whole Scripture, as to the grammatical sense of their words in their coherence, without points and accents, and how facile it were to invert the whole sense of many periods by small alterations in these rules of reading, yet as they are pointed they make out incomparably more clearly the Christian faith than any ancient translations of those places whatever. Johannes Isaac, a converted Jew, lib. i. ad Lindan., tells us that above two hundred testimonies about Christ may be brought out of the original Hebrew that appear not in the Vulgar Latin or any other translation. And Raymundus Martinus, "Noverint quæ ejusmodi sunt" (that is, who blamed him for translating things immediately out of the Hebrew, not following the Vulgar Latin) "in plurimis valde sacre Scripture locis veritatem multo planius atque perfectius pro fide Christiana haberi in litera Hebraica quam in translatione nostra," Proem. ad Pug. Fid. sec. 14. Let any man consider those two rakes of the Rabbins and swords of Judaical unbelief, Isa. liii. and Dan. ix., as they are now pointed and accented in our Bibles, and compare them with the translation of the LXX., and this will quickly appear unto him. Especially hath this been
evidenced, since the Socinians\(^1\) as well as the Jews have driven the dispute about the satisfaction of Christ to the utmost scrutiny and examination of every word in that 53d of Isaiah. But yet, as the text stands now pointed and accented, neither Jews nor Socinians (notwithstanding the relief contributed to them by Grotius wresting that whole blessed prophecy to make application of it unto Jeremiah, thinking therein to outdo the late or modern Jews; Abrabanel and others applying it to Josiah, the whole people of the Jews, Messiah Ben Joseph, and I know not whom) have been able, or ever shall be able, to relieve themselves from the sword of the truth therein. Were such exercitations on the word of God allowable, I could easily manifest how, by changing the distinctive accents and vowels, much darkness and perplexity might be cast on the contexture of that glorious prophecy. It is known, also, that the Jews commonly plead that one reason why they keep the copy of the law in their synagogues without points is, that the text may not be restrained to one certain sense, but that they may have liberty to draw out various, and, as they speak, more eminent senses.

---

CHAPTER VI.

Arguments for the novelty of the Hebrew points proposed to consideration—The argument from the Samaritan letters considered and answered—Of the copy of the law preserved in the synagogues without points—The testimony of Elias Levita and Aben Ezra considered—Of the silence of the Mishna, Talmud, and Gemara, about the points—Of the Keri and Ketib—Of the number of the points—Of the ancient translations, Greek, Chaldee, Syriac—Of Jerome—The new argument of Morinus in this cause—The conclusion about the necessity of the points.

But because this seems to be a matter of great importance, where-in the truth formerly pleaded for appears to be nearly concerned, I shall, \(\omega\) \(\epsilon\) \(\nu\) \(\pi\) \(\rho\) \(\alpha\) \(\rho\) \(\iota\) \(\delta\) \(\gamma\), very briefly consider the arguments that are usually insisted on (as in these Prolegomena) to prove the points to be a novel invention; I mean of the men and at the time before mentioned. Particular instances I shall not insist upon, nor is it necessity I should so do; it hath been done already. The heads of arguments, which yet contain their strength, are capable of a brief despatch, which shall be given them in the order wherein they are represented by the Prolegomena, Proleg. 3. sect. 38–40.

1. It is said, then, “That whereas the old Hebrew letters were the present Samaritan,\(^2\) the Samaritan letters having been always without

---

\(^1\) Faustus Socin. de Jesu Christo Servatore; Crellius Cont. Grot. p. 62.

\(^2\) Pietro Della Valle had discovered, in his travels through the east, a copy of the
points, as they yet continue, it is manifest that the invention of the points must be of a later date than the change of the letters, which was in the days of Ezra; and so, consequently, be the work of the post-Talmudical Masoretes.” “Fergula Pictoris!” This whole objection is made up of most uncertain conjectures. This is not a place to speak at large of the Samaritans, their Pentateuch, and its translation. The original of that nation is known from the Scripture, as also their worship of God, 2 Kings xvii. Their solemn excommunication and casting out from any interest among the people of God is also recorded, Ezra ix. x., Nehem. xiii. Their continuance in their abominations after the closing of the canon of the Scripture is reported by Josephus, Antiq. lib. xi. cap. viii. In the days of the Maccabees they were conquered by Hyrcanus, and brought into subjection by the Jews, Joseph. Antiq. lib. xiii. cap. x. Yet their will-worship, upon the credit of the tradition of their fathers, continued to the days of our Saviour, and their hatred to the people of God, John iv. 9, 22. When, by whom, in what character, they first received the Pentateuch, is most uncertain;—not likely by the priest sent to them; for notwithstanding his instructions, they continued in open idolatry, which evidences that they had not so much as seen the book of the law. Probably this was done when they were conquered by Hyrcanus, and their temple razed, after it had stood two hundred years. So also did the Edomites. What diligence they used in the preservation of it, being never committed to them by God, we shall see afterward. That there are any of them remaining at this day, or have been these thousand years past, is unknown. That the letters of their Pentateuch were the ancient Hebrew letters, as Eusebius, Jerome, and some of the Rabbins, report, seems to me (on the best inquiry I have been able to make) a groundless tradition and mere fable. The evidences tendered to prove it are much too weak to bear the weight of such an assertion. Eusebius speaks only on report; affirmatur,—it was so affirmed, on what ground he tells us not. Jerome, indeed, is more positive; but give me leave to say, that supposing this to be false, sufficient instances of the like mistakes may be given in him. For the testimony of the Talmud, I have often declared that with me it is of no weight, unless seconded by very good evidence. And indeed the foundation of the whole story is very vain. The Jews are thought and said to have forgot their own characters in the captivity, and to have learned the Chaldean, upon the account whereof they adhered unto it after their return, when the same men were alive at

Samaritan Pentateuch, which was presented in 1620 to the library of the Oratory at Paris, by Harleus de Seney. It excited considerable sensation among the learned, was reputed of great antiquity, and held to be derived from some copy antecedent to the Babylonish captivity. It contained no vowel points, and hence the analogical argument to which our author refers against the antiquity of the Hebrew points.—Ed.
the burning of the one and the building of the other temple. That the men of one and the same generation should forget the use of their own letters, which they had been exercised in, is incredible. Besides, they had their Bibles with them always, and that in their own character only; whether they had any one other book or no, we know not. And whence, then, this forgetting of one character and learning of another should arise doth not appear; nor shall I, in such an improbable fiction, lay much weight on testimonies the most ancient whereof is six hundred years later than the pretended matter of fact.

The most weighty proof in this case is taken from the ancient Judaical coins, taken up with Samaritan characters upon them. We are now in the high road of forgeries and fables; in nothing hath the world been more cheated. But be it granted that the pretended coins are truly ancient, must it needs follow that because the letters were then known and in use, that they only were so,—that the Bible was written with them, and those now in use unknown? To salve the credit of the coins, I shall crave leave to answer this conjecture with another. The Samaritan letters are plainly preternatural (if I may so say), a studied invention,—in their frame and figure fit to adorn, when extended or greaterized, by way of engraving or embossing, any thing they shall be put upon or cut in. Why may we not think they were invented for that purpose, namely, to engrave on vessels and to stamp on coins, and so came to be of some use in writing also? Their shape and frame promise some such thing. And this is rendered the more probable from the practice of the Egyptians, who, as Clemens Alexandrinus¹ tells us, had three sorts of letters; one which he calls ἐπιστολογραφική, with which they wrote things of common use; another termed by him ἰερογραφική, used by the priests in the sacred writings; and the other ἰερογλυφική, which also was of two sorts, simple and symbolical. Seeing, then, it was no unusual thing to have sundry sorts of letters for sundry purposes, it is not improbable that it was so also among the Jews: not that they wrote the sacred writings in a peculiar character as it were to hide them, which is declaimed against, but only that the other character might be in use for some purposes; which is not unusual. I cannot think the Greeks of old used only the uncial letters, which yet we know some did; though he did not who wrote Homer's Iliad in no greater a volume than would go into a nutshell.

¹ Ἀδρίκα ἦν ηγα λεγόμενος παπυρύματος, πρῶτος μὲν πάσως τῆς Ἀλεξάνδρεως γραμμάτων μέθεον ἱστορίας, τὰν ἐπιστολογραφικὴν καλομένην ἐςτυράζει δε, ἱερογραφικὴ δὲ χρώται εἰς ἱερογραμμάτισ· ὅπως τὸ καὶ συνιστάτως τὴν ἱερογλυφικὴν ἐς αἱ μὲν ἀρχαὶ διὰ τῶν πρώτων συνήματος κυριολέξιοι, ἡ δὲ συμβαλλόμενη τῆς ἱερογλυφικῆς ἐς ἀρχαῖα σύμβαλλε ἐς κυριολέξιοι κατὰ μίμεσιν ἡ δὲ ἄλλη δυνάμεις γράφεται, ἡ δὲ ἀντικείμενο ἀκαθαρσίας κατὰ τιμῶς ιερομεθάνοις. Κάθε γὰρ ὁι γράφεται ζωολόγως, κακὸς συνιστῶ οὐκέτοι οὐκέτοι δὲ, σχέδια μονωτίς, κατὰ τὸ κυριολέξιον μενιδίς. —Clemens. Alex., Stromat. lib. v.
But if that should be granted that cannot be proved,—namely, that such a change was made,—yet this prejudices not them in the least who affirm Ezra and the men of the great congregation to have been the authors of the points, seeing the authors of this rumour affixed that as the time wherein the old Hebrew letters were excommuni-
cated out of the church, together with the Samaritans. Nay, it casts
a probability on the other hand, namely, that Ezra, laying aside the
old letters because of their difficulty, together with the new in-
troduced the points, to facilitate their use. Nor can it be made to
appear that the Samaritan letters had never any vowels affixed to
them. Postellus affirms that the Samaritans had points in the days
of Jerome, and that their loss of them is the cause of their present
corrupt reading: "Punctis hodie quae habebant Hieronymi tempor-
ibus carent: leguntque, sine punctis admodum depravat;" Postell.
Alphab. 12 lingua. There were always some copies written without
vowels, which might be preserved, and the others lost. That people
(if we have any thing from them) being wicked, ignorant, sottish,
superstitious, idolatrous, rejecters of the greatest part of the Scrip-
ture, corrupters of what they had received, might neglect the task of
transcribing copies with points, because a matter of so great care and
diligence, to be performed aright. Nor is it improbable, whatever is
pretended to the contrary, that, continuing in their separation from
the people of God, they might get the law written in a character of
their own choosing, out of hatred to the Jews.

Now, let any man judge whether, from this heap of uncertainties,
any thing can arise with the face of a witness, to be admitted to give
testimony in the cause in hand. He that will part with his posses-
sion on such easy terms never found much benefit in it.

2. The constant practice of the Jews in preserving in their syna-
gogues one book, which they almost adore, written without points, is
alleged to the same purpose; "for what do they else hereby but tacitly
acknowledge the points to have a human original?" Ans. But it is
certain they do not so acknowledge them, neither by that practice
nor by any other way, it being the constant opinion and persuasion
of them all (Elias only excepted) that they are of a divine extract;
and if their authority be to be urged, it is to be submitted unto in
one thing as well as in another. The Jews give a threefold ac-
count of this practice:—(1.) The difficulty of transcribing copies
without any failing, the least rendering the whole book, as to its use
in their synagogues, profane. (2.) The liberty they have thereby to
draw out various senses, more eminent, as they say (indeed more vain
and curious), than they have any advantage to do when the reading
is restrained to one certain sense by the vowels and accents. (3.) To
keep all learners in dependence on their teachers, seeing they cannot
learn the mind of God but by their exposition, R. Azarias, lib. Imre Binah. cap. lix. If these reasons satisfy not any as to the ground of that practice, they may be pleased to inquire of them for others who intend to be bound by their authority;—that the points were invented by some late Masoretes they will not inform them. For Jesuitical stories out of China, they are with me, for the most part, of the like credit with those of the Jews in their Talmud; he that can believe all the miracles that they work, where men are not warned of their juggling, may credit them in other things. However, as I said, I do not understand this argument: “The Jews keep a book in their synagogues without points, therefore the points and accents were invented by the Tiberian Masoretes;” when they never read it, or rather sing it, but according to every point and accent in ordinary use. Indeed, the whole profound mystery of this business seems to be this, that none be admitted to read or sing the law in their synagogues until he be so perfect in it as to be able to observe exactly all points and accents in a book wherein there are none of them.

3. The testimony of Elias Levita, not only as to his own judgment, but also as to what he mentions from Aben Ezra and others, is insisted on. “They affirm,” saith he, “that we have received the whole punctuation from the Tiberian Masoretes.” Ans. It is very true that Elias was of that judgment; and it may well be supposed, that if that opinion had not fallen into his mind, the world had been little acquainted with it at this day. That by “receiving of the punctuation from the Tiberians,” the continuation of it in their school, not the invention of it, is intended by Aben Ezra, is beyond all exception evinced by Buxtorfius, De Punct. Antiq. par. i. cap. iii. Nor can any thing be spoken more directly to the contrary of what is intended, than that which is urged in the Prolegomena from Aben Ezra, Comment. in Exod. xxv. 31, where he affirms that he saw some books examined in all the letters, and the whole punctuation by the wise men of Tiberias, namely, to try whether it were done exactly according to the patterns they had. Besides, all Elias’ arguments are notably answered by R. Azarias, whose answers are repeated by Joseph de Voysin in his most learned Observations on the Proemium of the Pugio Fidei, p. 91, 92. And the same Azarias shows the consistency of the various opinions that were among the Jews about the vowels; ascribing them as to their virtue and force to Moses, or God on Mount Sinai; as to their figure and character to Ezra; and as to the restoration of their use unto the Masoretes.

4. The silence of the Mishna Gemara, or whole Talmud, concerning the points is further urged. This argument is also at large discussed by Buxtorfius, and the instances in it answered to the full;
nor is it needful for any man to add any thing further until what he hath discoursed to this purpose be removed. See par. i. cap. vi. See also Glassius, lib. i. tract. i. De Textus Hebræi Puritate, who gives instances to the contrary; yea, and the Talmud itself, in Nedarim, or "of vows," chap. iv., on Nehem. viii. 8, doth plainly mention them; and treatises more ancient than the Talmud, cited by R. Azarias in Imre Binah, expressly speak of them. It is to me a sufficient evidence, able to overbear the conjectures to the contrary, that the Talmudists both knew, and in their readings were regulated by, the points now in use, in that, as many learned men have observed, there is not one text of Scripture to be found cited in the Talmud in any other sense, as to the literal reading and meaning of the words, than only that which it is restrained unto by the present punctuation; when it is known that the patrons of the opinion under consideration yield this constantly as one reason of the seventy translators reading words and sentences otherwise than we read them now in our Bibles,—namely, because the books they used were not pointed, whereby they were at liberty to conjecture at this or that sense of the word before them. This is one of the main pillars of Cappellus' whole fabric in his Critica Sacra. And how it can be fancied there should be no variety between our present reading and the Talmudists', upon supposition they knew not the use of points, I know not. Is it possible, on this supposition, there should be such a coincidence between their and our present punctuation, when, on the same principle, it seems there are so many variations by the LXX. and the Chaldee paraphrast?

5. Of the בּהֵבָדֵי יִרְפָּאַ, which are pleaded in the next place to this purpose, I shall speak afterward. The difference in them is in the consonants, not in the vowels; which yet argues not that there were no vowels when they were collected or disposed as now we find them. Yea, that there were no vowels in the copies from whence they were collected (if they were so collected) may be true, but that that collection was made any later, for the main of it, than the days of Ezra doth not appear. Now, whatever was done about the Scripture in the Judaical church before the times of our Saviour is manifest to have been done by divine authority, in that it is nowhere by him reproved, but rather the integrity of every word is by him confirmed. But of these things distinctly by themselves afterward we are to speak.

6. A sixth argument for the novelty of the points is taken from their number; for whereas it is said all kinds of sounds may be expressed by five vowels, we are in the present Hebrew punctuation supplied with fourteen or fifteen, which, as it is affirmed, manifests abundantly that they are not coevoys or connatural to the language itself, but the arbitrary, artificial invention of men, who have not as-
signed a sufficient difference in their force and sound to distinguish them in pronunciation. But this objection seems of small importance. The ground of it is an apprehension that we still retain exactly the true pronunciation of the Hebrew tongue; which is evidently false. (1.) It is now near two thousand years since that tongue was vulgarly spoken in its purity by any people or nation. To imagine that the true, exact, distinct pronunciation of every tittle and syllable in it, as it was used by them to whom it was vulgar and natural, is communicated unto us, or is attainable by us, is to dream pleasantly whilst we are awake. Aben Ezra makes it no small matter that men of old knew aright how to pronounce Kamets Gadol. Saith he, נונָיְיָ וּגַדְּלָה, "The men of Tiberias, also the wise men of Egypt and Africa, knew how to read Kamets Gadol." (2.) Even the distinct force of one consonant, and that always radical, ൏, is utterly lost, so that the present Jews know nothing of its pronunciation. (3.) Nor can we distinguish now between ג ו, and between ב ו, though the Jews tell us that the wise men of Tiberias could do so twelve hundred years ago; as also between ר ו, and ה ו, and כ ו; nor is the distinct sound of פנھ so obvious unto us. (4.) The variety of consonants among many nations, and their ability to distinguish them in pronunciation, makes this of little consideration. The whole nation of the Germans distinguish not between the force and sound of t and d; whereas the Arabic dal and dhal, dad, ta, and da, manifest how they can distinguish those sounds. (5.) Nor are the Jewish מ ו כ answered distinctly in any other language; to distinguish some of which good old Jerome had his teeth filed, by the direction of his Nicodemus. (6.) The truth is, the Hebrews have but ten vowels, five long and five short, or five great and five less; Sheva is but a servant to all the rest, and its addition to Segol and Pathakh makes no new vowels. To distinguish between Kamets Khatuph and Khatuph Kamets there is no colour. Seven only of them, as Morinus hath manifested out of R. Jehuda Chiug, one of the first grammarians among the Jews, namely, י ו, ה ו, נ ו, ב ו, they called, of old, kings, or the chief rulers of all the motions of the letters. So that indeed they have not so many figures to distinguish sounds by, with all their vowels, as have the Greeks. Besides the seven vowels, they have twelve diphthongs, and three of them, as to any peculiar sound, as mute as Sheva. It is true, Pliny tells us that Simonides Melicus found out two of the vowels, ג and ד, as he did also two consonants, כ and ל; but surely he did so because he found them needful to answer the dis-

tinct sounds used in that language, or he had deserved little thanks for his invention. Speaking lately with a worthy learned friend about a universal character, which hath been mentioned by many, attempted by divers, and by him brought to that perfection as will doubtless yield much if not universal satisfaction unto learned and prudent men, when he shall be pleased to communicate his thoughts upon it to the world, we fell occasionally on the difference of apert sounds or vowels: which when I heard him with good reason affirm to be eight or nine, remembering this argument about the Hebrew points, I desired him to give his thoughts in a few words the next day; which he did accordingly. Now, because his discourse seems evidently to discover the vanity of this pretence, that the Hebrew vowels are an arbitrary invention from their number, I have here inserted it:—

Apert sounds are either.........................  \$ Simple. Vowels.

\$ Double. Diphthongs.

1. Apert simple sounds are distinguishable \$ Formally.

\$ Accidentally.

(1.) The formal difference is that which doth constitute several letters, and must depend upon the various apertion required to the making of them, together with the gravity or acuteness of the tone which is made by them; according to which there are at least eight simple vowels, that are by us easily distinguishable, namely,—

1.} E { magis acutum: as in he, me, she, ye, etc.
   2.} m i us acutum: as the English, the; the Latin, me, te, se, etc.
   3.} I or Y, which are both to be accounted of one power and sound. Shi, di; thy, my.
   4.} A { magis apertum. All, tall, gall, wall.
   5.} minus apertum. Ale, tale, gale, wale.
   6.} o { rotundum, minus grave: as the English, go, so, no; the Latin, do.
   7.} o { magis grave et pINGue: as the English, do, to, who.
   8.} U as in tu, use, us, etc.

So many apert simple sounds there are evidently distinguishable: I would be loath to say that there neither are nor can be any more; for who knows how many other minute differences of apertion and gravity may be now used, or hereafter found out by others, which practice and custom may make as easy to them as these are to us?

(2.) But besides this formal difference, they are some of them accidentally distinguishable from one another, with reference to the quantity of time required to

1 " Literas semper arbitror Assyrias fuisse, sed alii apud Egyptios a Mercurio, ut Gellius; alii apud Tyros repertas volunt: utique in Graeciam intulisse e Phoenice Cadmum sexdecim numero, quibus Trojano bello adiessisse quatuor hac figurâ & pa & & Palamedem totidem, post eum Simonidem Melicum \$ & \$, quorum omnium vis in nostris cognoscutur."—Plinius Nat. Hist. lib. vii. cap. lvi. quo quis in vita invenerit.

Dr Wilkins, ward. of Wad. Col: [afterwards bishop of Chester, and author of a celebrated "Essay towards a Real Character and Philosophical Language." On account of his literary pursuits in this direction, Owen seems to have appealed to him as an authority in the present instance. A complete and more accurate classification of sounds will be found in certain recent works. See a list of authors on the subject in the appendix to the "Essentials of Phonetics," by Ellis.—Ed.]
their prolation, whereby the same vowel becomes sometimes long [and sometimes] short:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Long.</th>
<th>Short.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>So E min. acut.</td>
<td>Mete, steme.</td>
<td>Met, stem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>Alive, give, drive, title, thine.</td>
<td>Alive, give, driven.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A min. apert. A</td>
<td>Bate, hate, cate, same, dame—ae.</td>
<td>Bat, hat, cat, sam, dam.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O rotund.</td>
<td>One, none, note, etc.—oe vel oa.</td>
<td>One (non Lat.), not.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U</td>
<td>Use, tune, pule, acute.—ue.</td>
<td>Us, tun, pull, cut.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The other remaining vowels, namely, E magis acut., A magis apert., and O magis grave, do not change their quantities, but are always long.

2. Diphthongs are made of the complexion of two vowels in one syllable, where the sounds of both are heard. These are:—

1. Ei, ey..........Hel, Lat. They.
2. Ea..............Eat, meat, seat, teat, yea, plea.
4. Ai, ay..........Aid, said, pay, day.
6. Oi, oy..........Point, soil, boy, toy.
7. Ou, ow...........Rout, stout, how, now.
8. Ui, uy..........Bui, juice.
9. Eo..............Yeoman, people.

How other diphthongs (which have been used) may be significant for the expression of long vowels, see noted above.

There is, then, very little weight to be ventured upon the strength of this objection.

7. It is further pleaded, Proleg. 8, sect. 46, that the ancient translations,—the Greek, the Chaldee, and the Syriac,—do manifest that at the time of their composing the points were not invented, and that because in sundry places it is evident that they read otherwise, or the words with other points (I mean as to the force and sound, not figure of them) than those now affixed. For this purpose, very many instances are given us out of the Septuagint, especially by Cappellus; Grotius also takes the same course. But neither is this objection of any force to turn the scale in the matter under consideration. Somewhat will, in the close of this discourse, be spoken of those translations. The differences that may be observed in them, especially in the former, would as well prove that they had other consonants,—that is, that the copies they used had other letters and words,—than ours, as other vowels; yea, if we must suppose that where they differ from our present reading they had other and better copies, it is most certain that we must grant ours to be very corrupt. "Hoc Ithacus vellet." Nor can this inference be avoided, as shall, God willing, be further manifested, if occasion be administered. The truth is, the present copies that we have of the Septuagint do in many places so vary from
the original that it is beyond all conjecture what should occasion it. I wish some would try their skill upon some part of Job, the Psalms, and the Prophets, to see if, by all their inquiries of extracting various lections, they can find out how they read in their books, if they rendered as they read, and we enjoy what they rendered. Simeon de Muis tells us a very pretty story of himself to this purpose, Assert. Verit. Heb. sect. 1; as also how ridiculous he was in his attempt. But I shall recall that desire. The Scripture, indeed, is not so to be dealt withal; we have had too much of that work already. The rabbinical קַרְטָּבִּים is not to be compared with some of our critics' Temura and Notarjecon. Of the Chaldee paraphrase I shall speak afterward. It seems not to be of the antiquity pretended. It is not mentioned by Josephus, nor Origen, nor Jerome;—but this will not impeach its antiquity. But whereas it is most certain that it was in high esteem and reverence among all the Jews before the time assigned for the punctuation of the points, it seems strange that they should, in disposing of them, differ from it voluntarily in so many places. Besides, though these translators, or any of them, might use copies without vowels, as it is confessed that always some such there were, as still there are, yet it doth not follow at all that therefore the points were not found out nor in use. But more of this when we come to speak distinctly of these translations.

8. Of the same importance is that which is, in the last place, insisted on from the silence of Jerome and others of the ancients as to the use of the points among the Hebrews. But [as] Jerome saw not all things (he saw not the Chaldee paraphrase, which our authors suppose to have been extant at least four hundred years before him), so it cannot be made evident that he mentioned all that he saw. To speak expressly of the vowels he had no occasion; there was then no controversy about them, nor were they then distinctly known by the names whereby they are now called. The whole current of his translation argues that he had the Bible as now pointed; yea, learned men have manifested by instances that seem of irrefragable evidence that he had the use of them; or, it may be, he could not obtain a pointed copy, but was instructed by his Jew in the right pronunciation of words. Copies were then scarce, and the Jews full of envy. All these things are uncertain. See Munster. Præfat. ad Bib. The truth is, either I cannot understand his words, or he doth positively affirm that the Hebrew had the use of vowels, in his Epistle to Evangelius, Epist. 126: "Nec refert utrum Salem an Salim nominetur,

1 Cabalistic signs.—נהבְּא and כְּנָהְבָּא, the former denoting a change either by transposition of letters, or by altering the alphabetical order of the letters; the latter being applied to instances in which one letter written is held to be the sign for a whole word or object.—Ed.
cum vocalibus\textsuperscript{1} in medio litteris perraro utantur Hebræi." If they did it perraro, they did it, and then they had them, though in those days, to keep up their credit in teaching, they did not much use them. Nor can this be spoken of the sound of the vowels, but of their figures; for surely they did not seldom use the sounds of vowels, if they spake often. And many other testimonies from him may be produced to the same purpose.

Morinus, in his late "Opuscula Hebræa Samaritica," in his digression against the Hebrew points and accents, the first part, p. 209, brings in a new argument to prove that the puncta vocalia were invented by the Jewish grammarians, however the distinction of sections might be before. This he attempts out of a discourse of Aben Ezra concerning the successive means of the preservation of the Scripture; first, by the men of the great synagoge, then by the Masoretes, then by the grammarians. As he assigns all these their several works, so to the grammarians the skill of knowing the progresses of the holy tongue, the generation of the kingy points and of Sheva, as he is by him there cited at large. After, he labours to prove by sundry instances that the puncta vocalia are by him called reges, and not the accents, as is now the use; and in the addenda to his book, prefixed to it, he triumphs upon a discovery that the vowels are so called by Rabbi Jehuda Chiug, the most ancient of the Jewish grammarians. The business is now, it seems, quite finished, and he cries out, "Oculis aliorum non egemus amplius, aνιτονε ινυ nunc sumus"! A sacrifice is doubtless due to this drag of Morinus. But quid dignum tanto?

The place insisted on by him out of Aben Ezra was some years before produced, weighed, and explained, by Buxtorf, out of his נאיק, or the Standard of the Holy Tongue, De Punct. Orig. par. i. p. 13, 14, cap. iii.; and it is not unlikely, from Morinus his preface to his consideration of that place, that he fixed on it some years ago, that he learned it from Buxtorfius, by the provision that he lays in against such thoughts; for what is it to the reader when Morinus made his observations? The manner of the men of that society in other things gives sufficient grounds for this suspicion. And Simeon de Muis intimates that he had dealt before with the father as he now deals with the son, Censur. in Exercitat. iv. cap. vii. p. 17; himself, with great and rare ingenuity, acknowledging what he received of him: Assert. Verit. Heb. cap. v., "Dicese me haec omnia mutatum a Buxtorfio? quidnii vero mutuo, si necesse erit." But what is the great discovery here made? 1. That the puncta vocalia are

\textsuperscript{1} Words seemingly conclusive in favour of Owen's view, if Jerome understood by " vocales " what we understand by " vowels." The former, however, in the language of Jerome denotes " gutturals." See Havermick's " Introduction to the Old Testament," sect. 53, and Hupfeld, s. 580.—Eb.
some of them called reges; the accents have now got that appellation; some of them are reges, and some ministri: so that the present state of things in reference to vowels and accents is but novel. 2. That the grammarians invented these regia puncta, as Aben Ezra says.

But, I pray, what cause of triumph or boasting is in all this goodly discovery? Was it ever denied by any that the casting of the names of the vowels and accents, with the titles, was the work of the grammarians? was it not long since observed by many that the five long vowels, with _ and _, were called of old reges? and that the distinction of the vowels into long and short was an invention of the Christians rather than Jewish grammarians, the Jews calling them some absolutely reges, some great and small, some matres et filias? “But then,” saith he, “the grammarians were the inventors of these points.” Why so? “Aben Ezra refers this unto the work of the grammarians, to know the progresses of the holy tongue, the generation of those kings,” etc. But can any thing be more evident against his design than his own testimony? It was the work of the grammarians to know these things, therefore not to invent them. Did they invent the radical and servile letters? Surely they also then invented the tongue; for it consists of letters radical and servile, of points and accents: and yet this is also ascribed to them by Aben Ezra. But it is well that Morinus hath at length lighted upon R. Jehuda Chiug. His opinion before was collected out of Kimchi, Ephodius, Muscatus, and others. But what says he now himself? For aught that appears, by what we have quoted by Morinus, he is like to prove a notable witness of the antiquity of the points. It may be well supposed that Morinus, writing on set purpose against their antiquity, would produce that testimony which in his whole author was most to his purpose; and yet he fixes on one wherein this ancient grammarian, who lived about the year of Christ 1150 or 1200, gives us an account of the points, with their names, without the least intimiation of any thing to the impeachment of their divine original. So also the same Aben Ezra on Ps. ix. 7 tells us of one Adonim Ben-lafra, who, long before this R. Jehuda, found _ for _ in an ancient copy. And therefore, when Morinus comes to make the conclusion of his argument, discovering, it seems, himself the folly of the pretence that the points were invented by the grammarians, the last sort of men mentioned by Aben Ezra, he says, “Procul omni dubio est, et luce meridiana clarius Aben Ezram sensisse omnium vocalium punctationem a Masorethis Tiberiensibus, et grammaticis, qui hos sequi sunt, originem ducere.” But of these Masoretes there is not one word in the premises, nor is any such thing assigned unto them by Aben Ezra, but quite another employment,—of making a hedge about the law, by their observations on all the words of it;—and had he dreamed of their inventing the points, he would sure
enough have assigned that work to them; and as for the grammarians, his own testimony lies full to the contrary.

And these are the heads of the arguments insisted on by Cappellus and others, and by these Prolegomena, to prove the Hebrew punctuation to be an invention of the Jews of Tiberias five hundred years or more after the incarnation of Christ. "Brevis Cantilena, sed longum Epiphonema." As I have not here designed to answer them at large, with the various instances produced to give countenance unto them (nor is it needful for any so to do until the answer already given to them be removed), so by the specimen given of their nature and kind, the sober and pious reader may easily judge whether there be any force in them to subvert the persuasion opposed by them, grounded on the catholic tradition and consent of the Jews; the uncontradicted reception of them absolutely, without the least opposition, all the world over, by Jews and Christians; the very nature of the punctuation itself, following the genius of the language, not arising or flowing from any artificial rules; the impossibility of assigning any author to it since the days of Ezra, but only by such loose conjectures and imaginations as ought not to be admitted to any plea and place in this weighty cause; all attended with that great uncertainty which, without their owning of these points to be of divine original, we shall be left unto in all translations and expositions of the Scripture. It is true, whilst the Hebrew language was the vulgar tongue of the nation, and was spoken by every one uniformly everywhere, it had been possible that, upon a supposition that there were no points, men, without infallible guidance and direction, might possibly affix notes and figures which might with some exactness answer the common pronunciation of the language, and so, consequently, exhibit the true and proper sense and meaning of the words themselves: but when there had been an interruption of a thousand years in the vulgar use of the language, it being preserved pure only in one book, to suppose that the true and exact pronunciation of every tittle, letter, and syllable, was preserved alive by oral tradition, not written anywhere, not commonly spoken by any, is to build towns and castles of imaginations, which may be as easily cast down as they are erected. Yet unless this be supposed (which with no colour of reason can be supposed, which is yet so by Cappellus and the learned author of the Prolegomena), it must be granted that the great rule of all present translations, expositions, and comments, that have been made in the church of God for some hundreds of years, is the arbitrary invention of some few Jews, living in an obscure corner of the world, under the curse of God, in their unbelief and blindness! The only relief in the Prolegomena against this amazing inference is, as was said, that the Masoretes affixed not the present punctuation arbitrarily (so also Cappellus), but according to
the tradition they had received. What weight is to be laid upon such a tradition for near a thousand years (above, according to Morinus) is easily to be imagined. Nor let men please themselves with the pretended facility of learning the Hebrew language without points and accents; and not only the language, but the true and proper reading and distinction of it in the Bible. Let the points and accents be wholly removed, and all apprehensions of the sense arising by the restraint and distinction of the words as now pointed, and then turn in the drove of the learned critics of this age upon the naked consonants, and we shall quickly see what woful work, yea, havoc of sacred truth, will be made amongst them. Were they shut up in several cells, I should scarcely expect the harmony and agreement amongst them which is fabulously reported to have been in the like case among the LXX. The Jews say, and that truly, נא ושנ לשוב על הקראת בלטוד לא רעים,—"No man can lift up his tongue to read without punctuation." And, "Si rationi in his et similibus dominium concedamus, toti mutabuntur libri, in literis, vocibus, et sententiis, et sic res ipsa quoque mutabitur," Lib. Cosri. 1, par. 3, p. 28.

And thus have I, with all possible brevity, vindicated the position formerly insisted on from this grand exception, which might be justly feared from the principles laid down in the Prolegomena.

CHAPTER VII.

Of the ותקוק, their nature and original—The difference is in the consonants—Morinus' vain charge on Arias Montanus—The senses of both consistent—Of the great congregation—The spring and rise of these various readings—The judgment of the Prolegomena about them—Their order given twice over in the Appendix—The rise assigned to them considered—Of Capellus, his opinion, and the danger of it.

We are not as yet come to a close. There is another thing agitated in these Prolegomena, and represented in the Appendix, that may seem to derogate from the universality of my assertion concerning the entire preservation of the original copies of the Scripture. The ותניא, or the scriptio and lectio, or scriptum and lectum, is that which I intend. The general nature of these things is known to all them that have looked into the Bible. One word is placed in the line and another in the margin, the word in the line having not the points or vowels affixed to it that are its own, but those that belong to the word in the margin. Of this sort there are in the Bible eight hundred and forty, or thereabout; for some of the late editions, by mistake or oversight, do differ in the precise number. All men that have wrote any considerations on the Hebrew text have spoken of their nature in general; so hath the author of these Prolegomena.

VOL. XVI.
As to our present concernment,—namely, to manifest that from them no argument can arise as to the corruption of the original,—the ensuing observations concerning them may suffice:—

1. All the difference in these words is in the consonants, not at all in the vowels. The word in the margin owns the vowels in the line as proper to it, and the vowels in the line seem to be placed to the word whereunto they do not belong, because there is no other meet place for them in the line where they are to be continued, as belonging to the integrity of the Scripture.

Morinus, to manifest his rage against the Hebrew text, takes from hence occasion to quarrel with Arias Montanus, and to accuse him of ignorance and false dealing, De Heb. Text. Sincr., Exer. i. cap. iv. p. 40.

The pretence of his quarrel he makes to be, that Arias affirms the greatest part of these various lections to consist in some differences of the points; for which purpose he cites his words out of his preface to his collection of various lections: "Maxima in his lectionibus varietatis pars in hujusmodi punctorum discrepantia consistit, ut toto hujus Mazzoreth sive variarum lectionum volumine demonstratur."

Whereunto he subjoins, "Mira assertio! ne una quidem in punctis sita est. Catalogum plurimorum ipse ad finem prefationis adetexit. Et varietates omnes sunt in literis, nulla in punctis. Confidentius scribo omnium variarum lectionum quas Judæi appellant בֵּיתָן יְרֵךְ, Keri et Ketib, de quibus agit Arias nulla prorsus ad puncta pertinet. Iterum confidentius," etc. Would not any man think but that the man had made here some great discovery, both as to the nature of the בֵּיתָן יְרֵךְ, as also to the ignorance of Arias, whom he goes on to repreach as a person unacquainted with the Masora, and with the various lections of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews, at the end of the Venetian Bibles; which Bibles he chiefly used in the printing of his own? And yet, on the other hand, men acquainted with the ability and great discerning of Arias will be hardly persuaded that he was so blind and ignorant as to affirm the greatest part of the variety he spoke of consisted in the changing of vowels, and immediately to give instances wherein all he mentions consists in the change of consonants only. But what if all this should prove the ignorance and prejudice of Morinus? First, To his redoubled assertion about the difference of the Keri and Ketib in the consonants only,—wherein he speaks as though he were blessing the world with a new and strange discovery,—it is a thing known "lippis et tonsoribus," and hath been so since the days of Elias Levita.

What then? Intended Arias Montanus to affirm the contrary?

"Hic nigri succus loliginis: hvec est
Ærugo mera."

He speaks not at all of the בֵּיתָן יְרֵךְ, but merely of the anomalous
pointing of words, in a various way from the genius of the tongue, as they are observed and reckoned up in the Masora: of other varieties he speaks afterward, giving a particular account of the Keri and Ketib: which whether he esteemed various lections or no I know not. "Non si te superis æques." But all are ignorant who are not of the mind of an aspiring Jesuit!

2. That the difference in the sense, taking in the whole context, is upon the matter very little, or none at all; at least each word, both that in the line and that in the margin, yields a sense agreeable to the analogy of faith.

Of all the varieties that are found of this kind, that of two words the same in sound, but of most distinct significations, seems of the greatest importance,—namely, אֶל and אֵל, fourteen or fifteen times; where אֵל, "not," is in the text, the margin notes אֶל, "to him," or "his," to be read. But yet, though these seem contrary one to the other, wherever this falls out, a sense agreeable to the analogy of faith ariseth fairly from either word: as, to give one or two instances, Ps. c. 3, אֵל הִנְנָה אֵלֶּה אֶלָּהוּ,—"He hath made us, and not we ourselves." The Keri in the margin is אֵל, "his;" giving this sense, "He hath made us, and his we are," the verb substantive being included in the pronoun. So Isa. lxiii. 9, יִשְׂרָאֵל אֵלֶּה יִשְׂרָאֵל אֶלֶּה, —"In all their afflictions (or straits), no straitness:" so the רָע. The רַע [is] רַע, "Straitness (or affliction) was to him," or "he was straitened" or "afflicted." In the first way, God signifieth that when they were in their outward straits, yet he was not straitened from their relief; in the other, that he had compassion for them, was afflicted with them, which upon the matter is the same. And the like may be showed of the rest.

I confess I am not able fully to satisfy myself in the original and spring of all this variety, being not willing merely to depend on the testimony of the Jews, much less on the conjectures of late innovators. To the uttermost length of my view, to give a full account of this thing is a matter of no small difficulty. Their venerable antiquity and unquestionable reception by all translators gives them sanctuary from being cast down from the place they hold by any man's bare conjecture. That which to me is of the greatest importance is, that they appear most of them to have been in the Bibles then when the oracles of God were committed to the Jews; during which time we find them not blamed for adding or altering one word or tittle. Hence the Chaldee paraphrast often follows the Keri, which never was in the line, whatever some boastingly conjecture to the contrary; and sometimes the Ketib. That which seems to me most probable is, that they were collected, for the most part of them, by the אָמַס בְּכָנָה וְלָדֵי, "The men of the great congregation." Some, indeed, I find of late (I hope not out of a design to bring all
things to a further confusion about the original) to question whether ever there were any such thing as the great congregation. Morinus calls it a Judaical figment. Our Prolegomena question it, Proleg. 8, sect. 22. But this is only to question whether Ezra, Nehemiah, Joshua, Zechariah, Haggai, and the rest of the leaders of the people, on their return from the captivity, did set a sanhedrim, according to the institution of God, and labour to reform the church and all the corruptions that were crept either into the word or worship of God. I see not how this can reasonably be called into question, if we had not, to confirm it, the catholic tradition of Jews and Christians. Neither is it called "The great congregation" from its number, but from the eminency of persons. Now, on this supposition it may be granted that the Keri on the books of these men themselves, Ezra and the rest, were collected by the succeeding church; unless we shall suppose, with Ainsworth, that the word was so received from God as to make both necessary. And if we know not the true cause of its being so given, we have nothing to blame but our own ignorance, this not being the only case wherein we have reason so to do. Our last translation generally rendereth the word in the margin, noting also the word in the line, where there is any considerable difference. Those who have leisure for such a work may observe what choice is used in this case by old and modern translators; and if they had not believed them to have had an authoritative original, beyond the impeachment of any man in these days, they could not fairly and honestly have used both line and margin as they have done.

What say now our Prolegomena, with the Appendix, unto these things?

We have them in the Appendix represented unto us in their own order, according as they are found in the books of the Scriptures; and then over again in the order and under the heads that they are drawn and driven unto by Cappellus;—a task that learned man took upon himself, that he might in the performance of it give some countenance to his opinion, that they are, for the most part, critical emendations of the text made by some late Masoretes, that came no man knows whence, that lived no man knows when or when. Thus, whereas these Keri and Ketib have the only face and appearance upon the matter of various lections upon the Old Testament (for the Jews’ collections of the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the oriental and occidental Jews, are of no value, nor ever had place in their Bible, and may be rejected), the unwary viewer of the Appendix is presented with a great bulk of them, their whole army being mustered twice over in this service!

But this inconvenience may be easily amended, nor am I concerned in it.
3. Wherefore, thirdly, for the rise of them, it is said that some of them are the amendments of the Masoretes or Rabbins; others, various lections out of divers copies. That they are all, or the most part of them, critical amendments of the Rabbins is not allowed; for which latter part of his determination we thank the learned author, and take leave to say that in the former we are not satisfied. Prol. 8, sect. 23–25, the arguments that are produced to prove them not to have been from Ezra, but the most part from post-Talmudical Rabbins, are capable of a very easy solution, which also another occasion may discover; at present I am gone already too far beyond my intention, so that I cannot allow myself any farther digression.

To answer briefly. Ezra and his companions might be the collectors of all those in the Bible but their own books, and those in their own books might be added by the succeeding church. The oriental and occidental Jews differ about other things as well as the Keri and Ketib. The rule of the Jews, that the Keri is always to be followed, is novel, and therefore the old translators might read either or both as they saw cause. There was no occasion at all why these things should be mentioned by Josephus, Philo, Origen. Jerome says, indeed, on Isa. xlix. 5, that Aquila rendered that word "to him," which is written with ב and ש, not ב and ש. But he makes it not appear that Aquila read not as he translated, that is, by the ס. And for what is urged of the Chaldee and LXX. making use of the Keri and Ketib, it is not intended that they knew the difference under these names, but that these differences were in their days. That the word now in the margin was in the line until the days of the pretended Masoretes is not nakedly to be said, but proved, if such a novel fancy expect any credit in the world. That the Judaical Rabbins have made some alterations in the text of their own accord, at least placed words in the margin, as to their consonants, supplying their vowels in the line where they ought not to have place; that there were various lections in the copies after the Talmud, which have been gathered by some obscure Jews, no mention being made of those collections in the Masora or any of their grammarians,—is the sum of the discourse under consideration. When all this, or any part of it, is proved by testimony or evident reason, we shall further attend unto it.

In the meantime, I cannot but rejoice that Cappellus' fancy about these things,—than which I know nothing more pernicious to the truth of God,—is rejected. If these hundreds of words were the critical conjectures and amendments of the Jews, what security have we of the mind of God as truly represented unto us, seeing that it is supposed also that some of the words in the margin were sometimes in the line? And if it be supposed, as it is, that there are innumerable
other places of the like nature standing in need of such amendments, what a door would be opened to curious, pragmatical wits to overturn all the certainty of the truth of the Scripture every one may see. Give once this liberty to the audacious curiosity of men priding themselves in their critical abilities, and we shall quickly find out what woful state and condition the truth of the Scripture will be brought unto. If the Jews have made such amendments and corrections of the text, and that to so good purpose, and if so much work of the like kind yet remain, can any man possibly better employ himself than with his utmost diligence to put his hand to this plough? But he that pulleth down a hedge, a serpent shall bite him.

CHAPTER VIII.

Of gathering various lections by the help of translations—The proper use and benefit of translations—Their new pretended use—The state of the originals on this new pretence—Of the remedy tendered to the relief of that state—No copies of old differing in the least from those we now enjoy, inferred from the testimony of our Saviour—No testimony, new or old, to that purpose—Requisites unto good translations—Of the translations in the Biblia Polyglotta—Of the Arabic—Of the Syriac—Of the Samaritan Pentateuch—Of the Chaldee Paraphrase—Of the Vulgar Latin—Of the Septuagint—The translations of the New Testament—Of the Persian—Of the Ethiopian—The value of these translations as to the work in hand—Of the supposition of gross corruption in the originals—Of various lections out of Grotius—Of the Appendix in general.

Because it is the judgment of some, that yet other objections may be raised against the thesis pleaded for, from what is afforded in the Prolegomena about gathering various lections by the help of translations, and the instances of that good work given us in the Appendix, I shall close this discourse with the consideration of that pretence.

The great and signal use of various translations, which hitherto we have esteemed them for, was the help afforded by them in explications of the Scripture. To have represented unto us in one view the several apprehensions and judgments of so many worthy and learned men as were the authors of these translations, upon the original words of the Scripture, is a signal help and advantage unto men inquiring into the mind and will of God in his word. That translations were of any other use formerly was not apprehended. They are of late presented unto us under another notion,—namely, as means and helps of correcting the original, and finding out the corruptions that are in our present copies, showing that the copies which their authors used did really differ from those which we now enjoy
and use! For this rare invention we are, as for the former, chiefly beholden to the learned and most diligent Cappellus; who is followed, as in sundry instances himself declares, by the no less learned Grotius. To this purpose the scene is thus laid: It is supposed [that] of old there were sundry copies of the Old Testament differing in many things, words, sentences, from those we now enjoy. Out of these copies some of the ancient translations have been made. In their translations they express the sense and meaning of the copies they made use of. Hence, by considering what they deliver, where they differ from our present copies, we may find out (that is, learned men, who are expert at conjectures, may do so) how they read in theirs. Thus may we come to a further discovery of the various corruptions that are crept into the Hebrew text, and by the help of those translations amend them. Thus Cappellus. The learned author of our Prolegomena handles this business, Proleg. 6. I do not remember that he anywhere expressly affirms that they had other copies than those we now enjoy; but whereas (besides the Keri and Ketib, the various readings of Ben Asher and Ben Naphtali, of the eastern and western Jews) there are, through the neglect, oscitancy, and frailty of the transcribers, many things befallen the text,—not such failings as, happening in one copy, may be easily rectified by others, which are not to be regarded as various lections, nor such as may be collected out of any ancient copies, but faults or mistakes in all the copies we enjoy, or that have ever been known,—by the help and use of translations, conjecturing how they read in their books, either with other words or letters, consonants or points, we may collect various lections as out of the original. What this opinion upon the matter differeth from that of Cappellus I see not, for the difference between our copies and those of old are by him assigned to no other original; nor doth Cappellus say that the Jews have voluntarily corrupted the text, but only that alterations are befallen it by the means and ways recounted in the Prolegomena. To make this evident by instances, we have a great number of such various lections, gathered by Grotius, in the Appendix. The truth is, how that volume should come under that name, at first view I much wondered. The greatest part of it gives us no various lections of the Hebrew text, as is pretended, but various interpretations of others from the Hebrew. But the Prolegomena solve that seeming difficulty. The particulars assigned as various lections are not different readings, collected out of any copies extant, or ever known to have been extant, but critical conjectures of his own for the amendment of the text, or at most conjectures upon the reading of the words by translators, especially the LXX. and Vulgar Latin.

Let us now consider our disease intimated, and the remedy pre-
scribed, together with the improbability of the one and the unsuit-
ableness of the other as to the removal of it, being once supposed.
The distemper pretended is dreadful, and such as may well prove
mortal to the sacred truth of the Scripture. The sum of it, as was
declared before, is, "That of old there were sundry copies extant, dif-
fering in many things from those we now enjoy, according to which
the ancient translations were made, whence it is come to pass that
in so many places they differ from our present Bibles, even all that
are extant in the world;" so Cappellus;—or, "That there are corrup-
tions befallen the text (varieties from the αὐτογραφά) that may be
found by the help of translations;" as our Prolegomena.

Now, whereas the first translation that ever was, as is pretended,
is that of the LXX., and that, of all others, excepting only those
which have been translated out of it, doth most vary and differ from
our Bible, as may be made good by some thousands of instances, we
cannot but be exceedingly uncertain in finding out wherein those
copies which, as it is said, were used by them, did differ from ours,
or wherein ours are corrupted, but are left unto endless uncertain
conjectures. What sense others may have of this distemper I know
not; for my own part, I am solicitous for the ark, or the sacred truth
of the original, and that because I am fully persuaded that the
remedy and relief of this evil provided in the translations is unfitted
to the cure, yea, fitted to increase the disease. Some other course,
then, must be taken; and seeing the remedy is notoriously insuffi-
cient to effect the cure, let us try whether the whole distemper be
not a mere fancy, and so do what in us lieth to prevent that horrible
and outrageous violence which will undoubtedly be offered to the
sacred Hebrew verity, if every learned mountebank may be allowed
to practise upon it with his conjectures from translations.

1. It is well known that the translation of the LXX., if it have
the original pretended, and which alone makes it considerable, was
made and finished three hundred years, or near thereabout, before
the incarnation of our Saviour. It was in that time and season
wherein the oracles of God were committed to the Jews, whilst that
church and people were the only people of God, accepted with him,
designed by him keepers of his word for the use of the whole church
of Christ to come, as the great and blessed foundation of truth,—a
time when there was an authentic copy of the whole Scripture, as
the rule of all others, kept in the temple. Now, can it be once ima-
gined that there should be at that time such notorious varieties in
the copies of the Scripture, through the negligence of that church,
and yet afterward neither our Saviour nor his apostles take the least
notice of it? Yea, doth not our Saviour himself affirm of the word
that then was among the Jews, that not ἔνοχα ἐν or μία κεφαλια of it
should pass away or perish? where, let not the points, but the consonants themselves with their apices, be intended or alluded unto in that expression: yet of that word, which was translated by the LXX., according to this hypothesis, and which assuredly they then had, if ever, not only tittles and letters, but words, and that many, are concluded to be lost. But that no Jew believes the figment we are in the consideration of, I could say, "Credat Apella."

2. Waiving the consideration of our refuge in these cases, namely, the good providence and care of God in the preservation of his word, let the authors of this insinuation prove the assertion, namely, that there was ever in the world any other copy of the Bible, differing in any one word from those that we now enjoy; let them produce one testimony, one author of credit, Jew or Christian, that can, or doth, or ever did, speak one word to this purpose; let them direct us to any relic, any monument, any kind of remembrancer of them,—and not put us off with weak conjectures upon the significacion of one or two words, and it shall be of weight with us. Is it meet that a matter of so huge importance, called into question by none but themselves, should be cast and determined by their conjectures? Do they think that men will part with the possession of truth upon so easy terms? that they will be cast from their inheritance by divination? But they will say, "Is it not evident that the old translators did make use of other copies, in that we see how they have translated many words and places, so as it was not possible they should have done had they rendered our copy according to what we now read?" But will this indeed be pleaded? May it not be extended to all places as well as to any? and may not men plead so for every variation made by the LXX. from the original, that they had other copies than any that now are extant? Better all old translations should be consumed out of the earth than that such a figment should be admitted. That there are innumerable other reasons to be assigned of the variations from the original,—as the translators' own inadvertency, negligence, ignorance (for the wisest see not all), desire to expound and clear the sense, and, as it was likely, of altering and varying many things from the original, with the innumerable corruptions and interpolations that have befallen that translation, indifferently well witnessed unto by the various lections exhibited in the Appendix,—it were easy to manifest. Seeing, then, that neither the care of God over his truth, nor the fidelity of the Judaical church whilst the oracles of God were committed thereunto, will permit us to entertain the least suspicion that there was ever in the world any copy of the Bible differing in the least from that which we enjoy, or that those we have are corrupted, as is pretended; and seeing that the authors of that insinuation cannot produce the least testimony to make it good,
\(\text{ωστετ εσμεν},\) through the mercy and goodness of God, in the entire, unquestionable possession of his oracles once committed to the Jews, and the faith therein once committed to the saints.

But now, to suppose that such indeed hath been the condition of the holy Bible in its originals as is pretended, let us consider whether any relief in this case be to be expected from the translations exhibited unto us, with much pains, care, and diligence, in these Biblia Polyglotta, and so at once determine that question, whether this be any part of the use of translations, be they ever so ancient, namely, to correct the originals by, leaving further discussion of sundry things in and about them to other exercitations.

That all or any translation may be esteemed useful for this purpose, I suppose without any contention it will be granted,—1. That we be certain concerning them that they are translated out of the originals themselves, and not out of the interpretations of them that went before them; for if that appear, all their authority as to the business inquired after falls to the ground, or is at best resolved into that former whence they are taken, if they are at agreement therewith; otherwise they are a thing of naught. And this one consideration will be found to lay hold of one moiety of these translations. 2. That they be of venerable antiquity, so as to be made when there were other copies of the original in the world besides that which we now enjoy. 3. That they be known to be made by men of ability and integrity, sound in the faith, and conscientiously careful not to add or detract from the originals they made the translation out of. If all these things at least concur not in a translation, it is most undeniably evident that it can be of no use to assist in the finding out what corruptions have befallen our copies, and what is the true lection of any place about which any differences do arise. Let us, then, as without any prejudice in ourselves, so without, I hope, any offence to others, very briefly consider the state and condition of the translations given us in the Biblia Polyglotta as to the qualifications here laid down.

Let us, then, take a view of some of the chiefest of them, without observing any order, seeing there is no more reason for that which is laid down in this Appendix than for any other that may be fixed on. I shall begin with the Arabic, for the honour I bear to the renownedly learned publisher\(^1\) of it and the various lections of the several copies thereof; and the rather because he hath dealt herein with his wonted candour, giving in a clear and learned account of the original and nature of that translation; which I had, for the sub-

---

\(^1\) Dr Edward Pococke, born 1604; rector of Childrey, Berkshire, in 1643; professor of Hebrew in Oxford; one of Walton's assistants in the preparation of the Polyglott, and one of the most accomplished scholars of his time.—Ed.
stance of it, received from him in a discourse before, wherein also he gave me a satisfactory account concerning some other translations, which I shall not need now to mention, though I shall only say his judgment in such things is to be esteemed at least equal with [that of] any now alive.

First, then, he tells us upon the matter that this translation is *a cento*, made up of many ill-suited pieces; there being no translation in that language extant. I speak of the Old Testament. 2. For the antiquity of the most ancient part of it, [it] was made about the year 4700 of the Jews’ account, that is, of Christ 950. 3. It was, as to the Pentateuch, translated by R. Saadias Haggaon. 4. That it is interpreted [interpolated?] and changed in sundry things by some other person. 5. That he who made these changes seemed to have so done that he might the better thereby διόνυσίου ὑποθέσεις, as to some particular opinion of his own; whereof sundry instances are given. 6. That he seems to have been a Mohammedan, or at least much to have favoured them, as appears from other evidences, so from the inscription of his work with that solemn motto, taken out of the Koran, “In nomine Dei miseratoris, misericordia.” 7. It may be thought, also, that some other, a Jew or a Samaritan, had his hand in corrupting the last translation, 8. who thought to stamp a divine authority upon his particular opinions. 9. That the foundation of this translation, now printed, being that of Saadias, it is observable that he professeth that he did both add and detract according as he thought meet, that so he might set out the hidden, cabalistical understanding of the Scripture. 10. That the other Arabic translations that are extant are out of the Septuagint, either immediately or by the Syriac, which was translated out of it. On these and the like heads doth that oracle of the eastern learning—who hath not only, as some, learned the words of some of those languages, but searched with great diligence and judgment into the nature of the learning extant in them, and the importance of the books we have—discourse in that preface. It is the way of sciolists, when they have obtained a little skill in any language or science, to persuade the world that all worth and wisdom lie therein: men thoroughly learned, and whose learning is regulated by a sound judgment, know that the true use of their abilities consists in the true suiting of men to a clear acquaintance with truth. In that kind, not only in this particular are we beholden to this worthy, learned person.

1. Pococke’s statement was, that this translation was not all made by one author, or directly from the Hebrew, but partly out of the Hebrew, partly out of the Syriac, and partly out of the Septuagint.—Ed.

2. It was of the translation of the Pentateuch by Saadias that Pococke had affirmed that it had been executed about A.D. 950. Owen seems to refer to the most ancient part of the *Old Testament*; Walton writes as if Owen had spoken of the most ancient part of the *translation*.—Ed.
I suppose there will not need much arguing to prove that this translation, though exceeding useful in its own place and kind, yet is not in the least a fit remedy to relieve us against any pretended corruption in the original, or to gather various lections different from our present copy by. Well may it exercise the ability of learned men to consider wherein and how often it goes off from the rule of faith; but rule in itself and upon its own account, coming short of all the necessary qualifications laid down before, it is none.

Should I now go to gather instances of the failings of this translation, open and gross, and so proceed with the rest, I think I might make a volume near as big as that of the various lections now afforded us; but I have another manner of account to give of my hours than so to spend them.

Whether the Syriac translation be any fitter for this use, any one who shall be pleased to consider and weigh it will easily discover. It seems, indeed, to have been made out of the original, at least for some part of it, or that the translation of the LXX. hath been in many things changed since this was made (which I rather suppose); but when,\(^1\) where, or by whom, doth not appear; nor doth it in many things seem to have any respect at all unto the Hebrew. The note at the close of the Prophets I suppose to proceed rather from the scribe of that individual copy than the translator; but that the reader may see what hands it hath passed through, he may take it as it is rendered by the learned author of the annotations on that translation: "Explicit Malachias sive libri xii. prophetarum, quorum oratio perpetuo nobis adsit, Amen; precibusque ipsorum, precibusque omnium sanctorum, sodalium ipsorum præsertim virginis, quæ Deum peperit, omnium sanctorum matris quæ pro genere Adami intercedit, propitius sit Deus lectori et scriptori peccatori, et omnibus sive verbo sive opere, ipsis participantibus." But this good conclusion is, as I suppose, from the scribe; the usual negligence of whom in his work is frequently taxed in the collection of various readings, as page 8, \textit{et alibi}.

Now, though I confess this translation to be very useful in many things, and to follow the original for the most part, yet being made as yet I know neither when nor by whom, in sundry places evidently following another corrupt translation, and having passed through the hands of men ignorant and suspicious, against whose frauds and folly, by reason of the paucity of copies, we have no relief, I

\(^1\) The reference is to the old Syriac or Peshito; a name derived from the Chaldee נָשִּׁיָּה, \textit{simple} or \textit{single}. Though Walton complained bitterly of the statement of Owen, yet the date of the version has been long matter of controversy among the learned, Michaelis ascribing to it high antiquity, Marsh questioning the conclusiveness of his arguments, and Laurence unsuccessfully attempting to refute the bishop. It is thought to belong to the end of the second or beginning of the third century.—Ed.
question whether it may be esteemed of any great use or importance as to the end inquired after.  

Of the Samaritan Pentateuch, both original and translation, we shall not need to add much. What the people from whom it hath its denomination was is known; nor have the inquiries of Scaliger and Morinus added any thing to what is vulgarly known of them from the Scripture and Josephus. In a word, an idolatrous, superstitious, wicked people they were, before they were subdued by Hystenus; afterward they continued in the separation from the true church of God; and, upon the testimony of our Saviour, had not salvation among them. When they received their Pentateuch is uncertain; it is uncertain also how long they kept it. That they corrupted it whilst they had it is not uncertain; they are charged to have done so by the Jews in the Talmud, and the instance they give abides to this day, Deut. xi. 30. They have added "Sichem" to the text, to give countenance to their abominations. And openly, in Deut. xxvii. 4, where God gives a command that an altar should be set up on mount Ebal, they have wickedly and nefariously corrupted the text, and put in Gerizim. Now, one such voluntary corruption, made on set purpose to countenance a sin and false worship, is enough to lay low the authority of any copy whatever. The copy here printed was brought out of the east, from Damascus, not long since. "It appears to have been two hundred and thirty years old," saith Morinus in the account of it, Opusc. Samar. Prefat. ad Translat. Samarit. As I said before, that any Samaritans do as yet remain is uncertain; some few Jews there are that walk in that way, here and there a few families. Now, that this Pentateuch, which was never as such committed to the church of God, that had its rise no man knows by whom, and that hath been preserved no man knows how, known by few, used by none of the ancient Christians, that hath been voluntarily corrupted by men of corrupt minds, to countenance them in their folly, should be of any authority, upon its own single account, to any end or purpose, especially to vie with the Hebrew text, men that have not some design that they publicly own not will scarce contend. The places instanced in by Morinus to prove its integrity above the Hebrew copy, as to the solution of difficulties by it, in Gen. xi. 29, 31, Exod. xii. 40, do evidently prove it corrupt. Any man that will consider them will find the alterations purposely made

1 A statement that must be qualified, Michaelis pronouncing it "the very best translation of the Greek Testament he ever read;" and Dr Davidson affirming, "It is far from being as accurate or as uniformly good as it might have been," but always to be "consulted as an important document in the criticism and interpretation of the New Testament." The testimony of the latter author as to the value of the Old Testament according to this version is equally decided: "In point of fidelity, it is the best of all the ancient versions."—Ed.

2 Morin. cap. i. exer. 4.
to avoid the difficulties in those places; which is one common evidence of corruption. In Gen. xi. 31, sixty years are cut off from the life of Terah, to make the chronology agree; and that of Exod. xii. 40, "The dwelling of the children of Israel and their fathers, when they dwelt in the land of Canaan and in the land of Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years," is a plain comment or exposition on the text. Nor would Jerome, who had this copy, make any use of it in these difficulties. Might I go over the rest of Morinus' instances, whereby he seeks to credit his Samaritan copy, which we have in these Biblia Polyglotta, I could manifest that there is scarce one of them but yields a clear argument of corruption in it, upon some of the best grounds that we have to judge of the sincerity or corruption of any copy. And if this Pentateuch had been of any credit of old, it would not have been omitted, yea, as it seems, utterly rejected as a thing of nought, by Origen, in his diligent collection of the original and versions.

But we are in a way and business wherein all things are carried to and fro by conjectures; and it were no hard task to manifest the utter uncertainty of what is fixed on as the original of this Pentateuch by the author of the Prolegomena, or to re-enforce those conjectures which he opposeth; but that is not my present work, nor do I know that ever it will be so. But I must for the present say, that I could have been glad that he had refrained the close of his discourse, sect. 2, wherein, from the occasional mention of the Samaritan Liturgy, and the pretended antiquity of it, he falls, not without some bitterness of spirit, on those who have laid aside the English Service-book. It were not (in the judgment of some) imprudently done, to reserve a triumph over the sectaries to some more considerable victory than any [that] is to be hoped [for] from the example of the Samaritans. Were they all barbers, and porters, and alehouse-keepers, yet they might easily discern that the example and precedent of a wicked people, forsaken of God, and forsaking of him, to whom the promise of the Spirit of supplications was never made, nor he bestowed upon them, is not cogent unto the people of Christ under the new testament, who have the promise made good unto them. And much more unto the same purpose will some of them be found to say, when men of wisdom and learning, who are able to instruct them, shall condescend personally so to do. But I shall forbear what might further be spoken.

The Chaldee Paraphrase is a cento also. The Targum of Jonathan

1 It is now beyond all question that Owen's estimate of the value of the Samaritan Pentateuch, for the purposes of critical emendation, was correct. Since the dissertation of Gesenius, "De Pentateuchi Samaritanii Origine," etc., "its credit in the critical world," says Dr Davidson, "has been greatly lowered, its position as an authority depreciated far below the rank which several eminent scholars once gave it."—Ed.
is ancient, so also is that of Onkelos; they are supposed to have been made before or about the time of our Saviour. Some of the Jews would have Jonathan to have lived not long after Ezra; others [say] that he was the chief disciple of Hillel, about a hundred years before Christ’s incarnation; some are otherwise minded, and will not own it to be much older than the Talmud: but as yet I see no grounds sufficient to overthrow the received opinion. The other parts of the Scripture were paraphrased at several times, some above five hundred years after our Saviour, and are full of Talmudical fancies, if not fables; as that on the Canticles. That all these Targums are of excellent use is confessed; and we are beholden to the Biblia Polyglotta for representing them in so handsome an order and place, that with great facility they may be compared with the original. But as to the end under consideration, how little advantage is from hence to be obtained, these few ensuing observations will evince:—1. It was never the aim of those paraphrasts to render the original text exactly _verbatim de verbo_, but to represent the sense of the text according as it appeared to their judgment. Hence it is impossible to give any true account how they read in any place wherein they dissent from our present copies, since their endeavour was to give us the sense as they thought, rather than the bare and naked importance of the words themselves. Hence Elias saith of them, דֶּחָנֵא לְךָ לְשׁוֹנָ לְּעַתְיָהּ לְרוֹאָי הַדָּבָר,—“Behold, the Targumists observed not sometimes the way of grammar.” 2. It is evident that all the Targums agreed to give us often mystical senses, especially the latter, and so were necessitated to go off from the letter of the text. 3. It is evident that they have often made additions of whole sentences to the Scripture, even the best of them, from their own apprehensions or corrupt traditions, whereof there is not one tittle or syllable in the Scripture, nor ever was. 4. What careful hands it hath passed through, the bulky collection of various lections given in this Appendix doth abundantly manifest. And seeing it hath not lain under any peculiar care and merciful providence of God, whether innumerable other faults and errors, not to be discovered by any variety of copies (as it is happened with the Septuagint), may not be got into it, who can tell? Of these and the like things we shall have a fuller account when the “Babylonia” of Buxtorf the father (promised some while since by the son to be published, Vindic. Veritat. Heb. p. 2, c. x. p. 337, and, as we are informed by the learned annotator on this Paraphrase, in his preface in the Appendix, lately sent to the publishers of this Bible) shall be put out. So that we have not as yet arrived at the remedy provided for the supposed distemper.

Of the Vulgar Latin, its uncertain original, its corruptions and
barbarisms, its abuse, so much hath been spoken, and by so many already, that it were to no purpose to repeat it over again. For my part, I esteem it much the best in the whole collection exhibited unto us, excepting the interlineary of Arias; but not to be compared to sundry modern translations, and very unfit to yield the relief sought after.

The Septuagint is that which must bear the weight of the whole. And good reason there is, indeed, that it should answer for the most of the rest, they being evidently taken out of it, and so they are oftentimes worse; yet they are now better than that is. But here again all things are exceedingly uncertain; nothing almost is manifest concerning it but that it is wofully corrupt. Its rise is uncertain. Some call the whole story of that translation into question as though there had never been any such persons in rerum natura. The circumstances that are reported about them and their works are certainly fabulous. That they should be sent for upon the advice of Demetrius Phalereus, who was dead before, that they should be put into seventy-two cells or private chambers, that there should be twelve of each tribe fit for that work, are all of them incredible.\(^1\) See Scal. ad Euseb. fol. 123; Wouwer Syntag. cap. xi.

Some of the Jews say that they made the translation out of a corrupt Chaldee paraphrase; and to me this seems not unlikely. Josephus, Austin, Philo, Jerome, Zonaras, affirm that they translated the Law or Pentateuch only. Josephus affirms this expressly:

\[\text{Ovide γαρ, saith he, πᾶσαι ἵκειν ἔφη λαβείν τὴν ἀναγραφὴν, ἀλλ' αὐτὰ μόνα τὰ τοῦ νόμου παρέδωκαν οἱ περαβίνες ἐπὶ τὴν ἐγγύσων, Proem. ad Antiquit. And this is a received opinion; whence we have the rest is unknown. Take to this purpose the ensuing chapter out of Drusius, Observat. lib. vi. cap. ix.:—}\n
"Vulgam translationem Græcam non esse LXX. interpretum, contra, quam olim existimatum fuit."

"Translatio ea quæ vulgo apud Græcos habetur, quin LXX. interpretum non sit, nemini hodie dubium esse arbitror nam si nihil aliud, innumerii in ea loci sunt, qui arguent magnum imperitiam sermonis Ebraici; sed et negligentiam singularem in legendo, et oscitantium tantis viris indignam qui in ea editione non videt, nihil videt; etsi Eusebius, Hieronymus passim in monumentis suis eam Septuaginta interpretabus attribue videtur. Nos quoque cum aliquid inde proferimus usitato magis quam vero nomine utitur, exemplo videlicet Hieronymi, quem suspicamus, licet crederet interpretationem eam a viris illis elaboratam minimeuisse, ne offenderet Græcos voluisse."

\(^1\) On this point the good sense of Owen had fairly the better of the learning of Walton, who believed and defended the whole fable of Aristeas in regard to the origin of the Septuagint: see Proleg. ix. 18.—Ed.

Let it be granted that such a translation was made, and that of the whole Bible, by some Alexandrian Jews, as is most probable, yet it is certain that the αὐτόγραφον of it, if left in the library of Alexandria, was consumed to ashes in Caesar's wars; though Chrysostom tells us that the Prophets were placed in the temple of Serapis: καὶ τῶν προφητῶν αἱ ἐρμηνευθέντων βιβλία μένουσιν, Ad Judæos; “and they abide there,” saith he, “unto this day.” How unlikely this is any man may guess, by what Jerome, who made another manner of inquiry after those things than Chrysostom, affirms concerning the inexactness of various copies of that translation wanting an umpire of their differences. We know also what little exactness men in those days, before the use of grammar, attained in the knowledge of languages in their relation to one another; and some learned men do much question even the skill of those interpreters. So Munster. Præfat. ad Biblia, “Videbat Hieronymus vir pius et doctus, Latinos vera et genuina legis atque prophetarum destitutos lectione, nam LXX. interpretum editio, quæ tunc ubique locorum receptissima erat apud Graecos et Latinos nedum perperam plerisque in locis versa fuit, verum per scriptores atque scribas plurimum corrupta, id quod et hodie facile patet conferenti editionem illam juxta Hebraicam veritatem, ut interim fatear illos non admodum peritosuisse linguæ Hebraicæ id vel quod invitati cogimur fateri, aliquin in plurimi locis non tam fæde lapsi fuissent.”

If, moreover, the ability be granted, what security have we of their principles and honesty? Cardinal Ximenes, in his preface to the edition of the Complutensian Bibles, tells us (that which is most true, if the translation we have be theirs) that on sundry accounts they took liberty in translating according to their own mind; and thence concludes, “Unde translatio Septuaginta duum, quandoque est superflua quandoque diminuta;”—“it is sometimes superfluous, sometimes wanting.” But suppose all these uncertainties might be overlooked, yet the intolerable corruptions that (as is on all hands confessed) have crept into the translation make it altogether useless as to the end we are inquiring after. This Jerome in his Epistle to Chromatius at large declares, and shows from thence the necessity of a new translation. Yea, Bellarmine himself says, that though he believes the translation of the LXX. to be still extant, yet it is so
corrupt and vitiated that it plainly appears to be another, lib. ii. De Verbo Dei, cap. vi.

He that shall read and consider what Jerome hath written of this translation, even then when he was excusing himself, and condescending to the utmost to waive the envy that was coming on him upon his new translation, in the second book of his Apology against Rufinus, cap. viii. ix., repeating and mollifying what he had spoken of it in another place, will be enabled in some measure to guess of what account it ought to be with us. In brief, he tells us it is corrupted, interpolated, mingled by Origen with that of Theodotion, marked with asterisks and obelisks; that there were so many copies of it, and they so varying, that no man knew what to follow (he tells us of a learned man who on that account interpreted all the errors he could light on for Scripture); that in the book of Job, take away what was added to it by Origen, or is marked by him, and little will be left. His discourse is too long to transcribe. See also his Epistle to Chromatius at large to this purpose. Let the reader also consult the learned Masius, in his preface to his most learned Comment on Joshua.

For the translations of the New Testament that are here afforded us, little need be spoken. Of the antiquity, usefulness, and means of bringing the Syriac into Europe, an account hath been given by many, and we willingly acquiesce in it. The Ethiopic and Persian are novel things, of little use or value; yea, I suppose it may safely be said they are the worst and most corrupt that are extant in the world. The Persian was not translated out of the Greek, as is confessed by the learned annotator upon it, "Præsens locus satis arguit, Persam Græcum codicem haud consuluisse," in Luc. x. et 41.

Yea, in how many things he goes off from the Greek, Syriac, Arabic, yea, goes directly contrary to the truth, is both acknowledged by its publisher and is manifest from the thing itself. I know no use of it but only to show that such a useless thing is in the world. Nor is the Ethiopian one whit better,—a novel endeavour of an illiterate person. He tells us that John, when he wrote the Revelation, was archbishop of Constantia, or Constantinople, etc. It is to no purpose to go over the like observations that might be made on these translations; if any man hath a mind to be led out of the way, he may do well to attend unto them. Whether some of them be in use now in the world I know not; I am sure it is well if they be not. Had I not seen them, I could not have imagined any had

1 "The criticism of the New Testament should discard all Persian versions as worthless," Dr Davidson, Bib. Crit. ii. 222. In regard to the Ethiopic, no great value is attached to it by modern critics, as there is great uncertainty about its origin, and its text has never been very correctly printed.—Ed.
been so bad. Would I make it my business to give instances of the mistakes, ignorance, falsifications, errors, and corruptions of these translators, whoever they were (Jews or Christians, for I am not without some ground of thinking that Jews have had their hands in them for money), my discourse, as I said before, would swell into a volume; and, unless necessitated, I shall avoid it.

From what hath been spoken, it may abundantly appear that if there are indeed such corruptions, mistakes, and errors, crept into the original, as some have pretended, there is no relief in the least provided for the security of truth by any of the translations exhibited unto us in these late editions of the Bible, themselves being of an uncertain original, corrupt, and indeed of no authority from themselves, but merely from their relation to that whose credit is called in question. For my own part, as I said before, I allow them their proper use and place, and am thankful to them by whose care and pains we are made partakers of them; but to endeavour by them to correct the Scripture,—to gather various lections out of the original, as say others,—for my part I abhor the thought of it; let others do as seems good unto them. And if ever I be necessitated to speak in particular of these translations, there are yet in readiness further discoveries to be made of them.¹

There remains only, as to my purpose in hand, that some brief account be taken of what is yet further insinuated of the liberty to observe various lections in the Bible, upon supposition of gross corruptions that may be crept into it; as also of the specimen of various lections gathered out of Grotius' Annotations; and somewhat of the whole bulk of them as presented unto us in the Appendix.

¹ On the important question of the value of ancient translations in criticism, it is right the modern reader should not be misled. That they are of value, not for the criticism, but the interpretation of the Scriptures, is the position of our author. It cannot be defended; and the language in which he objects to these versions is too unqualified, although on some points his objections were not destitute of weight, and have been confirmed by subsequent inquiries. On this subject,—the use of versions in criticism,—we may cite the opinion of the most recent authority, Dr Davidson, in his valuable work on Biblical Criticism. Speaking of the principal versions of the Old Testament,—the Septuagint, the fragments of the other Greek translators, the Peshito or old Syriac, the Latin of Jerome, the Targums of Jonathan and Onkelos, and the Arabic of Saadias Haggian,—he remarks, in regard to the supposition that they exhibit the text prior to all existing manuscripts, "They do without doubt render this important service partially. Their use in the criticism of the Old Testament is great. We have no other aids of equal value, provided they be rightly applied. Yet they do not give an exact and complete view of the original text, as it was at the time of their origin. They do not yield that important service to sacred literature which they might have done."

On the subject of New Testament versions he observes, "No benefit has accrued from extending the range of investigation in this quarter. Rather has there been disadvantage. . . . The Arabic versions of the New Testament ought to be neglected. They are useless. The same may be said of the Persian." The versions which he regards as sources of criticism are the Syriac, Latin, Egyptian, Ethiopic, and Gothic.—Ed.
For the corruptions supposed, I could heartily wish that learned
men would abstain from such insinuations, unless they are able to
give them some pretence by instances. It is not spoken of this or
that copy, which, by the error of the scribes or printers, may have im-
portant mistakes found in it. There is no need of men's critical
abilities to rectify such mistakes; other copies are at hand for their
relief. It is of the text, without such suppositions, that this insinu-
ation is made. Now, to cast scruples into the minds of men about
the integrity and sincerity of that, without sufficient ground or war-
rant, is surely not allowable. It is not good to deal so with men or
their writings, much less with the word of God. Should any man
write that in case of such a man's theft or murder, who is a man of
unsotted reputation, it were good to take such or such a course with
him, and publish it to the world, would their stirring of such rumours
be looked on as an honest, Christian, and candid course of proceed-
ing? And is it safe to deal so with the Scripture? I speak of Pro-
testants. For Papists, who are grown bold in the opposition to the
originals of the Scripture, I must needs say that I look upon them
as effectually managing a design of Satan to draw men into atheism;
nor, in particular, do I account Morinus' Exercitations one whit
better. It is readily acknowledged that there are many difficult
places in the Scripture, especially in the historical books of the Old
Testament. Some of them have by some been looked at as ἀλωρα.
The industry of learned men of old, and of late Jews and Christians,
has been well exercised in the interpretation and reconciliation of
them: by one or other a fair and probable account is given of them
all. Where we cannot reach the utmost depth of truth, it hath been
thought meet that poor worms should captivate their understandings
to the truth and authority of God in his word. If there be this
liberty once given, that they may be looked on as corruptions, and
amended at the pleasure of men, how we shall be able to stay before
we come to the bottom of questioning the whole Scripture I know
not. That, then, which yet we insist upon is, that according to all
rules of equal procedure, men are to prove such corruptions before
they entertain us with their provision of means for remedy.

For the specimen of various lections gathered out of Grotius' Anno-
tations, I shall not much concern myself therein; they are nothing
less than various lections of that learned man's own observations.
Set aside, 1. The various lections of the Septuagint, [of the] Vulgar
Latin, [and] of Symmachus, Aquila, and Theodotion, wherein we are
not concerned; 2. The Keri and Ketib, which we have oftentimes
over and over in this volume; 3. The various readings of the oriental
and occidental Jews, which we have also elsewhere; 4. Conjectures
how the Septuagint and Vulgar Latin read, by altering letters only;
5. Conjectures of his own how the text may be mended,—and a very little room will take up what remains. By that cursory view I have taken of them, I see not one word that can pretend to be a various lection, unless it belong to the Keri and Ketib, or the difference between the oriental and the occidental Jews: so that, as I said before, as to my present design, I am not at all concerned in that collection; those that are may further consider it.

As short an account will serve for the general consideration of the whole bulky collection of various lections that we have here presented unto us. For those of the several translations, we are not at all concerned in them; where any or all of them fail or are corrupted, we have a rule, blessed be God, preserved to rectify them by. For those of the originals, I have spoken to them in particular. I shall only add, that we have some of them, both from the Old and New Testament, given us thrice over at least; many of the Keri and Ketib, after a double service done by them, are given us again the third time by Grotius; so also are those of the New Testament by the same Grotius and Lucas Brugensis.
PRO SACRIS SCRIPTURIS

ADVERSUS HUJUS TEMPORIS FANATICOS

EXERCITATIONES APologeticæ QUATUOR.

OXONII: 1658.
The following dissertations seem to have been prepared and printed in 1659, though published along with the two preceding treatises in 1658, though Owen was anxious to prevent the spread of Quakerism in the University of Oxford; and, as addressed to the members and students of that university, the dissertations were written in Latin. Walton, in his reply to our author's "Considerations" on the London Polyglott, took occasion to insinuate that the reason why the other two treatises had appeared in English was, that an odium might be excited against the Polyglott on points on which he and Owen were at issue, and on which the common people could not be fit judges. The allegation seems groundless. Meek and self-denied as the Friends are generally accounted, they resented keenly the weighty reasonings of Owen; and one of their number, Samuel Fisher, replied to him in "The Rustic's Alarm to the Rabbits,"—a publication overflowing in its very title-page with arrogance and self-conceit. It will be found that the reasonings of our author on the dogmas of the Quakers are by no means antiquated; and perhaps it would be difficult to specify a clearer statement and more effective refutation of them.

ANALYSIS.

I. The first dissertation relates to the question, whether sacred Scripture actually is, and may be properly termed, The Word of God.

Two points are involved in this question,—the character and the name of Scripture. In regard to the former, our author contented himself with asserting the divine origin of Scripture, in opposition to infidels of every class; and proceeds, in opposition more especially to the tenets of the Society of Friends, to vindicate the propriety with which Scripture is commonly styled "The Word of God." They are represented as holding that Christ is called the Word, and that, as Scripture is neither Christ nor internal light from Christ, it cannot, in strict and accurate language, bear this designation.

The threefold meaning of Ἰησοῦς Χριστός is first considered, as ἱστορικός, ἴδιος, and ἴδιος, the first relating to Christ personally, the second to the exercise and manifestation of the divine power, and the third to Scripture as expressive of the divine will. Various errors respecting the Ιησοῦς are traced to the desire of the early Christian apologists to recommend the Christian system to their heathen persecutors, on the ground that analogous doctrines were sometimes broached in the writings of heathen philosophers. Instances and proofs are supplied, and the Ιησοῦς Χριστός is carefully discriminated from the Platonic Nous.

It is shown that Scripture is the Word of God,—1. Because it derives its origin from him; 2. Because it contains the revelation of his will; and 3. Because, in regard to its very words, it is of plenary inspiration.

The following objections encounter a brief but conclusive refutation:—1. "Because Christ is the Word, the Scripture cannot be the Word." The whole strength of the objection is resolved into a quibbling play on the term under discussion, as if Christ and Scripture could not both be the Word of God, though in different senses and respects.

2. "Sacred Scripture never asserts that it is the Word;"—a statement proved to be utterly incorrect. 3. "The Word was before Scripture; therefore the Scripture is not the Word of God." It is replied, that although God spoke before any utterance that came from him was committed to writing, it does not when written cease to be the Word of God. 4. "The Word of God cannot be learned from books, for it is from God himself;"—an assertion resolved by our author into falsehood and blasphemy. 5. "The Word dwells in us, Rom. x. 8, Col. iii. 16, and cannot, therefore, be Scripture." It is replied, that the word of faith is meant; that it is nigh to us, not in respect of the written letter, but of the divine truth contained in it; and that it dwells in us not formally, but in point of effect.

II. The second dissertation is on the Interpretation of Scripture.

After a denial and refutation of the claim of the Romish church to infallibility, the right of private Christians to expound and exhort is declared to be consistent with the authority of the ministerial office. This question is not directly involved in the dispute with the Quakers, as they reject all interpretation of Scripture, and substitute in its stead new revelations; but it is considered by our author in passing, as it relates to the sources of interpretation.

To private Christians, not intending to fill the office of the ministry, he conceals a liberty of exposition and exhortation, provided it be done decently and in order; and he reasons in support of this opinion,—1. From the spiritual gifts bestowed for the pur-
Prefatory Note.

1. The design of church-communion; 2. The injunctions of Scripture; 4. The practice of the early church; 5. Christian experience and brotherly love; 6. The example of saints in the Old and New Testaments; and, 7. The liberty wherewith Christ has made his people free.

To other Christians, not actually invested with office, or ordained, but aiming to be so, he allows a right of preaching the gospel, interpreting Scripture, and addressing meetings; against which right, he affirms, no valid plea can be urged, either from the nature of the exercise, or any special circumstances connected with it, or any express prohibition in Scripture.

The notion of the Quakers, that there is no need for any public interpretation of Scripture, on the ground that all are inspired and possess the inward light, is refuted by a series of considerations:—The lawfulness of expounding to others what we deem to be the meaning of Scripture; the necessity for such a practice; the appointment by Christ of pastors and teachers in the church; the testimony of Scripture; the example of Christ; the custom of all the saints; and the continued necessity for the interpretation of Scripture, from the difficulties which it is admitted to contain, and to which reference is made even by Scripture itself, 2 Pet. iii. 16.

A few objections are briefly met and repelled;—such as, that inspiration is needed to interpret inspiration; that interpretation is of no practical benefit; and that there is the utmost variety of opinion in the interpretations that are given of Scripture.

III. On the perfection of Scripture, Jews, Papists, and Quakers, whatever other points of difference obtain among them, are described as united, like the foxes of Samson, with firebrands between their tails, to ravage the fields of the church, by impugning the perfection of the divine word, including the Jews and Papists in the hands of not a few able writers, our author proceeds to deal with the Quakers. The following is a digest of the propositions which he affirms and defends:—That all truths necessary for salvation are contained in Scripture, by direct affirmation or plain implication; that there is no need of tradition or new revelations; that it is presumption to advance as worthy of divine faith what is not in Scripture; that new revelations if opposed to Scripture are blasphemy, if different from it useless; that the dogma of internal light is a fiction; and that Scripture is a perfect rule of faith and life, to which nothing can be added, and from which nothing must be taken. In a summary of the views of his opponents, he argues that they, on the contrary, despoil Holy Writ of all use, authority, and perfection.

These positions are supported, 1. by an appeal to Scripture; and under this head are cited (1.) passages asserting the perfection of the Word, (2.) prohibitions against all additions to it, (3.) references to the practice of the apostles, and (4.) passages in which the Scriptures are commended to us for all the purposes of religion; and, 2. by considerations founded on reason. It is argued that (1.) if Scripture be perfect, (2.) sufficient for salvation, and (3.) such that no additions must be made to it, (4.) if we are never directed in it to any inward light, (5.) if we are to take heed to it that we may be on our guard against deceiving spirits, (6.) if we are to try all doctrines and spirits by the test of Scripture, (7.) if there is a constant duality attending all enthusiastic sentiments, (8.) if errors are constantly broached by enthusiasts and fanatics, and (9.) if their conduct be often immoral and vicious, the internal light for which Quakers contend must be either unnecessary, or, however real, must be very useless. The following arguments of the Quakers are answered:—1. That their own inward light is identical with the inspiration of Scripture, and therefore of co-ordinate authority with it. 2. That there is a promise of the Spirit to lead into all truth. 3. That Scripture can be of no use after a soul is brought to Christ. 4. That several passages of the Word confirm their tenets. 2 Cor. iii. 6; Isa. liv. 13; Jer. xxxi. 33, 34; Luke xvii. 21.

IV. On the subject of the Internal Light, various distinctions in regard to the word "light" are first specified; the condition of man is exhibited as by nature sunk in darkness, and it is proved that saving light belongs only to the elect. Quakers affirm that the light of nature is from Christ, is enjoyed by all, and is sufficient for salvation, without the enlightenment of the Spirit or the teaching of Scripture.

In refutation of this view, five propositions are advanced and defended by our author:—1. The light of nature is not from Christ as mediator, much less is it Christ himself. 2. It is not of saving efficacy. 3. It is not sufficient for salvation, either subjectively, so that any one can spiritually discern what things are revealed from another source as necessary for our salvation; or objectively, as comprehending a disclosure of these necessary truths themselves. 4. Saving light is not imparted to all men. And, 5. No internal light can supersede the will of God as revealed in Scripture. This dissertation is closed by a notice of the perverted interpretation to which his opponents resorted on some passages, such as John i. 9, Rom. ii. 14, 15; and he replies to them by a sounder and more consistent exposition.—Ed.
AD LECTOREM ADMONITIO.

Quas hie conspicis pagellae, lector erudite, theologicarum quarundam questionum determinationes, quas vocant, tibi exhibent. Quid eas ad disputationum privatarum usum, tumultuarie pene conscriptas, seorsum a reliquis ejusdem generis lacinias, in lucem protulerit, paucis accipias velim. De auctoritate atque integritate sacrarum Scripturarum tractatus binos, lingua vernacula, emittens, quorum occasiones ac rationem omnem alibi fusius exposui, disputationes hase, quibus cum illis arctissimum est materie consortium, et quae quod reliquum est circa verbum divinum controversiarum paucis absolvant, quamvis sermone ab iis disjunctas, unà in medium producendas censui. Utrum ob doctrinae consortium, aut lingue dissidium, illorum tractatum pars aliqua, aut alius ipsa tractatulus scripturaricula hæc habeat, penes lectorum arbitrium esto. Fanatici sunt, errores et stultitia hisce diebus notissimi, quos inprimis hic aggredimur. Nemo autem post homines natos, æque ac ego delirasse censendus esset, si ipsos scriptis hisce redarguere statuerim, cum nihilò plus sermonem illum quo hic utinum intelligant, quàm nos aliquidias inconditum illum verborum somnum omnì sano sensu vacuum, quo ipsi non tantum omnibus aliis, sed et ipsi sibi in dicendo obstrepere videntur, mente percipere possimus. Juniorum instructioni (erunt enim forsan qui opellam banc nostram insipient) quibus, in sacrarum literarum studium ingenii acumen ómò intendentibus, passim hæc corvos sequi testaque lutoque nec animus est nec otium, specimen hoc novi fanaticismi refutati, qui éius ἐνοχῶν comitatus nullìbi non grassatur, dicatum est. Puteum, ni fallar, seu abyssum potius errorum omnium, non tantum quorum in culpa cubantes deprendentibus fanaticos, sed et eorum etiam quibus pene nullos non inquinat aut fascinat Romana meretrix, luce retectum et veritate obturatum iterum, paucis ostendimus. Destructa autem istà impietatis omnis et ὕποκλινον arec, quam in Scripturarum contemptum moluntur improbi homucciones, tam in proclivi est ut cadat tota errorum propago, quàm imber est quando pluit. Quæ hic eo animo in honorem verbi Déi scripta invenies, tu lector, sine gratia, odio aut partium studio, perpender atque judicia.
PRO SACRIS SCRIPTURIS, ETC.

QUESTIO I.

An sacra Scriptura sit ac vere dicatur verbum Dei?

Sectio 1. Quaestionis hujus duas esse partes constat, quorum una rem ipsam, nomen proprium Scripturarum altera ponit. Eam sub hisce terminis proposimus, ut largior inde patet disputebdi campus, dum in utramvis partem opponentes incurrire licuerit. Primam autem quaestionis partem duplicem iterum respectum induere posse palam est, nempe prout Scripturam respicit vel in esse reali, ut loquuntur, aut etiam in esse cognoscibili; nimirum Scripturam esse verbum Dei contra Atheos, Paganos, et—Novum Testamentum quod attinet—Judæos etiam, asserentes, unâ, eam spirituali sua luce, quam a solo authore suo mutuat, se Dei verbum esse infallibiliter demonstrare, contra Pontificios, affirmamus: Fanaticos nostrates, qui a tremore quo se in sacris agitari ipsi sibi fingunt, aut reapse vi mali spiritus agitantur, vulgo Trepidantes seu Quakers vocantur, respicit quaestionis pars posterior, qua est de Scripturâ nomine proprio.

Sect. 2. De primâ quaestionis parte innumera extant virorum doctissimorum scripta, quibus veritatem, quam astruendam hâc disputatiane duximus, et dilucide exposuerint, atque adversus insultus Atheorum ex unâ parte, Pontificiorum ex alterâ, ita muniverint, ut omnino nihil opus sit ea hâc repetere, quae aliunde nullo negotio peti possunt; hoc tantùm addam, inter omnes quotquot sunt ubivis theologos, qui causam hanc Dei atque verbi ipsius contra Pontificios defendendam susceperunt, vix quenquam inveniri, qui cum Whitakero nostro comparandus sit, nemum ci preferendus; de parte ideo quaestionis posteriori, seu de nomine Scripturâ proprio, contra fanaticos nostrates impæsentiarum mihi agendum esse duxi.

Sect. 3. Etenim, huic hominum generi cùm non satis esset iisium congredi et sociari, qui præteritis saeculis convicia sacris Scripturis intentârunt, atque omnia in illas injecta opprobria suo calculo approbare; cùm hoc solum sibi reliquum fecisse aliorum ingeniosam nequïtiam observaret, ut in discernmen nominis, unde omnis earum dependet auctoritas, illas adduceeret; hujus rei conficiendae curam sibi
a Satana delatum gaudet, nimirum ut titulo illo glorioso, verbo Dei, illas spoliaret. Jam verò, uti semper antiquo generis humani hosti pernicioso sua molimina colore aliquo seu fuco illinere pro more fuit, ita, quo plus veneni et malitiae ulli eorum inesse noverit, eo gloriosiori tegumento inuocatum obtrudere satagit. Exemplo sit is quem jam perpendicularis error, seu furor potius dicendus sit; ut nihil pæne unquam perniciosius exoccitaverit, nec quod praesentius venenum ecclesiae Christi propinarit; ita nuncum fallaciori praetextu ad animas rudium et aëráriæ illaqueandas usus est; hic vero qualis sit videamus. "Nomen verbi Dei," inquit fanatici, "solii Christo competit; ideoque titulum illum Scripturae conferre nobis est religio. Nonne enim qui decet Scripturae honorem habere possimus, nisi suum Christo honorem derogemus? Num Scriptura Christus? nam litera Spiritus? hoc nomen Christi, 'Verbum Dei.' Scriptura suā sorte ac nomine contenta abeat."

Sect. 4. Atqui hæc omnia merus fucus sunt, praestigiœ ac fraudes; si enim reverentia Christi ducti, si vario usu et homonymiæ vocis τῶν λόγων decepti, auctoritatem, necessitatem, et perfectionem suam sacrae Scripturae relinquentes, de solo nomine litem moverent niserni homunciones, misericordiæ saltem, si non veniä digni viderentur. Sed alia omnino res est; non enim tantum Scripturas omni suâ auctoritate spoliare, easque loco suo movere, sed et ipsum Christum personalitate suā atque divinâ existentia exuere, hoc unico stratagemate intendunt et conantur.

Sect. 5. Cùm enim multa de verbo Dei dicantur, quæ propriæ et directe personæ Christi ἴδια φῶς non conveniunt, figmentum horrendum, Christum quendam imaginarium, qui lumen sit internum omnibus commune, et nescio quod τὸ πᾶν spirituale, hoc est vere nihil, comminiscentur; quoniam autem millies fere mentio facta est verbi Dei, atque prædicationis, promulgationis, et receptionis ejusdem, iis in locis, qui quo minus de personâ Christi intelligantur innumerâ sunt quæ obstant; neque in iis Scripturam intendi agnoscere velint; nescio quod inde verbum internum, cujus jam in solidum sunt ipsi possessores, et illorum qui illud antea inclusum tenuerunt hæredes ex asse, exsculpunt atque extorquunt.

Sect. 6. De fictitio isto, sive lumen sive verbo interno, et Christo imaginario postea nobis suo ordine sigillatim agendum est; jam quæ sit horum hominem de Scripturâ sententia, et quibus rationibus eam defendere satagunt accurate perpendamus; ea verò sic se habet.

Sect. 7. Scripturam, inquint, sacram revelationem quandam voluntatis divinæ continere, eatenus a Deo prefectam, quatenus ab internō illo lumine, quod ex Christo in iis fuit qui libris istos scriberint, quos scripturas nuncupatis, processit, profitemur. Caeterum lumen illud omnibus æque inesse mortalibus; ita ut qui e attendere
velint, voluntatem Dei eadem auctoritate et infallibilitate declarare possint, quibus in ipsa sacra Scriptura declaratur. Vera ita, inquit, sunt omnia, et certa, quae in libris istis continentur, deque Deo et ejus voluntate enarrantur; et vera itidem sunt et certa, codem genere certitudinis et veritatis, quae a lumine illo interno proficiscuntur in iis qui ad illud attendunt. Ita liber iste scriptus, cum neque sit Christus, neque lumen illud internum, nullo modo est verbum Dei.

Sect. 8. Apparet ideo hosce homines οὕμων μὴ vocis τοῦ λόγου, seu verbi, se atque alios ludere ac decipere; de eā igitur primo agendum est.

Sect. 9. Nonnullos ex antiquis, quos vocant, patribus, in schola Platonis eductos, et in ejus philosophia versatos, quà multa speciosa et plane admiranda per tō τοῦ λόγου disseruntur, ambiguitate istius verbi fuisse deficientes, non nunc primum observatum est. Hinc Justinus palam affirmat, Christum esse λόγον, ὥσπερ τὸ γίνος ἀνθρώπων οὕμων, se quod rationem ejus est participes omne humanum genus; quod sane non multum abludit a fanaticorum sententia, de lumine interno omnibus communi, quod vel sit Christus, vel immediate a Christo, de quo posthac nonnulla nobis dicenda sunt. Eos etiam qui μετὰ λόγον, hoc est secundum rectam rationem vitam egerunt, inter Ethnicos, Christi participes fuisse, atque vitam æternam obtinuissent, idem Justinus fidenter asserit; nempe quia Christus λόγος.


Sect. 11. Ut igitur hoc latibulum, quo perpetuō sibi de refugio prospiciunt fanatici, ab iis abripiamus, variae vocis hujus in Scripturis Sacris significationes præmittenda sunt.

Sect. 12. Λόγος itaque τοῦ Θεοῦ triplex est,—υποστατικός, ἐνδιάθετος, προφορικός.

Sect. 13. Λόγος υποστατικός, qui et οὐσιώδης et ἐνυπόστατος, est ipse Christus: Καλεῖται τὸ ἄνωμα αὐτῶν ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ, Αποκ. xix.13; Καὶ ὁ λόγος ἦν τρις τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ Θεὸς ἦν ὁ λόγος, Joh. i. 1; Καὶ ὁ λόγος σάρξ.
De aliis testimoniis quæ in hunc sententiam adduci solent,—viz. Ps. xxxiiii. 6; Hag. ii. 5; Luc. i. 2; 2 Pet. i. 16; Act. xx. 32; Heb. iv. 12,—nihil certi habeo quod statuerim. Christum itaque verbum esse, λόγον, verbum quod Deus sit, quodque ei nomen sit verbum Dei, libentissime agnoscamus; neque super eâ re ulla nobis cum adversariis intercedere controversia. At quod sensu dicitur Christus verbum Dei, seu quale verbum sit, nullatenus inter nos convenit, prout, Deo volente, in sequentibus videbimus.


Sect. 15. Cum nos quod statutum deliberatumque in animo habeamus, per instrumenta quæ in nostrâ sita sunt potestate exsequi volumus, verbo oris, seu mandate, quo ea ad agendum impellimus, utimur; Deus optimus maximus ad captum nostrum res divinas attempetam, et volens ostendere quà facilitate consilia voluntatis, per omnipotentiam suam exsequitur, sive mediis ullis quæ in ejus sita sunt potestate uti velit, sive immediate potentiam suam exserere ei plauserit, istius potentiae egressum actualum seu exercitium efficax, nomine verbi sui, seu vocis, indicitat: "Ipso dicente est, quicquid est; ipso præcipiente existit," Ps. xxxiii. 9. Cæterùm verbum Dei hoc sensu intellectum aut non intelligent, aut non agnoscent quibuscum nobis est; neque hactenus, quod sciam, hac ex parte ullius criminius postulamur.

Sect. 16. Quoniam autem vocis hujus, τοῦ λόγου scilicet, homonymia, veterum nonnullis ita imposuerit, ut graviter super ea re hallucinati sint, erroris eorum fontem et occasiinem paucis detegere non abs re fore judicamus. Ea verò res ita se habet. Quo vel ex professò apologias pro Christianis instituente, ut Justinus Martyr, Athenæ-
dolent, argumenta inter syrius, aut quin nentiir insinuantem protulerunt, libris vel mali fidei. Theodoretus, Sect. 17. Per instantias agamus. Satis decantata est Platonico- rum theoria, nempe to autogonon, o noos o demouergos, h tov klesou ψυχη. De eis vero ita Theodoretus, sermone secundo Ευλημμων παθηματων θεραπευτικης. Concesserunt, inquit, ιτερφερων και ατίδια, τον άγαθον, και νοον, και παις την ψυχην. Additque, "Ον μην ημεις σατιρα καλωμεν, τον άγαθον οναμαλισται, νοον δε, δε ημεις νοον και λογον προσωποειμεν; quasi sc. doctrina Trinitatis ex solo nature lumine Gentilibus imnotuisset, quod falsissimum. Irenaco etiam impingunt Centuriatores Magdeburgenses, Cent. ii. Col. 227, quod ita obscure et perplexae non raro vocabulo "verbi," seu τοι λογον utatur, ut videatur non perspicue inter "verbum substantiale" et "verbum vocale seu oris" distinguere; a quo crimen utrum sufficienter vindicetur a Feuardentio, qui ob hanc rem convitiss in Centuriatores debacchatur, judicent aequi rerum aestimatores. Quid vero Platonicici per noo, et τοι παις ψυχην intelligebant, clare et ornate ex eorum scriptis exponit poetarum doctissimus, vi. Aeneidos, v. 724–733:—

"Principio coelum, ac terras, camposque liquidantes,
Laeuentemque globum Luno, Titaniaeque astra
Spirtitus intus alit, totamque infusa per artus
Mens agitat molem, et magno se corpore miscet.
Inde hineunum, pseudumque genus, vitaeque volantum,
Et que marmoreo fert monstra sub æquore pontus.
Ignis est ollis vigor, et coelestis origo
Seminius; quantum non noxia corpora tardant,
Terrenique hebetant artus, moribundaque membra.
Hinc metuunt, cupiuntque; dolent, gaudentque;"—

Hae ille; digna sc. quae Dei Filio unigenito ascriberentur. Vulgus autem Christianorum dogma Trinitatis, verbis Scripturae sacrae magis consentaneis, neque fragmentis philosophorum interpolatum

Sect. 19. At alia est ea ratio, quam in mundi conditu Deus adhibuit, a λόγῳ, per quem omnia sunt condita. Platonem autem per λόγον istum, ideam quandam in mente divinâ, mundi quasi exemplar intelleixisse constat; ut recte Thomas P. P. Q. 32, a. 3, c.


Sect. 21. Λόγος ideo Θεοῦ έσωμάτις, omni adhibita accuratio, distinguendus est non tantum a Platonicorum νῦν λόγῳ, τού παντός θυγατήρι, Θεῷ άσώματι, vi naturarum ingente, mente cuncta animante, ideâ, atque rerum omnium exemplari, sed et a λόγῳ isto ένδιάθετω, de quo nonnulla jam diximus. Hic vero, nempe ένδιάθετος, diligentem admodum a Maimonide, More Nevochim, seu Duce Dubitantium, pa. I, cap. xxiii., describitur. "Quicquid," inquit, "a Deo creator, id attribuitur verbo ejus, ut 'verbo Domini coeli creati sunt;' similitudine desumptâ ab operibus regum terrenorum, quorum instrumenta in perficiendâ et exsequendâ suâ voluntate sunt verba ipsorum;" de loco vero isto, nempe Ps. xxxiii. 6, ego plane dubito annon de Dei verbo æterno interpretandus sit; rem ipsam autem quod attinet, explicationem admitto. Deinde cap. lxv. ostendit verba ἃνυ καὶ χρή, quæ synonyma sunt, homonymice usurpatis, atque de verbo externo, internâ cogitatione, atque mente, et voluntate dici.

Sect. 22. Multis quidem argumentis, acerrime contendit Jos. Pla-
cæus, Disputationibus de Christi Deitate, argumento 21, per verbum illud toties in creatione repetitum, "dixit Deus," aeternum λόγον, Dei Filium intelligi; atque ille quidem accurate disputat, ut quid in contrarium opponat haud facile inventurus sit adversarius. Restat autem adhuc mihi scrupulus unicus; cum enim per totum primum caput Genesecos, ὅμως ὑβίσκων, ubivis Elohim dicatur, atque illud nomen tres personas formaliter exprimere orthodoxi omnes consentiant, qui fieri potest, ut τῶν Elohim verbum sit ὁ λόγος, cum non sit sui ipsius verbum aut sermo? Ubicunque autem verbum Jehovæ seu Dei dicitur, vox Dei υποστασιῶς sumitur, atque personam Patris denotat, quo modo vox ista Elohim sumi non posse videtur.

Sect. 23. Male ideo Grotius in Annotationibus ad cap. 1. Johannis usum vocis τοῦ λόγου ad verba ea Mosis, "Dixit Deus, Esto lux, et fuit," retulit, quom ea plane de λόγῳ ἐνδιάβιτο prolata fuerint, prout etiam a Maimonide expunxerat, cui iste lectorem remittit. Male etiam in eundem sensum ea quæ occurrunt apud Chaldaæum paradfrasiam potestatem Dei per verbum ejus expressit, adducit; pessime eundem λόγον Platonicos atque Philonem intendisse contendit; atque in eum sensum nonnulla a veteribus periculose effata profert. Quale illud est Gregorii Neo-Cesariensis: Λόγος, inquit, ἵστε δύναμις τῆς ὁλῆς κτίσεως τοιητική, Platonice satis; cum non sit δύναμις, seu attributionem divinam, sed ὑπόστασιν infinitâ δυναμεὶς instructus. Atque ita ille quidem omnia confundit, ut quid sibi velit, atque utrum Platonicus fuerit, aut Socinianus aut Christianus in ejus loci explicatione, haud facile sit intelligere. Sed de his pro nostro instituto plus satis.

Sect. 24. Λόγος προφορικὸς is est de quo sensibus cum adversariis non concurritus. Eum vero esse Scriptionam sacram, seu verbum Dei scriptum, non quatenus scriptum, sed quamvis scriptum, credimus et profitemur.

Sect. 25. Id, quo animi nostri sensum et voluntatis nostre proposita aliis declaramus, esse verbum nostrum, cùm vere verbum sit, symbolum et index conceptuum mentis, nemo, opinor, negabit. Quinid etiam declarationem mentis et voluntatis divinæ, quà quicquid a nobis fieri, vel de se cognosci velit, Deus notum facit, ejus verbum dixi debere concedamus? fatemur utique Deum voluntatem suam, vivâ voce, antequam ullam verbum scriptum erat, declarasse; et certe quando immediate Deus locutus est, id quod locutus est ejus verbum erat: anne verò id perdidit illud suum esse verbum Dei, quod locutus est, quia ex ejus mandato scriptum est? Neque sane dicimus declarationem hanc quam habemus in Scripturis voluntatis Dei, verbum ejus esse, quia scriptum est; sed verbum Dei ex ipsius mandato jam scriptum esse contendimus.

Sect. 26. Quo minus ideo, inanibus logomachis (quibus supra modum sibi placent fanatici, quando importunā loquacitate molestos se vol. XVI.
præbere in animo habent) detineamur, quo sensu Scriptura sacra sit verbum Dei, atque ita dici debeat, paucis expediamus.

Sect. 27. Primò, ideo, respectu orátus, hoc nomen sibi vindicat Scriptura sacra. Originem suam a Deo habet. Ipse eam locutus est: partim immediate, partim mediate in Filio, propheticis, aliisque ejus promulgatoribus: Heb. i. 1, 'O Θεὸς λαλήσας ἐν τοῖς προφήταις, ἐλάλησεν ἡμῖν ἐν υἱῷ. Imo quœ, mediantibus prophetis, apostolis, aliisque divinis scriptoribus, ecclesiæ olim locutus est, ipse ea omnia immediate locutus est, non tantum iis ipsis quibus provinciam istam promulgandi et scribendi voluntatem suam delegavit, et per eos nobis; sed in iis immediate nobiscum locutus est, atque in eorum scriptis adhuc loquitur, Heb. i. 1, 2; Luc. i. 70, 'Ελάλησε διὰ στόματος τῶν ἀγίων προφήτων τῶν ἡσυχῶν; 2 Pet. i. 20, 21.

Sect. 28. Secundò, respectu subjectae materiae, seu divinae veritatis in eā revelata, sacra Scriptura est verbum Dei; quatenus nempe est revelatio voluntatis divinae ab ipso Deo profecta. Hoc sensu locis paene innumeris verbum Dei dicitur, Joh. xvii. 17. Ita ubi verbum Dei, prædicari, promulgari, multiplicari, recipi enarratur, sanctissima ista veritas, seu materia Scripturarum, non Scriptura formaliter considerata intenditur; aliquoties enim contigit, et quotidie fieri potest, ut verbum Dei prædicetur, ubi Scriptura, hoc est ipsa scriptio, non legatur. In eā autem verbi prædicatione, quæ ex Scripturis sine actuali Scripturarum in ipso actu prædicandì lectione, fieri potest, nihil alium est absolute et in se verbum Dei, quàm quod ἡμᾶς in Scripturâ continetur: Act. xxvi. 22, Ὅδειν ἦκτος λέγων διὰ τοῦ προφήτου ἑλάλησαν μελλόντων γίνεσθαι καὶ Μωυσῆς.

Sect. 29. Tertìo, respectu ipsorum verborum in linguis istis quibus ex mandato et ordinatione Dei scripta est; etenim ea verba et concepta et disposita sunt per Spiritum Sanctum, neque ad exprimendum sensum, quem ipsi de mente et voluntate Dei conceperunt, ingenio ac arbitrio ipsorum scriptorum sunt permissa aut relictâ: Act. xxviii. 25; Luc. i. 70; 2 Pet. i. 20, 21; 2 Tim. iii. 16, Πᾶσα γραφὴ Ἑβραῖων ἐκτίμηται.

Sect. 30. Respectu autem promulgationis veritatis divinae, quæ propheticis aliisque viris divinis tanquam instrumentis usus est Spiritus Sanctus, ipsum verbum dicitur λόγος προφητικὸς, 2 Pet. i. 19, quem respectu inspirationis divinae aliqui ἐμφύτων vocant et ἐνδιάβολον.

Sect. 31. Hinc, ideo, sacrarum Scripturarum divina auctoritas, cujus assertionem in hac nominis ejus vindicatione præcipue intendimus, dependet:—nimium quod omnibus hisce respectibus sit verbum ejus qui supremus est Legislator, summis ac solus conscientiae Dominus, qui solus quid sit necessarium, quid utile, eum finem quod attinet ad quem diriguntur sacra Scripturae, et novit et in iis revelavit.

Hisce ita præmissis, videamus porro quibus argumentis sententia nostra superius exposita defendi et statuminari possit; atque etiam
quibus sophismatis eam expugnare apud imperitam plebem, magnis clamoribus adhibitis, quotidie aggregiuntur fanatici. Primum vero argumentum nostrum sic se habet.

Sect. 32. Quod saepe a Spiritu Sancto vocatur verbum Dei, id verbum est, atque proprie ita dicitur: nobis enim haud licet rebus sacris ad libitum nostrum nomina imponere; multo minus integrum est ea rejicere quae pro infinità sua sapientiâ Spiritus Sanctus imposuit. Sacram vero Scripturam sœpius eo nomine a Spiritu Sancto indigiti, cuivis eas vel leviter insipienti facile apparebit. Nonnullis allatis testimoniiis rem planam faciemus. Marc. vii. 13, 'Ακυροβούτες τον λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ τῇ παραδόσει ἰμῶν. Quisnam autem est iste λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ quem irritum fecerunt Pharisei? Is nemen qui a Mose scriptus est, ver. 10, Μωϋσῆς γὰρ εἶπε, hoc est, scriptum reliquit. Deut. iv. 2, "Ne addite ad verbum illud quod ego vobis precipio." Verbum quod Dominus locutus est, est verbum Domini; atqui idem est illud verbum cum "statutis et praecipit" eodem versu, quæ scripta esse nemo, opinor, negabit, Jer. xxxvi. 6, xxvi. 1-6.

Sect. 33. Id quod Deus locutus est in prophetis, quod Spiritus Sanctus locutus est per os prophetarum, quodque tanquam verbum suum per ejus mandatum scriptum est, illud verbum Dei est. At vero Deum locutum esse in prophetis et per prophetas antea probavimus. Vid. Heb. i. 1; Act. xxviii. 26; Luc. vii. 8. Hocque verbum ipsius auctoritate scriptum est, Exod. xvii. 14, xxxiv. 1, 27; Num. v. 23; Deut. vi. 9, xvii. 18; Jer. xxx. 2; Hab. ii. 2; 1 Joh. ii. 7; 2 Tim. iii. 16; Apoc. xxi. 5; et Deut. xxvii. 3. Imo ipse primus aliquid de eo digito suo scripsit, nemen Decalogum, Exod. xx.

Sect. 34. Declaratio mentis ac voluntatis divinae, ab ipso Deo immediate profecta, est verbum Dei. Si hoc non sit verbum Dei, ego nescio quid sit. Ipsa loquitur; mentis sua sensum, quo quid a nobis fieri velit intelligamus, declarat; hoc vero facit per verbum, aut doceant nos fanatici, quid illud dicendum sit per quod hoc facit. Sed de his postea cum de verbo seu lumine interno nobis agendum est.

Sect. 35. Ultimo jam loco objectiones adversariorum diluenda restant; pennum autem illud paucissimis absolvam.

Ob. 1. Christus est verbum Dei, ergo Scriptura non est verbum Dei. Mirum quantum puerile hoc intonantes sophisma ubique tumultuantur, atque quos apud suos de omnibus verbi ministri, quos precipue insectantur, triumphos agant; "Deceptores sunt omnes, impostores, falsarii, populi seductores, qui Scripturam verbum Dei asserunt, cum Christus ipse sit verbum Dei."

Resp. 1. Fallacia est ex homonymiâ vocis. Christus est verbum Dei essentiale, verbum Deus, λόγος οὐσώδης: Scriptura verbum Dei scriptum, λόγος προφορικός.

2. Mentio fit verbi Christi, Col. iii. 16; Act. xix. 10: at verbum
Christi non est ipse Christus: etiam verbi evangelii; et quamvis apud ipsos evangelium sit Christus, at verbum evangelii Christus esse non potest. Resp. At distinctionibus istis hand opus est; hac sunt inventa hominum. Scriptura palam asserit Christum esse Dei verbum. Resp. An solis ideo fanaticis liceat sophistis agere ac ludere in vocum ambiguitate et ignavia? Non distinguimus nisi ubi ipsum Spiritum Sanctum distinctione nobis praeeuntem habemus, sicut supérius demonstratum est.


Sect. 37. Ob. 3. Verbum Dei fuit ante Scripturam, ergo Scrip- tura non est verbum Dei. Resp. Concedimus locutum esse Deum antequam ullum verbum quod locutus est scriptis mandatum est, eoque sensu verbum Dei ante Scripturam fuisse concedimus. At verò idem verbum jam scriptum esse, neque ideo cessare esse verbum Dei, quamvis scriptum sit, contendimus. Subjectum non amittitur quamvis scriptio accesserit.

Sect. 38. Ob. 4. Verbum Dei non potest disci ex libris, nam est ab ipso Deo. Resp. Hoc falsissimum atque blasphemum est; ideo enim scriptum est verbum Dei ut ex libris id discamus; 2 Tim. iii. 16. Huc perpetuo a Deo ipso mittimur, ad verbum et voluntatem ipsius discendam, Deut. xvi. 19; Esæ. viii. 20; Joh. v. 39; unde eos beatos pronunciavit qui continuò in lege suâ scriptâ versantur, Ps. i. 1, 2. Or- tum et originem errorum in Scripturam ignorantiam rejecit Christus, Mat. xxii. 29. Atque hinc palam ostendit hoc hominum genus se neque scintillam lucis habere, Esæ. viii. 20; Dan. x. 21; Luc. xxiv. 27, 45; Act. xvii. 2, 11, xviii. 24, 28; Rom. i. 2; 2 Tim. iii. 15.

Sect. 39. Ob. 5. Verbum prope nos est, in ore et in corde, Rom. x. 8; et verbum Christi inhabitat in nobis, Col. iii. 16; sed hoc ver- bum non est scriptum, non litera scripta. Resp. Verbum illud quod in nobis est, est verbum fidei, quod apostoli predicârunt, Rom. x. 8. Nihil autem predicabant apostoli quod non scriptum fuit per Mosen et prophetas, Rom. xvi. 26; imo verbum illud verbum scriptum esse, ex professo eo loci, ver. 11, asserit Paulus. 2. Scriptura est prope nos, in ore et corde nostro, non respectu literæ scriptæ, sed veritatis divinæ in ea contentæ, quo etiam respectu sœpissime Dei verbum vocatur, uti superior ostensum est. In corde nostro est ideo Scriptura, non formaliter quatenus scripta, sed quatenus divinam veritatem continet atque exhibet. 3. In nobis ideo inhabitat verbum Dei, effective et eminenter, non formaliter.

Sect. 40. Atque hæc est summa eorum omnium quae in vicis, templis, publice, privatis, aut vociferantur aut nussitant adversus sacras Scripturas fanatici. Quid vero apud se in toto hoc molimine deli-
beratum habeant, cum ad luminis illius interni, de quo tantopere gloriantur, considerationem deuentum sit, palam fiit. Ut rem paucis comprehendam: auctoritate, necessitate, perfectione Scripturarum rejectis, aflatum suum, perplexum et falsum semper, scepissime blasphenum, in ejus locum substituere, in animum inducerunt.

EXERCIT. II.

De Scripturarum interprettione.

Sect. 1. In quæstione de Scripturarum interpretatione, et interprete proprio, Pontificii, quos in tota causa religionis familiæ hereticorum postulare necessi habemus, seu cœo sui amore ducti, seu nimio aliorum omnium contempi, controversias omnes compendiæcere, atque pro eâ quâ pollent auctoritate, seu potius vañritie, haæreticos quos vocant, uno ictu, quasi fundâ ex insidiis, cedere et trajicere se posse sperant; ipsi interea, cum totâ quam in tergo habent mendacioâorum sarcinâ, latentes post principia. Eos saltem qui postquam populum aliquem bello domare et sub jugum mittere decreverint, arcæ munitas, quibus adversariorum apparatum omnem bellicum contineri noverint, extemplô occupant, imitari videntur.

Sect. 2. Etenim cum utrinque in confessione sit (quod etiam impre- sentiarum uterius demonstrare aggrademur), opus esse Scripturarum interpretatione aliquâ, quà mentem et genuinum in iis Spiritûs Sancti sensum investigare, atque ea, quà æneerë, qua seït, et cognitum sunt ad salutem necessaria, seu quovis modo ad officium nostrum et obedientiam Deo debitam spectantia, licet; hujusce rei consideratâionis, istiusmodi postulatorum portenta praœtruunt, ut iis concessis, nulli dubium esse possit, quin omnia adversariorum consilia ìta præris彪erint, ut quoscunque vehint de iis triumphos splendide et secure agant.

Sect. 3. Quod semper fuerit, sitque, atque de jure debeat esse istiusmodi publica, et uti loquuntur, auctoritativa sacrarum Scripturarum interpretatione in ecclesia, cui omnes et singuli Christiani, sub periculo et poëâ salutis æternæ amittendæ, conscientias submittère, ex voluntate Christi teneantur, primo in loco affirmâunt.1 Cûmque omnis interpretatio sit interpretis alicujus actio, atque illius auctoritatis abs hujus auctoritate dependeat, ut sit, aut esse debeat, visibilis alicuis et publicus interpres, seu ut plerunque loqui malunt, magnifice scilicet, sensûs Scripturarum judex alicuis infallibilis, ànsinidbons, visibilis et omnibus expositus, qui hoc dono interpretationis polleat,

1 Concil. Trident. sess. iv.; Thom. Stapl. lib. x. cap. xi.; Bellar. de Verbo Dei, lib. iii. cap. i., etc.
cuju̇s interpretationibus, virtute auctoritatis quâ ipse est sub Christo instructus, non veritas quam iste habent, aut habere possint ex analogia fidei, omnes fideles dicto obedientes esse obligantur, non minus necessarium esse, eâdem veritate et confidentiâ asserunt.  

Iam ut plerumque mens humana (eâ est innata vanitate), cum magno quopiam errore seu monstro tumet, μεγαλαυχές, eò blasphémâ processit nonnullorum audacia, ut cùm assertiones istas, omni testimonio divino penitus destitutas esse, non possint non intelligere, et pàene confiteri, tamen "neminem unquam mortalium regnum seu regimen aliquod, stultius aut ineptius instituisse, quam ecclesiam suam disposuit Jesus Christus,² si modo eo interprete illam non instruerit, non veriti sunt affirmare. Ûti olim, ita hodieque etiamnum est, si Deus homini non placuerit, Deus non erit. Neque sane alia ratione, horum hominum de ecclesia catholica prejudiciu, veteri quidem fabulæ, sed insulsissimæ, satisfieri posse videtur.

Sect. 4. Jam vero nemini dubium esse potest, quem virum in summum istud imperium in cæteros mortales evêchendum statuant.³ Prout enim Haman iste, postquam τίν δείη ad amplissimos honores a rege maximo designari audivisset, cum paulò plus sibi in deliciis esset quam regi, statim "cum animo suo dicebat, Quem magis delectaretur rex honore afflicere quàm me?" Esther vi. 6–8, atque proinde de honoribus istis ampliandis, tanquam exemplò occupaturus, sententiam tulit; ita adversarii nostri, postquam regem istum spirituali et judicem infallibilem ipsi sibi per somnia finixerint, atque ut talis judex et ἀνδριτόνα Scripturarum interpretes a Christo constituere debaret, nisi indiligens omnino, etiam et insipiens ecclesiæ suæ procurator audire mallet, sibi persuaserint, vel saltem alii persuadere tentassent, pro eâ quà sunt humilitate atque modestiâ, hunc proximum Deo locum, si non honorum æquali, tanquam unice ei in terris grati statim occupant. Quis enim nisi Christi Vicarius, vice-Deus ille, Deus alter in terris, ecclesiæ sponsus atque caput, et isti pânta λεγώμεν ὅℓλον ἡ σέβασμα ὑπεραιρήμενος, provinciæ huic administrandæ par esse potest?

Sect. 5. Porro autem si ita se res habeat, quâm facilis futura sit totius inter nos litis estâmatio, quivis nullo negotio perspiciat; si enim sacra Scriptura, quæ apud nos unica est omnes controversias dirimendi norma et medium, in eum finem interpretari debeat, ut de vero ejus sensu constare possit, atque ipsi, aut saltem inter eos dux partium sit eò interpretandi Scripturâs auctoritate instructus, isque solus, ita ut ex ejus determinatione seu interpretatione, indeque

1 "Non ignorabat Deus multas in ecclesia exorturas difficultates circa fidem; debuit igitur judicem aliquem ecclesiae providere; . . . . igitur princeps ecclesiasticus," etc. —Bell. lib. iii. de Verb. Dei. cap. ix.


3 Bell. de Rom. Pontif. lib. iv. cap. i.
partim, certò sciri possit quis sit iste Scripturarum sensus in omni lite exptit, ut frustra sit omnis in eos eorumve errores testimonii dictio, frustra argumenta e Scripturis petita, necessæ est. 1 Unico interpretationis infallibilis malagnate omnia conficiënt. Ea vero infallibilis est, quia illorum est. Hæc arx est religionis pontificia, imo hæc est eorum religio; et causam habent, quæ caduceo hoc eget. Hoc enim amuleto instructi, extra tela et pulverem positi, nihil usi circuitione, omnes opinione a se disjunctos damnant. Hujus autem persuasionis, atque inde animorum et irarum pleni, nemo est catholicoorum, qui non ubivis cum servo illo comico clamat, "Nihil est quod malum quam illam totam familiam (hæreticorum scilicet) mihi obviam dari, primo ipsis eriperem oculos, post hæc precipites darem; omnes ruerem, agerem, raperem, tunderem, et prosternerem," Terent. Adelph. iii. 2, 20. Eant jam quicunque volunt, et dicam iis impingant, hæresesc ap aut blasphemiarum insimulent, nisi ipsis judicibus, propriis suffragiis ab omni culpâ expediantur, eam tandem laudem assequentur, quâ se lubentissime carere posse, diu est quod estenderint.

Sect. 6. Arce autem huc occupată, in quâ omnis nostra spes sita est, non minus iniqua futura est inter nos concertatio, quâm olim Israelitas inter et Philistæos intercessit, cum illis hi neque farrum neque fabrum ante pugnam reliquum fecissent, 1 Sam. xiii. 19–22, 22. At per me licet somnient, ut lubet, Romanenses; edant bibantque; at exerrecti tandem, se fame sitique æternum perituros sentient. Neque verò etiam unquam ego istuc negocit iiis dabo, ut ecclesiae privilegia et jura recenseant, cum eos pro ecclesiâ Christi non habeant. Habent itaque aliud quod agant, magis ex sese et majus; nempe ut videant in quo statu res ipsorum, cùm a Christo sint rejectanei, sita sunt, atque curent. Quicquid possit ecclesia, eos in hac causa nihil omnino posse asserimus; nimirum inter dominos et fures multum interest.

Sect. 7. De hisce vero humanæ superioris portentis ut denuò agamus nihil opus est; extra omnem disputationen jamduum hæc duo posuerunt nostri theologi. Primò, Unicum, publicum, authenticum, et infallibilem sacraum Scripturarum interpretatem, esse ipsum earum auctorem,—e cuius afflatu, veritatem, perspicuitatem, et auctoritatem suam omnem habent,—Spiritum nempe Sanctum, partim in ipsis Scripturis loquentem, mentemque suam clare et dilucide exponenter, eamque per totius divinæ doctrinæ, seu veritatis in illis traditæ, analogiam, in omnibus partibus seu locis, ubi eum obscurius locutum fuisse videri possit, revelantem; partim lucem spiritualèm in mentes nostras immitterent, quà in omnem necessariam veritatem in verbo

1 "Num equum postulat Papistæ, dum volunt ut nosmetipso ejus judicio submittamus, utque ab illius interpretatione penderemus, quem nos accusamus ut falsum Scripturarum interpretem, ino quem ipsissimum dicimus esse Antichristum?"—Whitak. Con. i. q. 5, cap. iii.
patefactam ducantur; ac proinde, uti reverâ a Christo non est designatus, ita nulli usui esse judicem illum visibilem, quem ita magnifice prædictant.

Sect. 8. Secundò, Cuvis homini, utut privato, ad cognitionem Dei in Scripturâ revelatam vocato, hoc officii incumbere, ut mentem Dei in Scripturis, hoc est, earum sensum sedulò, medìi omnibus in eum finem necessarii adhibitis, investigare, cognoscere, exponere, enarrare debeat, quantum ad propriam in fide ædificationem opus sit; “et enim justus ex fide sua vivet.” Neque sane usque adeo obbruitum humanum genus, ut semper praestigiaiores istos spirituales, qui aëspro-xopòías ívixa, contra manifesta Christi præcepta, sanctorum omnium exempla, communia rationis istius quâ homines sumus principia, et ounías ívonis, posthabita æternæ salútis curâ, in cæcitate et ignorantia voluntatis divinae, propriique officii negligentia supinâ, mortalium ullos idololatriæ illecebris illaqueatos detinere conantur, ferre velit.

“Papae tempus erit cum magno optaverit emptam
Intactam Scripturam.”

Sect. 9. De interprete Scripturarum proprio, interpretationumve legitimis medii, nullam nobis litem peculiarem intendant fanatice, cùm omnem plane (ut postea videbimur) interpretationem quovis-modo institutam respuant, ut novas in ejus locum substituant revelationes. Verùm cum ad explicationem causarum verae et legitimae interpretationis pertineat, quorum principalem efficientem Spiritum Sanctum superius posuimus, non supervacaneum forsan videbitur, si litem illam quae super hac re etiam inter nostrates theologos intercedit, òc in parido paucis transigamus.

Sect. 10. Interpretès itaque Scripturæ sunt vel privati fideles, prout distinguuntur ab iis qui ad opus ministerii legitime vocantur, vel ipsi ecclesiarsum ministri. Ac quidem de ecclésiarum ministris, utrum scilicet debeant totis viribus interpretationi Scripturarum sedulò incumbere, apud nos nulla quaestio est.

Sect. 11. Privati fideles, vel mere privati sunt, vel aliquo modo aliorum curam sibi delegatam habent: mere privatorum sui tantum quisque curam gerit. Hos verbum Dei legere, vel ab aliis lectum diligenter audire, τας γραφας ἵνα ποιήσην, “in lege Dei meditari,” ut “crescant in gratia et in cognitione Domini nostri Jesu Christi,” debere, nisi malint perire, apud nos in confessio est. Neque hæc sine alia verbi interpretatione fieri possunt. Qui sensum Scripturarum per media legitima eruit, quamvis id faciat in eum finem tantum, ut ipse rite mentem Spiritus Sancti percipiat, est eatenus sacrum Scripturam interpretatur, Deut. vi. 6, 7. Convicium faceret evangelio, si quis ullum Christianum adultum hoc privilegio fraudatum iret. Liberonum parentibus εἰκοσιτετράς, aliisque, quibus aliorum erudiendi provincia quovis modo demandatur, alius officium incumbit: ipsi vero,
privati quamvis sint, utrum illos, quorum bono omni jure invigilare tenentur, ἐκτρέψειν ἐν παθεῖς καὶ νοεῖσιν Κυρίου, et per Scripturarum interpretationem assiduam erudire debeant necne, nemo, nisi qui non tantùm officiorum moralium, sed et naturalium de bono et malo προ- λήψεων obliteratione, et ἀληθείᾳ fœdâ, corruptæ alicujus ἐνόθεσις patrocinio sacrificare paratus sit, ambigere potest. Vide D. Arrowsmith. Tactica Sacra, lib. ii. cap. ii. sect. 7.

Sect. 12. Porro: cùm Spiritus Sanctus dona sua distribuat, ἵνα ἐκάσως καθὼς βούλεται, privatorum aliqui χαρίσματι spiritualibus, ad ædificationem pluriem aptis, sunt instructi, alií non item. De posterioribus hisce, thesí superiori diximus. De prærioribus autem, utrum verbum Dei publice exponere, atque ad plures conciones sacras habere (cùm non sint ad opus ministerii per legitimam χειροτονίαν separati), necne, queritur.

Hi verò duùm generum sunt; aliqi enim sunt mere privati, neque ministerii officium unquam suscepturi; hisce verò, utrum in iis ecclesiis, quorum sunt membra, atque inter eam ætatem pomeria, ex ipsarum ecclesiârum mente et consensu, prout fert occasio vel postulare videtur necessitas, Scripturas exponere, aut ex iis de rebus divinis, et ad ecclesiæ ædificiationem pertinentibus dissérere liceat, hoc et illuc, inter viros doctos sententiiis inclinatur. Alii autem sunt, qui, quamvis nondum rite et ad mentem Christi, ad opus ministerii sint vocati, cùm nulla adhuc ecclesia particularis in qua Christo secundum ordinem in evangelio patefæctum servire possint, eos elegerit aut vocaverit, tamen sincere ἐπισκοπῆς ἐρίγονται, et de officio eo suscipiendo sincere, simulatque legitime fieri possit, serìo cogitante; de hisce vero utrum publice et ordinarie, verbum Dei interpreteri, atque ad populum conciones sacras habere, rite possint, etiam queritur.

Sect. 13. Nobis, quibus in toto ordine ecclesiastico, summa ratio est que pro ædificatione et ἐπιγνώσει ἀληθείας τῆς καὶ τῆς ἐνόθεσις promovenda, Tit. i. 1, facit, primi generis hominibus, libertatem illam de qua diximus, modo εὰν εὐχρυμνῶς καὶ κατὰ τάξιν, nempæ ab apostolō prescriptam, 1 Cor. xiv. 40, utantur, invitís eripere, religio est. Neque enim χαρισμάτων in eos collatorum ratio, 1 Cor. xii. 7, 11; Matt. xxv. 24, 25; 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11; 1 Cor. xiv. 12, 24;— nec unionis ecclesiastice a Christo institutæ finis, 1 Cor. xii. 15—20, etc.; Eph. iv. 3—7, 15, 16; Act. ii. 42;— nec officium quod variorum mandatorum Christi respectu iis incumbit, Rom. xv. 14; Eph. v. 19; Col. iii. 16; 1 Thess. v. 14; 2 Thess. iii. 15; Heb. iii. 13;— nec primarum ecclesiârum praxis (Ep. Eccles. Vien. et Lugdun.; Origen. ad Celsum; Ter- tull. Apol.; Justin. Mart. Apol.);— nec sanctorum experimentia aut fraterna charitas, δόξις illa καθ' ὑπερβολῆν, 1 Cor. xiii.;— nec sanctorum sub veteri et novo testamento πραξις celebrata, 2 Chron. xvii. 7—9; Job.
ii. 11; Mal. iii. 16; Luc. iv. 16, 17; Act. xiii. 15; 1 Cor. xiv. 24-34;— nec libertas illa quâ omnes fideles liberos fecit Christus, Gal. vi. 1, id patitur.

Sect. 14. Secundum genus quod attinet, ita se habet. In eâ communitate quæ homini est cum Deo, a relatione quam ad Creatorem optimum maximum creatura rationalis non potest non habere, unde cultus atque obedientiam oritur indispensabilis necessitas, requiritur ut omnes cum cognoscant, et voluntatem ejus percipiant, secundum mensuram medio rum ab eo gratioso illis consecorum. Haec naturæ vox est, haec legis; officium hoc in omnium cordibus, pariter ac in Decalogi, primum locum tenet: έγνωστον Θεόν nemo rite colit. Inter media autem, quibus ad sui cognitionem revelandam Deus utitur, sacra Scriptura non tantùm longissime aliis omnibus antecliti, sed fines salutares quod attinet, unicum est, seu singularis. Porro: cum medium hoc sit mere arbitrarium, atque a solo Dei beneplacito pendeat, dispensatio ejus ad usum hominum, a liberrimâ etiam voluntate divinâ ut pendeat necesse est. Cum dispensatione autem medio rum una introducitur ad officium obligatio. Atque haec naturalia sunt, neque institutioni alicui evangelici innotentur, Marc. xii. 30, 31. Prout autem Dei cognitio, eâ quæ decet spirituali totius animæ subjectione comitata, in prìmâ, quam vocant, Decalogi tabulâ summum locum occupat, ita, in secundâ, amor proximi maximum præceptum est; est autem amare τὸ βούλευσαι tim à αὐτῷ, αγαλλία ἐκεῖνον ἐν εἰς, καὶ τὸ κατὰ δόμαν πρακτικῶν ἦναι τούτων, teste philospho. Quo magis verò ad perfectionem assurgit, eo perfectius bonum amato ut velit necesse est. Amor autem iste, cum in summo gradu esse debet, atque ei quo nosmetipso prosequimur, par aut similis, non potest is, in quo est, non praecipuum bonum κατὰ δόμαν communicare cum amato. Quoniam itaque Dei cognitio est vita æterna, Joh. xvii. 3, atque adeo praecipuum illud bonum quod quis cuiquam velle possit, imperante amore hoc non amplius cuiquam, ad id praestandum idoneo, liberum est, velle alios in ea instruere vel nolle, sed, indispensabilis vi officii, ab omnibus exigitur. Jam verò prout dictum est, omnia haec ordinantur per specialem Dei providientiam: abs eâ etiam est ordinis istius dispositio, secundum quem officium hoc præstari debet; cim et occasiones, et opportuna agendi tempora, inde administruntur.

Sect. 15. Hisce ita dispositis, inter eos quibus verbum suum secundum beneplacitum voluntatis suæ, gratuítè Deus largitur, Ps. cxlvii. 20, Esai. ix. 19, unà etiam cum eo, per Jesum Christum, Spiritum Sanctum, atque ea ipsius dona, quibus habiles et idonei ad alios instruendum in cognitione sui homines reddantur, largâ manu, et varie distribuit, 1 Cor. xii. Neque largetionem hanc facit erga eos

1 Aristot. Rhetor. ii. cap. iv.
solum qui ad munus ministerii in ecclesia aliquae Christi solenniter vocati sunt, postquam ordinationem, quam vocant, obtinuerint: immo ut donis hisce aliquis ditatus sit, antequam ad xaripontian accedat necesse est, etiam nonnulli ipsis probe sunt instructi, qui ad opus ministerii tamen in ecclesia obvandum nunc quam accedunt: Pianta de tua inerti etsi nunc autae Pinea, diantur idia eipastw kabos boulentai, 1 Cor. xii. 11; Eph. iv. 7.

Sect. 16. De quastione autem proposita quid tandem dixi debeat, haud difficile est conjicere. Sit itaque fidelis aliquis (quod sui est officii quae talis est) cognitio Dei instructus, atque insuper xarispumax spirtualibus ad alios instruendum requisitis, a Deo gratiose donatus; studiumque ac voluntatem habeat, Christo Jesu in opere evangelii inserviendi, locum vero, tempus, aliquae ad officium praestandum, ita ut ordinem nullum legitimum interturbet, per Dei providentiam opportuna obtinuerit, licitum ei esse evangelium pradicare, Scripturas interpretari, conciones ad populum habere, quamvis sacris ordinibus, uti loquuntur, nondum sit initiatus, pronuntiamus.

Sect. 17. Et sane quidni ita faceret? an vocacione legitimae destitui consequendum est, negotium alteri prascriptum prosequi, an in aliorum officium irruere, an novum et insolitum quiddam in ecclesia Dei agregdi, an turbas dare, aut alio quocunque modo limites sibi constitutos translire? Ita sane clamant nonnulli; qui si pudoris egeant, saltem in hae luce evangelii mutuo sumerent: quanam autem vocatio de moralia officia praestanda opus sit, unde ortum ducat, quaque complectatur una praeter dona spiritualia, ac providentiae ductum, viri docti atque pii, accurate dependant, scio, priusquam in eam sententiam concedant. Sanctum sane illud animae propositum, divinitas alicui inditum, de quo verba fecimus, cum eo xarispomatos spiritualium apparatu, qui ad aliorum adictionemem sit necessarius, modum eorum exercitio viam paraverit Dei providentia, cum praecipto Christi ad dona illa exercenda, vocationem illam non constituisse, nondum probatum est, neque aeternum probabitur. Atqui si constituant, salva res est; nam omnia hae antea posuimus.

Sect. 18. Neque solennia ulla muneris peculiaris officia hinc violantur. Moralis quorundam officiorum curam, ipsis qui ministerio in ecclesiis Christi solenniter funguntur, speciali modo demandari certum est. Alios omnes ex ea delegatione, a praestatione eorum officiorum, arceri falsum. Neque munus unquam a Deo institutum est quibusdam peculiare, quo caeteri mortales eo onere expediantur, quod ex jure naturae atque praecipto Christi ipsis incumbit; neque hujus tali non doxastatxw tantum sed et portatu penitus impossibili, ministros opprimere voluit Deus, ut alii liberam ab imperio suo vitam agerent; neque nos aut culpam aut obedientiam aliorum praestare possimus. “Justus ex fide sua vivet.”
Sect. 19. Praeterea, propositum ineundì munus ministerii, simulac id secundum mentem Christi fieri possit, t境am ad vocationem de qua agimus requisitam conditionem superius posuimus. De confusione autem in ecclesiâ Christi inducendâ, videant, qui ilteránta ista novitât, et παράδοξα, nempe ordinandi presbyteros ἀσπαλείνων, hoc est, sine relatione ad aliquos greges seu ecclesias particulares, quarum inspectioni respective vacarent, ut potte eorum per Spiritum Sanctum episcopi constituí, cujusmodi ordinatio non tantum a concilio Chalcedonensi prohibetur ne fieret, sed, et facta, irrita pronuntiatur; atque ut quis cótús alicujus tanquam pastor ejus ordinarius curam suscipere, cujus membri sacramento evangelica administrare nolit, in eum invehère conantur; sed ἄραξία hanc improba étiam qui a nobis hic diversum sentiant. Si vero eatenus exemplis causa haec transigatur, ut appareat hic nihil insolens nos in ecclesia medi- tari, a primo usque ortu ecclesiæ, ad nostra tempora illa deducere non esset difficile, quod et alibi a nobis ostentum est.

Sect. 20. Denique si illicitum sit, hominem sacris ordinibus nondum initiatum Scripturas interpretari, aut verbum Dei praedicare, praestitis conditionibus superius praesciptis; tum ut hoc illicitum sit, vel a natura ipsius rei, vel ab aliquibus circumstantiis necessum est; vel forsan alicubi in Scripturis hoc expresse prohibitur; illicitum autem ex natura rei esse non potest, nisi absolute sit illicitum, ulla hominem, qui non sit verbi minister, alium in cognitione Dei instruere. At vix eò dementiæ ventum esse inter Christiani nominis professores ullos, ut hoc dicant, arbitror. Cain sane, qui ex illo improbo erat, et mactavit fratrem suum, Deo ipsi negavit se custodem esse fratris sui; sed ea vox primo, post Satanam, homicidâ, illiusque similibus digna est. Quonque vero Deus quemvis fratris sui custodem, æternam ejus salutem quod attinet, posuerit, superius ostendi: qui vero præceptum fidei in Christum, in ipsâ naturæ lege, primis parentibus induît, inclusum erudunt, prædicationem evangelii officium morale esse non negabant. Circumstantiæ vero, a quibus causa haec æstimari potest, eae sunt, vel quod plures simul instruendos quis sus- cipit, vel quod ordinarie. Eas verò, opus hoc si in se sit bonum, commendare, ac mirabiliter ornare, potius quam illicitum reddere certum est. Neque enim ratio ulla assignari potest, cur si mihi liceat unum aut alterum cognitio Dei instituere, non itidem liceat plures eodem modo informare, idque ordinarie. Ceterum ipsis, qui hoc omnibus universum fidelibus, quamvis donis Spiritus Sancti, ad alios instruendum requisitis, instructis, nisi sint ad opus ministerii in eclesiâ aliqua solenniter separati, vetitum esse affirmant, prohibitionem istam probare incumbit, quod ab eorum nemine hactenus factum esse arbitror.

Sect. 21. Sed ad propositum nobis negotium redeamus, illosque
adeamus quibuscum inprimis res est. Inanis autem est tota illa de quâ paucis egimus controversia, neque titivilitio emptitanda si modo nemini mortalium licet Scripturam interpretari, aut ejus sensum exponere; hoc vero est quod fanatici nostrates affirmant. Quid de ipsis Scripturis sentiunt, superius exposuit est; quæstio hæc est de usu earum in ecclesia Dei. Nonnullus sane illorum sacras Scripturas privatim legere, aut aliqua saltem ex iis prius lectis aut auditus memoriâ tenere constat, imo sæpius sacrum codicem secum circumferunt; in eorum catibus autem, cas haud floeci faciunt, neque allius usus sunt, neque enim unquam aut verbum ipsum legunt, aut aliquid partem ejus exponunt, aut testimoniiis ex eo assumptis ad fidem iis quæ proferunt (quæ sunt humilitate), conciliandam utuntur; neque cur ita agerent causa ulla est, cum sint ipsi omnes ἡετριευσται. In digladiationibus autem, quibus maxime delectantur, verba Scripturae sæpius repetunt atque inaneant, misere plerumque perversa, atque in sensus peregrinos distorta. Omnia autem horum hominum, circa interpretationem Scripturarum, deliria ad tria capita, quorum primum ipsum interpretationem, secundum media, tertium fines ejus respicit, revocari possunt.

Sect. 22. Primò ideo, ulla homini, sacras Scripturas interpretari, vel ullam earum partem, vel sensum ejus exponere, vel quæ sit mens Spiritus Sancti in verbis quæ scripta legimus, aliis verbis enarrare, fas esse negant.

2dò. Unà cum interpretatione Scripturarum, ejusdem media, nempe diversorum locorum collationem, antecedentium et consequentium considerationem, vocabulorum atque phrasium examen, ut quis rite mentem Dei percipiat et intelligat, rationem assiduam, analogiae fidei observationem, atque istius generis alia, omnia rejiciunt, damnant, exsecrantur. Ita scotomate nescio quo percussi, ut omnes alli eàdem cæciteate laborent, contendunt.

3dò. Denique locorum difficilium elucidatio, veritatis manifestatio et probatio, heresewv, errorum, falsorum doctorum et doctrinarum convictio, redargutio, per instructiones et exhortationes ædificatio, omnesque aliis fines legitimæ interpretationis Scripturarum, iis odio sunt, et abominationi.

Sect. 23. Cum verò duplex sit sacræ Scripturarum interpretatio, una verum, verborum altera; illam palam rejiciunt; de hâc vero consiliium suum, si quod habent, explicare non possunt. Ut enim, si sibiri constare vellet, quod et maxime cupere videntur, omnem omnia interpretationem rejicere debeant; ita cum sint pæne omnes ἀμαίνι, neque ultra linguam vernaculam sapiant, ne, μεταφάσων rejectione, omni Scripturarum usu se privarent, atque ita in seipsis inauditum stultitiam et impietatis exemplum palam ederent, astute caverent.
Sect. 24. Odium autem, quod in priorem illum exercet, est τὸ γένος; itaque non tantùm omnes Scripturæ expositiones in familyis privatis, catibus, ecclesiis, scholis fidelium, vivâ voce factas, ad sensum verbi explanandum, et intelligentiam dandum per Scripturam ipsam, hostili animo insectantur, sed et commentarios, cunctosque alios libros, quibus pars aliqua Scripturæ interpretatur, vel veritas ullæ ex ea elicetur, aut confirmatur, vel exhortationibus ad sanctitatem et evangelicam obedientiam fideles urgentur, aut alio quocunque modo in cognitione Dei homines instruuntur, eodem loco habent, et conviciss petulantissime lacerant.

Sect. 25. Christianorum omnium sententiam, huic delirio fanaticorum oppositam, in constanti et non interrupta omnium locorum, temporum, ecclesiæarum, præxi, explicatam habemus; ejus autem brevem ἐποττων quandam subjicere placet. Interpretatio, uti dictum superiûs, duplex est,—verborum una, seu μετάφρασις: verum altera, seu cum ἀναλογι ἔγγυαις. Prima est sacra Scripturæ ex codicibus Hebraicis et Graecis Veteris et Novi Testamenti, in alias linguas ad usum populi Dei, linguas illas originales quas vocant ignorantis, translatio. Væriæ ecclesiæ, quæ unius gentis fuit, tota Scriptura erat vernacula. Ea itaque nihil opus habuit translationibus. Quòd Deus autem ecclesiæ, quandiu erat sermone uno, lingua communi et naturali, ita ut translatione aliquâ haud egeret, Scripturas concordere voluit, argumento est, eâ maxime opus esse iis, quibus è linguae in quibus scriptæ sunt non sunt vernaculae aut communæ. Cùm itaque ecclesia Christi sub novo testamento, "ex omni tribu, et lingua, et populo, et natione," colligenda fuerit, "eo non pro una gente mortem obeunte, sed ut filios Dei dispersos congregaret in unum," atque ita reapse sit collecta, Apoc. v. 9; Joh. xi. 52; cùnque necessum esset, ut unâ aliœ linguae, Dei verbum primitiûs scriberetur, quò unicum et prorsus eandem, constantem et invariabilem credendi atque obediendi normam tota ecclesia haberet, translationibus ejus verbi eam nullo modo carere posse, appareat. Rerum interpretationi doctrinam, seu veritatem, et declarationem mentís divine in Scripturis contentam, spectat; estque veritatis et sensûs Spiritûs Sancti qui in verbis Scripturæ continetur, mediis in eum finem a Deo approbatis rite adhibitis, vi χαρισμάτων gratuitō acceptorum, enarratio seu expositio, "ad doctrinam, ad redargutionem, ad correctionem, ad disciplinam in justitia," omnìmodaque adeo ecclesiæ edificationem a Deo instituta.

Sect. 26. Hujusmodi autem Scripturarum interpretationem, licitam esse, imo necessariam, apparat (10.) ex natura rei. Deum inæstimabile verbi sui beneficium apud nos collocasse, ut per illud in sui cognitione instruamur, et in confessu est, et Scripturæ ipsius testimoniiis comprobatur. Instructionem istam ad rationalis creaturæ
remutationem adversus fanaticos.

Quod enim rationalis creatura ex verbis alterius percipiat, nisi sensum ejus, et mentis sententiam? Finis itaque ob quem Deus nobis sacram Scripturam concredidit, non alius esse potest, quin ut ex ea sensum et sententiam Spiritus Sancti cognoscamus; verba enim quibus nihil sensus subest, psittacis et sturnis conveniunt: ad perceptionem autem verborum sententiae in eorum sensum inquisitio necessaria est; hoc autem omnis interpretationis fundamentum est; atque si licitum sit, interpretatio non potest esse illicita. Quid enim? annon, sensu verborum acquisito, quis eum enarrare possit? hoc autem est Scripturas interpretari. Neque enim aut prohibitum est aut impossible ut quis proferat, atque aliis exponat, quae ipse ex verbo Dei intelligit. Cum itaque verba Scripturae sensum habeant, seu mentis Dei sententiam continent, atque eum sensum nos percipere atque intelligere teneamur, neque aliquid obstat quo minus quem nos concepimus sensum aliis declarare possim; sanè quin licitum sit Scripturas interpretari, negari a quoom cui sobrium est sincerum non potest.

Sect. 27. Imo justum et licitum est, quia necessarium. Quot enim sunt, a quibus Scripturam legentibus si sciscitaretur, prout olim ab eunucho, "Nempe intelligitis quae legitis?" cum eodem eunucho necesses esset respondere, "Quis possimus, nisi nobis quispiam dux viæ fuerit?"

Act. viii. Praeterquam enim, quod sint in sacra Scriptura vel divina sapientiae et bonitatis convicium facere gravissimum, ecclesiam sanctorum in porcorum haram convertere, ipsumque verbum Dei, omnem ejus usum quod attinet, penitus respuere, faciè omnes intelligent. Etenim si Scriptura vel nullum sensum in se habeat, vel talem quem a nobis intelligi aut percipi Deus nolit, aut quem intellectum nemo enarrare potest, quidni miseros homunciones per tale verbum ludos facere (absit blasphemia) æstimandus sit?

Sect. 28. Quid vero cum iis agamus, qui cùm reverà sint adeo infeliciter stupidi, ut nullà neque ratione, neque experientià erudiri possint, quasi tamen, ipsi soli saperent vanà persuasione siderati, in contemptu eorum, quæ non intelligent, audaciter persistunt, atque
cum comicō illo clamant, “Dicat quod quisque volet, nos ex hac opinione non dimovebimur.” Enimvero si omnium seculorum, omnium quae unquam existiterunt Christianorum experientia, — si ea quae ipsi vident, spectant, audiunt quotidiem, ullius apud eos ponderis essent aut momenti, usum, necessitatem, fructum interpretationis Scripturarum per solennem verbi prædicationem, expositionem vivâ voce aut Scriptis factam negare verecundarentur: spectemus utique utrumque gregem, cūm illum qui, verbo licet fruturum, interpretatione ejus destitutus est, tum illum qui, una cum verbo Dei, aliis etiam mediis cultūs divīnī, quae in verbi interpretatione plerūrum consistent, frutur, si modo ex fructibus arbor dignoscenda sit, bona apparebit illa, quae istiusmodi fructus scientiae Deī tuīt quibus ubique progerimandae vīt legitima Scriptūræ interpretatio. 

Sect. 29. Porro autem; quamvis et ratio illa quā homines sumus, et ipsius rei necessitas, et usus, si modo Christiani esse velimur, interpretationem Scripturarum efflagitant, ita ut nemo nisi qui plane stupidus sit, aut cujus itūrīlōs tā nōvus tenebrarum princeps, de ejus necessitate animi dubius esse possit, tamen Pater ille Clementis-simus, cujus cura, amori, fidei toti inimītūr, cum scīet nos animo esse remisco et torpido, neque consulere in æternitatem, imo plane languecerē in iis, quibus maxime nostra interest omne studium et industria ponere, mandatis et præceptis suis, quibus, pro imperio illo summō quod in nos habet, ad officium hocce nos obstrinxerit; nobis et socordiae nostrae spirituali gratiose prospexit; neque obstrinxit modo, sed et insuper cohortationibus etiam ad officium hoc præstandum paratos et alacres reddere voluerit. Ita nempe olim, Israelitis præceperat, Deut. vi. 20–23; sicque Jehoshue, cap. i. 8; totique ecclesiæ, Esæ. viii. 20. Etiam Servator noster Jesus Christus, Judæos tum temporis Deī populum, ad investigationem mentis divinæ in Scripture mittit, Joh. v. 39. Atque sæpius Phariseis exprobravit, sentiēs et sententiæ Scripturarum ignorantiam, Matt. xix. 3. Cum itaque Deus nobis præceperit Scriptūras legere, nocturnâ et diurnâ manu versare, in iis assidue meditari, sensum earum atque sententiam omnibus in locis pro virili investigare, aliōs ex iis per mentis suae expositionem et voluntatis declarationem, instituere, cūm ad plenam et legitimam interpretationem nihil aliud pertineat, illum etiam nobis cum præscriptisse certum est.

Sect. 30. Quanquam autem omnem industria devoveant fanatīci, ad tollendum e medio praesens ministerium in ecclesiis Christi, co autem quod sciam impudentiae nondum deuentum est, ut negent Christum olim ministros, hoc est, doctores et pastores, instituīsse; cum cādem operā ipsius negandum esset evangelium, non tantūm non esse verbum Deī, sed neque esse verum. Durauros esse in ecclesiā istiusmodi ministros ad consummationem usque seculi postea proba-
bitur. Si vero palam fiat interpretationem Scripturarum aliquando fuisset licitam, tum demum eorum rationes qui eam etiamnum esse licitam pernegant, atque pios omnes eo jure aut privilegio, quo gaudabant, excidisse asserunt, perpendemus. Id vero negotii ministri illis olim secundum mentem Christi institutis, datum fuisset, ut con-silium et voluntatem Dei de obedientia et salute hominum, per con-ciones, doctrinas, exhortationes, opportune, importune exponerent, negari non potest, 2 Tim. iv. 2; 1 Pet. v. 2. Dubitanti innumera testimonia consensum extorquebunt. Eam autem cognitionem, ipsi, vel im-me-"date per revelationem assecuri sunt, vel ex assidua Scripturarum lectione, auxilium suppeditante Spiritu Sancto. Immediatam revela-tionem eos omnes habuisse, respectu eorum omnium quae Dei nomine alios docuerint, neque Scriptura affirmat, neque ipsi unquam de se jactitatur, neque ea in re sese apostolis æquiparârunt. "Num om-nes apostolii? num omnes prophetæ?" Imo studio, meditationi, Scripturarum lectioni sedulò incumbere, quo ad officium exsequendum, ope Spiritus Sancti sublevati, idonei redderentur, jussi sunt, vid. 1 Tim. iv. 12–16. In hunc etiam finem, χαρίσματι πιστωτικοῖς, sapientiae nempe, intelligentiae, discretionis, ac sermonis, seu facultatis quosque, per eum qui nihil frustra agit, cumulatissime instructi fuere. Neque eo volente fit, ut quis in sudario talenta seponeret.


Sect. 32. Sanctorum omnium, juxta mentem Dei in ipsis Scriptu-ris consignata et celebrata, praxis, fanaticorum delirium amentiae et inaudite superbiae convincit. Quænam fuerit sanctorum Dei sub veteri testamento mens aut sententia, quibus potissimum negotii, res divinas quod attinet, occupati fuere, suo exemplo docet nos Davides. Nihil pæne aliud vita eorum fuit, quàm in verbo, statutis, et testimonii Dei, negotiatio; ea legere, omni studio et diligentia versare, in iis sese exercere, negotium fuit et voluptas. Quid copiosius? quid sublimius, sanctiusve unquam dici poterat, quàm exerci-tium hoc sanctorum omnium quotidianum, in Ps. cxix. a Davide cele-bratum? Uti hinc orditur descriptionem beati viri, Ps. i. 2, ita in

Vol. XVI.
eodem eam finit. Cui vero fini aut bono, verbum ipsum tam sedulù excussisse censendi sunt, atque in eo evolvendo assidue sunt versati? Quid aliud anhelarunt, nisi ut mentem et voluntatem Dei inde discerent, atque ita sapientes fieren ad salutem? Hoc iis intime in votis erat, hoc coelitus precibus expetebant. Sancti etiam sub novo testamento, nonne, verbum concupiscere, recipere, in eo se delectari, meditari, ut crescant in cognitione Dei, dicuntur, vel jubentur? Istiusmodi hominibus nefas fuisse, sententiam illius excutere, et sensum scrutari, nemo, opinor, dicet. An verisimile sit Deum voluisse, ut, cum Judæis, ipsas literas in numerato haberent, vel ut carmen aliquod incantatorium, cujus syllabis quamvis non intellectis vis quædani occulta subesse, Scripturam legerent, facile est judicare: imo, ut veritatem discernere et judicare, ita Spiritus probare tenebantur; per quam tandem regulam? spiritum tuum privatam? At qui demum eorum Spiritus erit lapsis Lydiius? Annon alii eum per suum Spiritum examinare debeant? At hujus acervi finitor, non facile inveniatur. Qui communem aliquam regulam probandi Spiritus, atque sistendi omnes controversias, esse nollet,illos omnes immunes, haec infinitas esse velit. Regulam istam Scripturam esse superius pro-bavimus. At qui potest esse regula, nisi intelligatur; aut qui intelligi sine sensús scrutatione et sententiae expositione? Porro, ut per “habitum sensus habeamus exercitatos ad discretionem boni et mali,” exigitur, Heb. v. ult., in quà autem palestra, aut quemadmodum exercitari debent sensus nostri spirituales? An aliò quam ad verbum Dei amandam in simus? At vero sensus exercitatos habere in verbo Dei, ad discretionem boni et mali, nihil aliud est quam facultatem discernendi veritatem, seu mentem Dei in verbo propositam obtinere. Ita olim ex Scripturis de salute exquisiverunt, atque eas scrutati sunt prophetæ ipsi, 1 Pet. i. 11, 12, atque ita etiam mater Timothei, ipsa prior edocta, 2 Tim. i. 5, filium in verbo erudivit, cap. iii. 14, 15.

Sect. 33. Imo, tam certum est quàm quod certissimum, Deum in infinita sua sapientia, eam voluntatis suæ declarationem quæ in verbo scripto continetur, ita temperasse, atque totam ejusdem revelandi methodum eo ordine disposuisse, ut necessitatem interpretationis in ecclesia continuanda, quamdiu ipsum verbum continuetur, extra omnem dubitationis alem poneret. Hinc non solùm docvnta illa, quæ superius memoravimus, frequentius in Scripturis occurrit; neque ordine ullo θανξηρικῷ, quæ facilliora sunt cognitù disponuntur; sed et inπιοκαὶ quam plurima, non nisi per legitimam interpretaciónem exploranda et concilianda, hic illic apparent; præterea, quæ τροπικῷ et figurate intelligi debent, loca sunt innumera. Quid ergo dicemus; cùm inæstimabile prorsus verbi sui beneficium apud homines Deus collocare voluerit, nonne illud etiam simul iis usui et fructui esse voluerit? nonne ut summò apud eos esset honore et
pretio? Qui verò de sermone aut verbo illo maguifice sentirent homines, quod ab iustitiorum convicio et culpâ expedire non possint? aut quis usus aut fructus ex verbo non intellecto, et quod exponere fas non est, percipi potest? age ideo si viri sint fanatici, experiantur vires, et quid de locis istiusmodi, sepositâ et rejectâ omni interpretatione, sentiendum sit, ostendant.

Sect. 34. Restant objectiones paucissimis diluendae. Quamvis enim me neque in libros fanaticorum editis legisse, neque ex ipsis circa insana sua dogmata coram litigantibus, quod ullius ponderis sit aut momenti, audivisse memini, tamen quae in contrarium affiri posse videntur, strictim refellere visum est.

Sect. 35. Primò autem, "Cùm omnis Scriptura sit θεότητος, nonnisi θεοτητατος, ac vi immediate inspirationis et revelationis, eam interpretari debere, aequum esse videtur. At vero ii, qui inter nos quotidie hunc sibi sumunt honorem, interpretandi Scripturam, neque θεότητος sunt, neque ullam immediatam revelationem de sensu verbi se a Deo accepsisse jactitare audent; ideoque omnes æque a munere isto obeundo, arcendi sunt."


2. Revelatio mentis divinae ab ipso Dei sinu, antea incognitæ, et expositio voluntatis divinae ex Scripturis, jam revelatae, adeo inter se differunt, ut nulla ratio fingi possit, cur illius regula, hujus etiam regula esse debeat. Ut quis ex abysso infinitæ Dei sapientiæ, men- tem et voluntatem ejus revelet, necesse erat, ut esset unde πνευματος ἄγιον φερόμενον, cum Spiritus iste solus scrutetur profunditates Dei; ut quis, autem, veritatem in scripturis revelatam aliis exponat, satis est, si χαριμασι allis πνευματικισ sit instructis.

Sect. 36. Sed nihil agit interpretatione, nec quicquam promovet; aut πρακτικει ἐπι τῷ χειριν; ideoque aut frustra est aut pernicios. Quid enim? an hoc laudi duci potest, ea quæ in se certa sunt, incerta ut sint efficiæ; an hoc aliud est, quam dare operam ut cum ratione insanias? Etenim infallibile verbum Dei, per interpretationem fallibilem, fallibile redditur; quodque verbum Dei fuerit atque ipsa veritas, errori obnoxium, si non reapse falsum, efficitur. Omni enim interpretationi humanae falsum subesse posse, quoniam interpretes nullo respectu sint αναμάρτητου, constat. Nemo itaque, dum interpretationibus nitisit, nomine et auctoritate Dei alios alloqui debet, cùm non ipsum Dei verbum, ac puram putam veritatem loquitur; sed privatas suas conjecturas enarrat. Apparet ideo, totum illud ministerium, quod in interpretatione et prædicatione verbi scripti consistit, vanum, incertum, inutile et prorsus supervacaneum esse. Atque haec cardo est, in quo omnia illa sophismata versantur, quibus
auctor "Quæestionis Erotematicæ ad Ecclesias Reformatas" imperitis laqueos injicere summâ ope nititur.

Sect. 37. R. Cùm de verbi ministerio ordinario alibi plura nobis dicenda sint, quæ, in objectione hac, illa speciali modo oppugnare dentur, suo loco redarguenter. De interpretatione Scripturæ in genere jam agendum. Dico ideo:—

1. Quamvis, absolute loquendo, omnes verbi interpretes sint fallibiles, id tamen nihil officit eorum ministerio, multo minus incertum reddit aut inutile. Etenim cum Deus populum suum, sensus habere velit "exercitatos ad discretionem boni et mali," atque unctionem illis dederit, quæ de omnibus eos doceat, Heb. v. ult., 1 Joh. ii. 27, unà cum constanti et immutabili omnis doctrinæ et veritatis explorandæ regulâ, ad quam quidem regulam doctrinam apostolicam, non sine laude, olim exigeabat eorum auditores; tale ministerium, quod omnia ad lapidem illum Lydium probanda et examinanda proponit, non potest non esse summe necessarium et utile.

2. Verbum rite et legitime interpretatum, etiamnum verbum Dei est; atque ipsa interpretatio, quatenus ab analogia fidei non recedit, infallibilis est, atque ipsissimum Dei verbum, materialiter, uti loquuntur, consideratum, atque reductive. Omnis itaque vera interpretationis infallibilis, hoc est, infallibilem exhibet veritatem; non ex infallibilitate interpretis, absolute considerata, sed verbi rite interpretati. Atque ita, qui absolute loquendo sunt fallibiles, respectu tamen ad regulam, hoc est, ipsum verbum, et causam omnis legitimæ interpretationis efficientem habito, verbum Dei infallibiler interpretari possunt. At vero defectus nostri, in officio quocunque præstando, ipsum officium irritum reddere non possunt, nec debent.

Sect. 38. Obiecunt tandem miras interpretum inter se digladiationes, atque in interpretando contradictiones, hoc vero interpretum, non interpretationum, operantium non operis ex vitio cum sit, ad quæstionem propositam nihil omnino facere videtur.

EXERCIT. III.

De perfectione Scripturæ.

Sect. 1. Perfectionis sacrarum Scripturarum, integralis scilicet, quæque finem earum proprium respicit (quam intoleranda prorsus quorumandam nequitia pernecessariam fecit), defensionem suscipientes, operæ pretium facturi videantur, si consensus summum, atque concordem ipòvov omne genus hereticorum in ea velicandâ, paucis præmittamus, Joh. xx. 31; Rom. xv. 4; 2 Tim. iii. 15.

Sect. 2. Quantum inter se distant, utque perpetuò invicem digladientur, Judæi, Pontificii, atque fanatici ἵνωσιστικοί, apud Christianæ
EXERCITATIONES ADVERSUS FANATICOS.

453

religionis amicos atque inimicos omnes, nimis trita est notitia. At
de thesi propositâ nulla pæne est varietas; quamvis enim ex justo
Dei judicio, sermo eis non est unicus,—imo ita sint inter se confusi,
ut vix intelligent alter sermonem alterius; tamen edificandæ turri, e
cujus fastigio, fastu quodam giganteo, signa inferant adversa. Scrip-
turarum perfectioni, solio illi Dei in terris, summâ consensione unà
omnes incumbunt.

Sect. 3. Imo, quod hic pacem inter se conjunctissime colant, sum-
mam rei quod attinet, in causâ est, quod in toto reliquo religionis
negoito, in arma confugiant, atque capitali odio, se mutuò prose-
quantar. Etenim si in sententiam hanc, cujus patrocinium pro viri-
bus suscipimus de plenitudine Scripturarum, lubentes discederent,
utque omnis, cujuscunque tandem generis, in religione controversia
verbo Dei sistatur, consentirent, errores isti tetricrimi, quorum causâ
lucem Scripturae fugientes, andabatarum more, in tenebris diancitant,
atque uti olim Hammonitæ, Moabitæ, et habitatores montis Seiris,
bellum adversus populum Dei suscipientes, internecioni se mutuò
devovent, ad lumen solis hujus, confestim evanescent.

Sect. 4. Cæterum, non isdem rationibus ducti, sed illi pro tradi-
tonibus, hi pro enthusiasm atque revelationibus suis, tanquam pro
aris focisque contendentes, atque ita, non secus ac Sampsonis vulpe-
culæ, obversis causis ignitas faces in segetes ecclesiae ferentes, cuncti
amicissime et loco suo sacram Scripturam deturbare aggregiuntur.

Sect. 5. Figmentum Judæorum ἰαζώνων, de duplici verbo a Deo
Mosi tradito;—uno, ipsum legem continente, quod Deus scribi voluit
et jussit; expositionem et proprium ejus sensum altero, Septuaginta
senioribus per oralem traditionem ab ipso Mose commisso, atque in
usum synagoge, continuâ successione per sacerdotes et sapientes
conservav;—totius apud eos cultûs divini, adeoque horrendæ superstî-
tionis et idololatriæ quibus omnia illorum sacra scatent, per aliquot
annorum centurias, radicem et fundamentum fuisse nemo pæne est
qui ignorant: nescientes vero summâtis docebit, R. M. B. M. præfat.
Seder-Zerajim.

Sect. 6. Innumeras sane, casque superstitiosissimas traditiones
verbum Dei αὐσπιστρας, a magistris nescio quibus, temporibus Machabé-
orum, cum primum in varias sectas dissiluit scribarum et doctorum
turba, atque deinceps inventas, prætextu exactioris cultûs et obedi-
entiae, populo obtrusive Pharisæos; tum cùm Dominus noster Jesus
Christus in terris versatus est, ex severis ipsius increpationibus, ad-
versus id hominum genus directis, discimus. At vero distinctionem
istam, in universam religionis atque cultûs Dei perniciem excogitatam,
tanquam totius religionis ipsorum fundamentum, non nisi decursis
aliquot annorum centurii, postquam immane traditionum plaustrum
in ecclesiis invexerat primi fabulatores, venditantab posteri.
Sect. 7. Destructo etenim templo, eversâ per inauditas clades totâ republicâ, cultu qui Judæis proprius fuit, omnibusque adeo ceremoniis a Deo repudiatis atque remotis, (utpote quæ tantùm μετάξι ἀναφέρεται διδακτικῶν instituta fuere), populus superbes, rebellis, et incredulus, spiritu atque vero sensu verbi Dei destituatus, omnino sine Deo atque cultu omni divino relictus est, Heb. ix. 10; Hos. iii. 4. Ne ideo scelerum flagitiormque poenâ vexati, horrenda sua patrumque crimina ex supplicio universis paterent, nonnulli illorum, audax facinus aggressi, traditiones hinc inde dispersas, in unum quasi corpus et systema colligentes,illas ingenti ex Ethniciismo, atque etiam Christianismo perverse distorto, mantissâ ampliatas, pro orali istâ lege, quam unà cum Scripturâ Deum Mosi tradidisse somniant, unudinati sunt.

Sect. 8. Hoc vero nihil aliud fuit, quàm hominem in incredulitate et inobedientia obduratorum, a Deo rejectorum, inceptum, quo religionem aliquam, infidelitatis sua prætextum, haberent; cum probe perceperint, se usque adeo a prioris illius, quam coluerunt, observantiæ esse rejectaneos, ut neque ipsi sibi in ea placere potuerint. De quibus omnibus, εἴν ποιῶ nos fusiùs alibi agemus, sicut et egisimus.

Sect. 9. Insaniâ itaque istâ perciti, non tantùm eos omnes qui de gente suâ soli Scripturæ se unice adhererent profitentur aspernantur, sed etiam karaim, aut (sensu eodem) uti loqui amant pontificii, scripturarios, seu biblistas vocantes, pessimorum haereticorum loco eos habent.


Sect. 11. Iisdem vestigiis insistunt fanatici nostrates (quibus ad nequitiam hane viam patefecerunt, qui inter pontificios spiritualæ dicuntur) non traditionum sane uliarum gratiâ, sed enthusiasmos nescio quos, jactantes,—lucem internam atque infallibilitatem quandam inde emergentem.


Sect. 13. "Salvo traditionis apostolicæ fundamento, nihil noxiæ


Sect. 16. Fanaticos nostrates, qui præmium strenuæ contra Scripturarum perfectionem oppositioni debitum, a nullo mortalium sibi præreptum vellent, impræsentiarum nos aggreminur; et sane quàd Deo gratiose placuerit, provinciam hanc, adversus verbi sui hostes dimicandì nobis indignis delegare, uti nobis est honorificum, ita quicquid, ope ejus atque auxilio fæti, munere mandato fungentes perficiemus, gratiae divinæ in solidum acceptum ferre debemus.

Sect. 17. Quænam autem sit horum hominum de usu atque perfectione Scripturarum sententia, non facile quis declarabit: præter quam enim quod inter se non conveniant, ita inepte atque odiose in explicandis animi sui sensibus garriunt, dubiæ et incertæ significations vocibus ludunt, peregrinis quibusdam phrasibus, quæ imperitos homines aut terreat aut alliciant, nihil sani sensus, aut quod ab ulla sana mentis intelligi possit, continentibus perpetuo utuntur, ut multo faciliùs sit argumenta eorum profigare, quam mentem percipere. Imo cum turpis et inhonestà sit eorum sententia, quæ enucleate exposita, remotis strophis atque fucis, ipsa sibi apud probos omnes, etiam non palam improbos, satìs esset ad exitium, datà operà quâ imposturam faciant, vel ipsum non palam eloquentur, vel verbis ita consutis et consarcinatis, ut nihil præne omnino significent, eam manganizant, atque ita inscute consilium sermonibus obtenebrantes, nihil magis cavere videntur, quam ne intelligantur. Ómissis ideo iis omnibus quæ gregis hujus præcipui errores et coryphaei, hic illic impie et blaspheme in sacras Scripturas provocati dixerunt, quæ sit communis eorum sententia, ex libris ab ipsis editis atque colloquuis

1 Coster.
iis cum institutis, quibus in loquendo multi sunt et inepti, deprompta et collecta, paucis et, si fieri possit, luculentem exponendum duxi.

Sect. 18. Primo ideo, quatenus Scripturas sacras, manifestationem voluntatis et mentis divinæ continere agnoscunt, superioribus disputatibus ostendimus. Eas autem ita se habere, respectu illorum qui illas scripsent, atque illorum etiam, quibus ab initio traditae fuerunt, concedunt. Porro, declarationem hanc voluntatis divinæ, a Spiritu Christi, qui scriptoribus ejus adfuit, unde veritatem infallibilem declarare poterant, processisse profitentur. Atque ita quicquid in iis libris scriptum est, pro vera et indubitata mentis divinæ declaratione agnoscunt. Hactenus recte quidem; neque enim quisquam hucusque progressus, Scripturam penitus rejicere potest, nisi una etiam, se plane ἀὐτοκατάχριτον esse declaret; neque huic confessioni remutiare facile sustinebunt, quamvis ita tenebris offusis sit eorum sermo, atque inconditarum vocalium et phrasium fuliginem ita ob oculos jaciant, ut quid sibi velint, vel conjecturis assequi sit perdifficile.

Sect. 19. Neque sane negari potest, locutas hasce, cum primum ex fumo putei prodierint, Scripturas magis sibi despicatui habuisse, atque contemptum magis de iis plerumque fuisse locutas, quam nunc dierum publice loqui sustinent; ita ut nulli dubium esse possit, quin si res eorum secundum vota successissent, eas dudum penitus rejicissent. Omissa itaque confessione istà, quam iis non vis veritatis, sed popularium ubivis aliquà reverentia verbi Dei ductorum in capita ipsorum involans furor extorsit, quid porro de declaratione hac mentis divinæ sentiunt, videamus.

Sect. 20. Primo ideo, negant Scripturas ordiniam, immotam, perfectam, et stabilem cultus divini, atque obedientiæ nostri ita regulam esse, ut nihil opus sit aliis, novis, quotidianis revelationibus, quibus in cognitione Dei, atque officio nostro, ulterius instruamur. Deinde, seipsos, eodem Spiritu afflari, quo olim sancti Dei homines acti prophetiam attulerunt, atque verbum Dei scripsent, affirmant: ideo omnia ea quae circa res sacras ipsi loquentur, non minus immediate a Deo, atque Spiritu esse, neque minus infallibilia, neque minoris in ecclesia usûs, quam ipsæ Scripturæ. De Spiritu vero hoc, quem se obtinuisset gloriantur, cùm ad lumen illorum deuentum est, postea agendum.

Sect. 21. Addunt præterea, quod cum quis intra se, se receperit ad lumen internum, eoque Spiritum Christi habeat, illius respectu totus Scripturarum finis obtinetur, neque ei amplius usui sunt; abs eò autem Spiritu ducti, qui communis est omnibus, verùm notus tantùm fidelibus, hoc est, hisce fanatìcis, opus præterea non habent, vel doctrinâ vel auctoritate Scripturarum, cum sint ipsi αὐτοκαταχριτον, si iis fidem adhibere æquum sit.
Sect. 22. Cùm verò hæc summa sit horum hominum sententiae, quam, verborum multitudine rudium animos labefactantes, ubivis effundunt, appareat eos, omni usu, auctoritate ac perfectione, sacras Scripturas spoliare. Quæ enim esse possit ejus verbi auctoritas, quod ab insano cujusvis fanatici nebulonis strepitu in ordinem cogatur? Qui usus, cùm ita impleatur, ut ad illud nemini mortalium opus sit amplius attendere? Quæ perfectio, cùm eo non obstante, necesse sit cuivis ad vitam æternam pervenire volenti aliis revelationibus afferri; atque lumen nescio quo, cui nihil commune est cum Scripturis, tanquam doctorem infallibilem sequi, et in omnibus ei obedire.

Sect. 23. Illius ergo Scripturarum adjuncti, quod perfectio ejus dicitur, defensionem imprimiariam suscipientes, contra hominum insanam superbiam, primò, quæ sit de eo nostra sententia, deinde quibus argumentis eam stabilimus, atque fanaticorum errorem falsitatis convincimus, summas rerum tantùm persequens, cursim ostendam.

Sect. 24. Deus sacrae Scripturarum auctor cùm sit agens nobilissimus, ut propter finem agat necesse est. Eum ideo in illâ voluntatis suae declaratione, quæ in sacrâ Scriptura continetur, finem aliquem constituendum habuisse, certum est; finis autem cùm duplex sit, primum ultimum et remotum, deinde immediatus aut proximus, de utroque sigillatim agendum est. Finem verò ultimum, supremum, et generaliter, hujus revelationis voluntatis Dei, ipsius Dei gloriam esse statuis; cùm enim omnia operatus sit Dominus propter se, atque gloriam suam, certe eximium hoc opus, a liberâ sua voluntate procedens, ob nullum alium finem produxit, neque producere potuit. Finis proximus et immediatus ostendit unde atque quomodo, ex hoc opere, seu ex hac declaratione voluntatis suæ, exsurget hæc Dei gloriam, unique, quænam sit ista gloria, speciali modo considerata. Directionem itaque nostram in cognitione Dei, atque obedientiâ ei prestandâ, ita ut tandem voluntatem ejus facientes, salutem æternam atque ipsius fruitionem assequamur, hune finem immediatum dationis Scripturarum, atque adeo ipsarum Scripturarum, esse contendimus. Hic enim idem est finis operantis, atque operis: quod Deus per Scripturas intendit, illud ipsum illæ efiuient, scilicet moraliter, modo operationis ipsis proprio. Apparret ideo gloriam illum summam, quam Deus intendit, in adductione hominum peccatorum ad sui cognitionem et cultum atque vitam æternam consister; cùm verò disciplinæ cujusvis perfectio consistat in relatione ad finem, eaque perfecta habenda sit, quæ sufficiens est respectu finis sui proximi, ea verò imperfecta, quæ finem propositum assequi potis non est, perfectio Scripturarum in nullâ aliâ ne consistere potest, quàm in sufficientiâ suâ, respectu finis sui proprii, qui est instructio hominum in cognitio et cultu Dei, ita ut salutem æternam assequantur.
Hoc ideo sensu Scripturam regulam esse perfectissimam totius cultus divini, atque obedientiam nostrae, asserimus.

Sect. 25. Sententia itaque nostra de sacrarum Scripturarum perfectione, in relatione ad finem suum, quam contra pontificios, fanaticos, aliosque, accurate defendimus, hisce conclusionibus continentur.

1. Deus omnia et singula, cujuscumque tandem generis, quae sunt ad nostram salutem necessaria, vel quae sunt in cultu suo sibi grata et accepta, in sacris Scripturis declaravit.

2. Omnia quae Deus ita revelavit continentur in Scripturarum libris, vel αὐτὸλεξί, et expresse, vel xατὰ σωνακαλοδην, atque inde per proximam, immediatam, planam consequentiam, eliciumur.

3. Nihil iode ipus est, vel traditionibus antiquis, vel revelationibus novis, vel cujuscumque ecclesiae auctoritate, ut ea revelentur vel constituantur, quae in negotio religionis, sunt nobis necessaria vel Deo accepta.

4. Cum Deus sit Zelotes, atque gloriam suam aliena dare nolit, nonnisi intolerandae est superbia, sub quocumque prætextu id fiat, aliquid hominibus, fide divinâ credendum vel cultu divino observandum, quod non sit ab ipso in Scripturis revelatum, proponere.

5. Cum itaque revelationes quas jactitant fanatici, sint vel alienae, hoc est aliam doctrinam continentem quâm quae in Scripturis revelatur, vel alien tantum a revelationibus hisce divinis; illas blasphemas, horrendas, diabolicas, exsecrandas, has vanas, inutiles, utrasque falsas esse statuimus.

6. Lumen illud internum, cujus obtentu, homines a perfectione et plenitudine Scripturarum avocant fanatici, res est omnino ficta, atque commentum crasse excogitatum.

7. Scripturam itaque sacram ita regulam esse perfectissimam, in eum finem a Deo nobis traditam, ut ad ipsius gloriam, æternam salutem assequeremur, ut post completum quem vocant ejus canonom, nullâ novâ revelationes circa fidem communem sanctorum, aut Dei cultum, aut exspectandae sint, aut admissendae, credimus et profitemur.

Sect. 26. Sententiam autem hanc ita expositam probatum imus, primò auctoritative, deinde ratiocinative; testimonia vero quibus contra quosvis μισογráφος communiter eam probant nostri theologi, ad classes sequentes referri possunt.

Prima ea loca continet, quae expressa et xατὰ ἴπτων, vel per immediatam consequentiam, perfectionem hanc Scripturis ascribunt: cujus generis sunt, Joh. xx. ult.; 2 Tim. iii. 13–16; Ps. xix. 7; Luc. i. 3, 4, xvi. 29; Act. i. 1; Rom. x. 17; Eph. ii. 19, 20; 2 Pet. i. 19; 2 Cor. iii. 14; Gal. vi. 16.

Secunda testimoniorum classis expressa rejicit omnes, quasqunque tandem, ad verbum Dei scriptum additiones. Deut. iv. 2, xii. ult.;
Apost. xxii. 18; Gal. i. 8; Matt. xv. 6; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Esa. viii. 20, ad hanc classem pertinent.

Tertia eorum est, quae exempla sanctorum apostolorum, atque ipsius Christi, omnia ad sacras Scripturas explorantium ac explorari jubentium, proponunt, Luc. xvi. 27–31; Act. xvii. 2, 3, xviii. 24, 28, xxvi. 22. Atque plurima alia in hunc finem communiter citantur.

Quartò, Quae in omnes religionis usus sacras Scripturas commendant quartam testimoniorum classem constituant, Jehos. i. 8; Deut. xxviii. 58; Luc. xxiv. 27; Joh. v. 39; Rom. xv. 4; Phil. iii. 1; 1 Joh. i. 4, ejus generis sunt; omnia vero hanc testimonia, ita dudum αναφηκτος ab exceptionibus pontificiorum aliorumque, a nostris theologis vindicata sunt, ut ei operi ulterius incumbere haud opus sit.

Sect. 27. Omissis etiam iis quae adversus pontificios pro perfectione Scripturarum ratiocinative disputari solent, iis quae fanaticorum lumen aut spiritum internum, novas revelationes, enthusiasmos, colloquia cum angelis, atque id genus furfuris reliqua, planissime evetunt, paucis insistemus.

Sect. 28. Argumentum ideo nostrum primum ita se habet: Si revelatio voluntatis divinae in Scripturis facta, ita sit perfecta, integra atque omnibus numeris absoluta, ut nihil opus sit ullâ aliâ revelazione, per Spiritum, aut lumen internum, enthusiasmum, afflatum celestem, colloquia angelica, fictâ vel factâ, ad nos in cognitione Dei, atque officio nostro, in hunc finem ut assequamur vitam aeternam ad gloriam Dei, instruendum, tum incerta, periculosâ, inutilia, minime necessaria ea omnia media ad cognoscendum Deum atque voluntatem ejus, ideoque rejicienda atque detestanda esse, quæ simulant fanatici, appareat. Jam vero perfectionem dictam Scripturarum probamus:—1. Ab earum auctore, Deo scilicet, a quo nihil imperfectum ullo modo, multo minus respectu finis, cui opus quodcumque destinat, procedere potest. A causâ perfectâ voluntariâ, non nisi perfectum exspectari debet. Deo enim voluntatem suam revelare volenti, nihil impedimento esse potuit, quo minus eam perfecte revelaret, quâm vel quia non potuit, quod infinitae ejus sapientiae atque omnipotentiae, vel quod non voluit, quod bonitati ac gratiae ipsius minime convenit. Perfectam ideo dedit voluntatis sua revelationem. 2. A naturâ librorum sacrarum Scripturarum; sunt autem libri Veteris et Novi Testamenti. Ita diserte apostolus de libris Veteris Testamenti, 2 Cor. iii. 14, 'Esti τῇ ἀγαγώσῃ τῇ ταλαιᾷ διάθκες. Novi Testamenti eadem est ratio versus 6. Jam vero omne Testamento quamvis humanum sit, perfectum est. 'Ανθρώπου κενυρομίνη διαθήκη εὖδεο λευτερ ἦ ἀσιτατάσσεται nullus irritum facit, aut aliquid ei superaddit, [Gal. iii. 15.] 3. Ab expresso testimonio: Ps. xix. 7, 'Doc-
trina seu lex Jehovah integra," i. e., perfecta. 4. A materia, quae est omne Dei consilium: "Nec quicquam dicens extra ea quae prophetae ac Moses praedixerunt," Aet. xxvi. 22. 5. A fine, qui est fides: "Hæc scripta sunt ut credatis," Joh. xx. 31; "Fides ex auditu," Rom. x. 17; "Æsopæia fidei," Luc. i. 4; "Sapientia ad salutem," 2 Tim. iii. 15, 2 Pet. i. 19; instructio perfecta ad bona opera, 2 Tim. iii. 17; acquisitio vitae æternae, Joh. v. 39, xx. 31. Omni ideo respectu revelatio hæc est perfecta.

Sect. 29. Secundum nostrum argumentum a perfectâ operatione, seu effectu Scripturarum, sumitur; quod sic se habet: Si Scriptura sacra ea omnia efficat, suo genere operationis ac efficaciae, moralis scilicet, quæ per ullam revelationem voluntatis divinæ effici possint, quò debito ac sincero cultu Deum adoremus, et tandem ad salutem æternam perveniamus, tum inania sunt alia ista principia cognitionis Dei, de quibus, falsè licet, gloriantur fanatici. At verum prius: etenim, "Lex Dei est integra, restituens animam," Ps. xix. 7; "Lucterna pedibus nostris et lux itineri," Ps. cxix. 105; "Potentia Dei ad salutem," Rom. i. 16; "Sapientem reddit hominem ad salutem," 2 Tim. iii. 15; "Et ad omne bonum opus perfecte instructum," ver. 17; "Potens est servare animas nostras," Jacob. i. 21, 1 Tim. iv. 16. Aliqua omnia perfectè quæ sunt necessaria ad Dei gloriam et salutem nostram; sicut videre est, Esa. lv. 10, 11; Jer. xxi. 29; Joh. viii. 31, 51, xvii. 20; Rom xv. 4; Heb. iv. 12. Ergo inania sunt, falsa, etc.

Sect. 30. Tertium argumentum oritur ex iis locis ubi Spiritus Sanctus gravissime damnat et rejiciat omnia additamenta ad verbum Scripturarum, cujuscunque tandem generis sint, ac speciatim omnes istas vias et modos cognitionis Dei, ac cum eo communionis, quos jactitant fanatici. Omnes additiones ad verbum Dei scriptum rejici ac damnari a Spiritu Sancto, apparat ex secundâ testimoniiorum classe, quæ superiùs adduximus; praesertim angelorum alloquia: Col. ii. 18, Μηδεὶς υπός καταξεβευτώ Ὑλῶν ἐν ταυτευφρωσύνῃ καὶ Σημαντεὶ τῶν ἀγγέλων, ἀ μὴ ἰώρακεν ἰματισών, εἰκὴ θυσιώμενος ὑπὸ τοῦ νοῦς τῆς αφίκης αὑτοῦ. Heb. i. 2, 4; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Luc. xvi. 29;—revelationes cùm alienas a verbo scripto, suo doctrinam peregrinam et ab eo alienam continentes: Gal. i. 8, 'Εὰν ἡμᾶς ἡ ἀγγέλως ἡ οὐρανῶν εὐαγγελιζήτω τινες ἡμῖν παρ' ἐυγαγγελισμῶν ὡμός, ἀνάθεμα ἰσως' 2 Pet. i. 19;—tum ulias tantum; Apoc. xxiii. 18, 'Εὰν τις ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ταῦτα ἐπιθυμήσαι ὁ θεὸς ἐπὶ αὐτῶν τὰς πληγὰς τὰς γεγυμαμίνας ἐν βιβλίῳ τούτῳ. Heb. i. 1, 2; 1 Cor. iv. 6; Col. ii. 18;—deinde spiritum fanaticorum internum, seu lumen internum, omnibus commune, 1 Joh. iv. 1; Esa. viii. 19; 2 Pet. ii. 18. De quo, sequente disputatone, agendum est.

Sect. 31. Quartum argumentum nostrum ita se habet: Si sapissime a Deo nobis præcipiatur atque edicator, ut Scripturis seu verbo
suo diligentem attendamus, ne abripiamur, et ne divertamur a veritate atque recta sui cognitione, per Spiritus decipientes, revelationes, vanas imaginationes, falsos doctores, somnia, visiones, enthusiasmos; alloquia angelica jactitantes, tum horum omnium respectu, perfectissima illa est regula de quâ verba facimus. Verum autem prius: imo tam clara et illustra sunt testimonia huic assertioni fidem facientia, ut ad solem cœcutiœ necessse est, qui iis assentire nolit. Ex horum numero sunt, Esa. viii. 19, 20, "Quum enim edicunt vobis, Consulte pythones aut ariolos, qui pipiœnt, et qui mussitant. Legem et testimonium consolumento: annon loquuntur in sententiam illum cuicumque nulla est lucis scintilla;" 2 Tim. iii. 13–17; 2 Pet. i. 19. Atque ea etiam ubi verbi sacri certitudo, usum ecclesiæ quod attinet, verarum revelationum et miraculosarum certitudini præfertur, Luc. xvi. 29; Joh. v. 47; 2 Thess. ii. 2; 2 Joh. 5, 6, 10. Verum ergo posterius.

Sect. 32. Argumentum quintum: Illud ad quod nunquam, nusquam a Deo mittimur, ut inde, seu ex eo discamus sui cognitionem, et voluntatis suœ, vel ut inde directionem in officio nostro summam, illud non potest esse, fidei, cognitiones, doctrineœ aut obedientiæ nostrœ regulœ, canon, principium, aut, si ita loqui liceat, directorium; at verœ ad lumen internum, seu Spiritum internum privatœ, ad novas revelationes, ad enthusiasmos, somnia, visiones, nunquam, nusquam a Deo ablegavmur: ergo, etc. Proferant fanatici, vel unum sacrae Scripturœ locum, vel ullam cœlitus demissam testimonium, quo ad eorum fidei et obedientiæ regulœ seu directiones mittimur aut nos, aut ulli alii qui ad Deum accedere vellent, et causam non dicimus quin triumphent serœ. Si autem de suo tantœm loquantur, mendaces sunt; testimonium sibi gerunt, neque verum est eorum testimonium.

Sect. 33. Sextœ. Ea omnia quœ examinari et probari debent, imo quœ nos ad sacram Scripturam tanquam ad Lydium lapidem examinare et probare jubemur, utrum vera sint, atque veritati divine consentanea, cum summœ libertate, imo necessitate ea rejiciendi, si cum Scripturis sacris non conveniant, ea neque seorsim neque simul considerata, aut cultœs Dei, aut fidei et obedientiœ nostrœ possunt esse regulœ aut directiones, neque propter se sunt credibilita; at verœ prout ex testimoniis superiorœ allatis apparent, omnes revelationes, visiones, spiritus, somnia, enthusiasmos, ita explorare, examinare, et probare jubemur: ergo neque sunt regulae, neque per se fidem merentur. Vid. 1 Cor. xiv. 29; 1 Thess. v. 21; 1 Joh. iv. 1.

Sect. 34. Septimœ. Enthusiasmorum omne genus incertitudo, septimum nobis suppeditat argumentum: Quod omni modo, atque respectu est incertum, imo incertissimum et fallax, sive principium revelationis, sive res revelatas consideremus; ad illud, tanquam ad regulam et ducem in viae vitae, et cultu Dei, attendere non debemus:
at ea est omnium enthusiasmorum conditio. De doctrinâ ipsâ, seu rebus revelatis actum est argumento superiore: omnimodam autem incertitudinem hisce enthusiasmmis, respectu principii, seu ortûs, ascribimus, ea persuasione fredi,—


2. A præstigiis Satanæ. Hospes est in omni religione, qui non in- telligit, patrem hunc mendacioerum, a jactis mundi fundamentis, sub larvâ hâc revelationum ac afflatus interni, rationes suas ita callide composuisse, ut homines in fraudem impelleret, et unà secum in exitium traheret. Imo ob hanc praecipue causam, uti videatur, Deus verbum suum, prius ore traditum, scriptis concedere, ac sub suâ tu- telâ fidis librorum monumentis mandare voluit, ne dolis Satanæ per falsas visiones, fædas ἱγγαστημοδιας, oracula, revelationes, enthusiasmos implicitum, perpetuâ in salebras incidere quod ei curæ erat, humanum genus. Vid. 2 Cor. xi. 14; 1 Reg. xxii. 22; Zach. xiii. 2; Apoc. xvi. 13, 14; 2 Cor. ii. 11.

3. A contradictionibus quibus scatet spiritus enthusiasticus. Non enim tantûm unusquisque, visionem, revelationem, afflatum habet, sed ita fæde et aperte inter se a Spiritu immundo committuntur, ut vix duo eorum in eâdem revelatione et doctrinâ conveniant: sed mire digladiantes, adversas et contrarias sententias quotidie venditant. Etiam in nomine Dei se aliquoties mutuo devovent et exsecrantur: itaque nihil certi ab ipsis spectare licet.

Sect. 35. Octav. Doctrinas falsas, verbo Dei contrarias, hæreti- cas, perniciosas, blasphemas, lumen internum, et revelationes laudan- tes, sæpenuero, imo nunquam non e tenebris in solem producunt fanatici. Quid fiet, rogo, istis doctrinis daemoniorum? suntne reci- piendæ? Ideo, ut mos geratur Satanæ, repudietur atque abjiciatur evangelium necesse est; sintne ipsâ reæciendæ, ut, procul omni dubio, summâ detestatione diris addicendæ sunt, quid tum fiet de fide fana- ticonorum?

Sect. 36. Denique non levis est momenti, quòd, hisce principiis
nixi, hos duces sequiti, regulam verbi scripti rejicientes, in mores perniciosissimos, idololatrias nefarias, homicidia, scortationes, blasphemia, exitusque infelices, quotidie, ubivis gentium impelluntur fanatici; satis exemplorum in multorum scriptis fide dignis, ubique prostat.

Sect. 37. Restat ut quae causam suam pessimam sane agentes disceptant, atque contra sententiam nostram objiciunt, diluamus. Id porro fiet quan paucissimis.

Sic ergo procedunt:—

Ob. 1. Qui ejusdem Spiritus participes sunt cum iis qui verbum Dei olim locuti sunt, et illud scripsurunt, iis non opus est verbo scripto, seu Scripturâ, cum idem Spiritus eosdem effectus producat in omnibus in quibus est; ita ut illi omnes voluntatem Dei declarare valeant, non minus infallibriter quam scriptores Sceptrum. Omnes verò fideles, eum Spiritum habere, inde appareat quod iis promissus sit, Joh. xvi. 7; et omnes baptizati sunt in eundem Spiritum. Eorum ergo omnium respectu, Scriptura est inutilis, neque amplius ei adhaerere debent.

Resp. 1. Falsum est, eos sanctos Dei homines, qui aliquam partem verbi lus scripsurunt, opus non habuisse alias partes ejusdem verbi antea scripti consulere, ac mentem Dei inde ediscere. Daniel scriptor Sceptrum, “considerat ex libris,” Dan. ix. 2. “Prophetæ exquisiverunt et scrutati sunt Scripturas de salute quam isti predicabant,” 1 Pet. i. 10–12. 2. Falsum est scriptores Sceptrum totam Dei voluntatem semper habitualiter et infallibiler interlexissi, vi Spiritus prophetici vel δικαλ. σεφως quem receperant; cum saepem numero respectu unius particularis doctrinae, aut prophetiae iis datu sit. 3. Falsissimum est eos omnes qui ejusdem Spiritus participes fiant, in eundem finem, atque respectu eorumdem eum accipere. “Distinctiones donorum sunt, sed idem Spiritus,” 1 Cor xii. 4; “num omnes prophetæ?” ver. 29. 4. Omnes fideles acceptur Spiritum regenerantem, sanctificantem, consolantem; sed non respectu donorum extraordinariorum, prophetiæ scilicet, infallibilitatis, peculiaris inspirationis ad declarandam voluntatem Dei immediate, et infallibiler ab ipso Deo.

Sect. 38. Ob. 2. Instant: Spiritus iste promissus est, ut ducat nos in omnem veritatem.

Resp. Recte. Sed per media a Deo in eum finem instituta; ideo verbum unà cum Spiritu promissum est: “Hoc erit fœdus meum cum istic, ait Jehova; Spiritus meus qui est in te, et verba mea quæ posui in ore tuo, non recedent ex ore tuo, aut ex ore seminis tui,” Esæa lix. 21.

Sect. 39. Ob. 3. Postquam impleta est Scriptura, atque finem suum assecuta est, desinit esse usui; at Scriptura impleta est, et finem suum assecuta est in iis omnibus, qui ad Christum intus
latentem, adeoque lumen internum sunt adducti: ergo iis amplius usu non est.

Resp. 1. Concedimus majorem: etenim προφῆται καταργηθοῦνται, γλῶσσα παλαισται, 1 Cor. xiii. 8. 2. Minorem negamus. Falsissimum enim est, sacram Scripturam, dum in hoc mundo ἡρεμος, respectu nostri totum finem suum obtinere, aut obtinere posse; ideoque usque dum praeterierint cœlum et terra, “iota unum aut unus apex nequaquam prateribit ex lege,” Matt. v. 18, non enim tantum ingeneratio fidei, sed et in ea, dum Spiritum hunc ducimus, ædificatio, finis est Scripturae. 3. Est duplex ideo adductio ad Christum; per gratiam una, altera per gloriam. Quando quidem adducimus per Christum in gloria, cessabit Scripturae usus presenti statui accommodatus; videbimus enim eum sicut est, facie ad faciem, et similis est erimus. Quinetiam ipsa fides, quatenus verbo Dei scripto nitebatur, abolebitur: at non obstante iustæ istæ ad Christum adductionem per fidem et gratiam, non plus nobis opus est ut victu et vestitu, ut vitam hanc animalem traducamus, quam Scripturis ut ejus cognitione atque fide indicus erudiamur. Fanaticos vero non esse perfectos, neque ad Christum in gloria adductos, nobis testimonio sunt, illorum mendacia, fraudes, scelera, hypocrisis; ipsis vero, qui immunes se esse ab his omnibus aliisque peccatis vel levissimis, impudenter gloriantur, punitiones et incarcerations, quas ἄναρσαι sua sibi ulterius accersunt, de quibus multibriter quiritantur, esse debeant. Imo liquido constat, fanaticos nonnullos, minore periculo et damno, tentasse vitam hanc animalem per quadraginta dies sine victu traducere, quamvis id a quibusdam non tantum periculo, sed actuali vitae dispendor factum est, quæ vitam spirituali, sine verbi Dei usu, a mortiferis deliquiis immunnem praestare.

Sect. 40. Ob. 4. “Scriptura est litera mortua; Spiritus vivificat:” quis litera mortuæ, nisi ipse sit mortuus adhævere velit?

Resp. 1. Falsissima est ista assertio: Scriptura est verbum Dei, quod vivum est et efficax, Heb. iv. 12, neque uspiam litera esse mortuam dicitur: occidit quidem, sed idee viva est. 2. Litera occidit, quatenus litera legis est, ab evangelio separata, et quatenus a Spiritu, et vero sensu voluntatis Dei destituuntur, qui literæ adhærent, quæ Judæorum conditio fuit, contra quos eo loci disputat apostolus.

Sect. 41. Ob. 5. “Omnes filii tui erunt a Deo docti,” Esa. liv. 13; ergo aliæ institutione aut doctrinæ non opus est.

Resp. 1. Scriptura sacra est ipsa doctrina, quam a Deo docetur, Ps. cxxix. 2. Promissio facta est non omnibus, sed filiis ecclesiae. 3. Causa principalis instructionis, quæ rem ipsam effectam habet, non exclusit alias, quibus ipsa uti velit; Deus nos docet, sed per Spiritum et verbum, Matt. xxviii. 19, 20, 2 Cor. iv. 6, 7.

Resp. 1. Si verba hæc absolute intelligi debeant, tum aperte condemnatur horrida illa vociferatio, quâ per vicos urbis, agros, atque templâ quæ vocant, illud, "cognoscite Dominum" reboant fanatici. 2. Is tantûm docendi modus seu gradus rejicitur, qui necessarius est eorum respectu quorum cordibus lex non est inscripta: nam negatio ista docendi per amicos et fraterna effectus est inscriptionis legis in eorum cordibus: externus ideo rejicitur ille docendi modus, atque eorum respectu tantûm in quorum cordibus lex erat per gratiam inscribenda, quatenus usui erat ad convincendum eos in ipsius gratiae efficacijs absentia. 3. Uberior gratia, clarior cognitio, promptior observantia, promittuntur; instituta Dei non condemnantur.

Sect. 43. Ob. 7, ex Luc. xvii. 21, "Regnum Dei," inquit Servator, "in vobis est:" hoc est in impiis Pharisaïs; ergo in omnibus quibuscunque. Quid igitur opus est verbo regni exteriori cum ipsum regnum sit in omnibus?


VOL. XVI.
pompa mundana venturi, damnat; præsentiam regni in suâ personâ et prædicatione confirmat; fructum regni in homine interiori collocat; verbum suum nequaquam irritum facit.

---

**EXERCIT. IV.**

De lumine interno.

Sect. 1. De lumine agentibus, exorandus est "Pater" ille "luminum" a quo descendit omnis donatione bona, et omne integrum donum, ut spleneret in cordibus nostris, ad praebendum lucem notitiae glorie suæ in facie Jesu Christi, ut a potestate tenebrarum liberati, in sui cognitionem atque cultum rite dirigamur.

Sect. 2. Est autem lux increata vel creatâ. Quae increata est, Deus est: 'ο Θεός φως ἐστὶν, 1 Joh. i. 5; et φως εἰκὼν ἀπόρφασιν, 1 Tim. vi. 16; Λέγεται etiam, seu Filius Dei æternus, uti ζωή sic et φῶς dicitur, Joh. i. 4, 5. Lux autem hæc divina increata, quæ in Deo est, et quæ Deus esse absolute dicitur, essentia est divinae sapientiæ, sanctitatis, intelligentiae, simplicitatis, bonitatis, et nativum αὐτάρκεια, seu splendor, quo Deus summe perfectus, ab omnibus ignorantia, mutationis, injustitiae tenebris remotissimus, glorioso est αὐτάρκεια.

Sect. 3. Porro: lux Deus esse dicitur respectu ad creaturas habito, quatenus nimiram iis omnibus, omnis lucis fons atque auctor ipse solus est, atque semper exstitit. "Jehova lux mea," Ps. xxvii. 1; ο Λέγεται est lux hominum," Joh. i. 4; "Lux mundi," Joh. viii. 12, seu omnis veræ lucis fons et origo. Ut respectu gloriosæ suæ essentiae, ipse lucem inhabitat, ita respectu nostri, lux cum eo habitat, Dan. ii. 22, indeque emanat secundum beneplacitum voluntatis suæ. Deo etiam alio sensu lucem tribui in Scripturis apparat; nempe non quatenus essentialis est naturæ divinae proprietas, et infinita ejus splendescens majestas, neque quatenus creaturas luce perfundit, sed quâ est perfectionum divinarum effulgentia et fulgor, quæ in notitiam et conceptum rationalem cadunt. "Hac lux se amicit Deus, tanquam panno," Ps. civ. 2; "Et splendor ejus tanquam lux est," Hab. iii. 4. Ita olim visionibus apparuit Ezekieli, i. 27, 28; Danieli, vii. 9, 10, 11, aliisque; neque hoc a gloriam Dei, seu magnificam excellentiarum Dei Æstimatione, differt.

Sect. 4. Lumen creatum est vel naturale, sensibile, et proprium, seu metaphoricum. De lumine naturali, quo res visibles in sensatum notitiam inferuntur, nobis nihil dicendum est.

Sect. 5. Lumen metaphoricum duplex est,—conditionis et personæ.
Lumen conditionis est celebris cujuscunque status cum famâ et gloriâ. Sic gloria ecclesiae et res ejus prosperæ lux ecclesiae nunquam pantur, Isa. lx. 1, 3; gloria cælestis "sors est sanctorum in luce," Col. i. 12; et impii in æternum non sunt fruitorum luce, Ps. xlix. 19.


Sect. 7. Lumen internum subjecti, vel mentem et intellectum respicit, vel voluntatem et affectum. Sensu posteriori "lux sata est justo, et rectis animo lætitia," Ps. xcvii. 11; hoc est gaudium quo doloribus eorum subveniatur. "Qui lucem non habet?" Isa. l. 10; is est, cui pax, gaudium, et consolatio deest. Cum adversus Hamanem successum obtinuerint Judæi, lucem et lætitiam (gaudium et gloriam) eos assecutos fuisset dicit Scriptura, Esth. viii. 16. Luctus et dolores tenebras amant.

Sect. 8. Autem, quæ proprie mentem respicit, generaliter considerata, est vis ratiocinativa, seu facultas illa intelligendi quà omnis creatura rationalis prædicta est. Ei oû τὸ φῶς τὸ ἐν σοὶ σκότος ἵστη, τὸ σκότος πᾶσον; inquit Servator, Matt. vi. 23. Lux ista est ἤμισί διανοιας, ut veterum alicui placuerit, seu ζωμα τῆς σοφίας, ut alteri, et ὁφαλμὸς διανοιας. Mentem aliquid tenebris obscuratam esse scribit apostolus, Eph. iv. 18; hoc est, cocitata et ignorantia laborat eorum mens, seu intelligendi facultas;—eorum scilicet respectu, de quibus verba facit. Commune quidem hoc lumen omnibus est, sed non in omnibus æquale. Unus aliæ anteit sapientiâ: hic ingenio pollet, ille fungus, factus est; unus subtilissimâ ingenii acie præditus, alius omni rationis usu et exercicio destituitur.

Sect. 9. Lux autem hæc seu intelligendi facultas,—respectu objecti seu rerum cognoscendarum et intelligendarum,—in eam que est mere naturalis, quia res naturales in naturâ suâ absolute considerata, cum relatione ad finem suum proximum percipiantur; emque que circa res civiles que ad vitam hanc in mundo inter alios degendam spectant, versatur; atque illam, que res spirituales, omnique alia in ordine ad finem supernaturalem, spiritualem, et ultimum discernit,—dispescitur. De posteriori tantum agendum. Lumen autem hoc internum spirituale, seu facultas intelligendi πνευματικας πνευματικως, in ordine ad finem ultimum creaturae, pro vario ejus statu, varium fuit, atque etiamnum est.

Sect. 10. Cùm Deus hominem integrum seu perfectum (statum illum in quo, et finem ob quem factus est quod attinet), atque in ima-
gine suā creaverit, in confesso est, eum ex gratiosā Creatoris dispensatione, eo lumine, eā scientiā, seu sciendi et intelligendi facultate instructum fuisse, unde potis erat, modo salutari, omnia ea apprehendere, atque rite intelligere, quæ ei scitu vel intellectu necessariaullo modo erant, ut Deo secundum voluntatem ejus dicto esset obediens, atque ita tandem ad ejus fruitionem perveniret. De lapsu primorum parentum, peccati in mundum ingressu, statūs innocentiæ, atque fœderalis cum Deo acquisitionis amissione, de inimicitiiis inter Deum hominemque constitutis, utque homo lucis hujus primogeniae jactūrā sit multatus, nunc non est disserendi locus.

Sect. 11. In statu ideo, quem vocant, peccati, atque amissionis gratiae, omnibus hominibus mentis hoc lumen praestrinxit cæcitas, atque insuper tenebris sunt offusi, ita ut tum intus, tum extra, finem suum ultimum ac Dei gloriam quod attinet, merae sint tenebrae, neque enim aut ipsi sunt capaces eorum quæ Deus revelavit, ita ut ea modo salutari seu spirituali intellegent, neque ea revelatio voluntatis divinae, quam in statu innocentiæ habuerunt, sufficiens erat iis jam in peccato constitutis, ad Deum rite cognoscedam atque colendum. Primo respectu, ipsæ tenebrae vocantur, Joh. i. 5; Eph. v. 8. Mens et intellectus eorum obscurari dicitur, Eph. iv. 18; ipsosque res spirituales percipere non posse, affirmatur, 1 Cor. ii. 14; imo, eousque mortuos, cæcos, surdos, fatuos esse, ut neque scire possint aut intelligere res divinas, eo modo qui decret, ut Dei in gloriar aut his orum in salutem cedat, ubique pronuntiat Spiritus Sanctus. Secundo respectu, eos ambulare, sedere, esse in tenebris, nec scire quo vadunt, asseritur. Uteroque autem respectu Christus lux hominum est; nam cum nemo unquam Patrem viderit, hoc est, consilium aut voluntatem ejus de salvandis peccatoribus perspectam habuerit, unigenitus igitur Filius, qui est in sinu Patris, ille nobis exposuit, Joh. i. 18. Πολυγερίων autem et ποιητοίων, eum hoc fecisse constat, varissque gradibus veritatem latentem prius in sinu Patris, in lucem hominum produxisse, usque ad perfectum diem. Primò enim per Spiritum suum in prophetis, 1 Pet. i. 11, qui adventum suum in carne antecesserunt, suo ordine ac tempore quisque a seculo suque, Luc. i. 70, dubia quasi luce, tanquam lucescente in diem sole, Patrem exposuit. Decinde, in persona sua evangelium annuntiavit, pacem prædicans, ipsis qui prope, atque ipsis qui longe erant. Tandum exorto justitiae sole, cum curatione in alis ipsius; Spiritum suum Sanctum in apostolos suos, aliosque discipulos effudit, quo idonei reddentur præcones novi testamenti, et totum Dei consilium revelarent, ad præbendum lucem notitiae ipsius ad salutem omnium qui eis obedire vellent. Ita "populus positus in tenebris vidit lucem magnam; positis in regione et umbra mortis lux exorta est," Matt. iv. 16. "Vita et immortalitas in lucem productæ sunt per evangelium," 2 Tim. i. 10.
Hujus itaque expositionis Patris, seu revelationis voluntatis ejus de obediendiâ atque salute peccatorum, respectu, fatemur Christum lucem esse mundi, omniumque adeo hominum; non tantùm quia absque eo, nulla divina veritas revelabatur unquam, sed quia lux illa Scripturâ sacrâ fulgens, sufficiens est ad perfundendum omnes homines luce salutari, ad quos per Dei providentiam pervenerit. Sed de hac luce superius actum est.

Sect. 12. Cum verò ea sit mentis humanæ cæcitas, atque ita intellectus omnium tenebris sit offusus, ut quamvis eos undique circumfulgeat verbi divini lux, nihil omnino πενυματικῆς seu salutariter percipere possint, Joh. i. 5. Jesus Christus vera lux et vita hominum, vi Spiritus sui omnipotentis efficaci et verticordiâ, mortuos in peccatis excitat, cæcis aperit oculos, mentem dat ad cognoscendum verum illum, et potestate tenebrarum in admirabilem lucem suam transiit, novâ divinâ spirituali luce eos perfundit, quâ possint scire atque percipere res spiritualia, modo spirituali, ad Dei gloriam atque suo salutem.

Sect. 13. Christum verò non omnes et singulos, sed quosvis tantùm, hoc est electos, luce hâc divinâ perfundere atque salutariter illuminare, ita certum est ex innumeris Scripturâ testimoniis et omnium seculorum experientiâ, ut cæcis sit oportet, et omni spirituali intelligentiâ destitutus, qui contrarium vel unquam somnia-vertit.

Sect. 14. Lucis quidem scintillulas quasdam istius quam in statu innocentiâ et lege creationis suæ obtinuit primus homo, in posteris ejus adhuc splendescere fatemur. Non tantùm enim multæ xonai ενωναι, et veritatis principia in intellectu fixa hærent, quorum vis aliaes divinas percipere possint homines, atque inter bonum et malum morale discernere, sed ευπλοίδος ope, sibi etiam prospecere de officiis multis, respectu habito ad judicium Dei cui se subesse cognoscunt. Porro: lumen hoc adultis omnibus, per considerationem operum Dei tum creationis, tum providentiae, άδινον αυτω δίναμιν xai Σειότητα manifestantium, aliquibus vero per verbi prædicationem, αυγερι αc stabiliiri dicimus. Quousque verò lumen hoc ad obedientiam Deo præstandam, animos hominum dirigat, stimulet, impellat, utque per illud ἀναπολογήτου flant, nihil attinet hic loci subtilius disputare.

Sect. 15. Lux vero hæc nictans, neque e perniciosissimis tenebris emergens, illa est, quam tantopere prædicant nostrates fanatici, il-lamque nescio quem Deum, aut xίρας Αμαλθηίας, Deo quopiam melius, statuunt; nam,—

1. Negant lumen hoc naturale esse, aut ita dici debere; sed a Christo et Spiritu Christi esse, imo Christum ipsum esse, qui ita omnibus universum hominibus adsit.
2. *Aiunt salutare esse*, ejus nempe generis et efficaciam, ut ei in omnibus attendere debat, quisquis Deo placere, aut secundum voluntatem ejus obediere ei, velit.

3. *Sufficiens ad salutem*, atque ejusdem cum verbo Dei scripto auctoritatis, ita ut qui ei, prout decret, attendat, atque ei se morigerum et dicto obedientem praestet (quod facit quisquis officium suum facit, atque omnes sub poena æternæ damnationis facere tenentur), nullo alio *lumine*, neque *interno* illuminante et dirigente, neque *externo* voluntatem divinam revelante, opus habeat; hoc est, neque Spiritu intus illuminante, neque Scripturâ extra docente.

4. Denique lumen hoc Christum esse, qui olim in prophetis, apostolis, aliisque verbi divini scriptoribus fuit; ita ut ei ejus non minus infallibiliter voluntatem Dei ipsi exponere possint, quam olim scriptores *Deònuvstv*.

Sect. 16. Hæc vero τερατολογίων fanaticorum de luce interna summa est; hanc in tenebris, hanc in luce hominum magnifice jacit, strenue vociferantes, atque diris omnibus devoventes, quos eadem insania illicum non laborare sentiunt. Antea verò quam sophismata quibus sententiam suam stabilire satagunt, discutienda suscipimus, necesse est ut thesin nostram, vanissimo huic figmento oppositam, paucis subjugamamus et defendamus; ea verò his propositionibus continentur.

Sect. 17. 1. *Lumen internum* omnibus commune, aliqui principiorum veritatis notitiâ, et vi conscientiae consistens, naturale est, atque ita dicendum; hoc est, naturæ humanae a prima creatione inditum fuit, atque etiamnum ab ipsis naturæ principiis fluit: itaque lumen hoc a Christo non esse mediatore, quà est novi fœderis mediator, affirmamus, multo minus esse ipsum Christum.

2. *Lumen* hoc utcunque ei attendatur, non est ullo respectu salutare, sed in rebus omnibus divinis, finem ultimum quod attinet, mœne tenebrœ et cæcitas.

3. Ideoque ad salutem sufficiens non est, neque subjective, ita ut vi ejus quis ea quæ sunt ad salutem necessaria aliunde revelata πρω-ματικῶς percipiât; neque objective, hoc est, ea omnia quæ sunt ad salutem necessaria revelare non potest.

4. Christus nullâ sub consideratione lumen salutare omnibus et singulis hominibus indulsit.

5. Nullius *luminis interni*, cujuscunque tandem, quamvis sit salutare, is usus aut finis est, ut ei tanquam duci viæ nostrœ, et *regulated*, attendere debeamus, sed in hunc solûm finem gratioso a Deo conceditur, ut vi ejus, istam regulam et mentem Domini in eâ revelatam, modo salutari percipere possimus.

Hasce vero propositiones, uno aut altero argumento sigillatim probablemus.
Sect. 18. Primam propositionem quod attinet argumenta nostra sic se habent:—

(1.) Quod naturae rationali, ejusque participibus, ad gloriam Dei per obedientiam moralis præstationem manifestandam creatis, vi legis creationis indi debuit, atque actualiter inditum fuit, neque unquam est amissum, id ipsis est naturale: id enim a naturâ suâ, posito hoc quo Deus obedientiam ex ipsis exegerit, habuerunt. Hanc verò lucis hujus esse conditionem nemo, opinor, negabit. Fuisset primitus homini inditum, status primi hominis, de quo abunde a pluribus actum est, probat. Non fuisset amissam actualiter et respectu eventūs, quicquid sit de merito, experientia docet.

(2.) Id quo fallit a principiis naturae necessariâ et infallibiliter, nisi in operatione suâ ex aliquo accidente ipsa impediatur, illud omnibus ejus naturae participibus est naturale, hoc enim quod est a principiis naturae, naturale dicitur. Lumen autem hoc est nativa, propria, et inseparabilis mentis et conscientiae vis, et efficacia: oculus, acies mentis est. Σωντήρησι vocant Graeci; quæ habitus est naturalis, quo intellectus hominis aptus natus est ad assensum præbendum principiis operationum moralium; σωφροσύνη est, seu necessarium hominis de se judicium habitui illi conforme. Itaque si lumen hoc non sit naturale, neque intellectus, neque mens, neque conscientia homini est naturalis.


Sect. 20. 3. Eodem argumento probatur non esse lumen hoc ad salutem sufficiens, nempe quia non est salutare; sufficientiam quidem habet ad ἀναπολογησίαν, ad salutem non item, quia πνευματικά πνευματικῶς cognoscere vi ejus nemo potest. Deinde Deus nihil agit frustra, præsertim in rebus maximis novi foederis, per sanguinem Filii sui acquisitis. Lumen verò hoc, si esset ad salutem subjective subjec-
ciens, quid quæso opus esset illuminatione Spiritūs Sancti, quid mentis renovatione, quid novi intellectūs donatione, quid omnipotenti et efficaci cordium irradiatione cognitione Dei in facie Jesu Christi? quid vanitatis amotione, tenebrarum, et cæcitatis curatione, oculorum apertione? quid denique evangelio? cum unum hoc lumen internun omnibus commune, omnium vicem supplere possit facillime. Porro: cum sit istiusmodi principium directivum intus splendet cens, videcamus an meliùs et rectius se gerat, respectu revelationis eorum quæ cognosci debeant; nam hujus etiam respectu sufficientiam ejus jactitant fanatici, atque ejus gratiã verbum Dei scriptum pro nihilò ducent: contrarium probant,—
(1.) Universalis omnium per omnia secula a creatione mundi in hunc usque diem experientia: quis enim unquam lucis hujus ductu ad veram Dei cognitionem pervenerit? qui post homines natos, eã optime usi sunt, atque eximii insuper dotibus super vulgus homiun ornati fuerunt, ad unum omnes “vani facti sunt in ratiocinationibus suis, et obtenebratum est cor eorum insipiens,” Rom. i. 21.
(2.) Tota ista gratia, bonitatis, et sapientiae divinae oikoumēnia, quá Deus ταλωμερῶς και πολυτρήσως, in prophetis et Filio suo locutus, voluntatem suam hominibus revelavit; quam qui maximi, et prorsus imestimabilis beneficii loco non habet, ille et ingratus est et maledictus, Ps. cxlvii. 19, 20.
(3.) Omnia ista testimonia quibus, superiori disputacione, necessitatem atque perfectionem sacre Scripturæ probavimus; quæ hic repetere opus non est.
Sect. 21. 4. Lumen hoc non esse ipsum in nobis Christum, qui est via, vita, et veritas, lux et salus, cum neque sit salutare, neque ad salutem sufficientis, hominem neminem esse cui dubium sit libenter arbitraver: ἔπαθολογοῦσα quidem fanatici, neque proligium ullam confidentius asserunt, quàm lucem hanc ipsum esse Christum. Sit ideo vel persona Christi ἡσυχρωτοῦ, vel Spiritus Christi, vel aliud aliud quod mystice et relative Christus dici possit. Non esse personam Christi, si modò personam habeant, et ipsi sint homines, opinor, agnoscent. Neque Spiritus Christi esse potest, cum sit quid omnibus commune; at quidam saltem sunt, Πνεῦμα μὴ ἔχοντες, Jude. 19. Porro, “ubi Spiritus ille Domini est, ibi est libertas,” 2 Cor. iii. 17. At hominum genus, maximum partem, peccato adhuc servire constat. Deinde quidam sunt in carne, quidam in Spiritu, Rom. viii. 9. In ipsis vero tantùm habitat Spiritus, qui sunt in Spiritu.Nulla autem est promissio Spiritus, nullus fructus, nullum privilegium, cujus per Spiritum participes facti sumus, nulla per Spiritum regenerationis, sanctificationis, adoptionis mentio est, quæ huic figmento non vehementer reclamat. Ecclesia quidem mystice Christus dicitur, 1 Cor. xii. 12, cum sit corpus ejus, quatenus scilicet unionem habet cum capite;
at lumen hoc fanaticorum non esse ecclesiæ, suo loco videbimus. Sed Christus fanaticorum imaginarius est et fictitius, non Filius Dei incarnatus, Θεόνεφρος, sed qualitas, nescio quæ, divina, seu anima mundi, omnibus mista, quæ τὸ σῶρι sit, atque vere nihil. Hoc vero illorum πτῶσιν ἑσύδις, cùm ad disputacionem de personâ Christi deventum est, penitus destructur.

Sect. 22. 5. Omissis iis quæ contra Arminianos, Socinianos, aliosque gratiae universalis assertores alibi disputavimus, ne in plurimas res nos simul ingeramus, unico argumento, Christum lumen salutare omnibus et singulis non infundere probamus; illud vero ita se habet. Christus neminem luce salutari perfundit, nisi per Spiritum et verbum suum. Ut ita, atque non aliter ageret, maxima est novi fœderis promissio, Esæ. lix. 21, atque ipsius Christi, Joh. xiv. 15, 16. Quicquid est verbi Dei, aut revelationis mentis Domini, huic propositioni testimonium perhibet. “Squis enim Spiritum Christi non habet, non est ejus,” Rom. viii. 9. At Christum Spiritum suum Sactum, promissum fœderis, omnibus et singulis non largiri ante probatum est. De verbo idem testatur experientia.

Sect. 23. 6. Ultimæ nostræ propositionis, de usu atque fine luminis cujuscunque divini, nobis per Christum gratioso indulti, veritatem satis superque demonstravimus in disputatione de perfectione Scripturae. Strictim addimus:—

(1.) Si cujusque lumen privatum sit regula Deo obedientiam praestandi, tum tot regulas habemus quot homines; at unicus est ζαυόν divinus, Gal. vi. 16; Phil. iii. 16; Esæ. viii. 20. At ita plane incerta essent omnia in rebus divinis, hoc tantum excepto, quod princeps tenebrarum vi hujus incertitudinis in rem suam compendium faceret.

(2.) Is est interna lucis seu illuminationis nostræ finis, ob quem Deus cam nobis promisit, atque cujus gratiæ sancti homines eam a Deo indies augeri petunt: eum vero esse, ut voluntatem et mentem Domini in Scripturis revelatam, rite, salutariter et spiritualiter intelligam, infinitissimis allatis testimoniiis facile esset probare.

(3.) Sacram Scripturam hanc regulam esse abunde antea demonstratum est.

Sect. 24. Videamus jam porro quid contra garrünt fanatici, utque operam dent, quà cum ratione aliquâ insanire videantur: nihil autem hic novi adportant; vetera sunt, Arminiana sunt, trita et millies profigata quæ adducunt.

1. Nihil crebrius in ore habent, quam verba illa de Christo: Joh. i. 9, “Ille est lux vera quæ illuminat omnem hominem veniens in mundum.” Non alias vociferatio horridior quàm cùm in locum hunc deventum est. Hic miros sibi fingunt triumphos, atque adversarii nulla non faciunt convicia. De Christo, inquiriunt, loquitur Scriptura, “Ille ergo lux est,” “Christus lux est:” deinde non hunc vel illum
hominem, sed omnem hominem in mundum venientem, illuminat; hoc est omnes et singulos; nec aliquid clarius affirmari poterat.

Sect. 25. Resp. Scripturam sacram interpretari debere, adversariis extorsimur. De sensu hujus loci, seu potius *unicae voculae* in hoc loco, jam controvertitur. De tota sententia quid statuendum sit, paucissimis absolvam:—

1. Christus *lux est*; eodem nempe sensu, quo Deum lucem esse demonstravimus. Lux est respectu *essentialis suae majestatis*, sanctitatis, et gloriae; quatenus etiam omnis lucis fons est, auctor atque causa, lux est,—hoc est, et essentialiter et efficienter.

2. Christus dicitur *lux hominum*, non lux illa quae est in hominibus. Causa omnis lucis est, non omnis lux; non illa *accidentalis* et corrupta de quâ loquimur. Ita sol est *lux mundi*; imo discipulos suos *lucem mundi*, seu hominum in mundo degentium esse affirmat, Matt. v. 14. Anne aliqui homines *lux interna aliorum omnium esse possint?* Lux sunt quia suo more lucem dant et exhibent. Lux ita Christus esse dicitur, atque homines illuminare, non quasi ille nihil alius esset quam lux illa interior cujus est particeps omne humanum genus, aut quasi ipse in persona sua lux illa esset, aliter quâm *efficienter*, sed quia lumen largitum iis omnibus qui illud assequuntur. Ita sol suo loco atque ordine est lux mundi, atque ita fuerunt discipuli Christi.


4. Hic ergo horum verborum sensus est: Cum omnes homines essent *merce tenebrarum*, atque coelestium inanes, Filius Dei, aeternus *hōgos*, φως aeternum, in mundum veniens, per ἐναρκῳσιν vitam et immortalitem, a jactis mundi fundamentis antea *umbraculos cooperatas*, aut *tenebris* penitus delitescentes, in lucem produxit, perque evangelium intotescente fecit; atque insuper Spiritum Sanctum vi divina armatum emisit, ad quosquis homines ex iis qui naturâ tenebres erant illuminandos, atque ita lux eorum factus est. Apparet itaque,—

(1.) Lucem et illuminationem quaram hic loci mentio facta est, *spirituales esse*, atque ad renovationem gratiae; non naturales, atque ita ad creationem pertinent: quo sensu enim homines *tenebras* dicuntur, eo etiam illuminari; aliter æquivoca esset apostoli oratio. At homines spiritualiter fuisset tenebras, non oculis naturaliter captos, de quibus loquitur Spiritus Sanctus, extra controversiam est.

(2.) Hac illuminatione non obstante, manent aliqui in tenebris:
"Lux enim luxit in tenebris, tenebræ autem eam non comprehenderunt." Joh. i. 5. Illuminatio ideo hæc, neque est naturalis, neque omnibus communis, neque aliquid aliud quod homines habere possint, dum tenebræ sunt: statum diversum, atque tenebrarum motionem ponit.

(3.) Christus non alio modo quemquam hominum gratiâ suâ, seu luce hæc spirituali donat, nisi per verbum et Spiritum suum; nemo ita hujus lucis particeps esse potest, nisi sit genitus ex Spiritu, atque verbi seu evangelii sit salutariter particeps.

Respondemus ideo per "omnem hominem," non omnes et singulos qui unquam fuerunt, sunt, aut futuri sint, intelligi debere, sed quosvis tantùm, seu eos omnes et singulos quos Christus per verbum et Spiritum suum salutari suâ gratiâ, et luce spirituali donare gratiosè velit; hoc est, syncategorema istud "omnis," non absolute, sed relate ad electos dicitur; prout aliis locis innumeris usurpatur, Col. i. 6, etc.


Resp. 1. Negamus eos lege scripta opus non habere, qui sibi lex sunt; non enim hoc absolute dicitur, sed aliquorum operum et actionum respectu tantùm.

2. Concessimus antea reliquias nonnullas lucis primævæ adhuc esse in omnibus superstites, sed salutares eas esse, spirituales, ad salutem sufficientes, id verò pernegamus: ita,—

3. Nihil non naturale, nihil spirituale, nihil specialiter a Christo mediatore emanans, aut ab eo communicatum, imo nihil nisi quod sine Christo, seorsim ab eo, omni salutari ejus cognitione destituti habeant homines, hic ab apostolo memoratur. Imo non alium in finem hæc in memoriam revocat apostolus, nisi ut ostenderet eos qui lumine hoc tantùm instructi erant, atque ei attendebant, ad unum omnes destitutos fuisse gloriâ Dei, neque ad salutarem ejus cogni-tionem unquam pervenisse; quod figmentum fanaticorum penitus evertit, atque illos ipsos, quasi quasi encomio hoc ornò apostolus, ubique mortuos, cæcos, sub potestate tenebrarum captivos, pronun-tiat.

4. Nulla cum hic sit mentio lucis, nulla Christi, sed hominum a Christo penitus abalienatorum, difficile nimis erit fanaticis thesin
suam hinc extorquere; nempe Christum esse lucem quandam omnibus communem.

5. Fatemur quidem homines omnes aliquo sensu sibi ipsi legem esse, quatenus nimirum habitum intellectualem, quod assentiri possunt, atque assentiuntur; principis operationum moralium, atque judicium practicum, quo se super iis quae fecerunt, condemnant vel excusant, retinent; at vero habitum illum spiritualem esse, sufficienter eos dirigentem in cognitione Dei, atque obdientia ei ex voluntate ejus praestandâ, hoc pernegamus.

Sect. 27. Cùm Deum non "longe abesse ab unoquoque nostrum," ita ut "omnes quaerere Dominum," si forte palpando eum invenirent, debeant, affirmet apostolus, Act. xvii. 27, nescio quo stupore ex eo saepius litigantes audivi, sed quid sibi vellent haud facile fuit intelligere. Nempe Deo omnia plena sunt; operaque ejus, tum creationis, tum providentiae, immensa ejus deitatem, aeternam potentiam, et creaturarum curam, ita luculenter ostendunt ut omnes ubique homines eum ulterior investigare debeant: sed quid hoc ad fanaticorum delirium, de quo jam actum est?
POEMA.

[Prefatory Note.—Among the addresses presented to Cromwell when he succeeded in concluding a peace with the Dutch in 1654, the University of Oxford joined in the tribute of congratulation by publishing a small pamphlet of poetical effusions, entitled, "Musarum Oxoniensium 'Elegaeia," etc. The first of these was from the pen of Dr. Owen, and is the only specimen of his muse. Prefixed to the work was a dedication, commemorating the services of Cromwell to the University. The dedication and the poem follow.—Ed.]


Serenissimæ Celsitundini tuae

Devotissimus cliens,

Et

In celeberrima Academia tua

Procancellarius,

Jo. Owen.
AD PROTECTOREM.

Pacifica Augusti quem non fecere poetam?
Sanctior, ingenium et musa mihi, genius:
Concolor haud cygnis, vano nec percitus oestro,
Ex humili subitus vate poeta cano.
Quin magis ut placeam numero, numerisque refertus
Advolo: nempe omnis musa chelysque tua est.
Quòd nisi consiliis academia fulta fuisset
Caesaris, auspiciis gensque togata tuis;
Excideras Auguste tibi, victoria noctem
Senserat, haud pacis gloria tanta foret.
Has tibi pro musis grates academia mittit,
Qui pax una foris diceris, una domi:
Nomine utroque tuas laudes hace pagina gestit
Tollere, qui pacis nomen et omen habes.
Accipias facilis, meritò quos reddit honores,
Heroi invicto, pacis amica cohors.

Jo. Owen,
Acad. Procan.
ORATIONES V.

CLARISSIMI ET DOCTISSIMI VIRI, JOANNIS OWEN, S.T.P.

IN CELEBERRIMA OXONIensi ACADemia HABITÆ, DUM PROCANCELLARIHI MUNUS
PER QUINQUENNIIUM ILLIC ADMINISTRAVIT.

HIS ALIA ORATIO ACCEDIT,

EJUSDEM ACADemiaE NOMINE AD RICHARDUM CROMWELLUM HABITA, CUM CANCELLARIHI OFFICIUM
ANNO 1658 SUSCEPTIT.
PREFATORY NOTE.

These Orations are perhaps the only memorials of Owen's connection with the University of Oxford. Even in the judgment of his enemies, during his brief connection with it, he rendered it no mean service; so that, in answer to the calumnies of Vernon, he could say, "I do not believe there is any person of learning, ingenuity, or modesty, who had relation in those days to that place, but will grant at least, that, notwithstanding some differences from them about things of very small importance, I was not altogether useless to the interest of learning, morality, peace, and the preservation of the place itself." Besides those who matriculated, 26 persons received the degree of Doctor, 337 that of Master of Arts, and 697 that of Bachelor of Arts. The salaries of the professors were secured, important offices maintained, the rights of the University defended, its funds increased tenfold, and various reforms effected. Clarendon distinctly admits the improvement which was effected at Oxford during the time that Owen was vice-chancellor.

The first of these Orations was delivered on the occasion of his entrance on the duties of the vice-chancellorship. The second, third, and fourth, were the annual orations delivered at the academic comitia; in which, according to the statutes, the events of the preceding year, and the benefits which had been conferred on the University in the course of it, were specified and commemorated by the vice-chancellor. The fifth, remarkable for its animation and dignity of tone, was delivered when he resigned the office of vice-chancellor. The sixth is an address to Richard Cromwell, on his installation into the office of chancellor. These Orations first appeared in the folio volume entitled, "A Complete Collection of the Sermons of the Reverend and Learned John Owen, D.D.," etc., and published 1721.—Ep.

1 Hæc oratio habita est anno 1652, cum procancellarii munus primum est ingressus.
nodo, cui frustra pacatissimis temporibus insudarunt tot tantique heroes, nutanti rerum omnium conditione cuneum admoveorem? Ovχ ovτος τειτφωμαι, academici. Si hominis ita inepte sibi ad-blandientis partes mihi sumerem, imo si vel levicula hujusmodi animum subiret cogitatio, totus ipse mihi displicerem. Non ita remotus domo, aut procul a meipso dego; non ita lamiarum instar disposui ocellos, quin quàm sit doctrinæ, prudentiæ, gravitatis, sapientiæ mihi curta supellex, probe noverim. Lucullum vel gregarii militis officii rudem, peritum nullo negotio evadentem imperatorem, ita ut quem polémων ἀτειρον dinisit urbs, totius rei militaris ἐμπειρον acceperit exercitus, tanquam naturæ ostentum celebravit antiquitas. Bono animo est, academici! prodigia nulla fero: qui ex latebris ruralis secessus, armorum strepitu, evangelii causâ in ultimas hujus insulæ nec non transmarinas oras excursionibus, aulae tumultu, rei academicae administrandæ imperitus, recessi, imperitus etiam hac accedo.

Quid ergo malum, inquiies, hoc est dementiæ? Cur provinciam hanc, cui administranda, nedum ornanda, non sis idoneus, suscepiísti? Pessime in te, in academiam, in senatum hunc venerandum consuluisti. Bona verba, auditores! summorum virorum judicio votis, imperio, precibus, obnoxio non penitus deficiat aut spe, aut animus. 'Ανδραγαθηματων qualiumcunque haud ipsi sumus scaturigines. 'O ἵππος ὑπηργον στέρμα τῷ στείροι, et qui "ex ore infantium fundit fortitudinem," defectus omnes, quos vel foras retuli, vel intus sensi, gratioso supplere et vires administrare potis est. Mihi ideo propriis viribus, ac παρίσεια, et succedaneo adminiculo, favore academico, quod sciam aut meruerim, destituto, hoc tamen restat, illi ut me totus dedam, "qui dat omnibus benefícium, nec exprobrat." Perennem ille auxiliorum fontem constituit Christum; qui nulli non pio comamini ἐκειρον suppeditat βοήθεια, nostra nisi obstat ἔλεοςσι: inde lumen, inde vires, inde spiritus mihi expectandi, imo orandi sunt. Illius ideo presentiæ gratiose promissæ inuisus, pro statu temporum, et occasione rerum, quam, divinâ ita providentiam disponente, nacti sumus, unicà conscientiæ integritate aliorum adjumentorum et ornamentorum omnium vicis obeunte, nec propendeunt, nec dependente genio, negotio huic me accingo.

Si modo honorum obsequi studiis, inservire commodis, opem ferre egenis, et quibus est res angusta domi; si in extricandis inmeritò perplexis, impeditis, aut turbatis, operam insumere mihi liceat; si vel in confinio et proximà parte virtutis versantibus mansuetiulla animi officia præstare possim;—pacis, famæ, studiorum, quorum dispensio, nihil usus circumutione, scien fidemque compendiose lito, haud ita poenitenda forsan erit jactura. At si Bibuli consulatus segnis ac vilis, si Sisyphli labor, volvendo semper eodem revolventem negotio-
lorum acervum frustraneus ac inutilis, mihi contingenterit; si in diri-
mendis de lana caprina litibus, si in terorem miseris mortalibus et
vitiorum ægris incutiendo, vel pœnam infligendo, vel in ejusmodi
solum ingratis peragendis sudandum sit; — ne infelici adjudicarer
Caucaso, damnatorias tabellas quævis prece, vel quocunque pretio re-
demptas velim.

Non quod in reprimendis vitii, repurgandis sordibus, ne sentibus,
spinis, tribulisque obsita horreret academia, conatus satis laudabiles
exseri non possunt. Imo, vos omnes, qui conscientiae propriae, qui
famæ publicæ, qui perenni florentissimæ academiae saluti, qui rei-
publice hujusæ, ἀντικυκλοποιημένη licet, sed ἀντικυκλοποιημένη, utilitati, vel micâ bone
animæ ltitatis; vos, inquam, omnes, vestramque opem, consilium,
vires, diligentiam, ne flaccascat gubernatorum reverentia, nutet su-
periorum dignitas, evanescat antiqua studiosorum gravitas, industria,
compositi mores, ne demum omnium bonorum, malis omnibus de-
specta, jacent auctoritas, appelló. Me verò quod attinet, munusque
hoc recens impositum, si qui sint ignawi, ebriosi, ludiones, nugatores,
circulatores, superiorum contemptores, legirupæ, nocivagi, noti ju-
ventutis corruptores, bonorum òsores, cultus divini neglectores, vel
alia ejusmodi academiae carcinomata et ulcera, neque me illorum
mores, neque illos meam hanc qualem uncunque ἀποτακτὴν ferre posse
spes est. In hâc verò parte provinciæ nostræ ornandâ, si quid durius,
si quid, quod tamen fieri non oportet, inclementius, in quemcumque
constitutum fuerit, id omne temporum necessitati, et conservandæ
misere fluctuanti república literarum acceptum ferendum esse æqui
rerum arbitri facile agnoscent. Nec erit forsan, cur ob nostram tenui-
tatem despectui sit facinorosorum et delicatulorum turbæ academiae
auctoritas. Etenim ut bonus omnibus omnimodo prodesse statutum
est, sic malis hanc eadem itidem indubium. At parcius ista. Quæ
agenda sunt quidem, sed non sine ullius boni, aut mitis ingenii, quâ-
dam ægritudine peragì queunt, quoad fieri potest, deprecanda et
evítanda esse consentient omnes, quibus salit aliquid “lævæ sub parte
mamillæ.”

Major itaque, — et praecéleris aliorum, hoc ipso seculo, omne genus
inceptis (quibus paria praeterlapsæ atates facinora non ediderunt),
aliquâ ex parte respondentia, — in orbe nostro tentanda esse arbitramur.
An solis academiciis, Anglorum nomine celebri fâmer per totum orbem
diffuso, libet esse ingloriis? Consulta patrum, tropæa militum, incre-
menta glorie rei civilis ac militaris, quæ dederunt, quibus est com-
missa, senatorum ac duces, horret Europa. Absit, academici! ut
peculiare nostrum depositum, religionis ac literarum honos, quasi
omnino secolo impares essemus, solam vilescat. Dum in omni laud-
abili conatu alii haud contemnendos faciunt progressus, vix, aut ne
vix quidem, nos ad antiqua revertimur? Imo, quid nisi nostra segnitie
et aliud agendo consumptæ vires, ut superiorum temporum, uti aiunt, a nonnullis tantopere desideraretur, in causa est? Eminuere, fateor, tum temporis, nonnulli linguarum peritiæ, eloquentiæ laude, scientiarum lumine, veterum scriniorum monumenta scrutandi diligentiæ, et rupandis antiquitatis rudibus clari; quibus omnibus et singulis, quo minus debitus honor et gloria, cultus et reverentia nominis constant, et sint perennes, non sum adeo vecordis animæ, nec tam extra anni solisque vias positus, utullo modo interpellem. At, pro pudor! Quale studiosorum vulgus! Quanta orbis literati pars tenebris offusa! Pouite senile supercilium, pingue otium, aliarum ambitiæ inanes titulos, micantibus undique literarum praemiis; per multis enim annos, qui serib rem agebant, apparuere rari "nantes in gurgite vasto." Eb verbam jam redierunt res academiae, ut nisi pietatem, fidem, mores composites, cum summa in omni studiorum genere diligentia adhibeamus, quin cum perenni dedecore, de dignitate, statu et condione lâc honestâ nobis periclitandum sit, non est ambigendum. Haec ergo Rhodus, hic saltus noster. Quicquid consilio, prudentiæ, illibato virtutis exemplo, quicquid denique summorum virorum auctoritate,—tantillo scilicet temporis spatio, eoque tantis rerum ac animorum motibus agitato, quod ex bonarum artium et literarum, explosis bellii terriculamentis, —prestari potuerit, id omne antecessorum nostrorum laudum cumulo lubens addico. At quibus omnia ex voto sucessionerunt, quorum sanctoribus inceptis undeque responderunt eventus, numero vix sunt totidem, quot Thebarum portae. In magnis voluisse sat est; nec nostram industriam, si qua est, præcluserunt molimina aliorum praedae gesta; multo minus sucedentium fame, si qui sint, obesse poterunt in administranda hac provincia imbecilli nostri conatus.

ORATIO II.¹

BONUM factum, procuratores! Neque enim animam agit academia, ut opus habeat testamentum nuncupare, aut ut legatorum dispositione divitias suas in alumnos dispertire teneatur. Hucusque ergo, academici, quamvis, pro dolor! evasimus, dicendum est tamen, evasimus. Viximus, dum ipsum hoc vivisse nonnihil, ino magnum fuit; òvo scilicet seculi graves, et ipsius mundi mortalitate tantum non oppressi. Ostentent aliis tropæa, hostium spolia, floscorum sertis redimita capita, summae pacis, et placidissimi recessus fructus uberiores; nos cicatrices, pulverem, et sudorem, erectas ad caelum

¹ Haec oratio anno 1654, in comitiis academicis, habita fuisset videtur, cum procancellarii officium literum administravit.
manus, non penitus indigna Deo hominibusque colluctantia insignia circumferimus. Non enim umbratilém causam egimus, non de finibus regundiis, de quibus tot annos bella incrunda, et paene ludicra, intulerunt imbelles finitimi; sed de tota possessione, sacro antiquae pietatis deposito, præsentis spe ac semine, dictu nefas! nobis contentio fuit. Prostratos œnopolas, mimas, balatrones, devictos cerasisci, noctivagos, sruerras, aliasque hominum quisquiliarum supplices in scenam productas, dispensa gentis togatae pomœria, instaurata epomion et epitogiorum epippia, honestis nominibus celebrata, nolite exspectare. Hæc illorum gloria, hoc decus, quibus mollissimus temporibus, et longo oto deductum, tot tantaque moliri placuit. Hoc unice nobis in votis fuit, cum officii ratio postularet, ut publice aliquid vobis edisseremus, neo tantum superessec dicendum, fuimus academici.

Tantum verò cum hoc sit, tamque insigne privilegium, nondum perisse, non nisi Dei immortalis beneficio illud par est debæri. Ei ideo schedy optimo, hospitatorum unico, salutis fonti, qui disjectis undique ac demersis, coeli ruinæ et violentiæ, majoribus, imo prætorius navibus, portuosam cymbulæ nostræ exhibuit providentiam, quicquid apud nos pium aut utile restat, quicquid meliori notà et virtutis nomine inter mortales dignum censetur, in ipso limine dicemus. Qui nihil divinum, nihil ope mortali grandius, in declinantis rei litterarum subsidium et fulcimentum venire sentit, illum rerum divinarum pariter ac humanarum socordiæ, et negligenteriæ supinæ laborare, cùm res ipsa oculis et prope manibus teneatur, non est ambigendum. Rubum ardentem, nec consumptum, stupuit olim magnus nomotheta. Praeclarum et antiquum qui spectaret ædificium, disjectis undique pedamentis et adminiculis, in ipso paene aère pendulum, mole suæ sibi ipsi ruinam, aliis perriciem mimitabundum, contra vim tamen procellarum, ventorum, et turbinum victrices et triumphales attollens summitates; velut immotam rupem, cui toties horresco fragore nequicquam sese illiserunt nimbus et hyems; occultam illam vim et admirablem, quà tantâ moli sustinendâ, tot oppugnationibus propellendis par esset, venerabundus suspiceret. Gratiosam igitur Dei O. M. providentiam recolite, academici, et perenni literariae diuturnitati quotquot bene vultis, auditores, quæ gymnasia, adeoque ipsam academiam, communem nostram, quà literati sumus, matrem, adhuc sartam tectam conservavist.

Neque tamen haec ideo a nobis dicuntur, quasi fautores nullos, nullos advocatos invenisset grandæva mater academia, qui, ne, inter tumultuosus seculi dedecora, litterarum lapsus et ruinæ numeraretur, strenue precauerunt. Habet etiam adhuc Deus O. M. qui honorem suum, habet academia, qui salutem suam pro virili tuæ satagunt; viros silicet sumino honore constitutos, et nisi mortalium ingratiissimi
audire vellemus, a nobis in æternum nominandos. Hi sunt, qui tumultuantis plebèculæ, aliorum sìlicit perpaucorum nebulo-nun veneno perfusæ, compescuerunt murmura, et imbelles contempseræ minas. Et cum eo usque audaciae proruperit quorundam hominum, dicam, an jumentorum, stupor et barbariae, ut in ipso senatu libellis supplicibus vociferationes, seu potius imprecaiones nonnullorum e fæce seculi, de tollendis academis rudere ausi sint; non sine indignatione summa, spiritu heroico et plane divino, honoratissimis igno-rantiae patronis, patriae excerebratoribus, os vile obstruxerunt, parati omne nostrum periculum subire suo. Nec defuisse istiusmodi viros aut conatus testor, celeberrimam toto orbe bibliothecam, irriter inimi-corum domi forasque augusto illi sacrario avide inha-ntium votis, intactam; et si non libris doctioribus, at librario doctissimo acutam et ornatam. Ipsam testor academiam, fatali pæne literarum inter-stitio emergentem, viris undequaque doctissimus, de religione et lite-ratura optime meritis, recens refertam. Hoc unum condonate, quod me indignum, inutilem vestro ascribere voluerunt; hanc unam labem abstergite, æterna fulgent.

Iisdem succenturiatus processit magnum nomen nobis dicendum, auditores! Honoratissimus Cancellarius. Hic est, quem toties accepimus profidentem, se nolle honesto illo nomine diutius ornari, quàm dignum tandem aliquid eo nomine efficiendi spes non minima efful-geret. Qui pietate et ingenii cultu, in subjugandis hostibus vel bar-barissimis, plus retulit sub Deo suo opis et subsidii, quàm ut, se vivo et rerum pæne clavum tenente, pietatem et ingenii culturae omnem pessundatas et conculcatas, triumphantibus illum victis et conjuratis hostibus, ab impietate et barbarie intueri possit. Illum, qui feros et erraticos domuit Hiberniae Nomadas; qui mores, virtutes, pudorem Scotorum monticolarum perspexerit; qui

Πολλῶν ἀνθρώπων ἰδιαὶ ἄστις, καὶ ὅποι θέματι,

posse tandem ipsam deperire barbariam, in honesta est, et homine sano indigna cogitatio. Irato prorsus aversaque Deo res nostra agitari videretur, si primi, si soli sub ejus auspiciis pereamus; qui non tantum omni bello, sed et singulis præliis, quibus toties provi-dentiam discrimen subiit, victor evasit. Inauspicatò sane togatam manum copios suis adjuvixisse censendus esset, si eà parte primum marcescenter triumphales laurus. Haud illi deèrit procul omni dubio in re nostrâ procurandâ divina illa indulgentia, quæ reliquis omnibus inceptis ei ita semper praesto adfuit, uti Θεὸς ἀπὸ μνήμαν, quod dicitur; ut illud ethnici poetœ ad imperatorem Christianum decantare liceat,—

"O nimium dilecte Deo, cui militat sêther,

Et conjurati veniunt in classica venti!" 2

1 Hom. Odyss. i. 3. 2 Claud. iii. cons. Honor. 96
Hucusque ideo, eo duce, victore Deo, ut libera et optimarum artium gloria celebris, non ut injux [inlex?] et efferata evadat patria, contendimus. Quisquamne hominum adeo inverecunde stolidus, et mentis inops censendus est, ut gentem non ineptam, immensis laboribus, vigiliis, votis, lacrymis, suspiriis, tanto sanguinis, nummorum, possessionum dispedio, tot annos sudasse, ut sub desideratissimo republ
ciae titulo asinorum clausum, vel jumentorum mandram condere, putare posse videatur? Si qui vero, ut erit forsan unus et alter, ad bombardarum tonitru, tanquam ad cataractas Nili, ita absurduerunt, ut rationis, ejus nimium quâ homines sumus, nihil possint aut audire, aut percipere; quin tandem, imo brevi sese explosos et pessimo fœtore, suorum tormentorum instar, ejectos sentient, nullus dubito. Imo, ausim dicere rempublicam nostram aut literarum fore fautoriam, aut nullam; nisi funditus delere gentem (et religionem nostram) forsan rebus prosperis nimis fidentem, vagam, et tumultum, sanguine et cineribus iterum aspergere, et non indecoro pulvere sordidam reddere constituit Deus O. M. non omnis morietur academia.

Macti ideo este ingenio et virtutis gloriâ, probata juvenum corona, flos patriæ, gentis honoris, gregis Christi spes non minima, feretis pro
tius hic etiam voti et consilii nostri pretium et βραβείαν: nec segregata prorsus omnis spes est, quin ex vobis tandem emergant, quibus meritò.

"doctor orbis
Submissis tradat facibus imperium."

Vos etiam, doctores literatissimi, quoniam purpuræ vestre radiis ferundis etiam vulgi, utcunque ignobilis et indocti, nunc temporis sufficient oculorum acies, quin virtutum et scientiarum splendor, labo
ribus et vigiliis ecclesia et academiac causâ susceptis, antiquam et debitam venerationem etiam oculatissimis extorquere progrediamini, nemo nisi invidia stupuit, aut fascinavit pietatis odium, ibit inficias. Ωατρον ἐγενήθημεν τῷ κόσμῳ καὶ ἡγγέλοις καὶ ἀνθρώποις, I Cor. iv. 9, et actorum nudâ virtute stamen; nec pomposos titulos, ulteriores honoris gradus, opima beneficia, principum aut magnatum favores, fugacis ævi blandimenta, affectamus, sed pro vita animaque magnae matris academice contendimus.

Duram quis forsan exclamabit sortem et onerosam! et, "O terque quaterque beatos," quibus quotannis in scenam prodire, et choragio nescio quo phaleratis, mutas pene sustinuisse personas satis erat pro dignitate et honore; quibus ampliores redditus, titulorum veneranda gravitas, et adulatoriis quibusdam delinimentis facilliæ auspatus principum favor, dederunt malignum spemnere vulgus!

Ast, apage sis, ignava vota, et indigna suspiria! Natos nos potius in exemplar cogitemus, nec minimo ducamus honor, quod nos ami-
corum inimicorumque sub oculis tanto pignore certare voluit pater clementissimus, quod aliquâ saltem rerum difficultate quid possemus experiri velit. Quod alis ideo calamitas videtur, nobis sit virtutis occasio. Hoc ideo tantùm, missis curis et querelis, metu et dolore ad hominum vulgus demandatis, nobis incumbit, ut vel scientiarum et virtutum nostra industria fructibus floreat, vel composite et decenter alienâ culpâ in cineres suos dilabatur academia. Sed quorsum haec?

"Prudens futuri temporis exitum
Caliginosa nocte premit Deus;
Ridetque si mortalis ultra
Fas trepidat. Quod adest memento
Componere æquus."  

Quod officiâ ratio postulat, quod beneficia Dei O. M. flagitant, quod bonorum omnium vota expetunt, quod aliorum casus et ruina (quos perdendos dementavit divina Nemesis), docent,—pietatem, religiorem, virtutem, scientiam, diligenter colamus; caeterum rerum omnium exitus θεοῦ in γόνναι εἰσίν. Quid denuo faciemus, dabit Deus; quid hucusque fecerimus, paucis acclpite, academici.

Cum vitis, quam ampliori proventu inter mortales industria fuit certamen. Dilabantem amnem novis semper ex fontibus minus forsan lucidis, imo turbidis aquarum fluctibus, subinde auctum et adimpletum omnibus vanitatis bullulis, vitiorum limo immunem quis potest præstare? Nempe socordium et impiorum parentum delicta, ineptiam, stultiam, negligentiam, negligentiam, negociari omnium exemplis dehonestatos mittunt, ut extemplo fiant philosophi, et illico frugi evadant, exspectant stulti parentes.

1 οὶ ἀργαλίων σμάγη ἴσσιν
Δεύλοι γνιόθεια παραφροούτοι διεύπτωσι.

Duram sane provinciam! Integros et sanos tantùm sumnà cum artis gloriâ dimittunt, quibus commissa est corporum sanatio: omnes seu artis defectus, seu artificum lapsus, longa nocte tegunt vespiliones. At incuratos animorum morbos, et turgidos vitiorum inflatus, ubique, non sine summo inter imperatos nostro dedecore, circumferunt immediables nebulones.

Huic autem malo remedium adhibendo, ut hanc saltem bene merentibus gratiam rempandam, non defuerunt, imo profuerunt plurimum, cum hujus, tum superioris anni procuratores; quorum nimorum inculpatae probitati, invictæ patientiæ, prudentiæ insigni, bonarum

1 Horat. Carm. iii. xxix. 29–33.  2 Aristoph. Plut. i. 1, 1.
literarum promovendi studio singulari, industrie vero pæne stupendae, aliiquid saltem pacis et quietis, si non multum famæ et bonorum morum, debæe academiam est manifestum. Nec sine numine fuit, ut, deflexo paulum tramite, ad munus procuratorium vir ille promoveretur, qui ad vias rectas et regulares non sine summa diligentia et virtute non paucos reduceret. Porro in administrandâ re reliquâ academicâ, collegiorum et aularum præfectos, laude illâ, “intelligentes tempora, ut nosceret academia quid sibi faciendum esset,” defraudandos non esse, si non credet ingratum seculum, fortassean dicet posteritas. Imo illorum ope et consilio, quamvis non decus aliquod aut nitorem assecuto, tamen sine insigni ullâ togâe gentis jacturâ, fasces deponere milii ipsi contingat. Nec omnino sane inerti otio contabimus, quamvis huc tantûm rediit votorum summa, ut eo fruamur. Cætera de nobis fascibusque nostris, quod procul dubio præstat, taceo; neque enim unquam altius spiravi, quam ne commodioris hominis, peritorioris rectoris, vigilantioris præfecti, prudentioris moderatoris, vices difficillimis temporibus suppleri, nimium lugeret academia.

Interea sciant amici atque inimici, imo exterî et posteri, quotquot honeste cupiunt rei literarie, etiam qui cum à nullum commercium volunt, neque ferias agere academiam, neque intra antecessorum septâ (quasi doctum esse nihil aliud esset, quam doctos legisse, atque eorum sensus quamvis reconditos eruisse) sese continere; sed progressus, Deo hominibusque testibus, in dilatandis scientiarum pomorîis, in promovendâ, unà cum pietate et religione, re literarìa quotidie ponere.

Testor theologiam, artium reliquarum dominam et magistram, cui ut prompâe ancillentur prope est res nostra unica, non turbidam illam ex scholasticorum lacunis depromptam, nec communem illam tantûm et disciplinabilem, a quamplurîmis bonis sane viris, nec ineptis, in multîfariis compendiolis traditam; sed liberam, puram, defecatam, ex ipsorum fontium fontibus, adjuvante, imo totum opus perficiâ, Spiritu et vi Dei omnipotenti, haustam; adhibitisque omnibus vera philosophiae et scientiarum adminiculis, qui ei vel adjumento, vel ornamento esse possint, indices efflorescentem. Intima videmus sacrosanctæ veritatis penetralia reserata, abditosque vitalis paginæ sensus erutos et propinatos. Hinc lucem et pocula sacra. Conces ad populum non phaleras illas, et ineptis verborum crepitaîis, ad aurem vani et imperiti vulgi tinnientes; sed pietatem, φιλο-τονία, αἰσθητρία in sacris γεγυμνομενα spirantes, frequentissimas: exercitâ quaedam recens instituta, nonnulla postliminio restituta, recuperatam aliquatenus disciplinæ gravitatem, exsulanem et triumphantam reductam pietatem, fas esset celebrare. Disputationes etiam theologicas redivivas memorarem, nisi absentium aliquorum negli-
gentia, praesentium verò quorundam socordia fecisset, ut ex inepto illo, honesto sane, et conamine laudabili, academiae ratiocinio, quâm academicorum rationi, hactenus melius consultum fuisse. Absit tamen ut hinc tandem proventūs ipsos sulcos oneraturi exspectationi renuntiarem. Non enim tantùm messem, quod aiunt, in herba habemus, summæ nimirum spei ad frugem et fructum juventutis; sed et in proculu veteranorum haud contemnenda manus, quæ non tantùm amice veritatis velitationi, prout pro more fit in academia, parata est; sed quæ Latiali Vejovi bruta fulmina e manibus excutere, et reliquas extraneorum copias civitati magni regis, Dei O. M. ðémεs imminentes, mimitantes dira, profligare et dispalare novit.

Et sane ad veternum nobis excutiendum, nunquam post natum in orbe Christianum nomen, donis, quibus veritatis divinae culturae liberaliter instruxit pater clementissimus, magis opus fuit. Quam enim, Deus bone! detestanda turma, quam fœda haëreticorum, fanaticorum, et enthusiasmarum colluvias sponsam Christi sub ipsis sponsi sanctissimis oculis pene rapit, stuprante? In eam scilicet puram, castam, undique "tura ruunt luxuriosa, proci." Cum igitur,

"Ut jugulent homines, surgunt de nocte latrones:
Ut te ipsum serves, non expurgisceris?" 1

Et quod ad cumulum addit, satis nequiter proventum est: quo enim quisque ab omni solida doctrina impariati est, eo majori cum supercilio, et confidentius de gravissimis questionibus judicium sibi arrogat. Provenient oratores novi, stuili, adolescentuli, qui nec eruditi sunt, nec se non esse eruditos sentiunt.

1 Αὐτοὶ ἐξερήσονται: ergo, academici, nec amæni recessus sopore perfusi, dulcedine exitio vicinâ, praestitum cum utâ παντὶ λιθω φορτίος ὑποδύεται, sinite ut ineptos, indoctos, βαωολόγους, vaniloquos, plus contra veritatem, quâm pro veritate vos posse, sentiat Christianus orbis. Victoriae quas reportarunt, quos egerunt triumphos Athenarum nostra-rum Miltiades, Juellus, Raynoldus, Twissus, aliique, recolite, mentemque et industrium Themistoclis induite, neque nobis vivis descensum Dei dominium, contemplatam gratiam, concuclatum fœdus sempiter-num, impune ferant vel inscite blaterantes, vel elatioli cothurno rhetoricantes novatores. Undique circumstant observatores, qui mollitiem virtuti, errores veritati, tenebras luci, tumultus paci, quovis pretio a vobis præferri vellent, et ut præferantar expetunt, et spectant.

"Hoc Ithacus velit, hoc magno mercentur Atridae." 2

Sunt qui literarum imperium se solos obtinuisset autumant; et quia cæteros mortales fastuose præ se contemnunt, vos istiusmodi esse, qui

1 Hor. Ep. i. 2, 32. 2 Virg. Æn. ii. 104.
facile et meritò contemni possint, effictim cupiunt. Sunt etiam qui vitiorum et ἀναρχίας nostræ obtentu academiærum ruinæ avidissime inhant, et alterà parte urgent, punguntque. Unà autem virtute utroque circumveniamus, ut non sine summo dedecore illos fastús et περιαυτολογίαι, hos invidiæ et ignorantiae pudeat, pœniteatque.

Ad sospitatorem pertinet industria nostra; ipsum Christum habemus agonothetam. Nostris vigiliis, studiis, laboribus, innititur veritatis gloria, religiosus honos, artium et scientiarum splendor, ipsiusque demum non minima republicæ salus et felicitas. Ignaviam,—animalium ratione gaudentium labem et opprobrium,—senescentis seculi pestem pæne unicam,—ignorantiae, tenebrarum, sordium, et vitiorum omnium proxenetam,—literarum et litteratorum contemptus prodromum certissimum,—diligenter, imo animose excutite, juvenes dilectissimi, germana matris proles, insurgentes seculi quoquo verget pars nobilis futura. Hæc illæ Circe est, quæ nonnullius spei adolescentulæ, luxuriae blanditiis pessime incantatos, fœdissimis inquinatos sordibus, et in porcorum haram et volutabrum pelluctos quotidie deturpat. Invigilate ideo, mementote vos sacramento teneri, imo in arenam descendisse; frustra fugam, latebras, recessus meditamini; nequicquam hominum præjudicia, temporum iniquitatem, magnitum supercilia erga gentem togatam, patriæ ingratiitudinem, quæ ossibus ejus vix pepercit, causamini. Aut dimicandum vobis est fieri, aut quales quales artifices estis, pereundum turpiter. Placet etiam nobis otium, sed magis officium; placet amica studiis solutudo, sed magis studiosis, siqua est, benefica contentio. Eamus unà igitur, erectis aninis, comitantibus vigiliis, studiis, precibus, inimicorum quorumcunque tandem, qui maiores volunt luci et veritati, vices dolentes, quò fata academiæ, et omni caso benignior divina providentia, vocant. Mens serena, suà sorte contendit, mundi contemptrix, nihil nisi quod vile, sordidum, inhonestum, animæ Christianâ, generoso et libero pectore indignum, horrescens, nobiscum cat. Hæreat in furnabulis, præstigiatorum acetabulis; stupeat Babylonios, agyrtes, astrologos, malignum et imperium vulgus; stupeat, dum república tributum imponat, quod pendeant astrologi, quod olim, teste Suida, factum est Alexandriæ, nomine βλασφημίων, quia solum stulti ad eos accedunt: βλασφημίων enim apud eos idem ac fatuus et amens fuit. Minas, arma intendent atrocis seviitiae et feritatis homunciones; scientiam, veritatem, virtutem ipsam rideant, dictoriis excipiant, ὅσα εἰπεν ὁ βλασφημωῦτες, siderati nebulones; ne grave rediret superstitionis et tenebrarum seculum timeat meticuloi; Spartam nos, quam nacti sumus, ornemus, serio militemus, in veritatis castra irruamus, cœlum ipsum virtute petaamus: nil desperandum, vexillum attollente Hon. Cancell., Christo duce, et auspice Christo.

1 In voce βλασφημίων.
ORATIO III.²

DELASSATAS artium omnium et scientiarum vires, et defatigatam
ipsam oratoriam denuo sollicitare, academicī, nec opus est, nec ani-
mus. Quid possit facundia, ut in omni literātūrā viget valetque, ii, 
quos et numeris ratio, et efflorescentis ingenii fervor, alacriores et magis
onēri idoneos reddiderunt, evidentī testīmonio ante aures oculosque
auditorum posuerunt. Elegantiarum omnium, quod reliquum est,
vices supplebit unica æqui ac recti conscientia, quà etiam tripudiāre
Musas vetat vicinu̇s fraterni sanguinis clamor. Si quid de laboribus
et angustiis academiae dicendum restat, ne ferias agere perpetuas
videatur, id mihi negotii dari, ut ea enarrem, maxime arrident. Nempe
eā apud nos, auditores, stat lege res literaria, ut gravissimas totius
ani̇ercurus unius vel alterius dieculā̇e lætitiā̇e compensatas habeamus.
Neque illos forsan, quibus res divinas, pariter ac eas quae apud hu-
manum genus inter primas ponuntur, ornandi cura incumbit, pale-
stræ̇ isti hilarioribus pro more elegantiis crebrius interspersae diutius
immorari deceit. Non quōd solenniorum academiae comitiōrum
honori, quorum, Deo ita gratiose disponente, triplicatā̇ jam vice
lubens saltem pars aliqua fui, quidquam detrauctum iri velim; sed
quōd, asperiores recessus sanctiores quas colimus Musas quā̇erere,
profiteri æquum est. Prout ideo benevolō erga nos χαί̇r matris
animo, quo nobis operosum hoc, quodcunque sit, studiorum nostro-
rum levamen sacrum esse voluit, gratulari liceat; ita gravitatis ejus
et prudentiae, quibus, hāc honorum negotia, malorum otiosis
promovērdis nimis opportuna, incitatis passibus peragī jussit, infra laudem
id omne est, quod dicere possumus. Nimirum lubrica virtutum
statio est, quibus in confinio vitiorum positis, proclivis ad deteriora
lapsus. Ea est, pro dolor! humanī ingenii pravitatis. Non enim tantum,
dum vos pulvērem inter et sudorem, industriae in scholasticis hisce
exercītiis deēgītis, habēnt quod ignavie, quod luxuriÆ sae prætextant
improbi; sed et inane gloriosae aecupium, futurum superfiae et de-
sidiae fomitēm, hujusmodi inceptis ad captandos sæpius quàm par
est eruditorum plausus destinatis, minime malorum suggestii ali-
quiones adhērere compertum est. Sufficiat ideo nonnullis hucus-
que vela ventis explicata porrexisse, aliis in margine ambulasse; ne
ingratu̇tur turbo, ne dilabantur ripae, jam contrahenda vela, jam refer-
ēndi pedes. Nostri autem rerumque nostrarum, cūm temporis oc-
casio, et auditorum reverentia, rationem aliquam efflagitare videantur,
earn, more cūm simus jam omnes impatientes, strictum et quam fieri
possit paucissimis absolvam.

² Hāc oratio habita est anno 1655, in solennibus academiae comitiis, cum procansionellarii munere jam tertio functus est.
Quoniam vero eos, qui fecerunt, proxime excipisse, qui praecella eorum facinora celebrarunt, semper aestimati sunt, ne res academiae, per se satis amplae et magnificae, vero minores apparent, alicui, qui quae sentit polte et copiose possit eloqui, et velit, provinciam hanc delegatam cuperem. Sed prout mihi, me juri et legibus almae materis subducere, religio foret; ita supra bonum atque honestum de vestro candore anxium esse et sollicitum, pene esset flagitium.

Qualem vero se gessit academia, quae tuliit fecitque, quorum gratia aut odio flagravit; quibus fautoribus usa dignitatem aut pristinam sustinuit, aut amissam recuperavit; quo luctu, quibus casibus eam exercuit summus rerum omnium arbiter, fusiis exponemtem haud feret temporis angustia. Pauca ideo rerum capita summatim sunt delibanda.

Ne vero exspectatione elati despicatui haberent referenda auditores, sciant adhuc plura nobis suisse de salute, quam de gloria certamina. Ut scientiarum pomonia dilataremus, cum tot annos Annibal fuerit ad portas, nemo nisi iniquus et sortis humanae ignarum exspectaret. Quibus nos nondum perissa magnum non est, iis qui perierunt instruendos amandamus; pluris sane constitit unius anni salus, quam multorum pridem gloria et honor. Quanto labore, quia industria, quibus vigiliiis et molestiis, quo temporis, studiorum, fortunae, amicorum dispendio, quo in ambiguis consilio, in extremis animo, res nostre hastenas securitatem septem fuerunt, neminem spero posthac experturum. Magistratus nostri in ipsa salutis discrimina fortunorumque communium incidisse honor sit, vel dedecus perpetuum.

Hinc vidimus armatas Musas, et Palladem cum haest; neque quicumque fames, aut gravitatis apud bonos eà re decoxit academia. Imo quod se suaque prudentia dignissimum est fecit. Etenim in publicos hostes omnis homo miles est. Neque artes uillas profitemur, quae naturam dediscere cogant. Extrema exspectare, nihil ausos, malorum est, vel mulierum. Unico pacis amore ducti classicum cecinimus, neque quicum mortalium periculum ingere, sed propriae saluti tempestive consulere in votis fuit. Hunc animum qui criminatur, ut omnis juris, humani pariter ac divini, nostrorumque rerum conditionis ignaros se ostendunt, ita eorum somnata et convicia facile contemnimus. An ingenii cultus, quo nihil melius neque amplius in natura mortalium est, socordes et torpentes redderet, inter sacram et saxum positos? Sane dum ipsum hoc vixisse peccatum non sit, nec vituperationi opportuna sui tutela esse posse videtur. CUM vero ab iis, qui nihil egregium aut laude dignum aggredi ausi sint, aut possint, aliquod candoris vel grati animi indicium exspectare, extremae stultitiae sit, ne nulli omnino videantur, quia praeterea nihil sunt, lubenter eis maledicere permittamus. Sed tamen vix occasione hab/execerat me retineo, quin in
totam ingratorum manum, quorum vitio nihil non mali inest, invehar. Id tantùm nitar, ut hominibus bono publico natis, mederi aliorum incommodi solitis, auctor sim, ut quemcunque boni et magnifici animi fructum, iis, qui cum servili pæne sint conditione, nihil generosum aut honestum sapiant, erogaverint, nisi frustra niti neque alius se satagendo nisi odium quaerere cordi sit, eam omnem humanitatem non in homines insumptam, reputent. Sed pessimum illud genus hominum, quod diligentius metuit quàm meminit, quod cum pæne nihil unquam boni fecerit, tamen beneficia pro debitis exigit, utrùm plures sint qui criminis arguunt, an qui ejus vestigis insintunt, incertum est. Quoniam verò in humanum genus, egenum plerumque et opis indigum, qui ingratà aniœi testimonium ediderunt, peccare videantur, eos tacito honore omnium judicio, cique apud ipos, hoc est malos, tribunali, ubi nemo nocens absolvetur, remitto. Quodcunque conatur, premii securum agit generosum pectus, et ipsa sibi satis mercedes est mens recti conscia. Interea haud vulgari lætitia perfunditur academia, quod nemo tandem gentem suam togatam destructam velit, nisi qui ipsam rempublicam funditus pessundatam cupiat, cùm non ita pridem ab ipsâ maxime metuit respública. Ita est rerum vicissitudo. Quæ autem tumultuante plebeculà, fercicientibus militibus, nutante senatu, strenue-undique calumniantibus sycophantis, omni casu major meliorque providentia immuœm ruinâ salvamque præstitit academiam; ne honorum omnium amore jam flagrantem florentemque desereret, summà contenzione interpellanda est.

Vulnus interea, quamvis pharmaco tempestive adhibito sanatum, quod tulimus, dissimulandum esse dolor pietasque vetant. Nempe principis facultatis inter primarios professores ob multijugem scientiam et raram eruditionem pæne principem amísimus:—illum, inquam, cui (ea est inanis seculi vanitas et ignavia) nihil unquam nisi ipsæ literæ fuere opprobrio. Quae autem post summi viri fata, candidissimi pectoris quondam hospitium, invaserunt lites, odia, studiorumque partium inanes luctas, ne pudenda retegantur et recredescant vulnera, prætereo. Equidem ut dignitatis et auctoritatis tuendæ gratià, qui gradum magistratùs obtinerent in academia, illud honoris et premii haberent, quod optari possint, cùm ipsius rei necessitas efflagitare videtur, tum summâ a majoribus prudentià constitutum est. At nudam προστασίαν, et quemcunque dignitatis locum, per se clara esse aut magnifica, alindve amplius, quod vere sit venerabile, præter eorum qui ea sustinent virtutem, homines leviculi tantùm opinantur. Hic pes figendus: tantum vero laudis a magistratu adepto apud aquos rerum æstimatores reportabis, quantum virtutis et diligentìæ in illum attuleris. Proinde sordidam reddere, quam ambis dignitatem, suillimum est; ipsa verò ut te dignimum
evehat, fieri non potest. Cùm vero apud nos præfectoræ gradus ea habent ex fundatorum munificentia annexa bona, quæ ignavorum etiam animos titillare, et sui desiderio rapere apta sint; quod vix ullos ad dignitatis fastigium evectos annumerat, nisi quos inter alos aliquo modo eminere ipsa invidia fatebitur, academias impense gratulantum est. Cladem autem, quam tanto orbata lumine hortruit theologiam, docissimis successoris modestiam, eloquentiam, candore, et doctrinâ propulsatam gaudet, praedichque.

Variis interim hic vivitur moribus, quia maxima apud nos est ingeniorum varietas. Nonnulli, venti penitus dediti atque somno, ætatem per inertiaem et socordiam trahunt, suntque potius, quam vivunt; in re congerendi alii plus æquo sunt solliciti; aliarumque mixtarum artium non insolentes, habent, habuitque semper academia, quorum piget pudetque. Qui frigide, ideoque frustra ambierunt Musas, et repulsam passi vel penitus sordescunt, vel insaniunt, in corporis gaudis pæne tandem evanuere. Ex sceleratâ vero paucorum licentiâ, et depravatis moribus, de ipsâ pronunciare academiam, illorum tantùm est, qui vel assurgente aliorum virtute minores et invidi, vel caeco partium studio abrepti, de infamiâ nostrâ, quam de probitate suâ, magis sunt solliciti. Comum, lutum, eluviem habent amoenissimæ urbes, nec quid aliud magis expositum, aut in oculos viatorum prius incurrit; at ineptus esset, qui omnem urbem, ubi lutum est, Luteâm diceret. Nec candidiores, nec sanctiores animas magnam partem, quam nunc amplectitur, unquam aluit academia. Per diversoria, trivialia, plateas, œnopolia, ubi nonnullæ forsæ occurruit studiosorum larvae, per triduum oberrantium hospitum censuris non stamus. Collegia, bibliothecas, museos, scholas, oratoria, templas, typographias appellamus. Qui ex iiis diligentia, pietatis, bonarum literarum, virtutum omnium nullum specimen, fructum nullum percepere potest, non tam male lippus est, aut in sole caligat, quàm hostis ex professo, cujus de rebus nostris definire non est.

Quot vero hucusque habuit inimicos academia, tot habuit et triumphos: neque faram nostram vexarunt ulti sine certissimo suæ dispendio. Non autem Vulcanium scutum, non murum aliquem aheneum adepti, non amuletis nescio quibus instructi, sed puri æterni numeris favoris praediis septi, omnium propulsavinimus injurias. Quoties nudi, egeni, ope omni humanâ destituti, petulantissimorum ingeniorum conviciis cruentati, in sinu summi optimi patris recumbentes, rei nostræ conficiendæ curam ei detulimus; toties non tantum securi et vadis emersimus, sed et victores omnia secunda et felicia sumus experti. Qui jacentes ad spem erexit, erectos summâ spe explevit, beneficiis, honoribus auxit, cumulavit; qui efflorescere, et nitorem hunc qualem qualem assequi dedit, ille mihi semper Deus erit.
Neque tamen adeo ingratì sumus, ut quæ eximie de nobis mergerunt optimi quique inter mortales literarum patroni, aut aspennari, aut oblivisci audeamus. Imo hinc memoriae immortaliis, et in omne ævum ab invidiâ oblivionis vindicandi decoris, qui beneficientiâ ullâ academiam demererit statuerunt, sunt securi; quòd cum iis, qui ingrati animi vitium et pustem non tantùm penitus sciunt, sed æternum exsecrantur, rem se habere, facile intelligere possint.

Primò autem mihi celebratius ultimâ oratione, jam celebrandus hic venit summus sub Deo rerum nostrarum arbiter. Sed quid ego de tanto viro? Cùm due artes sint, in quibus viri principes studium ponere debeant, militaris nempe et civilis, quibus omnis stat publica virtus, illeque communem hominum fortunam egressus esse meritò aestimandus sit, qui alterutram feliciter, civium suorum bono administraverit; qui utrunque verò medioscr iter procuravit, vix celebretur; hic nostro saltem seculo solus est, qui tum hanc, tum illam ita expoliverit, ut quam maxime ornaverit haud facile sit definire; utrumque sane, supra quod dici potest, feliciter et processu usque ad invidiam fauste exculerit.

"Res gerere, et captos ostendere civibus hostes, Attingit solium Jovis, et celestia tentat;" 1

ut canit poeta. Atqui procul omni dubio in republica bene legitimesque administranda tanto major gloria est, eà quam splendidissimi effundunt triumphi, quanto ingenii bona, virtutes pacis, religionis honos, virium ostentationi, cædi, et sanguini antestant. Ille vero tantus ac talis, ceteris omnibus major, hoc solo seipso minor esse voluit, ut secundi ordinis titulum inter suis pergat numerare, quo lubens primitus susceput nostri patrocinium feliciter usque propugnet. Nec satis habuit, nominis invicti umbræ discrimen academiae tot annos jam defendisse; sed insuper munificentia et largitione gratissimâ, celeberrimum toto orbe librorum thesaurum, grande illud non academicae tantum, sed et gentis nostræ decus, bibliothecam Bodleianam auxit et locupletavit. Felicem Bodleii animam! quæ tot tantosque virtutis suæ aemulos, tum famæ auctores invenerit. Dum innuenceros, qui id sibi negotii solum crediderunt dari, ut laute baccharentur, nepotes longâ nocte premit, æternumque pressa est oblivio; tu nominis tui gloriosam memoriam usque adeo propagasti, ut neque ulla annorum series, aut fuga temporum ei tenebras offundat. Felix Bodleii! non omnis morieris; dum reges, principes, victores, quidquid uspiam antique virtutis, aut verse eruditionis monumentum inventiri possit, in tuo sacrario reponere certatim gestiunt, suisque imaginibus penetralia tua decorare non designantur. Hic princeps, illie comes, inde præsul, longo demum ordine, variis homo-

1 Hor. Ep. i. 17, 33.
rum tabulis insigniti, viri laudatissimi fecerunt, ut jam totius orbis ore consono celebretur Bodleius. Adsit jammodo numen propitium, quin ad invidendos scientiarum et virtutis apices, summumque in orbis literario dignitatis fastigium ascendet academia, causa nulla est cur dubitemus.

Cum itaque per se, suos, aliosque ita cumulatissime nobis prospexit benignissimus pater, quid nos interea, academici? An per ignavigam et socordiam ætatem agere, genio æcum indulgere, torpescere, animo esse remisso, et suaviss in prescntia quæ sunt, prima habere, deinde emori, priusquam quid sit vivere sciamus? Absit sane. Imo quicquid praecitum et egregium, quicquid apud mortales laude dignum haberì debet, illud omne a nobis jam meritissime exspectari videtur. Nihil vulgare, nihil non summâ pietate et diligentia excutum, cõm bonorum omnium vita, tum Dei immortalis beneficia efflagramt: quod invidis oculi doleant, quod horreat Roma, quod nolit impia turba, id simus, id assequi conemur. Vanam, nudam, sterilem religionis professionem, histrionicò, cui renuntiavimus, numinis cultu nihil meliorum, quantocùs amoliamur. Nil viris gravibus, et scenæ servire nesciss, et qui in aliquá modestiæ famâ esse velint, indignius, quàm ex merà togà ambire laudem et honorem crepantes, id omne, quod verùs laudis et honoris quasi palatium est, susque deque habere, persuasissimi simus. Intelligat denuo, quam cordatis omnibus et contemptui et ludibrio sit, proletaria ista togatorum turba. Non sumus ut olim in Velabro¹ olearii, ubi mutuam laudem malis moribus invicem prestare mos erat. In militiae disciplinam adducimur, ubi cuique statio quam agit, pro virili tuenda est, aut deserenda turpiter. Præteriunt fatuorum halcyonia; neque superire ex titulis, aut in imperitum vulgus ex ephippiis ferocire ultra licet. Unicum si excipias studium partium, severe judicat, nec annius hominum larvas miratur populus.

Macti ideo virtute vestra, doctores literatissimi! sacrum theologiam depositum, veritatis ææμηλιον, religionis honorem, vera sanctimoniae laudem, doctrinæ famam, cuncta a plerisque desertâ, nequiter et turpiter conculcata, tanquam Spartam vestram, quam coepistis, ornare pergite. Sycophantarum latratibus invidorum, et temporum mutationibus, exacerbatorum morsibus, hostium incursionibus, hactenus obstitit virtus vestra et industria. Candorem, numinis reverentiam et cultum, morum gravitatem, cæterasque animi et ingenii dotes, quis hucusque in vobis suspexerit academia, indies excolite magis, donec triumphantâ ignorantia, invidia, omnique detersâ æregine, tanquam in consummatissimum virtutum omnium emporium oculi ani-

¹ Velabrum, iesus Romæ olim celebris; in quo erant tabernæ oleariorum, qui solitant, quo curius venderent, de pretio olei inter se conspirare, ne alter altero villius dis- traheret.—Faccioli et Forecellini Lexicon.—En.

VOL. XVI.

32
mique, tum nostratium, tum exterorum in academia conversi siunt. Quòd a seculi peste et supplicio, errorum tecterrimorum, qui ubique pene grassantur, tabe et sane integros et sanos custodivit filios alma mater; vestrae in concionando sedulitati, exhortando fervori, disputando quà opus est acumini, virtutum exemplo, sub clementissimi patris curâ et tutelâ acceptum ferre se libenter testatur. Quam plurimi antem hic in theologia vere studiosi, sacri ministerii candidati, in hujus laudis partem assumi meritissime postulant. Hosce nemoque vigore summo lacertos, olim ecclesiam et scholas, rostra et cathedras amplexuuros monet academia. Quibus utrûm modestiam, doc-trinam, ingenii acumen, an animi submissionem magis gratuler, hæreo.

Vestro, doctores, eorumque in ære quantum sit respublica, nisi vos multo majori debitorum mole Christo et ecclesiæ devincet esse haberem confitentes, in memoriam libentissime revocarem. At Christi servis, eœli candidatis, utcunque inter mortales exceptis, tantis cùm sint beneficiis pignerati, quibus in æternum non erunt solvendo, melior quàre vobis sors contigerit haud expectanda, vix optanda videtur. Mercès est obedientia nostra, et ipsum opus ministerii præmium satis amplum. Ne vos teneat philosophorum immensa laudum cupido, multo minus hodiernae apud pontificios idolo-maniae illecebræ, venter et ambitio, aliave fugacis ævi blandimenta; quà futura sunt, imo quàe bonis adsunt, divini amoris pignora attentius perpendite. Hæc animos in obsequium rapere, in officio peragendo vires renovare et augescere possunt, et factum dabunt.

Vosque, lectissima juvenum corona, academiae, patriæ, ecclesiæ, non minor spes quam illi gloria! quoniam vobis neque exempla, neque precepta desunt, quibus ad proficiendum in omni virtutum generæ incitari possitis, quàe a vobis meritò sperantur, attendite. In speculâ sunt omnis ordinis homines: quemadmodum se unusquisque vestrum gerat, observant. Malorum interim et ignavorum corrumpendi artibus vos nimis esse opportunos, cogitate. Neque enim laus est, ibi esse probum, ubi nemo est, qui aut possit, aut conetur corrupere. Fucos, quoad possumus, depellimus a præsepius nostris: cœrærum cordatis omnibus ignavorum exitu ad diligentiam aceriu stimulius vix adhibetur. Qui stolidorum et improborum hominum catervas vagas et inutiles, extrema fere aut timentes, aut férentes, vel flagitiis omnibus coopertas, sibi in œnopolisiis, popinis, angulisque foedissimis et spurcissimis plaudentes, strenuis et sapientibus omnibus satis pretas et neglectas, contemplari velint, vix socordiam, tripudia, et chorea, quibus juventutis florem bonis artibus ereptum discant, imitatuntur.

Sec ulterius detinendi non estis, auditores. Ex invidorum oculis jam jam evanescentis magistratús nostri, cujus tamen adhuc neque piget neque pudet, vel acta referendo, vel confitendo ommissa, ullamve reddendo rationem, invitis vobis, ipsè non coactus, satietatem im-
ponere nolo. Floreat academia, vigeat inter studiosos concordia, industria, religio, numinis reverentia, et insurgentis cujuscunque virtutis æmulatio; exsulent studia partium, cæcus sui amor, avaritia, ignavia, quæcunque ingenuos animos, generaea pectora, mentes Christianas minus decent! Quòd dispendio pacis, famæ, studiorum, vestris studiis obsequens, inserviens commodis, hucusque litavi, mei haud pœnitebit.


ORATIO IV.3

Ea est muneris nostri ratio, academici! ut cùm deliciarum omne genus satias tenuerit auditores, in ipsa dimissione, cui jam inhiat erudita cavea, paulisper a me detinendi sitis. Elatos spe scessœs, et ad censuram peragendam gestientes animes, cùm nostrorum homi-num, tum hospitum gratissimorum videre videor. Quid cuique sapuit, quid nauseam peperit, ut quisque nostrum vel cordate, vel saltem minus inepte partes suas egerit, prout feret sors aut occasio, iis, qui semper auditores vexatos esse dedignantur, libido est expo-nere. Usque enim adeo in locum præcipitem hic nos committimus, ut æquis atque iniquis pariter nostri potestatem faciamus. Eâ enim

3 In comitiis academicis habita est hæc oratio, anno 1657, cum jam continuá serie quintâm fuerat procancellarius.
sub lege et conditione, illiberali satis, rem hisce comitiis literariam gerimus, ut quae nos pro more et honore academiae, atque officio quod nobis incumbit, praestare conemur, mox fabula fiant, atque per ora vulgi traducta cachinni sepium censurà excipiantur. Neque enim ullo consilio regi potest mos iste pessimus, qui in se neque consilium, neque modum habet. Ita voluerunt, ita jusserrunt antecessores, quorum hic solim auctoritate nitimur, et imperium ferimus, ut profana, sacra; levia, seria; procacia, atque rerum gravissima uno nisu effunderet ingenio varia, atque animo dispar soboles academica. Sed nequicquam coit male sarta gratia. Optima quæque statim signa relinquere, et oblivione sibi consulere, coguntur. Ita enim quæ suavia sunt in præsentia, quamvis agritudinem mox conciliatura, prima habet juvenilis studiosorum fervor; et vix aliquem ipsa virtus, aut eruditio, locum tutari possit, ita tumultuantur, clamant, pugnans concalescens turba, de iis quibus nihil opus est ut audiantur; ut obliviscantur plurimum. Pudet dicere, quæ celebritate, si modo celebre id dici possit, quod dictu turpe est, ubivis volitant sarcasmorum et dictatorum ineptiae, cùm rerum vere memorabilum ipsa vestigia obterit oblivio, et aeterno premuntur silento. Neque sane iniquiusulla concertatio comparari potest, quam ut medios inter tumultus et strepitus, dum gæloian avidus insurgit loci temporisque genius, cum lepore et facetiis contenterent virtus et eloquium. Imo quia unit, quia secat, liceat, auditores, inveterato huic atque adhuc gliscenti hujus loci dieique malo paulo altius ingemiscere. Atque hoc libentius agam, quoniam quicquid sit illud doloris, aut bilis, quod cuiquam indignabunda conciliare possit oratio, ἕμαυς ἐβοσίνης lenire, atque iis quae magis ad palatum sapiunt, veluti condire, priusquam ad finem vergat, animus est. Praeterita recordanti subit istorum temporum miseratio, quibus, quo quis ad bonos inhumane conviciandum accesserit audacior, quo ad modestiae limites transilendi alacrior, eo magis famæ et gloriae se reportaturum speraverit. Manserunt etiam hisce comitiis, morientis uti speramus, licentiae vestigia. Sed graviora tumilus: neque enim unquam celeberrimum hunc conventum ad finem perducere potuimus, quin vel oratorum alicui silentium imponere, vel quod multo gravius est, contumelias pati, necesse habuimus. Delicatis ingeniis, si quæ sint, age, evellantur vitiorum fibrae.

Est etiam unde sororiiæ academiae vel curam et diligentiam desiderare, vel vices dolere cogimur; nempe quod impuros nebulones moriones eruditos, non tantum alios, quos non nisi Aristophanis æmulus in scenam producere fas esset, dicteriis petulantissime agitare; sed et quia magis aperte dicendum est, mendacis atque calumniis in innocentium hominum famam involare, vel volens permisit, vel invita est perpessa.

Satis diu jam, ni fallor, serram haec invicem se proscindendi con-
viciis reciprocavit utriusque academicæ proles; neque enim dentatas
istiis hominum generis, quod quid sit pudere nescit, quas vocant,
facetias, aliter dici posse, aut debere censeo. Contendimus utique
quis jocose magis, aut magis salse, si modò consuetudini insulsissimæ
quid salis inesse dicendum sit, alios populo derüdendos præbeat.
Putidum certamen, et personatis indignum histrionibus. Veterem
comœdiam, γέλατοτεινυ, cordatorum hominum famæ dicaciter insul-
tantem, uti obtrivit Macedonum contumeliarum impatiens poten-
tia; ita ubivis fastidivit, contempsit, explosit tandem ethnicismus.
Eam jam deperimus scilicet, et vulgari scenâ ejectam, postiliminio
in academiarum comitia reducere satagimus. Egregiam verò lau-
dem! mimas, histriones, balatrones publicos, evax, tandem pæne
prævertimus! Etenim dum huic sententiae, seu insaniae potius non
renuntiamus, dum istiusmodi nos agitant intemperiae, si quis mox
ganeonibus per popinas, tabernas, lustra, decantanda depromperit,
ille supit solus, reliqui volitant velut umbra. Útinam sane tandem
per eos, quorum honoris parco (ut neminem enim offenderet oratio
nostra, nisi qui se ita voluntarius obtulerit, ut in eum non incurrere
non possim, statuï),—útinam, inquam, liceret inveteratæ huic con-
suetudini obviæ ire; útinam juventuti academicæ liceret esse piæ,
sobrie, modestæ; et ne, qui sunt ex malorum morum quasi colu-
vione nati, bipedum, imo, quod sæpius accidit, quadrupedum impu-
dentissimi, in ullo pretio apud nos diutius esse viderentur.

Harum vero ineptiarum non ita pridem pertæsus, ausus est non
nemo, quà erat inscitiâ, ordinem hunc rerum nostrarum, quem sem-
per vetitum, condemnatum semper, semperque retentum videret,
convellere. Voluit nempe ut a comitiis academicis, gravissimorum
virorum frequentissimo undique concursu celeberrimis, exsularent
scemmata, dieteria, mendacia; ut in omni doctrine genere exerciti-
orum atque disputationum uberiorem haberemus proventum; con-
vìciorum, maledictorum, ineptissimorum jocorum famem; ut inertium
hominum et helluonum, qui nihil aliud norunt, nisi vivere per de-
decus, et præ risu quotidie emori, qui solennibus nostris se affatin
ingerunt, nulla ratio in posterum haberetur. Criminis verò hujus
inauditi, audaciiæ, furoris, sceleris auctorem velitis, ut ei in oculos
involutis, aut saltem ejus in famam? Atqui eccum ipsum:—

"Me, me, adsum, qui feci, in me convertite ferrum,
O juvenes, mea fraus omnis."

Imo quâ et quanta jampudum ab hominibus odio, amore, studio
partium incitatis, aliisque, qui nihil otiosâ vitâ, plenâ et confertâ
voluptatibus, præstabilius esse ducunt, ob ipsam hanc causam, quôd-
que in ipsorum verba, antiquas quod attinet ineptias, jurare ausus
non sum, sim perpessus, quidque rumoribus super hâc re ubivis

1 Virg. Æn. ix. 427.
inique sit dispersum, hominem neminem arbitror esse, qui ignorant. Neque sane conatus istiusmodi destinans mea me fessilit exspectatio. Etenim an ego ea, quibus hac rerum conditione invigilaveram, ut vulgo cum candore exciperentur, vel senserim, vel speraverim? Non tam eram rudis, non tam ignaris rerum, tam omnis (Deo gratias) prudentiae expers, ut animum meum lactando in vanam spem illicerem. Aliquid vidi, aliquid audivi, aliquid legendo et quærendo cognovi; contra inveterata praæjudicia bono publico invigilantem, nisi conviciorum plausiris onustum, et tantum non oppressum, inveni neminem. Neque hoc ideo a me dicuntur, quasi ex obscurorum quorundam hommum et nugacissimorum ineptis et stultitiis, aliquumve ingratæ credulitate aut invidiâ, anxietatem exhaurirem; cùm non tantum conscientiâ propria, sed et studiorum et factorum apud eruditos et malarum artium insolentes saltem veniâ, dictiorum sceæ ac vulgi conviciorum sim securus.

Sin autem acerius hic egì, quàm mea fert consuetudo, aut ratio vitae, quà omnibus morem gerere, omnes perferre et pati, quoad fieri potest, in animum induxi; peto a vobis, academicis! ut tantum orationi meæ concedatis, quantum justæ indignationi, si modo indignationem parerent convicia et contumeliz, concedendum putetis. Usque vero, per me licet, fruantur in posterum maledicendi voluptate, qui nec recta sibi consulere, nec bene consultis uti norunt. Quantas itaque turbas, quos clamores, in rejiciendis nugis, quisquis, eruditionis verò et scientiarum omne genus exercitiis inducendis, stabiliendi, excitaverit, quos provocaverit nonnullorum industria, de quà quicquid dixerim minus esset, ne invidiâ et partium furore perciti litteriones aliqui nimium contabescerent, ulteriorus non prosequar. Optimi autem conatús atque pulcherrimi conscientiâ recti, ea in præsentia voluisse, quibus posteri si qui sint fruentur, sat habeant, quibus curae et cordis est aut purioris religionis honos, aut severioris eruditionis et scientiarum progressus: alienæ virtutii invidiæ necesse est, qui proprium non habent.

Quoniam verò ex iis, quæ non fecit, calumniarum satis tulerit academia; videamus porro, num ex iis, quæ fecit, gloriam ullam aut laudem apud æquos rerum æstimatores sit adepta. Annus jam decimus agitur, ex quo communi patriæ incendio erepta academia, et securius altiusque radices egerit, et liberius progerminare cœperit. Quibus vero rerum adversarum anfractibus involuta, quibus impedita molestiis, atque periculis exposita, “occulto velut arbor ævo,” hucusque succreverit, et sæpius antehac exposuí, neque amplius in memoriam revocare opus est. Non defuisse, qui a gentis togate, extremum pæne discriminæ sæpius adeuntis, partibus steterint, frequentissima, quam hodierno die conspeximus, studiosorum concio testimonio esse potest. Quid enim? an privatorum copia erat hostium præpotentium
ferociæ, avaritiae, audaciae modum ponere? vel minas intonantibus, et verborum fulmina, frena injicere? Imo qui nihil divinum, nihil ope mortali grandius in declinantis rei literariorum subsidium et fulcimentum venisse sentit; illum rerum divinarum et humanarum pariter sociari, et negligentiam supinam laborare certum est. Si quid autem vel a nostrum quopiam prudenter et consulte est susceptum, vel ducet et auspice Christo perfectum felicer, quo academia aut salutis, aut honoris, aut commodi consultum fuerit; id sane sine summo seculi dedecore, quemcunque tandem multum aut supercilium indue-rint calumniatores, ei vitio verti non potest. Quo verò quisque vir melior est, eo libentius laude atque famâ caret, factorum sensu atque conscientiâ contentus. Neque si solūm forsas academicici dicendi sunt, qui cūm illis alibi nihil opus esset, intra muros academicos se tūtò retinuerint; ipsius autem academice aut incolumentatem propugnare, aut honorem augere, nec velint, nec valeant. Ita demum optime præesse videantur ergastularii. Sed et præsto nobis fuere potenti-orum subsidia, quà grato animo semper recolimus, et quandam virtutem et favori optima quæque accepta serimus. Eorum verò, cūm rerum gestarum gloriam immortalitati consecrarent, in laudes spatiiari, aut recen-sere beneficia, temporis cancelli, quibus arctamur, nos prohibent. Pro-videntiae interea et bonitatis divinæ gloriam, in amplissimis quos ex ipsis intra breu tempus fructibus percepiimus, libet contemplari.

Quæ anno abhinc decimo, aut eo plus minus, pæne deserta jacuit academia, quos jam, propitiis in Christo numinis favore freta, atque irrigata caelitus, doctissimos oratores, subtiles philosophos, disceptatores acerrimos, egregios mathematicos, pios, acres, vehementes verbi divini praebentes, felices criticos e grege suo in gremium ab ipsa pueritia exceptos, fotos, educatos, ostendere non possit? Quos ego hic nunc prius laudem? vos doctores, aliosque collegiorum et aularum praefectos, eruditos, pios, qui recta consilia, egregia exempla deditis: an juventutem ipsam, quà vestris vestigiis inhaerere, consiliis obtenderum voluit? Si ea demum sit civitatis ejuscumque ultima calami-tas, atque hinc solūm misera esse videatur, cūm neque qui prudenter reipublicæ consulere possint, neque qui recte cogitatis acquiescere velint, in eâ sint; quidnì ea felix dicitur sit, ubi multû bene pra-cipiunt, atque plurimi sunt, qui cordate obtemperant? Uti enim vim atque virtutem ductorum sensim debilitat, atque animis languorem ineunt, discipulorum seignitias aut pervicacia; ita juniorum industriae necesse est ut iter intercludatur, ubi nemo est, qui cohortatione suà et exemplo animum iis accendat. Quid autem jam possit vita in literis posita, exemplis atque praecipitis instituta et munita, quasi in speculo conspiciendum praebet academia. Quod gaudeant boni, quod invidis oculi doleant, quod suo splendore aliis caliginem inducat; ejus jam unice desiderio per aliquot annos flagrarunt literarum et
disciplinæ nostræ alumnī; imo eo usque progressi sunt eorum non-nulī, ut quemadmodum apud antecessores non habuerint exempla, ita an apud posteros inventuri sint æmulos, vereor. Quid ego singulos commemorem? theologos, ἐποδοξίας retinentiissimos, quibus scilicet antiquius fuerit veritati divinæ, eā, quà decet, animi submissione inservire, quam pravarum opinionum portentis, aut veterum philosophorum quisquiliis, inauspicatō denuo erutis, nominis celebratatem aliquam assequi, atque enitescere? Atque utīnam sane tam libenter aliqui nobilitate nominis quali quali carere potuissent, quàm ecclesia aut pii omnes eorum lucubrationibus carere possent. Sed postquam famæ libido quemquam invaserit, neque eam explendi nisi veritatis periculō spes ulla est, omne per errorum anfractus vagandi licentiam praefiderent sibi sumit, atque mori mavult, quam non per fas aut nefas eminere. Quid egregios mathematicos, quibus, cum neque a priscis feliciter inventa accurate docere, neque aliorum inventis addere, satīs fuerit, ipsi etiam communem vīorum doctorum sortem prætergressi, nova, mira, stupenda, ex intimis naturæ rerum penetrālibus eruta, ignota priscis, admiranda posteris, non sine tum ipsorum, tum academiae laude et famā, tam dilucide et ornate in lucem eruditorum extraxerunt, ut, ea studia quod attinet, quicquid uspiam est doctorum et candidiorum animalarum, iis ultro palmae dēfere paratum sit? Alios libentissimē adorā afficerem, nisi me, qui in hoc dicendi genere neque promptus sum, neque paratus, laudandorum multitudo, et meritorum splendor ac decus obruerit. Imo intelligo quām scrupulosō difficilique in loco versor, quàm invidiē atque obtreetationibus opportuno; dum aliquibus laudationum nihil satīs est, aliis quicquid nonnihil est nimium. Aliquorum ideo cedamus mo-destiā, aliorum audaciē; parcem personis, res ipsē recenseantur. Igitur magnum quid aggerdiō, quōd cum omnes pæne ævo seculi graves simul, atque sub ipsius mundi mortalitate gemat humanum genus, licentiā et intemperantiā ubivis fere dominantibus, academico rum mores non vereor commemorare. Præceps sane et perversum malevolorum judicium, quinquatribus Palladis, aut Musarum hisce feriis innixum, dum advenarum turbæ mista paulo licentius vagatur juvenitus academica, declinare cogimur. Si quid hic secus quam oportet accidere videatur, in eos cudatur faba, qui ne interciderentur peccandi lenociā et occasiones, summā ope nisi sunt; quæ nunc extra septa lœc publicitus aguntur, ego vix ea nostra vocō: pacata tempora studiorum atque studiosorum recessus appellamus: nisi illic plurimos optimarum legum vigorem ingeniōs moribus exprimentes; paucos tantum ad præscriptum honestos et sobrios; quisquilias, nebulones, sceleribus inquinatos, nisi aut nullos, aut paucissimos, inveniet æquus rerum arbiter, causam non dicimus, quin summā infamia flagremus. Age, hic in jus ambulemus. Diem nobis dicat,
ORATIO IV.

505
cuiocunque vel ex irâ, vel ex invidiâ volupe est. Pro tribunali nos
libentissime sistimus. In novum discrimen adducimur. Non fecim-
us, non cogitavimus, falsi testes, dicta crimina: que voces ad ju-
dices dici solent, adhibemus. Hic serô triumphamus; hic habent,
quod gratiae imputent divinae grati animi; neque hoc opis est nostræ.

Neque multorum in academiâ, aut ipsius academie erga exterios,
religionis ergo, et bonarum literarum gratiâ peregrinantes, pietatem
oblivione sepelire fas esse judicamus. Quot verò egregios juvenes,
multarum ecclesiæarum spem atque segetem, quinquentio jam proxime
elapso sustinuit, aluit, fuit quorundam liberalitas, consultius silere
puto, quâm leviculam arrogantiæ suspicione am pud quemvis mor-
talium dicendo subire. Verbo dicam: non tantum aëtâ nostrâ nobis
bibliothecarum usus, ac mortuorum indulgentia eos excepit (quis
enim non esset sine sumptibus liberalis, sine dispendio munificentius? si
modô hoc esset liberalem esse et munificentiam) sed in dimensorum
consortium, in aularum instructum cautione divinâ secura pictas eos
admisit. Neque tamen in hae re aliiquid reperio, quamobrem lauda-
remur. Officium nostrum fecimus, atque utinam fecerimus. Eorum,
quæ fidei nostrâ concrédidit antiquorum munificentia, non propriè-
tarios, non on æs heredes, sed condos promos fidos et frugi, quà ex
illorum liberalitate quàm plurimorum inopius ac rebus an-
gustius subveniretur, nos esse voluerunt. Cum itaque cumulâtissime
nobis prospererit divina providentia, an nobis vivere, genio indul-
gere, âtetatem voluptatibus âgere, licebit, neglectis, spretis iis, quibus
cüm sit res angusta domi, tamen ingenii cultûs gratiâ, quà nihil
melius, neque an'plius in naturâ mortalium est, per infinita rerum
discrimina et regionibus remotissimis in celeberrimum hoc literarum
emporium tendunt? Absit, academici! imo nihil Christianis, nihil
pietatis et purioris religionis cultoribus, nihil viris doctis, nihil ali-
orum munificentiae alumnis indignius, quàm deo Lucrio inhiare, aut
eo frui, quod revera est alienum, nimium esse tenacibus. Verûm
enimvero quicquid nos peregrinorum causâ fecimus, id maxime nos-
trâ etiam causâ fecisse possimus. Cum enim vitâ plerumque
sint innocentes, proposito sancti, insolentes malarum artium, pietatis,
industriae, diligentia, ac grati animi egregia specimina inter nos edide-
runt. Hinc etiam per exteriors oras latius diffusa effulgent academie
decus et honor. Hinc laudem suam a malevolorum et invídorrum
hominum calumniis prorsus vendicavit; ut fugitivis, atque ob scelera
fugatis, qui infeste nobis adversantur, et os ferreum perfricantes ubivis
in academiam invehunt, vix auri, nemum fides apud probos, et par-
tium studii vacuos, uspiam adhibeatur. Omnium jam libris et
linguis praedicator Oxonium, ita ut postquam deleverit adversario-
rum convicia, atque de invídorrum calumniis triumphum egerit, ne
celebritati suæ minor cedat, jam solûm in votis habeat.
Non defuere interea, quibus vel propriâ malitia ductis, vel aliorum libidini morem gerentibus, dum quas ipsi meruere, penas dederunt, non sine summâ infamia, nec minore scelere, volupe fuerit non tantùm tranquillam academiae conditionem sollicitare, sugillare gloriam, antiquos ritus evertere, sed et colubrinis molaribus ipsam matrem depascere, atque illotis pedibus conculeare. Manent adhuc ubivis, et sunt superstites Cuthæorum posteri, qui dum votis fruitur felicibus academia, se genuinam ejus esse prolem plenis buccinis crepant; at ubi in arctum coguntur gentis togatae copiae, atque urgentur angustiis, animo statim gladiatorio ad eam viam affectant, et una cum iis, qui novercali odio prosequantur literatos, devorâtâ (quam prius simulabant) modestiâ, palam congregiuntur; quippe qui id solûm in votis habere videantur, ne non nostris periculis delectentur malevoli, ipsi opinae invidiae et odii victimae. Hos consulunt in tenebris, hos publice adsciscunt patronos, contumaces academiae alumni, dum grandævam matrem, longo retro tempore summæ libertatis jure gaudentem, extraneum ferre imperium, atque ãmolorum sub ditione captivam detinere, volunt. Si ex horum hominum votis cecidisset eventus, si ex animi sententiâ nacti fuissent calumniatores successum, nisi multi unâ Flaminii clamassent, ἵλυθεν ἵστοι Ἔλλας, neque suo jure, neque favore principum, neque antecessorum industriâ aut virtute, neque antiquâ disciplinâ uterius fruitura essest academia. Et sane usque adeo hostium extraneorum sustulimus impetum, arma retinimus, tot reipublicæ militum cupiditatem, et tot publicis enatavimus periculis; ut non nisi a domesticos, a nostraribus, si qui tandem futuri sint, qui ad perdendam rem literariam sobrie sunt accessuri, nobis cavendum sit. Sed nolo Babylonios tentare modos. "Prudens futuri temporis exitum Caliginosa nocte premit Deus." 1

Quænam autem negotiorum moles nostrorum nonnullis incubuit, dum consiliis aliorum pravis et precipitibus mederi, adversari aliorum nequitia, obviamque ire periculis undique ingrentibus, necesse habuerunt, cùm in summa rerum omnium discrimina inciderimus, qui negotio huic nostro in posterum sunt praeficiendi, dicent. Sine causâ ideo, at forsan non sine culpâ, ut non tantùm quâ elegiâtiâ, sed et quo lepore, quibusque factiis essent prædati ostenderent, id maxime nobis vitio vertere quidam voluerunt, sine quo neque ipsi tuti, neque nos probi et honesti esse potuimus. Sed ut modum tandem orationi constituamus, necesse est. Hucusque ideo, auditores, ope divinâ freti, non tantùm ex periculis evasimus, sed infestissimos quosque hostes vicimur; saltem victi, prostrati, loco pulsi non sumus. Vicit pietas, ingenuus candor, morum integritas, atque omnia recta tentandi audax industria, ne-

1 Hor. Carm. iii. 29, 29.
que sub jugum nos misit utcunque corrupti seculi genius. Numerosa-
sam fama et celebritas, bene moratam disciplina, doctam industria
peperit almae matris sobolem. Quam concepit in re religionis sen-
tentiarum divortium, fovit studium partium, incendit ira et vindicta,
gravem et pene insuperabilem usque adhuc pertulimus invidiam;
neque tamen adeo abjuncto sumus animo, aut demisso, ut non eadem
qua prius, imo majora tentare specis sit, et votum. Adsum modo pro-
pitius tu, Pater optime! laborum omnium nostrorum auctor atque
premium, sit tibi curae atque cordi pusilli gregis incoluptitas; tuque,
Jesu Christe! tuorum omnium perfugium atque salus; tuque etiam
sanctissime, atque infinitè potens, beate Spiritus! erige virtute tua
inffabili ad omnem pietatem et industria academicaorum omnium
animos! Italia demum ea seges, qua adhuc pene in herba latet, et
votis et expectationi honorum omnium amplissime respondebit;
quod axis pro infinita tua gratia, Domine Jesu! Amen.

ORATIO V. 2

QUOD semper in votis habui, academici! ut quamvis indignissimus,
non tamen ultimus audirem academie procancellarius; cum id mihi
hujus diei felicitas propediem expediet, venerando huic senatui, toti-
que academie non possum non impense gratulari. Et quidni sane
tot procellis agitato, tot negotiorum fluctibus pene obruto, tot undi-
que contrariis ventorum ictibus oppugnato, in portum jam tandem
navigante si etiam gratulari liceat? Etenim quorum præagitatione
quàdam, studiis depulsus, laborum atque itimerum tædio contributus,
rerumque alienarum satur, succumbentem animum toties refeci,
otium et quietem tantum non assecutus esse videor. Quantiam autem
mihi fuerit fasces deponere academicos, quæ immane ambitione id
dudum sum conatus, quà tandem maximorum virorum sententiam
pene invercundiá expugnavi, neque vestra nosse interest, neque mea
repetere refert. Quod ideo non ante decursum totum quinquennium
illuxerit vobis mihiique dies hic expectatissimus, e rerum est quam
patimur conditione. Sidera supremo moti proxime remota, eoque

1 Ne quis in celeberrima Oxoniensi academia institutis minus versatus orationis
hujus argumenti similitudinem cum ea diuorum proxime praedentium, in occasione
hand dissimili, vitio vertat, rei istius causam ex Parebolis Statutorum percepit, qua-
rum, Tit. vii. sect. 1, § 18, cui inscriptit est, “De conclusione comitiorum,” hic adscrip-
simus: “Peractus exercitis, et doctoribus in quälibet facultate creatis, consuerit vice-
cancellarius, monitu procuratorum, comitia conclure solenì oratione; in quà res
gestae superioris anni, beneficia præsertim universitati collata, et alia, quas ad honorum
academiae faciunt, prouit ipsi videbitur, commemorare in more positum est.”

2 Haba est hic oratio ad academicos, anno 1657, cùm, alio procancellario electo,
munus illud jam depositurus fuit.

Neque magistratum nostrum celebraturus adsum, quem tamen æque suscepsisse pudet, ac jam deposuisse dolet; a quo utroque tantùm absurm, ut ab omni indecoro aut inhonesto longius abesse nollem. Verùm enimvero nisi paulo iniquius comparatum esse existimassem, ut qui magistratum deponenter, suarum laudum essent praecones, et res suas gestas aliorumque vitia narrarent, nonnulla forsan, æaque nec penitus ingloria, quæ primus, quæ solus in magniatrum gessi, celebrare possem. Sed non tantùm ab ea consuetudine longissime abhorret ratio, atque voluntas nostra; sed ut inde divers tant eorum omnium mores, quibus cordi est magna vivere potius quàm loqui, et cuicunque tandem benefacere, quàm a pluribus laudari, necesse est. Munus autem, quod honoris loco (quem a votis, quàm a meritis, si ficeri possit, longius abesse vellem) non accepi, haud laborum teedio contritus abdico. Et suscepti, et continuati, et jam tandem depositi ratio ad vestra commoda referебatur. Quia me aliquo modo rebus vestris subsidio, vel adjumento esse potuisse judicarunt alii, magistratum inivi; quia commodiori homine ac peritiori, meo judicio, vobis opus est, illo libenter abeo. Et jam serenà mente privatus fio, neque ab irà eorum, quos sciens volensque injuria affeci, metuens; neque gratias eorum, quos demereri statui, exspectans: nam prioris ordinis nullos plane esse audacter pronuntio; posterioris alii- quos fuisse, memínisse me haud decet.

De rebus autem vestris, quæ pro more dicenda habeo, paucis accepited. Annus jam quintus esse desiiit, ex quo academiae moderamen,
indigno licet, mihi commissum fuit. Quis fuerit, eò temporis atque abinde, gentis togatæ status, quæ rerum nostrarum conditio, nemo homo est nostratrum, ut opinor, qui ignorant. Per primum biennium vulgi fuimus et vulgaris fabula. De discrimine nostro, fortunisque communibus, ex astrologorum hemerologiis et chartis Mercurialisbus disceptaturum est inter lippos et tonsores. Neque quisquam hominum erat adeo infeliciter stupidus, ut de fatis nostris aut timere, aut sperare ei non contigerit. Nampe sic voluit summus rerum arbiter, quo minoris pretii apud mortales esset quicquid est mortale: neque, imperiorum venustatem et summa totius mundi decora invadente marcore, ut florem illibatur sola gereret academia, forsan æquum erat. Causum interea nostram, cui vel periculum facessere nefas erat, alesæ subjectam ancipiti, qui pro virili propagnare ausi sunt, oppidò fuere pauci. Imo eò deventum erat dementiae, ut e partibus gentis togatæ stetisse, violataæ religionis et pietatis nomine censereetur. Omne autem illud, quod apud viros graves male audit, atque est vere flagitiosum, perquam liberaliter quotidian in vos impegere malevoli. Qui in rem nostram paulo æquius essent animati, ita tamen rerum suarum sagererunt, ut precibus obtusi, et quotidianis pæne conviciae fatigati, nihil aliquid quàm verba dare, moras nectere, et quæ pic de conclamatis dici solent, proferre sustinuerint. Rebus itaque omnibus turbatis, et inter sacram et saxum positis, ope omni humanæ destinitus, non àπὸ μυχανίς miraculum, sed cœlitus prospexit pater clementissimus; postquam quò tandem evaderent audacia, rabies, et ignorantia nonnullorum, a quibus meliora exspectare fas erat, liquido nimis constitisset, omnia eorum consilia, conatus omnes dicto ætis ita dissipavit summus ille rerum omnium arbiter, ut rebus suis vix, aut ægre consulenter, qui nudiustertius nostris avidissime inhiant. Praeter ingenios dedecus, et in omnæ ævum duraturum insaniam pravi illius incepti adversus academias, quod irato prorsus aversoque Deo nequiquam inierunt malesani homunciones, nihil prorsus reliquum est. Quamdiu autem erunt, qui, oratione fusâ, facta et consulta fortium et sapientum, cum improborum ignominii, sempiternis monumentis prodere possint, conatus illius eos forsan pœnitesbit. Atque hic finis fuit, hunc terminum obtinuit prima magistratùs nostri solennior periodus.

Vos autem, academici!

"Cyclopea saxa
Experti revocate animos, mœstumque timorem
Mittite: forsan et haec olim meminisse juvatit." ¹

Nonnullorum forsan, dum ex scrupulis, quos nobis injecerunt malevoli, animi dubii fuimus, ea ratio, quà par erat uti, habita non fuit. Sed ut eorum, quæ non jussi fecimus; sic etiam illorum, quæ ob

¹ Virg. Æn. i. 206.
quotidie videre, et sine fine laudare possem. Habet, Deo gratias, academia, qui inter litteratos primas obtinuit, quorum illibata pietas laudis nostræ beneficio haudquaquam indiget; sed nisi coram, et in os amicos celebrare moribus nostris nimis esset absum, celeberrimos doctissimosque viros pæne innumeris adorābā libertissimæ afficerem. Nollem autem silentium nostrum illorum laudibus et honori fraudi esse, qui in sustinendis academiae negotiis, propulsandis periculos, in bene legitimeque ejusdem regimine promovendo, enixiorem posuerunt operam. Me quod attinet, qui sine illorum ope aut consilio oneri imposito penitus impar fuissem, imo nullus, immortales unà omnibus gratias habeo, et quaecunque vel strenue vel prudenter an larum artium insolentibus gessisse videar, iis omnia libertissimæ meritoque accepta fero.

Nee sine grata memoria memorandi sunt, quos, per decursum jam magistratûs stadium, ouèrγους habui procuratorum nonnullos. Imo ausim spondere, quòd ad referendas gratias, quantum quantum in me est, neminem promptiorem vel paratiorem aut offenderint, aut forsan sint inventuri. Ipse verò, quæ a quibusdam invidià et livore percitis, alisque studio partium abréptis, simultatem mecum ulter ambientibus, indigna passus sum, conquererer; nisi dignitatem illam, quam propter contabuerunt, depositurus an omnem omnem contendingi et obloquendi iis præcipere statuissem. Id tamen dicam, quia dicendum est, nisi animo, uti spero, Christiano nonnulla dissimulare descrevissem, quæ meritor egregie et palam contemnere, etiam ulisci potui, eorumque injuriis et contumeliiis tenebras dare, quorum amicitia mihi nihil unquam opus fuit: non adeo forsan pacem et commune otium alia meriti coerent. Favete linguis, academicī! quod nonnulli dominium indigitarunt, ego durum servitutem, et periculose opus plenum aleæ et exspectavi, et sum expertus; ut nisi vestro candore, fide, et sapientià fretus, eorumque, quæ ad academiae emolumentum faciunt, studiosissimus, id oneris, cui ferendo impar sum, nunquam sustulisse; imo ut statim a suspecto munere, ne diutius fati huic curarum Caucasus illigari, non illico summa vi contenderim, quòd aliorum imperium ferre coactus sim, non quòd ipse imperare vellem, in causà fuit. Sed post multas alias, easque varii generis, cùm religiosas, tum civiles, peracta tandem etiam est et hac vita nostræ scena; quæ quòd non sceæ, sed sub Deo vestris commodis servire animus erat, conscientia, et conscientià infinite major Deus testis est. An decenter, seite, et χαλαζία, an spectatoribus tripudia injiciens partes meas egisse videar, perinde curò, ac eorum facta qui nunquam nati sunt. Quæ in Dei Opt. Max. gloriam, patriæ salutem, utilitatem academiae consului, vel gessi, eì curè erunt, qui nos miseros homunciones ope suà sublevat, gratià instruit, favore protegit, ut investigabili plane sapientià consilia omnia sua
sancta exsequatur. Ut autem in demandata provincia tuendâ sceleris aliquidus me esse conscium etiam atque etiam pernegg; ita omnis culpæ me esse expertem, nullâque reprehensione dignum, stultissimus essem, si opinarer. Id verò serìo triumpho, quòd non capularis senex, aut silicernium, rude sum donatus, et quòd minus saltam inter eos, qui ad res seculi et negotia publica spectant, ultimum vitae actum peregisse videor. Quod annum vitae agens alterum supra quadragesimum non inimum locum in castris, in curia, in academia tenui, imo summum, qui meæ sortis et conditionis homini in nostra republica contingere potest; quodque in omnibus me ita gessi, ut neque pudeat neque pigeat gessisse, id gratiae et misericordiae divinæ in solidum imputandum est. Etenim

"quicquid sum ego, quamvis
Infra Lucili censum ingeniumque, tamen me
Cum magnis vixisse invita fatebatur usque
Invidiä." 1

Dumque communi hac luce frui dabitur, vitae antæctæ suavissima recordatio non minimum erit angustiarum levamen; illis enim placuisse, qui nobis universis et populo placent, aliquam laudem esse duco. Ut itaque per aliquid annorum spatium eorum, qui in patria nostra consiliis et armis facile principes erant, etiam illius viri, quem nos ut maximum, ita consultissimum, et post homines natos fortissimum novimus, consuetudine et commercio uti mihi contigit: ita summa necessitudinis jura cum pluribus in orbe literario dictatoribus, in illustrißima hac academia, inire datum est. Habet autem quodcumque genus hominum, quod admirer; habet etiam, quod merito displicet: de quo omnia bona dicere possimus, aut qui in omnibus contemni debeat, nemo est. Homines sumus; qui secum, aut partium, quas inspensus colit, assertoribus sapientiam et pietatem natas esse, et morituras sentit, ille solus reliquis omnibus postponi meruit.

Jam valete, academicî! .... nominum in universitatis matriculam inscriptis; .... ad doctoratum admissis; ad gradum autem magistri, ....; baccalaurei, 2 ....; amissis per multos annos professorum stipendiis, recuperatis, solutis; nonnullis muneriibus haud contemnedis sublevatis; juribus et privilegiis academici contra quosvis malevolentorum conatus propugnatis; æarario decuplo aucto; pluribus ex omni ordine in academia ad diversa honorum, et beneficiorum genera promotis; exercitiis novis inductis et stabilitatis; veteribus rite peractis; morum reformatione sedulo tentatæ, profligatis quibusdam rabulis nequiquam ringentibus; laboribus innumeris; sumptibus prodige impensis, eum sæpius morti proximus vestri causâ òdi hos artus, fragilëmque hunc corporis usum mentem deserturum; spretis vulgi convicis, et superatâ aliorum invidia; vos plurimum salvere et valere

1 Hor. Sat. ii. 1, 74.
2 Ad has lacunas supplendas, vide notam editoris hinc orationibus praefixam.—Ed.
ORATIO.

513

jubeo. Mihi gratulor successorem, qui me hoc onere expedire possit; vobis talem, qui quicquid in rem vestram peccavit nostra incuria, in integrum restituere potis est.


ORATIO

AD V. A. RICHARDUM CROMWELLM.

Minora illa sceptra, vir amplissime! que manibus, quibus ipsum pæne librat Europam, portasse magnus parens vester non erubuit, insurgentis gloriae et decoris non contemnenda omnia, ad pedes tuos provolvit academia Oxoniensis. Si tibi ingentiæ spiritu se gerere, quàm pro conditione, si fastu quodam intumesce re videbatur gens togata, quod non minoris patroni in clientela et fide esse voluerit; id nimio ejus favori, qui amplexu suo eam, tanquam sortis immemorem, ad amplissima quæque aspirare jussit, imputandum est. Ejus vero jam in laudes spatia, aut recensere beneficiam, cum omnes optima omnia ei accepta ferre gestiunt, atque ipse factorum gloriam immortali sit consecratus, haud opus est. Viri itaque omnium, quos exultu seculum hocce heroum ferax, prudentissimi et fortissimi elogia consúlto præterero. Quocunque tandem vergat res Anglicana, ibi in seculum, fuisset principem, cui cordi fuerunt et insulae gloria, et religionis honos. Postquam autem vir ille maximus ad solium pæne eexerat musas, atque ipsas tantum non regnantes coluit orbis Britannicus; cùm unius tantum dominationis patiens respublica, litera-

Cum haec oratio inter auctoris schedulas suæ manus exarata inveniretur, superiøribus hic adjungere visum est. De tempore autem et occasione illius supra diximus, in orationum inscriptione.

VOL. XVI.
rion et Platonicum imperium ferre nequiverit, ut proximâ tamen esset in conditione, atque non nisi sub spe imperii, aut saltem meritò serviret, laudabili et tutâ ambitione laborare, suavissima pristini honoris recordatio coegit academiam.

Habes ideo, vir amplissime, per innumera rerum discrimina, multo labore, multis studiis, vigiliis, precibus, hucusque conservatam pietatis, literarum, modestiae, temperantiae causam, quâ nihil melius, neque amplius est in natura mortalium, tutelam obnixe ambientem, salutare orantem patrocinium; illam ut suscipias, amplectaris, foveas curâ atque indulgentia illius tantùm cogitationibus minoribus et secundis, a quo es secundus, bonorum ubivis omnium et votum est, et exspectatio. Κειμήλιον verò hoc, atque ingens antique pietatis et munificentiae depositum, quamvis tibi, viro in amplissimo dignitatis fastigio positò, honori esse non posse videatur; ne pudori sit aut vituperio, et propitius quern hactenus in Christo numinis favor nactus est, et doctoris orbis cultus et reverentia effecerunt. Quae vero et quanta ab hominibus, irà, odio, studio partium incitatis, per annos aliquot jam proxime elapsos passa sit academia; quibus rerum anfractibus involuta, periculis exposita, hucusque succurrerit; quâ contentione et studio causa pietatis, religionis, et severioris disciplinae cum iis congressa, qui nihil otiosà vitâ, et plenâ, et confortà voluptatibus praestabilius esse ducent, firmata sit; quidque ei ope omni mortali grandius in subsidium et fulcimentum venisse constet, silere mallem; quàm molestæ querimoniæ suspicionem apud quemvis mortalium subire. Ex diuturnâ perturbatione, per te forsan, vir amplissime, lucem et portum intuebitur academia. Habet vices hasce conditio mortalium: ex adversis secunda; ex secundis adversa nascuntur.

Floreat ideo sub tuis auspiciis cum ipsa academia, tum quæque in ea patrocinio tuo, bonorumve laude digna sunt. Floreat doctissima atque optimæ spei numerosa juvenus, germana matris academiae proles, insurgentis seculi quoquo vergat pars nobilis futura. Floreat pietas, ingenuus candor, et, justitiae soror, incorrupta fides, morum integritas, atque, omnia recta tentandi audax, industria et prudentia. Hisce salvis, ibimus, ibimus libertissime, quò fata academiae et omni casu benignior divina providentia nos vocent.
Indices.

I. Index to the life of Owen.
II. Index to the notes by the editor.
III. Index to the works of Owen, according to the arrangement of the volumes in the present edition.
IV. Index to the works of Owen in their alphabetical order.
V. Index to principal subjects and occasional topics.
VI. Index to the principal words and phrases in other languages cited or explained:—
   I. Hebrew, Chaldee, or Rabbinical.
   II. Greek.
   III. Latin.
VII. Index to passages of Scripture explained.
VIII. Index of references to authors, opinions, councils, and sayings.
## I. INDEX TO THE LIFE OF OWEN, CONTAINED IN VOL. I.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abney family, Certain members of the, united to Owen's church, Leadenhall Street</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Act of Uniformity, its results</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aikin, Joseph, author of &quot;Alarming to the Unconverted,&quot; at Oxford</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All Saints, parson, Owen and Chillingworth first educated in</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allop, Vincent, a Nonconformist minister, his witty remark on schism</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anderson, Rev. Alexander, pastor of a Baptist church, Colchester</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anglesea, Earl of, a powerful friend of Owen</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Countess of, a member of Owen's church, Leadenhall Street</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aristotle, Influence of, on theology</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armtrim, doctrine, Owen's statement of and answer to</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnold, Nicholas, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ashty, Independent minister, London, his Memoirs of Owen inaccurate and scanty</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Owen's letter to</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bancroft, Bishop, admitted Owen to orders</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barlow, Bishop, of Lincoln, Owen's tutor in mathematics and philosophy</td>
<td>23.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bates, Dr, quoted in reference to Rev. David Clarkson</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baxter, Richard, his character of himself</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— at Ludlow Castle, or village of Wroxeter</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— finds entertainment in the writings of Thomas Aquinas, Anselm, and Duns Scotus</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his controversies with Owen</td>
<td>38.83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— the chosen associate of Sir Matthew Hale</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his spirit expressed in tender words</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— opposes Owen</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his attempts at union with Independents</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his sufferings</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Character of, as a preacher</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— and Owen compared</td>
<td>110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Owen's letter to</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bendish, Mrs, Cromwell's grand-daughter</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkley, Lord, Owen's friend</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biddle, John, the father of English Socinianism, and author of catechisms</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Binning, Hugh, a Scottish minister, confounds Owen in discussion</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boyd, Zachary, thumbs against the Lord-General in Glasgow Cathedral</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boyle, Hon. Robert, fled to Oxford</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunyan, John, Owen's influence in behalf of, and character of his preaching</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Extract from, &quot;Pilgrim's Progress&quot;</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burgess, Daniel, his opinion of Owen's treatise &quot;On Communion with God&quot;</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burnet, Bishop, his false accusation against Owen in reference to the Protector</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burnet, Bishop, his reference to the controversy between Marvell and Parker</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his sketch of the character of Mr R. Ferguson</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calamy, Edmund, senior, minister in Aldermanbury chapel</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his fame instrumental in leading Owen to peace</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calamy, E., junior, Memorials of Howe by</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his testimony concerning Owen</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cane, J. V., a Franciscan friar, author of &quot;Flint Lux&quot;</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Owen's controversy with</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caryf, Joseph, and Owen, ministers to the Commander-General</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his death</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cavendish, Daniel, his accusation against Owen</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his reply to Owen &quot;On schism&quot;</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecilius, his opinion of Owen's &quot;Discourse on the Holy Spirit&quot;</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chatmer, Dr, &quot;Theological Institutes&quot; referred to</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his opinion of the controversy between Owen and Walton</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his remarks on Owen's treaties: &quot;On Indwelling Sin&quot;</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his recommendation of Owen's &quot;Exposition&quot;</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles II., his character</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— converses with Owen</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charnock, Stephen, his &quot;Divine Attributes&quot;</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cheyne, Francis, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clarendon, Lord, Description of Laid by</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— caricatures Puritans</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— intercourse between him and Owen</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his attempts regarding government</td>
<td>81.82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his fall</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clarkson, David, Owen's colleague in Leadenhall Street</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his funeral sermon on Dr Owen</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Claypoole, Lady, Cromwell's favourite daughter, the death of</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cloppenburg, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coggeshall, Owen's ministry there</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conant, Dr, a Presbyterian, and rector of Exeter College, succeed Owen as vice-chancellor</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Convenient Act</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper quoted</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox, Dr, one of Owen's physicians</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Craig, Rev. J., Avonbridge, Scotland, translated part of Owen's &quot;Theologoumena&quot;</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cromwell, Oliver, Owen's first interview with</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his character</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Extract from Carlyle's</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDICES.

Cromwell, Oliver, chancellor of Oxford Page 46
— his death and character 77
Cromwell, Richard, succeeds his father as chancellor of Oxford 67
— his fall 76
Dodd's description of Owen 48
Dormer, Sir Robert, of Assot, invites Owen to be his chaplain and tutor to his eldest son 29
D'Uquy, Thomas, Esq. of Chislehampton, Owen married to his widow 95
Dury, Mr, opposed to the admission of Jews into England to settle and trade 62
Erasmus, prayer of 112
Fairfax, Lord, leader of the Parliament's forces 39
Ferguson, Robert, one of Owen's assistants in Leadenhall Street 96
Fire in London, Great advantage taken of the, by Owen and others 83
Fleetwood, Charles, Esq., friend of Owen—Owen's letter to, from his deathbed 103
— Letters to 118
Fordham in Essex, the scene of Owen's early pastorate 33
Foster's Essay on the application of the epithet "Romantic" referred to 73
Fuller, the historian, recommended by Howe for ordination 61
Fuller, Andrew, his saying of himself 104
Gilbert, Rev. Thomas, of Oxford, friend of Owen 23
— Epitaph on Owen by 23
Goffrey, Sir Edmund, a justice of the peace in 102
Goodwin, John, an Arminian writer 56, 109
Goodwin, Thomas, D.D., head of Magdalen College 52
— Owen's friend 54
— associated with Owen 65
Hall, Bishop, entered Cambridge at the age of fifteen 23
Hall, Robert, his disparagement of Owen's "Exposition" 86
Halliburton, his argument for the divine authority, etc., of Scripture 74
Hammond, Dr, Owen's discussion with 57
— his reply to Owen "On schism" 74
Harrison, Mr, his conference with Owen and others 53
Hartopp, Lady, Owen's letter to 116
— Sir John, a particular friend of Owen 21
Henry, Philip, Owen compared to, in mourning over university sins 24
— Character of 48
— Memoir of, by his son 52
— at Oxford University 66
Howe, John, entered Oxford College at the age of seventeen 23
— at Whitehall 44
— Character of 48, 103
— "On Union among Protestants," and "On the Carnality of Religious Contention," referred to 54
Humours quoted 39, 60
Hume, David, caricatures Puritans 48
Hyde, Sir Edward, his interview with Owen 79
Indulgence by Charles IL 90
Ireland, Henry, Lord-Deputy of Ireland, and Cromwell's son-in-law, his funeral sermon preached by Owen 46
Israel, Manasseh Ben, a learned Jew from Amsterdam, asks permission for Jews to settle and trade in England 61

Jameston, Dr, of Edinburgh, his work on the Holy Scriptures 64
Jessey, Mr, Baptist minister, his conference with Owen and others 63
Ken, Bishop of Bath and Wells, at Oxford 66
Kennett, Bishop, a high Royalist and partisan 60
— his opinion of the Protector 71
King, Sir Edmund, one of Owen's physicians 103
Laud, Archbishop, chancellor of Oxford, privy councillor, principal adviser of Charles, and intimate associate of Sir Stafford 29
Laudian policy, Owen's description of 29
Levellers, The defeat of the 42
Locke, John, classed with Jeremy Taylor, Milton, Vane, and Owen 41
— the founder of the greatest school of English metaphysics, at Oxford 65
Lockyer, a divine who officiated at the inauguration of the Protector 67
Lovelace, Lord, of Hurly, Owen chaplain to 29
— Owen leaves the family of 29
Manton, Dr, a divine who officiated at the inauguration of the Protector 67
— his false charge against Owen regarding Richard Cromwell's fall 77
Maretz, a continental writer, his remarks on Biddle's catechisms 62
Marshall, Mr, Presbyterian minister, his conference with Owen and others 53
Mars, Andrew, under-secretary to and friend of Milton, his review of Parker's 89
Mather, Cotton, quoted 21
Milton classed with Jeremy Taylor, Vane, Locke, and Owen 41
— quoted 55, 112
Monk, General, a favourite of Charles Stuart, Owen's remonstrance with and opposition to 77
Moscovitae, a Socinian, classed with Biddle and Smalcus 63
Moulin, Peter du, Owen's letter to 114
Nicolas, Sir Edward, one of the principal secretaries of state 80
Ng, Mr, Independent minister, his conference with Owen and others 53
Orme, value of his Life of Owen 22
Orrery, Earl of, Owen's friend 91
Owen, Lewis, vice-chamberlain, North Wales, and high sheriff, county of Merioneth, murdered by outlaws in the woods of Montmorey 22
Owen, Humphrey, married Susan, grand-daughter of Lewis Owen, issue fifteen sons, youngest of these Henry Owen 22
Owen, Henry, father of Dr Owen, educated at Oxford, became Vice-chancellor of St. Andrews, Oxfordshire 22
Owen, John, born at Statham, 1616 22
— entered Queen's College at the age of twelve 22
— self-exiled from Oxford for conscience's sake 23
— removed to London, and resides in Charter-House Yard 29
— removes to Fordham in Essex, becomes pastor there 33
— wrote a letter to a lady of the name of Roeke 33
— preached before Parliament April 29, 1646 34
— thanks of the House conveyed to, by Mr Jenner and Sir P. Wentworth 35
— removed to Coggeshall, Earl of Warwick's patron 35
— preaching at Coggeshall, decidedly Congregational 37
— joined Cromwell at Berwick, preached there 41
II.—INDEX TO THE NOTES BY THE EDITOR.

Note.—In compliance with the request of some subscribers, the following Index to the Notes of the Editor has been given; and he is indebted for the preparation of it to a friend. Mr Edmondston, his co-author in revising the sheets as they came from the press, undertook the trouble of preparing the Index of Works, Texts, and Authors. The General Index is chiefly an adaptation from the old Indices to the works of Owen, dropping much superfluous matter, which distracted the eye of the reader rather than guided him to any useful matter, and adhering as much as possible to the language of Owen, but arranged on better principles, and with very considerable additions of matter that was deemed really important.

Acommodation, committee of, by whom and when appointed, x. 5.

Act, Five-mile, or Conventicle, vi. 154. Conventicle, renewed in 1670, xii. 575. Test, when Parliament passed the, xiv. 482.

Alexander, William Lindsay, D.D., of Edinburgh, ix. 413. Extract from his preface to Owen's Sacramental Essays, ix. 515.

Allop, Vincent, wit and acumen of, in a treatise against Sherlock, ii. 276. "Melius Inquirendum" of, in answer to Dr Goodman, vii. 74. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall lectures, vii. 474. Witty and humorous work of, against Dr Stillingetg, xiii. 564.

Alex, John de, servant in the Jesuit College of Clermont, character of, xiv. 449.

Ambrose admitted Augustine into the church at Milan, when, iii. 357.

America, North, Scottish Covenanters crowded into vessels homes for, ix. 367. Missionaries sent to, by the Church of Geneva, in 1556, xv. 72.

Amsterdam, Presbyterian of, opposed the appointment of Arminius as professor, x. 3.

Amsprayt, a scholar of Cameron at Saumur, x. 149. Supported in the atonement controversy by Baillé and Blondell, x. 140. Opposed by Rivet, Spanheim, and De Marcs, x. 140. Theory of, in regard to the atonement, x. 140.


Amesley, Samuel, LL.D., preface by, to the "Morning Exercises," viii. 474.


Antinomian, opinions of Dr Crisp held to be, viii. 474.

Antinomianism during the time of the Commonwealth, v. 2.

Antitrinitarians, certain reformers of Transylvania became, ii. 293. Of Poland, their schismatical resolution and subsequent conduct, ii. 393.

Aquino, anciently Aquinavum, a city in the kingdom of Naples, xiv. 261.

Arianism, certain Presbyterian Dissenters committed to, i. 2.

Arminian, Joseph of, said by some to have been the first Christian missionary who reached this country, xiv. 95.

Aristobulus, said by some to have first introduced Christianity into Britain, xiv. 95.

Arminian, profession from, explained, x. 292.

Arminius, Spanish, in 1588, x. 6, xiv. 511.

Arminius, his history and opinions, x. 3.

Articles, Thirty-nine, of the Church of England, were not Arminian, x. 4.

Asley, a general in the interest of Charles I., marks of, to his victors, viii. 2.

Asyly information regarding Owen by, viii. 2. His explanation of Owen's preaching on the death of Charles I., xii. 128. His opinion concerning the date of Sermon iv. vol. vii., viii. 208. Life of Owen by, xii. 356.

Augustine, his vicious youth, conversion, and admission to the church, iii. 337. His "Confessions," the character of that work, iii. 337. His advocacy of the doctrine of grace in opposition to Pelagian error, v. 2. And Pelagius, the questions which produced encounters between, x. 2. Quoted by Owen in support of his views on the atonement, x. 140.

Augustine, the Roman abbot, when he reached our island, xiv. 101.

Baillie, Robert, principal of Glasgow University, work of, against J. Goodwin, x. 4.

Balaungubhal, Dr, deputy from Scotland to Synod of Dort, x. 3.

Bans, who they were, and what they believed, vii. 109.


Barlow, Bishop, his view of Baxter's "Aphorisms," v. 3*.

Baronius, a Romish writer, quotation from, xiv. 99.

Barrett, Mr, of Nottingham, his work against Stillingfleet, xili. 304. Second "Attempt to Vindicate the Principles of Nonconformists," etc., by, xii. 304.

Barrett, William, fellow of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, xii. 56.

Bartholomew Nash, Act, D. Burgess, senior, ejected under the, 1632, ix. 2.

Bäsel, F. Socinus devoted himself to theological studies at, ii. 392.

Bates, Dr, one of the six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall in company with others, vii. 474.

Dunton, Father, Jesuit, maxime of, xiv. 149.

Dunster, his attempt at reconciliation among certain parties, v. 3%. His "Aphorism on Justification," v. 3%. And Bull, a host of opponents to, v. 3%. Sir
INDEXES.

"Indwelling Sin," vi. 154. On "Spiritual Mind-
edness," vii. 292. On "The Divine Original," etc. xvi. 250. Train of reasoning by, similar to Owen's, xvi. 345. F正文

Charles I., decapitation of, a day of humiliation in connection with, xii. 128.


Charnock, Stephen, senior proctor, Oxford University, during the Protectorate, ii. 357. His works and death, ix. 337.

Chatham, ships of war destroyed by the Dutch fleet at, ix. 11.


Cheyne, Francis, work of, in reply to Biddle, xii. 4.

Chirtsey, council held at, in A.D. 853, x. 424. Five canons of, condemned by council at Valence, x. 424. Excerpt from the fourth canon of council at, x. 424.

Childeric III., last of the Merovingian race of French kings, vili. 253.

"Christologia," Owen's title to the treatise on "The Person of Christ," i. 2.

Chrysoleton, works of, referred to, xili. 11.

Church of Rome, reference to, in, Owen's treatise on "The Causes, Ways, and Means," etc., iv. 118; presumptuous claim of, the as to interpretation of Scripture dened, lv. 118; mental prayer of the, Owen's discussions on, vi. 239.

Circumcelliones, fanatics in North Africa, viili. 55.

Claggett, Dr, preacher to the Honourable Society of Gray's Inn, and one of his Majesty's chaplains in ordinary, his attempts to confute Owen's work on the Spirit, iii. 3.


Clarke, Dr S., in 1712, published Arland views, i. 2.


Clerc, Le, Egyptian origin of the Urim and Thummin, purporting by, xiv. 277.

Coggeshall, Owen's "Commination with God" probably preached at, ii. 2.

Colchester, the town of, besieged and obliged to surrender to the royal forces, xili. 72.

Coleman, Edward, a Roman Catholic emissary, ix. 13.

Collins, Mr, one of the six weekly lecturers at Fin'er's Hall, 1672, viii. 474.

Commons, Owen frequently called to preach before the House of, vol. viii. p. ix.

Communion controversy, history of, li. 276.

Concomitans, Papish doctrine of, xiv. 147.

"Confession, Savoy," whence so called, xili. 314; its doctrine, xili. 314.

Conquest, Norman, date of the, viii. 205.

Constitutions, Clementine, opposed by Owen, xl. 75.

Controversy, Quinquarticular, Owen's intention to digress into the points in the, xi. 2.

Covenants, seditions, act against, the source of heavy sufferings, xiii. 576. Owen's protest against, xili. 576.

Convocation, Dr S. Clarke summoned before the, i. 2.


Cotton, Mr John, an eminent Congregationalist of New England, xiii. 278. Influence of his work on the revival of Owen, xili. 278.

Council, the fourth of Oecumenical, terms regarding the hypothetical union adopted by, i. 227.

Covenantes, many of the Scottish, banished, ix. 397.

Covetus, Jacobus, many Parisiensis theologus, notice of, ii. 265.

Craig, John, a Socinian writer, not to be confounded with Samuel Craig, ii. 410.

Cressey, Hugh Paulin de, a noted controversialist, in defence of Popery, iv. 247.

Cripplegate church, lectures delivered at, viii. 474.

Crisp, Dr, disputes in regard to the soundness of some opinions of, vii. 474.

Cromwell, Oliver, military genius of, vi. 88. Owen first introduced to, in what connection, viii. 244. Correspondence between Presbyterian ministers and, viii. 282. The death of, viii. 454. Body of, gibbetted after the Restoration, and buried at Tyburn, viii. 524. Vigorous measures of, to restore discipline in 1647, ix. 197. Reconciliation between Sir J. Evelyn and R. Byfield effected by, x. 145.

Cromwell, Richard, in his father's place, but unable to fill it, xili. 454.

Cudmore, Mr, three epistles in Syriac purporting to be by Ignatius published by, xii. 75. Discovery of a Syriac version of the Epistle to Polycarp by, xii. 76.


Daillé, a supporter of Amyrant in the atonement controversy, x. 140. Learned work by, upon the Epistles of Ignatius, xi. 75.

Damascenus, Johannes, when he flourished, where he died, his writings, etc., xiv. 236.

Dawson, Thomas, author of several works against the Quakers, ii. 276. "The Friendly Debate between Satan and Sherlock" by, ii. 276.


David, Francis, reasoned with by Faustus Socinus, iii. 592. Cast into prison, where he died, iii. 593.

Davidson, Dr, author of "Introduction to the New Testament," referred to, xiv. 96, xvi. 316, 415, 419.

Dayes, Mr Richard, pastor of a church in Rowet, Northumberland, vi. 324. Statement of Owen to, explanatory of the occasion of the "Exposition of Psalm cxxxv," vi. 324.

Deborah, Colonel, member of Owen's congregation, brother-in-law to Oliver Cromwell, and one of the heroes of the Commonwealth, died 10th September 1630, ix. 541. Refused to sit on the trial of Charles I., and opposed Cromwell when he sought to become king, ix. 341.

Deynck, an abbot of Burgor, saying of, xiv. 192.


Dissent, till a tract from the epistle to, adduced by Owen, v. 2.

Dissent, severe measures against, vol. viii. p. viii. (Pref.)

Doctor, views of, regarding the body of Christ, i. 329.

Dodridge, his opinion of some of Owen's works, vii. 2.
Hammond, Dr Henry, initials of, xi. 27. Owen assails the reasonings of, in support of episcopacy, xi. 75. Wrote in defence of the Ignatian Epistles, etc., xi. 75. Referred to, xiii. 123. "Vindication," etc., of, referred to, xiii. 175. Controversy of, with Owen respecting the orthodoxy of Grotius, xiii. 205.


Hayward, "Cases of Conscience," by, ix. 358.


Henry, Philip, greatly benefited by Owen's preaching, vi. 2.

Hervey, the families of the, genial influences in, vii. 2.

Hervy, Mr, his expression of admiration for Owen's work on "The Glory of Christ," i. 274.

Hickman, Henry, pastor of an English congregation at Leyden, ii. 275. Work of, entitled "Speculum Sherlockianum, etc.," ii. 276.

Hill, Dr, opposition of, to Davenant's "Animadversions," x. 19.

Hoard, a treatise written by, x. 19.


Hooper, Thomas, an Independent, contended for the office of ruling elder, xvi. 2.

Hopson, a general in the interest of Charles I., vii. 2.


Horne, Mr, minister at Lynn in Norfolk, x. 141. His reply to Owen on the "Death of Christ," x. 141.

Horsley, Bishop, quotation from one of his charges, v. 2.

Howe, Mr, of New England, his views of, vi. 40.

Hume, David, Stanislaus, a Roman Catholic author, his works, x. 40.

Hotchkiss, Thomas, rector of Staunton, a supporter of Sherlock, ii. 276.

Hove, John, letter of, to Dr Stillingfleet, xiii. 304. Withdrew from Pinner's Hall lectures, vii. 474.


Humphrey, Mr John, author of "Peaceable Disquisitions," ii. 3, v. 3. child.

Humphrey, "An Answer to Dr Stillingfleet's Book," vii. 304.

Ingsfield settled the question regarding Hebrew points, in 1830, xvi. 346.

Ignatius, Epistles of, Owen impugns the integrity of the, xi. 75. Diversity of views regarding the, xi. 75.


Julius, West, Scottish Covenanters crowded into vessels bound for, the ix. 307.

Indulging scheme, the nature of, i. 2.

Ireland, sermon preached by Owen after his return from, viii. 208. Scheme for landing a French army in, ix. 13.

Irenæus, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75.

Ireon, Henry, son of German Ireton ofatten, Nottinghamshire, his history and character, viii. 546.

Irish massacre of 1641, referred to by Owen, viii. 232.

Jamaica, Scottish Covenanters sold as slaves in, ix. 37.

Jansen, the piety of, x. 3.

Jansenists and Jesuits, Owen alludes to disputes between, xiv. 239.

Jencks, Henry, rector of Cheshaw, work against J. Goodwin by, xi. 4.

Jenyns, Mr, one of six weekly lecturers at Pinner's Hall, 1672, viii. 474.

Jerome translated into Latin a treatise of Didymus on the Holy Spirit, iii. 23. Quoted regarding the introduction of Christianity into Britain, xiv. 16. Ad Evang, expression borrowed from, xv. 500.

Jesuits, use made of casuistry by, the ix. 388. Peabian leavings of, and favour to the system of Molina, x. 3.

Jonathan, author of a Targum, when he lived, xiv. 153.

Junius, an eminent theologian in the University of Leyden, x. 3.

Kendall, Dr George, rector of Bilsland, near Bodmin in Cornwall, xi. 4. His work in reply to John Goodwin, xi. 4.


Knor, propositions from the works of, burned at Oxford University, xi. 128.

Laub, Thomas, a Baptist minister, work of, against J. Goodwin, xi. 4.

Lavroge, anonymous reply by, to Pearson, bishop of Chester, in 1674, xi. 75.

Lasius, Joannes, large work of, on the Bohemian Brethren, xiv. 228.

Laud, convocation of the English church under, and the oath "Et cetera," xiv. 522.

Leigh, Mr, appointed to preach before the house of Commons, vol. viii. p. ix.

L'Estrange, Sir Roger, work of, in defence of Stillingfleet, xiii. 304.

Letters, Provincial, by Blaise Pascal, when published in this country, xiv. 101.

Letter, defeat of, at Beruford, when, ix. 197. Their views, and extent of the mutiny and insurrection by, ix. 193.

Levita, Elias, a learned Jew, who wrote in 1520, xvi. 346.

Lexicon, Dr Robinson's, referred to, i. 202.

Leyden, University of, Arminius called to the vacant chair of Junius in, x. 3.

Lisle, Sir George, royalist officer, execution of, viii. 72.

Job, Mr, the "Modest and Peaceable Inquiry," by, xiii. 304.


London, Owen frequently summoned to, for consultation and preaching, vi. 2. The coffee-houses

Osander, Andrew, born in Franconia, preacher at Nuremberg, and professor of theology in the University of Königsberg, v. 11.

Ostorodius, a Polish socinian, x. 8.

Oesterburg, Sir Thomas, junior, supposed to be the "person of honour" to whom Owen addressed his letter on "Indulgence and Toleration Con- sidered," xiii. 518.


Palmer's "Nonconformists' Memorial," referred to, vii. 474.

Parker, Samuel, assault on the doctrines of grace, etc., by, ili. 2. Rebuffed in severe yet calm terms by Owen, ili. 2. "Discourse of Ecclesiastical Polity," etc., by, xii. 344. Author of "Defence and Continuance of the Ecclesiastical Polity," ili. 121.


Parliamentary forces, a species of communism in the, x. 107.

Pascal, sarcasm of, against the caustical system of the Jesuits, ix. 358. The genius of, x. 3. "Provincial Letters" by, published in this country in 1651, xiv. 191.

Patrick, Dr Simon, bishop of Chichester and Ely, work of, referred to, xiii. 358. Paragraph and critical commentaries on the books of the Old Testament, by, xiii. 358.

"Patriam Bibliotheca," reference to by Owen, xv. 20.

Paul, Gregory, first Racovian Catechist ascribed to, xiv. 2.

Paul, the apostle, the Christian church first planted in Britain by, xiv. 96.

Paxson, Mr John, sermon of, against J. Goodwin, xl. 4.

Payne, Mr, had charge of the original publication of "Tabulae Matutinae," i. 274.

Paxson, bishop of Chester, author of, "Vindiciae Epistolae S. Ignatii," xi. 75.

Pepin, deposed Childeric III., and succeeded to the crown of France, viii. 265.

Pervinchief, Richard, works of, in answer to Dr Owen, xii. 542.

Petersius, a learned Jesuit, said prayers for the re- pose of the soul of Grotius, xii. 4.

Peter, whether he ever visited Britain, xiv. 96.

Pevsod, Christopher, printed at Amsterdam the best edition of the Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.

Pierce, a presbyterian minister, openly committed to Arianism, i. 2.

Pightly, two writers of the name of, born at Campen, Overyssel, v. 12.

Pilate, "Pilate's Charge of Conscience," by, ix. 358.

Pomar's Hall, in Old Broad Street, London, weekly lectures in, vii. 474.

Piscator, a learned professor of divinity at Her- born, author of several works, x. 603.

Pilchard, Edward, "Answer to the Discourse of Mr Wiliam Sherlock" by, ii. 276.

Polygry, specific allusion to the Epistles of Ignatius by, xi. 75. Epistle to, Syrac branch of, how discovered, xii. 76.

Pole, Matthew, author of the "Synopsis Criticorum," ix. 357. Work of, in reply to Bigge, xii. 4.

Popyre, lectures against, delivered at Southwark, vii. 474.

Popham, recent laws against, suspended, vii. 474. Plot, Titus Oates was thought to have discovered the, ix. 13.

Powell, Rev. Vavasour, publications of, referred to, xiv. 2.

Prayer, Book of Common, resumed in the royal chapel on the Restoration, xv. 2. Ordaigned to be read in the House of Peers, xv. 2. Conference between bishops and Presbyterians to re- view the, xv. 2.

Presbyterian government, Owen's views of, xv. 446, xvii. 2.

Presbyterians and Independents, weekly lectures by, vii. 474.

Pridmore, Dr, regius professor of divinity at Ox- ford in 1615, xi. 623.

Proper, quoted by Owen in support of his views on the atonement, x. 140.

Pyman and Edwards, enemies of John Goodwin, xi. 3.

Puritans, exaggerated ascription of austerity to the, vii. 2. True character of the decorum of the, vii. 2.

Quaker, a, reviewed certain opinions of Owen, xiii. 508.

Quakers, mysticism of, and when they first came into notoriety, ili. 2. And Romanists, in what they agree, iv. 115. Baxter engaged in a dispute with, xii. 598. Their doctrine of the Inward light refuted by Owen, xvi. 282, 424.

Rainbow, Dr, bishop of Carlisle, xiii. 576.

Rakau, a town in Poland, whence the name of "Racovian Catechism," ii. 263, xii. 4.

Reformers, justification by faith the uniform doc- trine of the first, v. 2.

Regale, what it was, xiv. 538. Disputes about the, xiv. 538.

Reneaulme, author of "Systema Historico-Chro- nologicum," etc., xii. 283.

Rembrandt, president of the council at Valence in a. D. 855, x. 424.

Remonstrants, why the followers of Arminius were called, x. 3.

Reeby, Richard, vicar of Oundle, writing of, against J. Goodwin, xl. 4.


Richardson, John, of Cambridge, his "Prellections Ecclesiasticorum" referred to, xiv. 598.

Ricardo, an opponent of Amyraut in the atonement controversy, x. 140.


Rolle, Samuel, a Nonconformist, his writings against Sherlock, ii. 276.
Romanus, Clemens, opinion of, regarding the
Arminian controversy, quoted, xiv. 96.
Rome, church of, the "indelible character" a
dogma of, ix. 461; its view of ordination, ix. 461.
Peter's residence in, present state of the con-
troversy in regard to, xiv. 288. Substance of the
ancient testimony regarding, xiv. 287. The au-
thority of Scripture in regard to the question, xiv.
288.
Rota, the, an important ecclesiastical court at
Rome, xv. 275.
Royalists, gallant defence of Colchester by, viii.
137.
Rube, Mr Gilbert, "The Rational Defence of Non-
conformity" by, xii. 304.
Rumford, thanksgiving for deliverance at, vii. 72.
Rupert, Prince, de-feated at the battle of
Naseby, viii. 342.
Rutherford, Samuel, the eminent Scotch divine,
referred to, x. 247.
Sallter's Hall, lecture established at, viii. 474.
Samosateneus, Paulus, bishop of Antioch, his char-
acter and heresies, ii. 339.
Sanderson, bishop of Lincoln, two works on ca-
suality by, ix. 359.
Sandius, first Racovian Catechism ascribed to
Gregory Paul by, xii. 4.
Sarpi, Paul, "History of the Council of Trent" by,
viii. 142; xiv. 352; xv. 121. "Treatise of Benefi-
ciary Matters" by, xii. 331.
Sauvage, De, pronounced much of the Ignatian
Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.
Saunier, divines of, their sentiments regarding the
attestation, x. 140.
Savoy, conference at the, in 1658, and Confession of
Faith, ix. 256.
Saxon invasion, character and fruits of, the xiv.
101.
Schlichtingius, Johannes, a Socinian author, his works,
ii. 340, v. 48.
Schonann, George, a confession of faith prepared by,
xii. 3.
Schallens, the Dutch critic, referred to, li. 72. View
of, concerning the Hebrew points, xiv. 346.
Scot, Sir Edward, "Duty of Pastors," etc., dedicated
to, xii. 2.
Sententiarii, who they were, v. 12.
Septuagint, alluded to by Owen, xiv. 155.
Sermons, Dr Owen's, the most complete collection of,
vol. vii. p. vii. Posthumous, where contained,
Sherlock, William, rector of St George, Botolph
Lane, controversies with Owen, ii. 276. Works of,
on the Trinity, i. 2.
Sheriff, in defence of Dr
Stillingfleet, by, xiv. 304.
Simonis, an eminent critic, lii. 90.
Simon, Mr John, appointed to preach before the
Smoletius, Valentine, generally said to be the com-
piler of the Racovian Catechism, x. 561. And others
revised the first Racovian Catechism, xii.
Smith, Dr Pye, his "Scripture Testimony to the
Socinus, Leucius, uncle of Faustus Socinus, his
history, lii. 392.
Socinus, Faustus, the nephew, his life and charac-
ter, lii. 392, v. 2.
Societanism, origin of, disputed, ii. 392. When
introduced into England, xii. 3.
South, Dr, work of, on the Trinity, i. 2.
"Southward, Morning Exercises against Popery,
at Stow," by Owen, xii. 398.
Spain, the inveterate enemy of England, and of
Spainheim, to whom he ascribes the origin of the
Arminian controversy in Holland, x. 3. An op-
pponent of Amyraut in the atonement controversy,
xiv. 140.
Spelman, the learned antiquarian, opinion of, re-
garding the Epistle of Kleetherus, xiv. 308.
Spencer, Dr, celebrated work of, when published,
xv. 246.
Springe, Mr Joshua, his history, x. 425.
Stakkylus, a violent enemy of the Reformation,
viii. 206.
Stapleton, a celebrated Roman Catholic divine,
born in Sussex, vii. 262.
Statorius, Peter, junior, joined with F. Socinus to
revise first Racovian Catechism, xii. 4.
"Statute, Bloody," the character of the, xii. 408.
Stillingfleet, Dr, dean of St Paul's, reply to, by Hugh
Paulin de Cresscy, iv. 247. Sermon by, before the
Lord Mayor of London, xiii. 304. A legend repudiated
and exposed as a monkish fiction by, xiv. 96.
Tacitus, curious incident recorded by, xiv. 97.
Targum, alluded to by Owen in reference to Job
vi. 23, ii. 227.
Targums, the principal, whose they are, xiv. 135.
Taylor, Jeremy, the "Ductor Dubitantium" of, lx.
338. Owen's great contemporary, xiii. 542.
Telescope not invented till the close of the sixteenth
century, i. 376.
Tertullian, devotes five books to the refutation of
the errors of Marcion, ii. 382. Quoted regarding the
introduction of the gospel into Britain, xiv. 97.
Tertullian, a scholar of Cameron at Saumur, x. 140.
"Testimony, Solemn, against Toleration," etc., by,
General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, xvi.
104.
Tetzel, pretext for which a commission to sell indul-
gences was given to, xiv. 105.
Texts and words in Scripture explained:--Gen. iv. 1,
i. 124. 2 Sam. xxiii. 5, lx. 410. 2 Chron. xxix. 55,
x. 568. Job xxii. 24, ii. 77; xxvi. 35, iii. 96.
Ps. xxxiii. 4, iii. 181; xxxvi. 5, ix. 202. Cant. v. 11,
ii. 71; v. 14, lii. 77. Amos iv. 13, iii. 49. Matt.
i. 19, x. 564. Acts xx. 23, ii. 416. Rom. vii. 26,
x. 564; xii. 6, iv. 198. 2 Cor. iii. 18, i. 222.
Heb. iv. 18, ix. 391; iv. 14, i. 248; x. 29, ix. 564.
2 Pet. i. 4, iii. 575. 1 John i. 9, x. 564.
Theodoret quoted regarding the introduction of
Christianity into Britain, xiv. 96.
Theophilus of Antioch, specific allusion to the
Epistle of Ignatius by, xi. 76.
"Theron and Arsacio," Hervey's, quoted, x. 274.
Thornlake, I hebraic, one of Walton's assistants in
the preparation of his "Polyglot," xii. 12.
Thou, Jacques-Auguste de, one of the presidents of
Parlement de Paris, viii. 612. His history, de-
scription of St Bartholomew's Day in, viii. 612.
Tillemont, opinion of, concerning the Epistle to
Diognetus, v. 2.
Tilteston on natural religion, iv. 4.
Todd, Mr, his charge against Owen, xvi. 345.
Toplady, insinuations against Venner and J. Good-
win by, xi. 2.
Toulmin, estimate of John Biddle by, xii. 3.
Transylvania, divisions among the reformers of,
iii. 393. Prince of, his cruel intolerance, iii. 303.
Trent, council of, influence of the Jesuits in, x. 3.
Triers, commission of, Caryl acted on the, ix. 286.
Trinity, controversy on the subject of the, in Eng-
land, i. 2. The Second Person of the, the treatise
of Owen relating to, xvi. 464.
Troughton, Mr John, of Bicester, "An Apology for
the Nonconformists," etc. by, xii. 504.
INDICES.

Tewell, Dr., in his biography of Pococke, accuses Owen, xvi. 345.
Twisse, Dr William, procutor of the Westminster Assembly, x. 492.

Ulenbergius, Casparus, author of a Romanist catechism, v. 16.

Unfeoffus, Act for, liturgy ratified by the, xv. 2.
Unigenitus, the bull, last triumph for Jesuitism secured by, x. 3.

Usher, an edition of the Epistles of Ignatius by, in 1644, xi. 73. Conjecture of, concerning a Syrian manuscript of the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 76.

Valence, council held at, in A.D. 835, x. 424.

Vanini, John Baptist, a weak enthusiast, Owen probably alludes to, xiv. 75.

Fayques, a Roman Catholic writer, works published at Leyden, when, v. 11.

Vatalibus, a celebrated Hebrew scholar, born in Picardy, ii. 443. His notes on the Old Testament, ii. 443.

Yedelius brought out a Geneva edition of the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 75.

Yener, styled by Toplady the leader of the Fifth-monarchy Men, xi. 2.

Vernon, Rev. George, Owen's defence of his character from the charges of, xiii. 518.

Vincent "colleges," Socinians trace the origin of their peculiar tenets to, n. 392.

Videt quin religious meetings held at, by Leland Socinus and others, ii. 392.


Voldaeus, a Polish Socinian, x. 3.

Volckius, John, and others revised the first Raccovian Catechism, xii. 4.

Vossit, G. J., "Responsio ad Hern. Ravenspergeri," etc., refuted by Owen, x. 500.

Fossius, an edition of the Epistles of Ignatius by, in 1646, xii. 75.

Wales, spiritual destination in, portrayed by Owen, viii. 2. Owen's special interest for the religious welfare of, viii. 428. Act passed by Parliament in favour of, 1649, viii. 428.

Wall, Mr Thomas, "More Work for the Dean," by, xiii. 301.


Walton-upon-Thames, disturbance in the parish church of, ix. 107.

Ward, Dr, one of four English deputies to Synod of Dort, x. 3.

Warwick, Earl of, how represented by Neal, x. 145. Admiral of the parliamentary fleet, x. 145. Owen received the presentation to Coggeshall from, x. 145.

Watson, Dr Isaac, Owen's successor in London, i. 2, v. 404, ix. 18.

Westminster, Raccovian Catechism burnt at, xii. 4.

Whalley, Major-General, and Colonel Goffe, Caryl in Scotland with, ix. 255.

Whiston expelled from Oxford for his Arianism in 1719, i. 2.

Whitaker pronounced much of the Ignatian Epistles to be spurious, xi. 75.

Whitby, Dr, "Examen Varianium Lucianum," by, xvi. 346.

Whitefield, Thomas, "minister of the gospel at Great Yarmouth," ix. 141. His reply to Thomas Moore, ix. 141.

Whitehall, Book of Common Prayer in the royal chapel at, xv. 2.


Wilberforce, Mr, his "Practical View" referred to in commendation of Owen "On Mortification," vi. 2.

Wilkins, Dr, bishop of Chester, xiii. 576.

Wilted on Daniel, referred to, ix. 366.

Williams, Dr, work by, in refutation of Crisp's views, viii. 474.

Williams, Mr Joseph, of Kiddington, curious fact in the life of, v. 44.

Winer's "Idioms of the Greek Language" referred to, x. 504.


Wodrow the historian, statement of, regarding Owen and Presbyterianism, xvi. 2.

Wotton, Sir Charles, Bart., v. 3. His "Justification Evangelical," v. 38. His remark referring to Dr Owen, v. 38.


Worcester, battle of, Owen preached on day of thanksgiving for, viii. 312.


Yetifufe Society, Clarkson's miscellaneous works in one of the volumes of, the v. 300.

Xiphilin, a monk of Constantinople, ii. 446.

York, James, Duke of, opposition to his accession to the throne, viii. 594. Marriage with the Princess of Modena condemned, xiv. 452.

Zachary, Pope, crown of France transferred to Pepin by the sanction of, viii. 263.

Zebulon, James the son of, said by some to have been the first to introduce Christianity into our island, xiv. 55.

Zebulon, Simson, Bishop Taylor and Dr Cave believe that he must have been in Britain, xvi. 99.

Zurich, Leland Socinus settled and died in, ii. 392.
III.—INDEX TO THE WORKS OF OWEN,
ACCORDING TO THE ARRANGEMENT OF THE VOLUMES IN THE PRESENT EDITION.

I. DOCTRINAL DIVISION.

Vol.   Date.

I. 1. Treatises relating chiefly to the Person and Work of Christ.

Χριστιανικα, or a Declaration of the Glorious Mystery of the Person of Christ, 1679
Meditations and Discourses on the Glory of Christ, etc., 1654
Meditations and Discourses concerning the Glory of Christ Applied, etc., 1651
Two Short Catechisms, wherein the Doctrines of Christ are Explained, etc., 1645

II. 2. Treatises relating to all the Persons of the Trinity.

Of Communion with God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, each Person distinctly, etc., 1657
A Vindication of some Passages in a Discourse concerning Communion with God, 1674
A Brief Declaration and Vindication of the Doctrine of the Trinity, 1659

III. 3. Treatise relating to the Holy Spirit.

Πνευματικα, or a Discourse on the Holy Spirit, etc., 1674


The Reason of Faith, etc., 1677
Στις Πνευματικα, or the Causes, Ways, and Means of Understanding the Mind of God, as Revealed in his Word, 1678
A Discourse of the Work of the Holy Spirit in Prayer, etc., 1682
Two Discourses, of the Holy Spirit as a Comforter, and as the Author of Spiritual Gifts, 1683

V. 5. Treatises relating to Justification and Faith.

The Doctrine of Justification by Faith through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, etc., 1677
Gospel Grounds and Evidences of the Faith of God's Elect, etc., 1655

II. PRACTICAL DIVISION.

VI. 1. Treatises on Experimental Religion.

Of the Mortification of Sin in Believers; the Necessity, Nature, and Means of it, 1656
Of Temptation; the Nature and Power of it, etc., 1658
The Nature, Power, Decoy, and Prevalency of Indwelling Sin, etc., 1658
A Practical Exposition on Psalm cxxx., etc., 1688

VII. 2. Treatises on Experimental Religion, continued.

The Nature of Apostasy from the Profession of the Gospel, etc., 1676
Ψαλμος τος Πνευματικος, or the Grace and Duty of being Spiritually Minded, 1681
Of the Dominion of Sin and Grace, etc., 1688

VIII. 3. Sermons Published during the Lifetime of Owen.

Sixteen Sermons, 1646-1651

IX. 4. Posthumous Sermons.

One Sermon, 1600
Thirty Sermons, 1721
Fourteen Discourses on Cases of Conscience, 1756
Thirteen Sermons, 1760
Twenty-five Sacramental Discourses, 1760

III. CONTROVERSIAL DIVISION.

1. Arminian Controversy.

Θεματα Αρμινιακα, or a Display of Arminianism, etc., 1642
Salus Electorum, Sanguis Jesu; or the Death of Death in the Death of Christ, etc., 1647
Of the Death of Christ, the Price he Paid, etc. [in Reply to Baxter], 1650
De Divina Justitia Diatribe, etc., 1653

VOL. XVI. 34
2. Arminian Controversy, continued.
The Doctrine of the Saints' Perseverance Explained and Confirmed, etc., 1654

Vindiciæ Evangelicae; or the Mystery of the Gospel Vindicated, etc., 1656
Of the Death of Christ [Appendix to the above, in Reply to Baxter], 1656
Review of the Annotations of Grotius, 1656

4. Rights and Duties of Dissent.
The Duty of Pastors and People Distinguished, etc., 1647
Eschol; or Rules of Direction for the Walking of the Saints in Fellowship, 1647
Of Schism, etc., 1657
Review of the True Nature of Schism, etc. [in reply to Cawdrey], 1658
Answer to a late Treatise of Cawdrey about the Nature of Schism, 1658
A Brief Vindication of the Nonconformists from the charge of Schism, etc., 1659
Truth and Innocence Vindicated, etc. [in reply to Parker], 1659
Two Questions concerning the Power of the Supreme Magistrate about Religion, etc., 1659
Indulgence and Toleration Considered, etc., 1667
A Peace-offering, in an Apology and Humble Plea for Indulgence and Liberty, etc., 1667
Grounds and Reasons of Desire for Liberty, 1667
Present Distresses on Nonconformists, 1667
The State of the Kingdom, 1721
Advice to the Citizens of London, 1721

5. Popish Controversy.
Animadversions on a Treatise entitled "Flat Lux," etc., 1662
A Vindication of the "Animadversions on 'Flat Lux,'" 1664
The Church of Rome no Safe Guide, etc., 1679
Some Considerations about Union among Protestants, etc., 1680
A Brief and Impartial Account of the Nature of the Protestant Religion, etc., 1682

6. Church Government.
A Discourse concerning Liturgies, and their Imposition, 1662
A Discourse concerning Evangelical Love, Church-Peace, and Unity, etc., 1672
An Inquiry into the Original, Nature, etc., of Evangelical Churches, 1681
A Brief Instruction in the Worship of God, and Discipline of the Churches of the New Testament, 1687

7. Church Government, continued.
True Nature of a Gospel Church, 1689
A Letter concerning the Matter of the Present Excommunications, 1687?
A Discourse concerning the Administration of Church Censures, 1720
An Answer to Two Questions, with Twelve Arguments against any Conformity, etc., 1721
Of Marrying after Divorce in Case of Adultery, 1721
Of Infant Baptism and Dipping, 1721
Reflections on a Slanderous Libel against Dr Owen, in a Letter to Sir Thomas Overbury, 1679

Miscellaneous:
The Divine Original of the Scriptures, 1659
Vindication of the Hebrew and Greek Texts, 1659
Pro Sacris Scripturis Exercitationes adversus Fanaticos, 1658
Poema, 1654
Orationes VI., 1721

IV. HISTORICAL DIVISION.*

XVII.
Treatise relating to the History of Theology.
Θεολογικὰ Παρηγαγότα, sive de Natura, Ortu, Progressu, et Studio Vene Thesagogia, 1661

V. EXEGETICAL DIVISION.†

XVIII.-XXIV.
Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews, 7 vols., 1668-1684

* In order to furnish a complete view of the author's works, a reference to this important treatise is here inserted, although not embraced in the Miscellaneous Works, as originally announced for publication in this edition. It forms the 12th volume of the entire works of our author. It may be added, that his "Primer for Children" has never been recovered. His "Exercitations on the Sabbath" appear in the place which Owen intended them to occupy,—among the Preliminary Dissertations prefixed to his "Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews."
† A reference to this department of the author's works is necessary to complete a general view of them. The volumes under this division are vols. xviii.-xxiv. in the complete edition of his works.
INDICES.

IV.— INDEX TO THE

531

WOEKS OF

OWEN",

IN THEIR ALPHABETICAL ORDER.

NOTES AND OPINIONS EESPECTING THEM.

TITLES OF THE WORKS.

Vol.

Advice to the Citizens of London,
Animadversions on " Fiat Lux,"
Animadversions, Vindication of
Annotations of Grotius, Review of the
Apostasy, Nature of
Arminianism, Display of
Baptism, On Infant
Catechisms on the Doctrine of Christ,
Causes, etc., of Understanding tlie Miudof God,
Churches, Evangelical, Inquiiy into

...
.

X. 5

.

XVL

.

....

IV. 119
XV. 189
XV. 447
XVI. 3
XVI. 223
XIV. 483
IV. 353
3
n. 277

U
;

Death of Death in Death of Christ,
Death of Christ, its Satisfaction and Merit,
Death of Christ, and Justification,
Distresses on Nonconformists Examined,
Dominion of Sin and Grace,
Eshcol, or Rules for Church Fellowship,

.

On

Excommunications, Letter concerning
Exposition of the Epistle to the Hebrews,
,

Exposition of Psalm cxxx.
Gloiy of Christ, Discourses on the
Glory of Christ Applied
Gospel Grounds of the Faith of God's Elect,
Indwelling Sin, Of
.
Indulgence and Toleration Considered,
Justice, On Divine

I.

IX.

xvni.
XXIV.

to

gei-mons.

Vm. 3, etc.

xm.
xm.

Sermons, Posthumous

IX.

Theologoumena,

Union among

XVL
I. IX,

.

424

VI. 324
274

I.

V.'4b2

I.

LIV.

I.

XCVI.

xm.
XVL

I.

LXIV.

I.

LXII.

I.

LXXIV.

I.

XXXIII.

XL 2
2
XVL 477

LVI.

XCIX.

I.

Lxxin.
LXXIV.
LXXIV.

XIII. 508
IV. 236
IV. 4
XVI. 270
XIII. 90
208
278

1.
I.
I.

xm.
XnL
vm. 2,72,128,208,
244, 282, 312, 342,
366, 398, 428, 454,
474, 594
IX. 2, 18, 358, 408,

XCIX.

VI. 89

I.

LXXVl.

XVn.

I.

XVI. 345

282, 296

I.

I.

.

XVL
XVL

Xin. 2
Xin. 542

I.

518
2
IV. 352
VII. 262
XIV. 630
676
VL 88
III.

xm.

583

.

.

VI. 154
518
X. 482
V. 2
576
XV. 2
240
VI. 2
XIL 3
480

xm.

XIV. 531

II. 367
XIII. 345
XIV. 519
XIII. 305

....

Protestants,
Vindication of the Nonconformists, .
Vindication of Greek and Hebrew Texts,

vn. 600
xin. 52
XV. 58

LXXXIV.

XCIV.

XlU.

,

n. 2
n. 276
XVI. 240

XVI. 210

I.

VII. 203
.

Trinity, Doctrine of the
.

XVI. 240
I. 464
IV. 118
XV. 188
XV. 446
XVL 2
XVL 210
XIV. 482
IV. 352

and

3, etc.

IIL 5
Author of IV. 420

On

Trutliand Innocence Vindicated,

618
2

2

xiii.' 676

xm.

in Religion,
of the Holy Spirit in

.

X

X. 140
X. 430

XCIII.

Schism, Of
Schism, Review of the True Nature of
Schism, Answer to a late Treatise about

Temptation,

LXXII.

I.

XL
L3
XVL

i'aith,

the Holy

L

XV. 59

XVL
XVL

Reflections on a Libel,

On

XCVII.

XXXVII.

477
509
IV. 237
IV. 5
XVL 271
XIII. 91
209
279

Spiritual Gifts, On the Holy Spirit as the
Spiritual Miiideilncss, On
State and Fate of Protestantism,
.
State of the Kingdom,

I.

I.

xm.
xm.

Poema,
Power of the Magistrate

Spirit,

XXXIV.

xm. 579
VII. 501
xm. 53

V. 404
VI. 155
519
X. 483
V. 3
XIII. 577
XV. 3
XVI. 254
VI. 3
XII. 5
481
297
3
643
5

....

Work

I.

XIL
VU.

Xin.

Justification by Faith, On .
Liberty, Grounds and Reasons of Desire for
Liturgies, Discourse concerning
Marriage after Divorce, On .
Mortification of Sin, On the
Mystei-y of the Gospel Vindicated,
Oiationes VI.
Original of the Scriptures, The Divine
Pastors and People, Duty of
Peace-offering, or Plea for Indulgence
Perseverance of the Saints, Doctrine of the
Person of Christ, Glorious Mysteiy of the

the

XXXI.

576

XIV. 2
XIV. 174

L418

...

On

I.

XVI. 248

VI. 325
1.275

.

Prayer,

LXSX.

XVI. 211
XVI. 425

Exercitationes adversus Fanaticos,

Reason of

I.

X. 145
X. 431
XII. 591

.

Evangelical Love,

LXXIX.

258

1.465
!.

Vol. and page.

xm.
I.

XII. 619
VII. 3

.

Churches, Instruction in Discipline of
Church, True Nature of a Gospel
Church Censures,
Church of Rome no Safe Guide,
Comforter, AVork of the Iloly Spirit as a
Communion with God,
Communion witli God, Vindication of
Conformity to Worship not of Divine Institution,
Twelve Arguments against

Vol. and pag

587

XIV. 3
XIV. 175

....
.

and page.

Xm.

I.

X. and
X.
\
LXXVI
.XXVIII. /

XCIII.

II.

366
344

I.

LXXXVIII.

XIIL

I.

LIV.

XIV. 618
XIII. 304

I.

LXXIV.

XVI. 345


LIST OF OWEN'S PREFACES TO WORKS OF OTHER AUTHORS.

A Collection of the Works of Dr Thomas Taylor, ......................................................... 1633
Justification without Conditions. By W. Ryce, minister of the gospel, and pastor of a church in
the city of New Sarum. 8vo. [This preface was omitted in the second edition.] .................. 1633
The Private Christian's Non Ultra; or, a Plea for the Layman's Interpreting the Scriptures. By
Philalethes, ................................................. ................................................................. 1656
A Defence of Mr John Cotton from the Imputation of Self-contradiction, charged on him by Mr
Dan. Cawdrey. 12mo, ............................................. ......................................................... 1669
The True Idea of Jansenism, both Historic and Dogmatic. By Theophilus Gale. 12mo, ....... 1669
Clavis Cantici; or, an Exposition of the Song of Solomon. By James Durham, late minister at
Glasgow. 4to. [Wood ascribes this preface to Owen, but it is anonymous, and not in Owen's
style.] ............................................. ................................................................. 1669
An Introduction to the Holy Scriptures, etc. By Henry Lukin. 12mo, ................................ 1669
The Free-ness of the Grace and Love of God to Believers. By W. Bridge, .............................. 1671
Sermons on the whole Epistle of St Paul to the Colossians. By Mr Daillie. Translated into English
by F. S. With Dr Thomas Goodwin's and Dr John Owen's Epistles Recommendatory. Folio, .... 1672
New and Useful Concordance to the Holy Bible. By Vavasor Powell, .................................. 1673
The Divine Will Considered in its Eternal Decrees and Holy Execution of them. By Edward Pol-
hill. 8vo. .......................... ................................................................. 1673
The Nature and Principles of Love as the End of the Commandment, declared in some of the last
Sermons of Mr Joseph Caryl, with an Epistle prefixed by John Owen, D.D. 12mo, ................. 1673
Scudder's Christian's Daily Walk, ............................................. ........................................ 1674
The Difference between the Old and New Covenant Stated and Explained. By Samuel Petto,
minister of the gospel. 12mo, ............................................. ........................................ 1674
The Surest and Safest Way of Thriving. By Thomas Gouge, ........................................... 1674
The Best Treasure; or, the Way to be made Truly Rich. By Bartholomew Ashwood, .............. 1677
The Law Unsealed; or, a Practical Exposition of the Ten Commandments. By James Durham,
late minister of the gospel at Glasgow. 8vo, Edinburgh, .............................................. 1676
The Ark of the Covenant Opened; or, a Treatise of the Covenant of Redemption between God and
Christ as the Foundation of the Covenant of Grace, etc. By a minister of the New Testament,
4to. [The author was Patrick Gillespie, one of the ministers and principal of the University
of Glasgow], ............................................. ................................................................. 1677
A Practical Discourse of God's Sovereignty, with other material points, etc. By Elisha Coles, .. 1678
The Glory of Free Grace Displayed. By Stephen Leb. 12mo, ........................................... 1680
The Holy Bible, with Annotations and Parallel Scriptures, etc. By Samuel Clark. Folio, ........ 1680
Ness's Antidote to Arminianism. [The preface was given, but not published in the work], .... 1680
V.—INDEX TO PRINCIPAL SUBJECTS AND OCCASIONAL TOPICS.

Aaron confessing the iniquities of Israel, ix. 597.
Resemblance of Christ’s office to that of, xii. 398.
Sons of, properly priests, xii. 400. Enjoined to teach the people, xii. 13.
Abba, Father, the words explained, iv. 598.
Abel and Cain, their offerings, iii. 294.
Ability and power lost by man through sin, i. 184.
Of Christ, for his work, i. 288. Of man to discern the will of God, ii. 162. No, in sinners to purge themselves from natural pollution, ii. 433. To comply with the commands of God, mistakes about, iii. 618. For duty not in ourselves, ii. 619. Of absent upon testimony, iv. 162. To interpret Scripture, iv. 121. Scripture not to be read in dependence upon our natural, iv. 193. For prayer, how obtained, iv. 390. Use of, in prayer, iv. 306. Of speech, iv. 459. For the ministry, whence obtained, iv. 452. For the administration of Christ’s institutions, xv. 29. No, in man to come to the knowledge of God, xvi. 468.
Abraham, justification of, v. 162. Issue of temptation with, vi. 103.
Abolition from sin, ii. 176, x. 479.
Almitteness from known sin, v. 78. From things which Christ has not appointed, part of a Christian profession, iv. 542.
Alleges of providence unsearchable, xiv. 70.
Accept and vowels, Hebrew, iv. 218, xvi. 386.
Acceptance of obedience, the rule of, iii. 471. Of Christ in his work, iv. 356. With God, nature of, v. 30. Many have found, iv. 443. Gracious, of the satisfaction of Christ, x. 441.
Acceptation with God, grace of, ii. 159.
Access to God in worship, i. 279. Advantages under the new testament in, iii. 190. Boldness in our, iv. 293. Procured by the blood of Christ, ix. 55. The glory and beauty of gospel worship, ix. 65. By the Spirit, ix. 69.
Accidental adjuncts of prophecy, iii. 158. Heightenings of in, vi. 29. Form, what it is, xii. 283.
Accommodation of religion, evil effects of, v. 45.
Accomplishment of Scripture, when improperly expected, vii. 647. Of the purpose of God, ix. 418.
Of the promises certain, xi. 166.
Accept of the Protestant religion, xiv. 531.
Accused, Christ blasphemously, by the Jews, iii. 17. The death of Christ was, xiv. 486.
Accuser, Satan an, iv. 309.
Acknowledgment of sin, vi. 302.
Actor, the valley of, xii. 278.
Acquaintance with the love of Christ, ii. 62. Necessary to talking with God, ii. 148. With Christ, ii. 298. With the pollution of sin necessary, iii. 450. With the word of God, how acquired, iv. 200. With the work of God, a qualification for the ministry, iv. 511. With the success of sin necessary, vi. 31. Special, with spiritual things, how acquired, vii. 231, 392.
Acquiescence of the heart in God, v. 101.
Acquiescing in God in Christ, ix. 500.
Acquisition of the gospel ministry, iv. 489.
Acquittal from sin, v. 8, vi. 406.
Act of the Spirit in forming the human nature of Christ different from that of the Son in assuming it, iii. 105. Of believing, the work of God, iii. 320. Every gracious, of the will wrought by the Holy Spirit, iii. 353. Of testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 56, 57.
Actings, eminent, of grace, i. 117. Of Christ in our communion with him, i. 197. Of faith in receiving the Holy Ghost, ii. 231. Of the Holy Spirit in believers, ii. 233, 234. Internal, of the Trinity, where one person is the object of the love of another, natural and necessary to the being of God, iii. 66. Of one divine person towards another, external, iii. 67. Of the person of the Son of God towards the human nature, voluntary, iii. 161. Of the Holy Spirit, not ascribed to him exclusively, iii. 162. Of mind, rational, iv. 83. Of the offices of Christ, all from God, v. 121. First, of sin to be resisted, vi. 82. Of grace, vigorous, vi. 566. Of faith, special, vii. 283.
Actions, symbolic, iii. 135. All, to be tried by the word of God, iv. 409. Mixed, vi. 518.
Active obedience of Christ, ii. 155.
Activity of indwelling sin, vi. 11. Of the will in believers to do good, vii. 161.
Actual sins, how they spring from original, iii. 338, 339. Twofold event of men falling into, iii. 342. How we are strengthened against, iii. 453.
And habitual grace, iii. 529. Supplies of grace necessary to the mortification of sin, iii. 533. Assistance necessary to obedience, iii. 622. Opposition to good, vi. 194. Reconciliation procured by Christ, x. 97. Exercise of the mind about spiritual and heavenly things, vii. 270. Sin, its cause and spring, viii. 411. 

Adorem, how poor in himself, i. 288. Mental state of, when created, ii. 112. How he had the Spirit of God in the state of innocence, iii. 102. Had many things revealed to him, iii. 128. Supernatural life of, iii. 284. How God dealt with, v. 70. And Christ compared, v. 323, x. 301. Issue of temptation with, vi. 103. State of, before the fall, of, vi. 233. Man not then in that state by which Christ was lost by, x. 399. 

Adoption, vi. 608, vii. 482. 

Adoptions, of, to divine institutions, xv. 467. 

Addresses to Christ, how to make, ix. 576. 

Adherence of defection and guilt to our nature, i. 199. And assimilation, effects of love, vii. 504. To corrupt traditions, iv. 189. To spiritual things, vii. 482. Faith of, ix. 600. 

Adhering to ministers, xiii. 61. 

Adieu, the divine inspiration, i. 138. 

Adjective cause of the sufferings of Christ, ix. 526. 


Admirable of the glory of Christ, i. 320. An effect of love, iii. 596. Of the perfections of God, vi. 66. Of what is incomprehensible, vii. 372. 

Admiration of things into the mind, effect of inordinate, i. 461. Of Christ, ix. 575. Of persons to the Lord's supper, xv. 169. Into church fellowship, xv. 525. 

Admonition, brotherly, xiii. 84, xv. 517. 

Admonitions, end and use of, xi. 363. 

Adoption, pledge of, ii. 196. Nature of, ii. 207. Privileges of, ii. 211. Spirit of, ix. 503. 


Adorning our profession, iv. 436. 

Adrian, verses of, on his death-bed, i. 280, ii. 56, x. 520. Choked by a fly, viii. 59. 


Adversaries and answerers of the doctrine of the saints' perseverance compared, xvi. 481. 

Advise to the citizens of London, xiii. 557. 

Advocate, work and office of an, iv. 258. The Holy Spirit an, iv. 590, x. 853. 

Affection, natural, pervaded by sin, vi. 305. Influence of, to tie us, outer world, xii. 273. 

Affections excited by conviction, iii. 239. Fixed by grace on spiritual things, ii. 351. How deprived and sanctified, iii. 335. When renewed, work readily, iv. 403. The, how engaged to God, iv. 496. Corrupt, seductive power of, iv. 177, 178. And other, how engaged to, xii. 298. Enchantment of, by sin, vi. 190, 199. Alienated from God, vi. 183. The, how to be kept, vi. 249. Toward lawful things, vii. 579. Engagement of natural, in prayer, vii. 360. Spiritual, viii. 385. Influence of, viii. 396. The, the sail of the soul, viii. 80. With what, we were engaged to God, ix. 427. And passions, how attributed to God, xii. 109. 

Affections, new, not necessary for understanding the Scriptures, iv. 125. 


Affliction and trouble, increase of, with age, i. 433. Compassion of Christ to his people in, ii. 145. No promise against, ix. 413. 

Afflictions, comfort under, ii. 229. The means of confirming, iii. 344. Man not their away sin, iii. 447. How sanctified and made useful, iii. 447. Sent to mortify sin, vi. 137. The means of preventing sin, vii. 287. Permitted by the covenant, vii. 535. Produce disquietude, vi. 575. Continued, how to be regarded, vi. 581. Believers to grow better by, vi. 633. Consistent with the special presence of God, viii. 429. When the bounds of, are exceeded, it is a calamitous season, ix. 492. 

Affiliations and usurpations of temerity, vi. 100. 

Age, increase of trouble with, i. 453. Horoscope of, iii. 315. 

Agent in the work of redemption, x. 163. 

Agravation of the guilt of sin, vi. 51, viii. 509. 

Agravations of the defilement of sin, iii. 482. In the sins of scribes, vii. 94. Of sin, how to be considered, vii. 547. Of death, xii. 455. Of the evil of schism, xiii. 91. 

Agony of Christ in the garden, ix. 533. 

Agree, things wherein Christians, should be considered, xiv. 316. 

Agreement necessary to walking with God, ii. 106, ix. 67. Of spiritual gifts and saving graces, iv. 425. Of universal and particular justices, x. 575. Aids of grace, the end for which they are granted, vii. 547. 

Aim of man different from that of God, viii. 160. 

Aiming at the highest degree of spiritual mindedness necessary, vii. 274. 

Aid of, the evil against sin, vii. 3. In our entrance into sufferings, v. 350. 

Alienation of the minds of men from the gospel, iii. 277. From the life of God, iii. 256. Between God and man, x. 292. 

All man, Christ nowhere said to die for, x. 245, 349. With the righteous are called, x. 202. The word, how used in the Scriptures, x. 307. 

Allegories and types of Scripture, on, vi. 197. 

Alliteration of afflictions, where to be found, i. 273. Of guilt, false, vii. 200. 

Alliance between Christ and the church, i. 87. Of words in Scripture, iv. 215. 

Alpha and Omega, a title of Christ, ii. 303. 

Alteration in the state of the church, xv. 292. No further, under the gospel in the worship of God, xv. 452. 

Amber of the clergy, xv. 198. 

Amendment, one end of punishment, xii. 477. 

Amplification of prayer, iv. 316. 

Amplitude, spiritual, of divine truths, how restrained, v. 10. 

Amaryllis, his opinion of the nature of a church, xii. 158. 

Anaphora, xiii. 184. 

Analogy or proportion of faith, iv. 198. Of the eternal purposes of God, x. 466. Definition of, x. 498. 

Anathema, Jesus how called, i. 17. 

Ancients, their opinions on the subject of imputation, 

of the extent of the stoning, xii. 437. Their authority, xi. 24.
Arts and sciences, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 129.
Assurance of Christ into heaven, l. 247-249.
Assumption of divine properties to God, l. 110. Of glory to God, vi. 493.
Assumed of the gospel, what it is to be, ix. 221. Of what men ought not to be, in the gospel, ix. 224. Why we should not be, of the gospel, ix. 220. As to security, who are, l. 447.
Ass's head, worship of an, xiv. 476.
Assault the soul, sin does, vi. 198.
Assaults of our spiritual enemies, how managed, vi. 108.
Assemblies of bishops and councils, i. 10. We should pray for the presence of Christ in our, ix. 457.
Assembly of saints and angels in heaven, i. 257.
Asent to truth, iii. 232. To the Scriptures, iv. 46. Ways of, iv. 82. Upon testimony, faith an, v. 72, 81. Sincere, to divine revelation, v. 69. Upon light and conviction, x. 64.
Assignation of honour to Christ, its principle and spring, i. 119.
Assistances, deceitful, leaning on, vi. 147.
Assisting, special grace, vi. 276.
Assumption of human nature by Christ, i. 16, 224. The only immediate act of the person of the Son towards the human nature, iii. 100. Caution against false, of grace, vi. 49.
Athanasius falsely accused by the Arians, vii. 65.
Atheists, generally the most abandoned of mankind, x. 496.
Athenians would not admit strange objects of worship, xiii. 223.
Atonement, the, how pleaded by Christ in heaven, i. 254. For sin not required of us, lii. 377. False ways of making, the ground of superstition, lii. 378. Extent of, x. 226.
Attempts, vain, for the mortification of sin, iii. 544. Attempted by the word of God, lii. 230. Attention, how awakened to the gospel, iv. 484. To particular actions necessary, vii. 217.
Attractive, how the sufferings of Christ are, ix. 505. Power of the love of Christ, ix. 608.
Attributes of God, i. 471; goodness, i. 59; wisdom, in revealed inspiration, i. 191. Of God's being, i. 471. In the acts of his will, i. 472, 476. Some, only known fully through Christ, ii. 83. All-sufficiency of, ii. 69, vii. 125. Saving knowledge of, in Christ only, ii. 91. How laid out in our behalf, ii. 93.
Augmentation, the love of God not capable of, ii. 39. Of grace, ii. 201.
Augustine, manner of conversion explained in the instance of, iii. 537.
Auricular confession, its accommodation to sinful inclinations, iii. 443.
Austin, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 112.
Author of all good, the Holy Spirit is the, iii. 157. Of sanctification, God is the, iii. 557. Of all grace-givings, the Spirit is the, iii. 534. Of the covenant, God is the, i. 416. And the finisher of grace, God is the, x. 103.
Authoritative instruction of any church not necessary for understanding the Scriptures, iv. 125. Blessing the congregation not, iv. 436.
Autographs of Scripture lost, xvi. 333.
Aversion of the mind from God, iv. 182, vii. 412. And fear of suffering, vii. 324.
Awe, religious, excited by the word of God, iv. 98. Of the judgments of God, how only impressed on the mind, iv. 413.
Baal, the prophets of, iii. 30.
Babylon, or Babel, Romish, her utter destruction, viii. 267. Persecution for religion first arose there, viii. 361. From the origin of apostasy from the worship of God to idolatry, ix. 3. Its idolatry in grave images, ix. 4. The name, why transferred to the church of Rome, ix. 4.
Backsliders, recovery of, an act of sovereign grace, i. 454.
Backsliding, issue of, vii. 235.
Bagdad, martyr at, xiii. 143.
Balaam, how a prophet and a sorcerer, iii. 140, 141.
Balance, our own righteousness weighed in the, ii. 188.
Balancing eternal things with present sufferings, vii. 443.
Banishment of ministers from corporations, xiii. 585.
Banquet-house, what, ii. 44.
Baptism, vi. 401, vi. 465. Into the name of Christ, i. 129. Of Christ, the time of his being anointed to stand in, iii. 335, 336. Of Water, ii. 171, 172. Not regeneration, iii. 216. How it expresses our sanctification, iii. 424. Washes not away sin, iii. 434. In itself, xvi. 258. Two passages of Irenaeus on, explained, xvi. 263.
Baptized into the name of Christ, iii. 75. Into the name of the Holy Spirit, iii. 74. All that are, not regenerate, ii. 217.
Barshab, the false Messiah, xvi. 377.
INDICES.

thority of God, iii. 615. Proper, how we are diverted from, vi. 39. And society, when to be avoided, vii. 356. Spiritual mindedness to be carried into, vii. 390.

Duzzof, character of his writings, xvi. 253.

By-opinion, evil fruit of one, ix. 460.

Catholic Jews, iv. 217.

Cecilianus, ordination of, xiii. 158.

Cain and Abel, offerings of, iii. 294.

Calamity, use of faith in, time of public, ix. 490.

Cal, what it is to, Jesus Lord, lii. 17. To an office, iv. 453. To apostles in the church, xvi. 54.

Calling, of effectual, i. 456, xi. 157. To the office of the ministry, xii. 29.

Calling, worldly, thoughts about, vii. 302. The sins of our, viii. 651.

Caills of providence to be observed, vii. 398. And promises to backsliders, vii. 406.

Canaan's everlasting mountains, how scattered, viii. 94.

Candestick of the gospel, removal of the, vii. 142.

In the tabernacle, what it signified, viii. 256. The church compared to a, xvi. 482.

Canticum complete, iv. 62.

Canonical books of Scripture, none ever lost, iv. 233. Submission required, xv. 160.

Canons of councils about forms of church administrations, xv. 25.

Capacity in the mind, a twofold, with respect to spiritual things, lii. 261.

Captivity of the soul led by sin, vi. 202. Deliverance from, xii. 513.

Care of us, how God evidences his, iii. 626. Of God over his written word, iv. 252. Christ's pastoral, ix. 271. Of the flock committed to ministers, xvi. 159.


Carnal, nothing, in the worship of heaven, i. 256.


Catalectic Epiphaneum, what so called, xii. 455.

Cathage, church of, viii. 13.


Catechism, the Lesser, i. 457. The Greater, i. 470. Raccovan, considered, x. 561, xii. 205. Mr Biddle's preface to his, xii. 59. Mr Biddle's, examined, xii. 58. A, proposed for Socinians, xii. 588. The Independents', or a brief instruction in the worship of God, xv. 445.

Catholic church, xii. 124. Nature of, xv. 77.

Causes of quarrel taken away by Christ, ii. 189.


Causes, objections of, to Christianity, xiv. 15.

Censures, church, how to be regulated, vii. 68, xiii. 539. Administration of, xvi. 223.

Century, state of churches to the end of the second, xv. 277.

Ceremonial law, v. 30.

Ceremonials, of religious, iv. 244. Distinction between words and, as signs, xiii. 451. Mosical, under the gospel, xv. 145. Of, appointed by the church, xv. 165.


Cesnation of vital acts, i. 291. Of spiritual gifts, iv. 474.

Chaldee paraphrase on Isa. liii. xvi. 387.

Charity, lost, where Christ is not, what intended by, i. 186. Of imagery in the church of Rome, viii. 547, 553.

Change and transformation of the soul by the power of faith, i. 221. No, in the divine nature, when Christ assumed the human, i. 327. In the conversion of thought, iv. 299. Habitual, of the affections, vi. 413. Of affections, vii. 518. The, wrought in men by grace, xi. 95. And mutability ascribed to the affections, xii. 110.

Changes, providential, an argument for universal holiness, ix. 161. Of Providence to be expected, ix. 414.

Characters of divine truth on all divine inspirations, iii. 133. Of God in the Scriptures, iv. 91.

Charities of salvation, God can make any of his creatures, viii. 111.

Charity, gospel, ix. 256. The rule of judgment, x. 314. Of Scripture ever extended, x. 260. How men are esteemed for their, x. 364. Exhortation to, xiii. 503. And faith of Catholics, xiv. 349.


Chastisement, when judicially forborne by God, iv. 417.

Chastity, spiritual, ii. 146.

Checks and rebukes to sin, vi. 238.

Checks, how metaphorically ascribed to Christ, ii. 75.

Cherem, nature of, x. 555.

Cherubim, their typical design, i. 310.

Childhood, the vanity of, iii. 340.

Children, natural love of parents to their, viii. 304.

Obedience of, to their parents, xi. 477.

Choice of that which is good for its excellency, vi. 150. Of the service of God, vi. 422. Of God in election, xii. 554.

Christ, person of, i. 3-272, 475, iv. 413. Sonship of, how understood by the ancient church, i. 15-17. Offices of, as prophet, i. 87; as king, i. 96; and, as priest, i. 99. The object of divine honour, i. 104. When to be invoked, i. 113. The object of faith, i. 126. Hypostatical union in, i. 223. The life and centre of the glory of heaven, i. 235, v. 344. His glory, how beheld, i. 287, 575; by faith and by sight, i. 241. Personal excellencies of, i. 323, ii. 59, ix. 140. His glory under the old testament, i. 449. His intimate conjunction with the church, i. 352. Communication of, to believers, i. 359. Recapitulation of all things in, i. 367. Incarnation of, i. 478. How he gives himself to his people, ii. 56. Grace of, boundless, ii. 61. Love of, in what it consists, ii. 118. Values his people in comparison of others, how, ii. 123. Obedience of, ii. 133. A common and public person, ii. 177. God revealed through the person of, ii. 397. Divinity of, ii. 382, xii. 265. Satisfaction of, ii. 419. Is the Lord, what it includes to say, i. 19. Not the Son of the Holy Ghost, iii. 104. Raised from the dead by the Holy Spirit, iii. 151. How he is or our life, iii. 292. Not defiled by sin, iii. 464. How he is made unto us sanctification, iv. 506. The exemplary cause of our holiness, iii. 509. A head of influence to the church, iii. 514. Not proposed in the law, nor his grace communicated by, vi. 164. The want of him the greatest loss, viii. 33. Scriptural representations of, vii. 36. The name of God in him, viii. 154. How many ways he may be provoked, viii. 154.
INDICES.

Concilium of Christ, iii. 506. Spiritual, frequency of, xiii. 69.

Communications, how made in glory, i. 414. In a way of grace through Christ, iii. 515.

Communicative property of God, his goodness is the, i. 179. Love of God, i. 534.


Communion with Christ, how made, i. 195. Between Christ and believers, v. 54.

Communitive justice of God, x. 501.

Compact between the Father and the Son, xi. 299, xii. 496.

Compacts and societies, how they should be governed by the authority of God, iii. 616.

Compassion and pity of Christ, i. 196, i. 353; boundless, ii. 61; to men, iii. 177. And kindness to others, the fruit of election, iii. 590. For the souls of men, viii. 555. To the souls of men, necessary in ministers, iv. 455.

Compensation in other duties sometimes the plea of neglect, vi. 230. For sacrifices, God gives us a, vii. 329.


Complaints in prayer of sin derided by men, but acceptable with God, iii. 558. All our time not to be spent in, vi. 560.

Concordance, sinful, vi. 144.

Compilation of temptations, vi. 99.


Composition cannot be made with sin, vi. 11, 177.

Composition of mind, holy, i. 337.

Comprehension of the mind of God by Christ, i. 91. What the prophets had of divine revelations, iii. 131. Of grace and mercy, iv. 284. Of the harmony of grace, how attained, v. 51.

Compromise of religion for worldly interest, vii. 179.

Compunction for sin, v. 74.

Computations, chronological, uncertainty of, iv. 199, 221. Difficulty and hazard of making, ix. 510.

Conciliations of grace, iii. 392. Of the acts of grace, xi. 151.

Conceal, self, evil of, iv. 183.

Concealment of the Son, how ascribed to the Holy Ghost, ii. 65, iii. 166. In the womb instantaneous, iii. 165. Of sin in the heart, vi. 215, 251.

Conceptions, first, of sin, to be resisted, vi. 62.

Concernments, greatness of spiritual, iv. 415.

Conscientious liberty, x. 589.

Consequence strengthens by age, i. 342. Inordinate, of corrupt nature, x. 85.

Concurrent of the Spirit with our excitements, vii. 75. Of God with second causes, x. 24. Of Scripture rules in a call to the work of the ministry, xiii. 55.

Condemnation, self, for sin, vi. 547.

Condemnatory judgment of men, a rule for, xi. 93.

Condescension and love of Christ in becoming a mediator, i. 223. Of the Holy Spirit, ii. 265, iv. 358, 368. Of God to be admired, vi. 525. Of God in his covenant, ix. 429. Of Christ in assuming our nature, ix. 610.

Conditions of salvation, of those who contend the Spirit, ii. 255; who have not the Spirit, ii. 273. Of all regenerate persons, the same, lii. 215. In this world, our, proves the necessity of holiness, iii. 641. For the church regarded in Scripture, iv. 189. Meaning and use of the word, v. 114. Of life, temptations from, vi. 120. Spiritual, Christ only judge of our, vi. 542. An afflicted, how made comfortable, vii. 162. Of the new covenant not said to be required, but absolutely promised, x. 226, 255. Of purposes and intentions of doing good, x. 243. Of faith, none to be assigned, x. 254. A necessity upon us, as it respects the punishment of sin, v. 607.

Conditions of Justification, what are not, v. 78. Prescriptions of, x. 104. God's promises do not depend on any, in believers, xi. 257. Of communion with the church of England unscriptural, xv. 143.

Condensation of pardon, vi. 407. Gracious, x. 444.

Confession of sin, affectionate, i. 456. Of sin, ix. 597.

Confessions of faith, the ancient and constant practice of the church, vi. 203. Of faith, subscription to, xiii. 514.


Confirmation of the moral law by Christ, i. 136. Episcopal, its nature, vii. 587. Of faith, ix. 557.


Confluence of trouble on Christ in his ministry, iii. 175.

Conformity to Christ, i. 169, iii. 188. To the world, iii. 254, vi. 147, viii. 631. To God, the beauty of the soul, iii. 429. To God, the honour of the soul, iii. 430. To God, its nature, iii. 478. To the world, iii. 501. To our only glory, iii. 572. To Christ, endeavours for, vi. 85. To the world, evil of, ix. 512. To the death of Christ, ix. 579. To God, how produced, xi. 351. In pashial assemblies, xv. 544.

Confusion among men, from whence it proceeds, i. 297. Of worldly things, vii. 309.

Congregation, blessing the, how it is best done, ix. 456. Of the great, among the Jews, xvi. 404.

Congregational churches, constitution of, xv. 502.

Congregations, particular, xiii. 53.

Conjugal relation of Scripture, iv. 218. Conjugal relation of Christ to his church, ii. 54.

Conjunct of Christ with the church, i. 352. Natural, i. 355. Mystical, i. 356. Federal, iv. 357.

Connection of justification and holiness, v. 53. Between sin and destruction, vi. 54.

Conquest of sin, guard against the, vi. 186. What is included in it, vi. 315.

Conquests, occasional, of sin no mortification, v. 26. Made by Christ on behalf of his people, vi. 145.

Consciousness, distress of, we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. How the gospel is applied to the, ii. 210. Must be awakened, iii. 239, 342. Under the dominion of God, iv. 96. Relief of, under conviction, v. 7. When falsely quieted, vi. 57. Load-
Constitutions, Constraint, Consequences


Consequences, fear of wounding, vi. 167. Of mankind, bear testimony to the justice of God, x. 519. Of men, forcing of, xiii. 459. Penalty of, of perverting anointing, iv. 391. Consent between the will of God and the will of Christ, i. 231. Of the will to spiritual things, how produced, iii. 494. Of the fathers, its proper use, iv. 227. Of the will, faith includes, v. 101. Of the will to sin twofold, vii. 312. The soul gives itself, to the tenor of the law, vi. 290. Of mankind, universal, as to the justice of God, x. 517. To sin in unregenerate men, full and whole, xi. 512.

Consequences of the withdrawal of Christ, i. 392. Of the miraculous conception of Christ, iii. 167. Penalty charged on the doctrine of the gospel, iii. 577. Consequences and antecedents to be observed in reading the Scriptures, iv. 201.

Consideration of grace, the true spring of all spiritual diligence, iii. 396. Of the nature and end of sin subservient to mortification, iii. 593. Rational, iv. 83. And observation of ourselves in reference to prayer, iv. 329. Of God, necessary to right views of justification, v. 13. When particularly useful, vi. 596. Due, of God, ix. 548. Faculty of, xii. 108

Consentration general, on justification, v. 7. Preserving, vi. 344.

Consistency of truth with itself, i. 53. Between effectual grace and our own endeavours, iii. 94.

Consolation from fellowship with Christ, ii. 45. Of believers, its adjuncts, ii. 210. Nature of, ii. 269. From the continuance of grace, iii. 375. To whom it belongs, iii. 496. Administered by the word of God, iv. 99. Guilt destructive of, iii. 341. To be expected only from God, vi. 422. To believers by the convictions of the word, x. 358; not marred, but promoted by the doctrine of their perseverance.

Conservancy of things revealed with themselves, vi. 85.

Consorts of the Hebrew language, xvi. 394.


Constantine, edict of, for toleration, viii. 185. The emperor, a saying of, xiii. 473.

Constitution of spiritual life, i. 437. No excuse for sin, iii. 422. Sin in the, vi. 60. Divine, sin punished according to the, x. 601.


Constraint, when to be put on the mind, vii. 356.

Consuming fire, God is a, x. 533, 603.

Contemplation of the holiness of God, iii. 571.

Contemplation of the glory of God in heaven, i. 222. Particularly, its mind must be fitted for, i. 290. An effect of love, iii. 355. Quiet repose of, in prayer, iv. 228. Of heaven a duty, vi. 341.

Contemplative power of the mind, iii. 295. Prayer, what so called, iv. 254.


Contention, fruitless, people sometimes given up to, viii. 155. How best conquered, xiii. 312.

Contentment, gracious, vi. 76. With his lot, vii. 94. Worldly, not to be unduly valued, iv. 414. Contents, worldly, how rendered undesirable, vi. 290.

Context in the world about Christ, how managed by both parties, iii. 184. Of heaven and earth, object of, vii. 305.

Contests about religion, xiv. 48.

Contiguity in actions, viii. 13. The nature of, x. 22. Two sorts of, xii. 128. Future, how known to God, xiii. 150.


Contract, how an earnest secures its fulfilment, iv. 408.

Contradiction, no, between the light of nature and the word of God, xiii. 466.

Contradictions of the heart of man, vi. 173. Popular, xiv. 119.

Contrariety to God, sin stands in, vi. 399.

Contrivances, sinful, vi. 22. For persecution, vii. 148.

Control which sin exercises over the gospel, vi. 290. How God does, great actions, viii. 117.


Conventicles, of the bill against, xiii. 553.

Conversation of others, observation of, iii. 347. Of ministers to be observed, xiii. 56.

Conversion, when improperly ascribed to ourselves, iii. 225. Rendered difficult from sinful habits, ii. 298. Not an act of our own will, iii. 508. The work of God, iii. 320. Things preparatory to, iii. 328. Manner of, explained in the instance of Augustine, iii. 377. Work of the Spirit in, iii. 339. By the power of the word, iv. 94. Of the world by the apostles, iv. 442. How necessary for the unregenerate, vi. 35. Of souls to be laboured for, ix. 460. How men are prepared for, x. 123. To God, x. 129. Preaching to, xv. 104.

Conveyances, executive, of God's immutable purposes, i. 441. Of grace, what are, xii. 231.


Co-operation, our, with grace, x. 139.

Copies, first, ancient Scriptures, xvi. 353.

Copy of the law preserved in the synagogue, xvi. 354.

Corinth, church of, xiii. 181.

Corporal, no, presence of Christ in the supper, ix. 572.

Corporality, or figure of God, xii. 101.

Corose, the relation of Aquinas concerning a, viii. 23.

Correctio Scribarum, the, xvi. 401.

Correction for sin, vi. 52. For instruction, what it is, xii. 437.

Corrective Justice of God, x. 517.

Correct affections, seductive power of, iv. 177, 178. Reasonings, sin takes advantage from, vi. 230. Churches, separation from, vy. 77. Translations of Scripture, xvi. 466.

Corrupted nature of man, i. 477. Common notions of good and evil remaining in, iii. 345. Reason destructive of many mysteries of the gospel, iii. 371. Reason, how the gospel is unsuited to, vii. 127.


Counsels, assemblies of, i. 10. General, xii. 143.

Counsels of God, the person of Christ the foundation of, i. 54. Of the wise, why so frequently confounded, ii. 115.

Course and custom of sin, how produced, iii. 224. And purpose of the soul opposed by sin, vi. 190. In sin to be avoided, vii. 250.

Couns, human, the management of punishment in, from divine appointment, x. 907. Of review, xvi. 195.


Coveting spiritual gifts, iii. 16.

Covets, men, thoughts of, vi. 277.


Creature, new, what it is, iii. 220. Supported and preserved by the Spirit, iii. 353.

Creatures above and below, why called God’s host, iii. 98. Senseless, the wrath of God on, vii. 109. Inanimate, serve the design of God in delivering his people, vii. 110. Intelligent, how distinguishing, iii. 587.

Credibility, motives of, in the Scriptures, iv. 20.

Creditor, how God is a, xii. 514.


Critical observations on Scripture, iv. 216. Their use and abuse, xvi. 535.

Crockedness of sin, iii. 427.


Crucifixion of the flesh, iii. 450. Of sin, vi. 50. Cunning and craft of indwelling sin, xi. 166.

Cup, the, sacrilegiously taken from the people, ix. 524.


Curse, death a, to the wicked, i. 411. Of God, nature of, i. 477, x. 76. 280. Of sin, not removed by human learning, ii. 114.

Cushan, tents of, vii. 98.

Customariness draws off the mind from right performance of duty, vii. 297.

Cyril of Alexandria, his exceses, i. 11.

Cyres, how anointed of God, iii. 163, 149.

Damianus, preaching of, xiv. 99.

Damnation for original sin, whether any under, x. 265.


David, his excellent qualifications, viii. 345.

Darkening of the mind by temptation, vi. 109.

Darkness, universal, with regard to God, i. 207. A natural, in all men, i. 401. And blindness, the state of nature, iii. 444. Spiritual, nature of, iii. 246, iv. 97. Objective and subjective, iii. 247. Spiritual works by enmity, iv. 327. Of mind, iv. 58. Of the mind gives advantage to temptation, vi. 228. Day of, lay not up sad provision for, vi. 683. Spiritual, a cause of apostasy, vii. 102.

David, family of, what promises were made to it, iv. 256.

Damnings and first-fruits of perfection in grace, ii. 9.

Days, evil, as to Christian profession, xi. 79.

Day-man, Christ fitted to be a, ii. 69.

Deacons, call of, ix. 454; and bishops, xi. 41. Nature of the office of, x. 506, xi. 143. Deacons’ wives, xvi. 150. Have no right to preach, xvi. 151.

Dead, of Christ in the state of the, iii. 190. In sin, men said to be, iii. 286. Works, what they are, and whence so called, iii. 291. Resurrection of Christ from the, xii. 560.

Dealtances to ordinances, ix. 532.

Dealings of God against sin, danger of withstanding, vi. 48. Of God with his people, vi. 406.

Death, invoking Christ at the time of, i. 118. How it may be encountered cheerfully, i. 250. Of sin in us, ii. 69. And life, natural and spiritual, compared, ii. 242. Spiritual, origin of, ii. 337. Natural, in what it consists, iii. 254. Of Christ, application of it to us, iii. 560. Applied to the mortification of sin, iii. 561. Of Christ, causes of the, vi. 185. Putting sin to, vi. 8. Temptation leads to, vi. 215. Our liability to, viii. 275. Inevitably included by Christ, ix. 456. Of Christ, how carried about with us, ix. 619. The punish-
ment of sin, x. 79. Of Christ, x. 87, 435; effect of it, vi. 490; to whom it is revealed, x. 228. Of Christ, causes, ends, and fruits of, x. 157, 200. Of Christ, and Spirit of grace, causes of faith, x. 222. How tasted by Christ, x. 349. Unto sin and in sin, x. 551. Whether every one is bound to believe that the death of Christ is for him, x. 494. Testimonies that the death of Christ was for believers, xi. 56.

Debasement of religious minds, vii. 473.

Debt of sin, how discharged, i. 269. Sin a, xii. 514.

Right of, x. 567.

Deceit, xii. 452. Natural and moral, x. 574.


Deceit, self, vi. 505. Of the heart, we should be sensible of, vii. 246. Of sin, vii. 507.

Deceitfulness of the heart, vi. 722. Of sin, vi. 211.

Decide about holiness, iii. 473. Of Estan, who are exposed to, as taught by the Scriptures, iv. 62.

Deceit, religion of the, x. 523.

Declarative truth, its objects, i. 82.

Declaratory terrors of gospel righteousness, ii. 175.


Deception, gradual, in grace, i. 444. Habitual, of professors, vi. 231.

Decline of the vigour of the affections, vi. 221.

Decree of God requires holiness, iii. 592. Determination as to divine judgments, vi. 619. Of God, what it is, ix. 252. A difference between those things which are necessary by a, and those which are so from the divine nature, x. 607.


Immutable, xi. 107.

Disciplinary judgments, vii. 616.

Delegation to God, iii. 370, ix. 287. Of persons to God by anointing, iv. 391.


Defect in grace, influence of a sense of, i. 118.

Defection of churches, in which it originates, iii. 42.

From pure religion predicted, xiv. 524.

Defects in reformation of life, iii. 240.

Defence of the truth, to whom committed, i. 6.

How sin puts forth its deceit in its own, vii. 229.

Defensive against church government, vii. 43.

Defilement of the civic duties, i. 171. Of sin, iii. 422. Nature of, iii. 426.

Deficiency of soul by sin, v. 21.

Degeneracy in church discipline, xii. 123.

Degenerate Christians, their conduct, vii. 353.

Degree, a good, what it is, xvi. 143.


Deity of Christ, testimonies to, xii. 304. Of the Holy Ghost, xii. 533.

Delay in mortifying sin dangerous, vii. 463. Of punishment, x. 697.

Deliberation, sins of, xi. 539.


Delusion of presumption, i. 420. Who are exposed to, as it respects the Scriptures, iv. 62.

Demerit of sin proportionally punished, i. 150. Of man, vii. 29.

Dementions of the world, x. 32.

Departure of Christ from his disciples, i. 224. Of the Spirit of God from Saul, iii. 57; from some persons, iii. 119; from a people, iv. 418. Blamable, from a church, xii. 120. From the church of Rome, clamour about, xiv. 33.

Dependency on divine, i. 361. Of all things on God, immediate, i. 369. On grace and providence compared, iii. 529. Of one doctrine upon another, iv. 188. On God, vii. 50.

Depositum of the new creature, iii. 482.


Deprovery of the affections, vii. 411.

Depth of the depth of sin, what they are, vi. 332.

Description, Christ to be invoked in seasons of, i. 113. Spiritual, its nature, ii. 121. Penal, caused the agony of Christ, ix. 534, 557.

Designation of the apostles, iv. 442.

Desire of union and enjoyment the first vital act of love, i. 152. Of deliverance from sin, iii. 546.

Desire, holy, satisfied only in heaven, i. 244. Of heaven, what they ought to be, iii. 583. Of sinners, to pray, iv. 344. Of the heart acceptable to God, vi. 51. Earnest, for spiritual things, vii. 324. In God, falsely said not to be fulfilled, x. 25.

Despair, xii. 483.

Despite to the Holy Spirit, ii. 234.


Despotism, no, in the church, ix. 433.

Destruction of Satan and his interest by Christ, i. 216. Of sin necessary, iii. 463. Eternal, danger of, vi. 54. Of a sinful people, sealing the, viii. 155. Inevitable, of a nation, when at hand how, ix. 722.

Determinate cause of contingent things, xii. 130.

Determination of the will as a free principle by grace, iii. 334. Of God, how formed, xi. 142.

Detestation of sin, when particularly necessary, vi.
INDICES.


Devotion, put himself into the power of the, i. 157. Destroy, i. 216. Sin of man worse than that of the, i. 425.

Devils and angels, faith of, v. 82. How they agree and differ, xii. 487.

Devoted to God, what things were, x. 534.

Devotion, natural, iv. 345. Of Divine, falsely said to transcend that of Protestants, xiv. 43, 231.

Die, to, cheerfully and comfortably, i. 283. Daily to, what it is, i. 337. For another, what it means in Scripture, x. 238.

Died for us, how Christ, ii. 445; not for repro- 


Diffusion of the substance of God through the creation, alleged, xii. 98.

Dignity of the human nature of Christ, i. 223. Of human nature, holiness is the, iii. 551. Of professors, in what it consists, iii. 551. Ecclesiastical, use of, iv. 158. Of the person of Christ, ix. 479.

Disjudication of spirits, iv. 471.

Dilemma to Universalists, x. 234, 237, 240, 249, 254, 273, 288.


Disobedience, xvi. 49. Churches, of, xv. 88. Not found in Scripture, xvi. 43.

Disobedience, sophism proposed to, xvi. 60.

Dipping in baptism, xvi. 296.

Direction in duty from the Holy Spirit, iii. 554. In the proper course of living to God contained in Scripture, iv. 25. For mortification of sin, vi. 53.


Disappointment and defeat of Satan, i. 218. In expectation, iv. 414. And surprisal, ix. 411.

Disappointments, their use, vi. 255. Spiritual, danger from, vi. 571. As to the proper seasons of spiritual thoughts, vii. 306.

Discernment, spiritual, of the beauty and amiable- 


Discipline, of the mediatory office in heaven, i. 252. Of the mediatory office, story of Christ in, i. 338. From the punishment of sin, v. 9. From sin in forgiveness, vi. 407.

Disciple, the constitution of a true, i. 160.


Discouragement to holiness, the mediation of Christ is not a, iii. 571.

Discouragements and difficulties, effect of, vi. 243. How removed, xi. 382.

Discovered, spiritual, advantage of, vii. 296.

Discoveries, gracious, of the glory of Christ, i. 114. Of the good-will of God, the promises are, xi. 229. Divine, Christ the medium of, xi. 290.

Discovery of the patience of God towards sinners, iii. 85. Of graces springing from election, iii. 505. Of sin by the law, vi. 313. Of forgiveness, not always connected with assurance, vi. 415.

Discrepancy in the glory of the church, as represented in Scripture and exemplified by professors, accounted for, i. 441.

Discourse, spiritual, operations of the, iv. 55.

Discourages, healing of, by Christ, meaning of, iv. 454, ix. 183. And distresses, spiritual, importance of knowing, iv. 511. Spiritual, a loose profession contracts, vii. 368.

Dislike, self, on account of sin, vi. 574.

Dismission to rest the lot of every good man, viii. 338.

Disobedience of Adam, i. 208.

Disorder of the government of God by sin, i. 185. Occasioned by sin, how rectified, i. 196. Of the mind through trouble, i. 279. Of the affections, care of, vii. 494.

Dissimilarity between God and men, x. 8, xii. 104.

Dispensation of the Spirit not confined to the first ages of the church, ii. 44. Of the Spirit in general declared, iii. 105. His general, unto the new creation, iii. 152. Necessity of, for the foundation of the church, iii. 192. Of providence, how used by God, vi. 210. Difference of divine, as to the righteous and the wicked, vi. 265. Of God, what is the rule of the, viii. 10. Of God, how we should answer the, viii. 82. Of providence dark and difficult, ix. 322. Of grace, x. 470. What, and of what kind, as to the punishment of sin, x. 962.

Disobedience of spiritual things, xi. 158. Of providence assigned to Christ, xii. 278.

Display of Arminianism, x. 1.

Dissipation of God, sense of, vi. 629. A deep sense of the, necessary, vi. 548.

Displeasure and sorrow for sin, v. 77.

Disposition, new, in regeneration, ii. 221. Natu-
rally depraved, iii. 355. None to a spiritual life, naturally, ili. 256. Supernatural, of living to God, iii. 469. Of the soul to duties of holiness, from an inward principle, ili. 453. A gracious, expressed by fear, love, and delight, ili. 452. Natural, more sedate in some than in others, iii. 643. Of indwelling sin, to be weakened, vi. 32. Of the heart, by what it may be judged, vii. 275.

**Dispositions** to regeneration, of what sort, iii. 229. Of the mind towards God, iii. 235. Gracious, how to be exercised, ix. 556.

**Disputation, subtlety of,** iv. 71.


**Distinction of God by the light of nature,** their success, iii. 273.

**Disregard of God,** degrees of, vii. 356.

**Dissenters,** liberty of, xii. 203.

**Dissimilation of sin,** vi. 25.

**Distance between God and his creatures,** i. 324. From God, our meditation on, vi. 63. Between God and us, vi. 632.

**Distempers of the soul,** i. 403. Of nature, how cured, iii. 614.


**Distress of conscience,** we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. From conviction of sin, iii. 355. The everlasting covenant the support of believers under, ix. 409.

**Distressed, outward,** vi. 331. On Nonconformists, xiii. 579.

**Distribution of spiritual gifts,** ii. 20, 21.

**Distributions of the Holy Spirit,** ii. 234, ii. 122.

**Spiritual,** iv. 424.

**Distributive justice of God,** xi. 296.

**Disturbance of God,** vii. 321.

**Disturbance of the government of God by sin,** i. 155.

**Division of sin not mortification,** vi. 26. Of the thoughts of men designed to prevent sin, vi. 290. Of sin different from his cause, vi. 318.

**Diversities of spiritual gifts,** iv. 424.

**Diversities of gifts an occasion of differences in the churches,** ii. 21.

**Dividing as he will,** the Holy Spirit, ii. 234. The word aright, iv. 516. The word of God with skill, ii. 453.

**Divine things,** knowledge of, by their operations and effects, iii. 58. Voluntary acts ascribed to the Holy Spirit in, iii. 60, 83. Persons succeeded not to each other in their operations, iii. 94. Nature in Christ acted not as his soul, iii. 169. Goodness in true apprehension of, but in Christ, iii. 272. And all such faith, iv. 15. Faith, in the Scriptures, iv. 40, 47. Institutions, whether any disused, iv. 455.

**Division of the Holy Spirit** falsely ascertained, iii. 122.

Falsest of all to Evangelists, xiv. 33, 557.

**Divisions and animosities,** whence they arise, iv. 174, xv. 104. In the church, iv. 477. And contentions, how perpetuated, x. 10. A cause of offence, vii. 213. To be avoided, xiii. 76.

**Divorce, marrying after, lawful,** xvi. 254.

**Doctrine of the Holy Spirit,** i. 327.


**Doctrines of the word of God good,** vii. 28. How to judge of their value, xi. 382. Of Scripture, nature of, xvi. 298.


**Donation,** xiii. 263.

**Door of apostacy,** what, vi. 15.

**Dort, synod of,** vii. 75.

**Doubts and fears not inconsistent with assurance,** vi. 550.

**Dove, under which shape the Holy Ghost appeared,** iii. 74, 75.

**Drest into sin,** when a man is, vii. 117. To Christ, how men are, ix. 595.

**Dread and fear of eternal misery,** iii. 358. Of mankind of what is grand, x. 592.

**Dreams a mean of divine revelation,** iii. 136.

**Dreams, how they traced and malaceries, x. 529.

**Duration of spiritual gifts,** iv. 474.

**Duties of persons intrusted with spiritual privileges,** ii. 21. Required in order to conversion, iii. 229. Moral, how changed into evangelical obedience, iii. 275. Of unbelievers, how said to be sinful, iii. 263. Good, how vitiated, yet accepted, iii. 293. The same, how accepted and rejected as to different persons, ii. 294. Not accepted on account of persons, ii. 294. Of faith, repentance, and obedience, on what grounds obligatory, ii. 258. Good, of regenerate men, how to be esteemed, iv. 293. Of morality to be encouraged, iii. 479. Specul, of those who have received a principle of holiness, iii. 482. Evenness in religious, iii. 486. Internal and external, distinguished, iii. 528. Of believers and unbelievers, difference of, iii. 557. Required for the mortification of sin, iii. 554, 557. More clearly revealed by Christ than any other way, iii. 652. Of worship, why to be regarded, v. 78. Best, imperfectness of, v. 439. Great, why God puts men on, vi. 94. Particular, opposed by sin, vi. 107. Principal, of the mind in obedience, vi. 217. Rendered acceptable by Christ, vi. 503. Best, weakness of, vii. 147. Religious, whether from grace or gifts, iv. 344. Special, what they require, ix. 557.

**Duty, love to God a love of,** ii. 28. On the part of saints to Christ, ii. 153. Things wrought in a way of grace prescribed in a way of, ii. 452. Not the mark of power, iv. 453. A heart inclined to all, iii. 485. And end to be considered in every act of obedience, iii. 505. Manner of, to be attended to, vii. 235. Of believers under divine warnings, iv. 403. Of a pasture, iv. 452.

**Dwelling of the Spirit in believers,** iv. 355, xii. 329; notwithstanding the remnants of sin, ili. 551. Of God in believers, ii. 293.

**INDICES.**
DYING in a state of sin, consequence of, iii. 228. For Christ's sake, vi. 553. Christian's work of, ix. 324. Of Christ, bearing about the, ix. 618. For us by commutation, x. 290.

Earnest, the Spirit an, ii. 245, iv. 407.


Ease and facility with which indwelling sin acts, vi. 167.

Easter, observation of, xv. 152.

Eat the flesh of Christ, what it is to, ix. 520.


Economy of the Trinity, xiii. 167.

Ecclesiastical, prophetic, iii. 138. Enthusiastical, not the work of the Spirit, iii. 224.


Education prevents disorders and evils, iv. 635.


Efficacy, real internal, of grace, iii. 317. Physical, of the Spirit, vi. 19.

Effusion of the Spirit, abundant, promised, iii. 153. Of the Holy Spirit to be prayed for, viii. 656. Of the blood of Christ, x. 97.

Effusions, eminent, of the Holy Spirit, sometimes accompanied with declensions of Satan, iii. 35.

Egress, first, of the divine properties, i. 534. And exercise of, vi. 248.

Egymass and Grecian learning, character of, iv. 32. Idolatry, xiii. 559. 

Ejaculatory prayer, vii. 393.

Elders, ruling, in the church, xv. 504.

Elect, evidence of the faith of God's, v. 403. Christ died only for the, x. 245. The, whence called the works, x. 290, 293. And reprobates mixed in the world, x. 313. The, how they are said to die and rise with Christ, x. 472.

Election the spring of true holiness, iii. 503, 501. Absolutely considered, no part of God's revealed will, iii. 595. Evidenced by conversion, iii. 566. Consequences from divine of, ii. 603. Temporary, what it is, iv. 430. Of, xii. 551.

Elevation of the mind by the Holy Spirit, xi. 345.

Eli, the conduct of God towards, xi. 161.

Eliza Levita, character of, xvi. 302.

Emaciation of grace and power from Christ, i. 177. Of grace, from the divine of, ii. 610. Of the Holy Spirit from the Father and the Son, iii. 55.

Eminence of gospel knowledge, vi. 68.

Eminency of the graces of Christ, ii. 76. Of the gift of the ministry, iv. 488. Of station, evil effect of the sin of persons in, vi. 293. Of brotherly love, xili. 63.

Emphasis of words and expressions of Scripture, iv. 214.

Empires, the four great, their rise, nature, and destruction, viii. 360.

Empty professors, how they differ from believers, lii. 38.


Encrouch on the privileges of the people of God dangerous, viii. 54.

Encumbrances to obedience, how removed, iv. 466.

End and object of evangelical obedience, ii. 153. Of prophecy in the church, iii. 126. Of miraculous operations, iii. 146. Of God in the work of the old and new creation, iii. 189. Of afflictions, lii. 392. Of duties twofold, iii. 503. Of legal commands, lii. 696. Of prayer must be regarded, iv. 276, 285. Of duty, how to be regarded, vi. 236. Of all things, God is the, vi. 452. The proper, of divine institutions, vii. 433. Of the covenant, x. 139. Of ordinances, God is the, x. 550. Of the word, meaning of the expression, xiv. 571. Of the death of Christ, why opposed, x. 159. Of the nature of man, x. 100 ; it relating to means, x. 100. Natural and moral, x. 161. Several kinds of, x. 162. Of the death of Christ, x. 163; supreme, of it, x. 213; intermediate and subservient, of it; x. 262; not his own good, x. 283; nor a liberty to the Father of showing mercy, x. 265; immediate, of it, x. 288. Of obedience, the glory of God, xii. 385.

Endeavour for mortification, when it proceeds from a corrupt principle, vi. 11.

Endeavourers, giving over, ruthless, i. 428. After reformation, iii. 354. To understand the mind of God necessary, iv. 12.

Endowment of Christ for the discharge of his work, iv. 452.


Ends, principal, of God in creation, i. 153. For which the Holy Spirit is promised, iii. 405. For which holiness is required, i. 472. Of the gospel ministry, iv. 457. And purposes why forgiveness was revealed, vi. 514. Proper, of judging the state of others, vi. 501. Of the death of Christ, xii. 411.

Enemies of Christ, their destruction by his ascension, i. 249. Spiritual, how they manage their assaults, vi. 108. How they manage an opposition, vi.
THEOLOGICAL WORKS OF JOHN CALVIN, VOL. VI.

193. Of God, his dealing with them observable, viii. 102. Of the people of God, why they tremble, viii. 106, 405. Of God, how they promote his glory, ix. 206; how defeated in their attempts, ix. 212. Of the Christian, xi. 106.

194. Enquiry with whom we contend should be known, vi. 31. Sin an internal, vi. 162.

195. Enforcements to obedience from the authority of God, iii. 611. Of the divine commands, iii. 828.

196. Engagement, what God will do on account of his, vi. 157.

197. Engagements of God to his people always made good, viii. 113.


199. Englishmen, civil rights of, xiii. 532.

200. Enjoyment of God, eternal, how man is brought to the, i. 183. Of Christ in his ordinances, i. 258. Of God, no, without purification from sin, iii. 452. Everlasting, of God, holiness necessary to, iii. 574.

201. Enjoyments, spiritual, season of, vi. 129.


203. Enlightenment, what it is, vii. 18.

204. Equality of the carnal mind against God, ii. 107, iii. 273, vi. 170, x. 127. Against God is constant, vi. 181. To spiritual things, effect of, vii. 82. Of God against every sin, x. 619. Of God against sinners, xii. 532.

205. Enormities, of, which disturb peace, viii. 164.

206. Enormous sins, preservation from, vi. 309.

207. Entanglement of temptation, iii. 362, vi. 98.

208. Entanglements of the people of God, vi. 277.

209. Entering into temptation, what it is, vi. 96. Into covenant with God, iv. 435.


211. Enticement of the mind by sin, vi. 215, 245, xi. 557.

212. Entrance of Christ into heaven, i. 253. Of sin, effect of, i. 373. Into glory, i. 459. Of Christ, into the world, v. 65. Into temptation, what it is, vi. 96. Meeting temptation at its, vi. 135.

213. Entrances of sin to be guarded against, iv. 415. Of religion, improperly dwelling in them, vii. 454.

214. Enunciations connected with the person of Christ, i. 354.

215. Envoy of wicked men against the people of God, their own torment, viii. 105.

216. Episcopalty, not sanctioned by the cases of Timothy and Titus, iv. 449. Not supported by the Ignatian Epistles, xi. 46.


218. Equality and constancy of the love of God, ii. 30.


221. Equivalent satisfaction, x. 433.

222. Erecting, first, of the church, what was extraordinary in it, iv. 462. And building the church, ix. 487.


224. Of the Jews about preaching the gospel, x. 350.


228. Essex, xii. 55.

229. Epistles of the Virgin with Joseph, xii. 103. Of Christ, the church, ix. 465.

230. Essay, a country, on church government, viii. 49.


232. Essex county and committee, deliverance of, viii. 77.

233. Establishment of saints, how promoted, xi. 81.

234. Estate of Christ, the twofold, i. 483.

235. Estimation of Christ by believers, i. 136. Of ministers, x. 171.

236. Eternal generation of Christ, i. 13, xii. 73. The love of God is, ii. 33. The love of Christ is, ii. 62. Love a powerful motive to holiness, iii. 597. Designation of persons, vi. 404. Things, the proper objects of spiritual thoughts, vii. 517. Blessness, in what it will consist, vi. 451. Acts of the will of God, x. 275; no change made by them in any thing, x. 276; all men, notwithstanding them, in the same condition before actual reconciliation, x. 277.


238. Ethico-physical, what is, xi. 567.


240. Eucharist, the Lord's supper is, ix. 527.

241. Exegetical or declarative blessing of the congregation, ix. 456.

242. Europe, balance of power in, xiv. 533.

243. Eutyches, error of, with regard to the person of Christ, i. 11, 327.


245. Evangelists, who they were, iv. 445. Their writings do not contain the whole of Christian instruction, v. 62. Their testimonies to justification by faith, v. 299.

246. Events of things as connected with prayer, iv. 314. Future, depend on, vii. 57. All, ordered by God, for his own praise, viii. 117. All, result in the glory, viii. 147.

247. Everlasting covenant, the support of believers under distress, ix. 409. Redemption, xi. 298.


249. Evil spirits and their operations, iii. 57. Spirit, how it wrought in Saul, i. 142. Frame of nature, how cured, iii. 437. And perverse men, why they cannot understand the Scriptures, iv. 106. Good and, knowledge of, v. 423. Propensity to, natural to man, vi. 190. Actual prevailing after,
INDICES.


Evils of the fall of man, xii. 145.

Exaltation of the wisdom of God in the person of Christ, i. 75. Of Christ, i. 255, 483, ii. 69, 191, iv. 489, x. 204. Glory of Christ in his, i. 342. Of the human nature of Christ, iv. 336. Of grace, the abuse of, vi. 254.

Examination, scil. vi. 528, 541. When specially necessary, vi. Of Stillingfleet’s book on Separation, xv. 193.

Example of Christ, on following the, i. 169. Of Christ a mean of our holiness, lii. 509. Of Christ, meditation on, iv. 458. Of Christ, our duty to be conformed to, ix. 493.


Excellencies, divine, proper and adequate objects of love, i. 331. Of Christ, ii. 69. Real, the occasion of false pretences, lii. 29. Meditation on God’s, iv. 322. Of God, gracious, vii. 406. Inmate, of Scripture, xvi. 337.

Excellency, highest, of created nature, is holiness, lii. 579. And beauty of spiritual things, the mind made use of, the, vii. 188. Of Christ, ix. 462. Of the work of Christ, ix. 440. Of grace in pardoning sin, x. 621.

Excitation of graces and affections, iii. 298, iv. 208. Ecommunion, of, xi. 541, xvi. 151, 211.

Exemplary cause of holiness, Christ is the, iii. 509. Conduct, which particularly required, viii. 407. Conversation of ministers, xiii. 57.

Exequation of two substances, xii. 509.


Exhibition and tender of Christ in the gospel, ix. 544. Of Christ in the sacrament of the supper, ix. 573, 584, 589.

Exhortations to strangers to Christ, i. 419. Respect due, not ability, iii. 289. To the duty of watchfulness, vii. 149. Of Scripture, their use and design, xi. 438.

Eximnation of Christ, ii. 134.


Experience and faith, i. 357. Of the power of the truth, iii. 330. Of the defilement of sin, iii. 423. Outward profession without, dangerous, iv. 68. To be rejected by Scripture, iv. 238. Similarity of, in different persons, iv. 336. Best confronts sophistry, v. 52. Of justifying faith, v. 83. Of the law of sin in us different from general knowledge of it, vi. 199. Of believers as to forgiveness, vi. 452. When we should recur to it, vi. 397. To benefit by ordinances, vii. 441. Of the workings of God, a great encouragement to faith, viii. 229. Of spiritual gifts, ix. 450. Of the power of the death of Christ, ix. 618.

Experiences of God, to gather up, a duty, vi. 45.

Experiment in the keeping of revelation, xvi. 534.

Experimental religion necessary in a minister, ix. 455.

Expiation of sin, xii. 426.

Expository sacrifices confirmed the promise of Christ’s incarnation, i. 123; unfolded the doctrine of imputation, v. 34.

Expositors of scripture, why they so frequently fail of their design, iv. 265.

Expositions declarative of our duty, not of God’s desires, x. 401.

Expressions in prayer, spiritual and full, ii. 123.

Expression of spiritual darkness from the mind, iv. 172. The gospel from a people, viii. 24.

Extent of redemption, viii. 231, x. 288.


Eye of Christ, how we lay under the, in our misery, i. 335. The Father as love, we should, ii. 32. Of Christ, we are always under the, vi. 161.

Eyeing the Lord Jesus, ii. 203, 204.

Eyes, metaphorical, of Christ, ii. 73. Opening the, iv. 162. The lust of the, vi. 246. Willfully closed against the light, viii. 354.

Facultys of the soul perfected in glory, i. 400. Of the mind affected by sin, v. 510.

Facultys, new, in heaven for beholding the glory of Christ, i. 389. How prayer is a spiritual, iv. 271. Of prediction, iv. 493.

Faith, when men, under afflictions, ii. 369. When the grace of God is the object to, vii. 140.


**Faithfulness of God** to be pleaded in prayer, iii. 411. Of God, vi. 82, xi. 244. Of God in his threatenings, viii. 508. *Fall, what man lost by the, i. 209. State of Adam before the, x. 82. Falling from duties, iii. 622. Into temptation, vi. 97. Off from God, vi. 309. Away of believers, xi. 598. Away from the faith, xiii. 129. Familiarity, undue, with God, vi. 396. Families, paternal instruction of, xii. 15. **Family of God,** how re-collected, i. 371. Of God, believers introduced into it by adoption, ii. 207. Prayer, iv. 315.

**Fancies,** our own, how we are cheated by them, vi. 130. 

**Fancy** and imagination, the prayers of some persons only the effect of, iv. 229. And imagination, influence of on the mind, vi. 472. 

**Fate** and state of Protestant religion, xiv. 531. 

**Father,** communion with the, ii. 11. The, how said to raise Christ from the dead, iii. 182. Eternal, Christ the, xii. 314.

**Fathers,** consent of the, its proper use, iv. 227. The ancient, their sentiments on justification, v. 36. Testimonies of the, as to the supreme authority of Scripture, xiii. 473.

**Fault,** the saying of Gregory about the happy, ii. 89, viii. 55.

**Fatness,** free of Christ, ii. 47. Of God, continuance of, xi. 235.

**Fear** excited in sinners by a knowledge of their state, i. 210. Of not being received by Christ groundless, i. 425. And dread attending conviction of sin, iii. 338. Inseparable from guilt, iii. 428. Of sin, a trait of faith, iii. 401. Of man, cure of, iii. 612. Of punishment for sin, v. 77. Of punishment ineffectual, vi. 47. Of being rejected of God, vi. 336. Casting out, vi. 552. Of the anger of God, how it should work, viii. 82.

**Of God, what it is to have our hearts hardened from it, ix. 295. Of eternal death and destruction twofold, xvi. 468. How ascribed to God, xii. 113.**

**Fearlessness of danger,** vi. 209. 

**Fears,** fictitious, of men, x. 521. Perplexing, anxious, xi. 368. 

**Feeling,** how expressed, i. 141. 

**Fellowship** with Jesus Christ, ii. 40. Church, rules of, xii. 55.

**Few** real Christians in the world, ix. 478.

**Flat** Lux, animadversione on, xiv. 1. 

**Fighting** against sin the way to mortify it, vi. 30. 

**Filth** of sin, xii. 191. 

**Figurative language** of Scripture, vii. 70. 

**Figure,** not a naked, of Christ in the ordinance of the supper, ii. 563. Of God not visible, xii. 98. 

**Filiation,** a personal adjunction, i. 165. Of Christ, xii. 184. 

**Fifth of sin,** how purged, ii. 466. 

**Finger of God,** the Holy Spirit is the, iii. 97. 

**Finesse and author of grace,** God is the, x. 102. 

**Finishing of sin,** x. 560. 

**Fire,** emblem of the Spirit, iii. 76. On the altar, what it signifies, iii. 76. And water the means of all typical cleansing, iii. 423. God is a con-

suming, x. 553, 603. Of hell, meaning of, xii. 147. The, that is not quenched, xii. 492. 

**Firmness,** how communicated to the new creation, i. 374. 

**First-born,** Christ the, i. 64, xii. 296. 

**First-fruits and dawnings of perfection,** ii. 9. Spiritual, iv. 411. 

**Fitness of Christ to save,** ii. 51. Of Christ to suffer and bear sin, ii. 67. Of Christ for his work, ii. 159. 

**Fixation of mind in prayer,** iv. 329. 

**Fixing the soul** to the object of delight, i. 461. The minds of sinners, iii. 350. Of the imagination, iv. 466. 

**Flesh,** freedom from clags of the, in glory, i. 405. Deeds of the, must be mortified, vi. 8. When temptations arise from the, vi. 95. Weariness of the, vii. 173. Weakness of the, xi. 419. Prevalency of the, xi. 519. 

**Floch,** state of the, should be known to ministers, ix. 450. 

**Foolishness,** origin of the word, xii. 499. 

**Followers of Christ,** who ought to be, iv. 458. 

**Following the example of Christ,** i. 109. After holiness, ii. 152. God, how we are prepared for, vii. 50. 

**Folly of human wisdom,** ii. 110. God Leavens the counsel of his enemies with, vii. 116. 

**Food,** provision of spiritual, i. 441. Spiritual, of the soul, vii. 283. 

**Foolishness,** to whom spiritual things are, iii. 262, 265. 

**Forbearance of God,** ii. 85, x. 461. And patience of God, how to be considered, vi. 95. Mutual, vii. 57. 


**Foreknowledge of God,** x. 22, xi. 183, xiii. 115. 

**Foreseen faith,** predestination not for, x. 64. 

**Forgot taste of future blessedness,** i. 415. Of everlasting vengeance, when given, iv. 417. 

**Forfeiting future events,** xii. 154. 

**Foreview,** divine, of the portion of believers, viii. 94. 

**Forfeiture,** second, how the heavenly inheritance is secured against, i. 213. 

**Forgottenness of God,** vii. 352. 

**Forgiveness,** freedom of, i. 427. Of sin, its discovery great, holy, and mysterious, vi. 386. 

**Evidences of,** with God, vi. 427. Brotherly, required, vi. 404. Of sin, whether there could be, without satisfaction, x. 586. Of sin, xii. 347. 

**Form,** internal and external, of the church, ix. 447. Of a servant, Christ appeared in the, xii. 257. Of prayer, whether prescribed by Christ, xii. 577. 


**Formality in duty,** danger of, vi. 121. In religion, its cause, vi. 293. Habitual, viii. 539. 

**Formation of the new nature,** i. 366. Of the host of heaven and earth the work of the Spirit, iii. 96. Of the body of Christ in the womb, iii. 102. 

**Former mercies to be remembered,** viii. 57. 

**Formes of prayer,** iv. 239, 538, xv. 21. In religion, various, ix. 170. 

**Fortification,** spiritual, ii. 156. 

**Fortitude, perseverance as a part of,** vi. 29. 

**Fortuitous event of things,** iv. 86.
INDEXES.

Foundation of church-order, i. 33, iii. 18, 192. Of our communion with the Holy Ghost, ii. 222. Of all religion is the nature of God, iii. 64. Of the ministry in the church, iii. 191, ix. 431. Of the church in the promise of the Spirit, iii. 192. Of moral differences among men, iii. 416. Of consolations of the gospel promises, iii. 531. And building work not to be mixed together, vi. 564. Of the house of God, viii. 291. Of the doctrine of the saints' perseverance, fivefold, xi. 120. Of divine predictions, xi. 223. Of the promises immutables, xi. 246.

Fountain of grace, Christ an endless, ii. 68. Of purchased grace, ii. 154, 155. Of life, God the, iii. 292. And spring of holiness. iii. 503. Of grace, internal, when our thoughts issue from, vii. 292. And spring of all glory, the love of Christ, ix. 609. Of sin in all persons, just the, xi. 511.

Frame, evil of, nature, how cured, iii. 437. Of believers under the actions of indwelling sin, vi. 160. Holy, constantly keeping the soul in, a, vi. 185. Of the mind for obedience, proper, vi. 217. Of the heart to be attended to, vii. 248. Of soul, watchful, how preserved, vii. 296.

Frame of the world, God the, x. 322.

Frames and disposition of the soul, iv. 274. Unspiritual, falling into, vii. 538.

Fruit used by our enemies, vi. 189.

Fruitless, of, ii. 36. Fruitlessness, ii. 171. Fruitfulness, ii. 138.

Fruitlessness, to our lusts, what is, vi. 110.

Futurity of revelation, why necessary, i. 94. Of Christ, ii. 17, x. 167. Of Christ to save, iii. 51. Of grace in Christ, ii. 66. Of God, communications made from, to believers, iii. 516; how communicated, iii. 521. Of the heart with love to Christ, effect of, iv. 475. Of divine gifts, x. 168.

Functions, the true, of the magistrate, xiii. 496.

Fundamental act of faith, i. 427. Principles to be attended to in the trial of spirits, iii. 34. Maxim in justification, v. 24. Truth, forgiveness a, vii. 442.

Furthurance of devotion, certain rites and ceremonies pleased as, xv. 467.

Future blessings, how to be expected, viii. 87. Things foreseen by God, xii. 129.

Futurition of things, the divine purpose the only foundation of, vi. 142.

Gain-sayers, how refuted, iv. 362.

Galileans, sacrificed by Pilate, viii. 601.

Garrison, believers kept as in, a, vi. 134.

Gates of hell, what are the, i. 35.

Gathering the churches, iv. 422. Into church-order, iv. 450.

Gauls, sacrifices of the, x. 527.

Genealogies of Scripture, iv. 199.

General notions of the love of Christ, we must not be satisfied with, i. 537. Mercy, no hope in, ii. 103. Regard to duty not sufficient, vi. 286. Grace, x. 273.

Geography, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, vi. 241.

Germans, the sacrifices of the, x. 529.

Ghost, how Christ gave up the, iii. 177. Of Tiresias, v. 67.

Gift of prophecy, ii. 128; whether ever conferred on wicked men, iii. 159; falsely pretended to, and abused, iii. 141; not sanctifying, iii. 141. Of prayer, iv. 298. And grace of prayer, iv. 308; for what ends bestowed, iv. 325. Of Christ, the ministry is the, ix. 431. The heavenly, x. 640.

Gifts, spiritual, ii. 15, 232, iv. 307, 420. For civil government, whence derived, iii. 147. For the office of mediator calculated on Christ, xii. 171. For edification, x. 410. How to be prayed for, x. 411. When improperly used, iii. 501. Weakened by desuetude, iv. 323. Spiritual, the Holy Spirit an advocate in and by the communication of, iv. 394; not to be bought, iv. 423; extraordinary, iv. 474. Of the Spirit, ordinary, iv. 456. Neglect of improving, vi. 546. May be exercised without grace, vii. 294. Spiritual, are servants, not rulers, vii. 296. Spiritual, how imparted, x. 452.

Girding on his sword, what meant by Christ's, ix. 482.

Giving and receiving, communion in, ii. 22. And receiving how related, iii. 106. Of the Spirit, what it includes, iii. 107. Up a people to their own sinful ways, how done, viii. 106.

Glances, our sight of Christ, as by, i. 377. Of the heart at sin, xi. 557.

Glass, present sight of Christ in a, i. 375. Of life, xiii. 5.

Glorification of the human nature of Christ, i. 283. Inseparable connection between calling, justification and, xi. 371.

Glorified body of Christ the pattern of ours, iii. 183. God is, by worship, vi. 401.

Glorify God, what it is to, iii. 65; by worship, the way to, viii. 444.

Glorious, the work of the ministry, ix. 451.
INDEXES.

551

Glory of God, manifested in Christ, i. 51, 73. Of truth is its light and power, i. 50. Of Christ, gracious discoveries of the, i. 111. Actual, how rendered to God in the world of creation, i. 183. In heaven, i. 241. Of Christ, beholding the, i. 288; as the representative of God to the church, i. 293; in the mystery of his person, i. 399; how represented in Scripture, i. 315; as Mediator, i. 322; in his conjunction with the church, i. 332; in communication of himself to believers, i. 390. Entrance into, i. 403. The, of holiness, iii. 370. Approaches to, in growing holiness, iii. 382. Of the church, the true, iv. 475. Of a party, danger of being the, vi. 129. Of false, how to the soul, vi. 78. Believers, what it is, ix. 31. Grace and, merited for us by Christ, x. 53. Of divine justice, how revealed, x. 618. Spiritual, of believers, xi. 117.

Glorying in sin abominable, iii. 454. In ourselves forbidden, viii. 25. In the love of God, xi. 30.

Gnosticism, doctrine of the, i. 38.

God, scope, typical, v. 34, ix. 597.

God, of, i. 471; his works, i. 473; his providence, i. 475; his law, i. 476. The author of sanctification, iii. 560. How he made Christ to be sin, v. 519. Enmity of the carnal mind against, vi. 179. Preeminence of, v. 302. We must meditate of, with God, vi. 223. The proper object of spiritual thoughts, v. 351. His end in sending the gospel to some nations, viii. 15. Gives glorious manifestations of himself to his secret ones, viii. 89. His glory engaged for the protection of his servants, viii. 152. How he may be said to give men up to sin, viii. 155. His name and nature, ix. 39. His mercifulness, ix. 40. His goodness, the ground of faith, ix. 42. His sovereignty in providence, ix. 116. Will help his people in distress, ix. 283. Himself is in the covenant, i. 421. In Christ to be unconditionally accepted, ix. 427. In Christ the immediate object of worship, ix. 543. How considered in the satisfaction made by Christ, in respect of us, x. 265. How he is our credit, x. 270. How he exercises his supreme dominion, x. 272. Nature of, xii. 53.

Godhead of Christ essential to his office as prophet, i. 87; as king, i. 96; as priest, i. 99.

Godliness, how promoted, xi. 582. Not promoted by the doctrine of the destructibility of the saints, xi. 658.


Gods, private, forbidden by the Roman law, xiii. 624.

God, or next of kin, Christ our, i. 87.

Gold, the peculiar properties of, ascribed to Christ, ii. 71.

Good, all things were created, i. 61. Pleasure, God's love of, ii. 21. The perfections of God all manifested in, ii. 41. Works, necessary of, ii. 51. All, in us wrought by the Holy Spirit, iii. 27. How the Holy Spirit is, iii. 58. All, ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 83. Spirit of God overruling Satan, iii. 142. Man, who is, iii. 537. And evil, knowledge of, v. 425. When the works of God in the universe, x. 612. Believers would do, notwithstanding indwelling sin, vi. 163. The object of the will in believers, vi. 253. We cannot judge what is, for us, vi. 635. Word of God, vi. 26. Signs, viii. 15. Matter to believers, the things of Christ, iv. 724. The, of punishment, as to the universe, x. 612. Of others one end of punishment, xii. 453. How God is, to all, xii. 511. Works, merit of, xiv. 209.


Gospelers, who they were, iv. 415.

Governor, the world, the providence of God, x. 38. Government of the church, iv. 514, vi. 49. Of the Spirit renounced, vi. 208. Rights of the divine, x. 567. Church, xv. 483.

Governor, supreme, of the Jewish polity, God the, x. 592.

Grace, of union, as it respects the person of Christ, i. 227. A necessary preparation for glory, i. 288. How to obtain fresh supplies of, i. 432. Fellowship with Christ in, ii. 47. Of Christ boundless, ii. 61. Purchased, of communion with Christ in, ii. 104; causality of, ii. 150. Habitual, nature of, ii. 199. Of Christ, acquaintance with the, iii. 293. How acted and exercised by Christ, iii. 169. Spirit of, iii. 201. Common work of, iii. 260, x. 640. Not a moral persuasion only, iii. 911. How efficacious, of power, iii. 912; Charismatic and irresistible, iii. 517, 319, x. 134. Produced by a creating act, iii. 323. And nature opposed, iii. 368. Dependent on continual influences from God, iii. 563. Originally all in Christ, iii. 414. And duly reconciled, iii. 453. Excited by afflictions, iii. 475. And sin, how they oppose each other, iii. 480. Delivers the soul from spiritual encouragements, iii. 496. How communicated from Christ, iii. 521. Administration of, not always equal, iii. 620. Spirit of, iv. 256. An in Christ, iv. 258. And gift of prayer, iv. 303. And works, how opposed, vi. 204. Covens, nature of, viii. 275. Prevailing, vi. 93. Praying, vi. 94. To be cherished and improved, vii. 592. Thankfulness for, a principal duty of be-
INDEXES.


Grandeur of the gospel ministry, iv. 488. Worshiply, trust in, a source of corruption in the church, xv. 128.

Grant of Christ to those who believe, ix. 617.

Gratitude and obedience from the pardoned due to Christ, ix. 232.

Gravity in ministers, iv. 512.


Greek tongue, why the books of the New Testament were written in the, iv. 212. And Hebrew text, purity of, xvi. 345. Once a general language, xvi. 323.

Greeks and Jews, the two classes to whom the gospel was preached, iv. 40.

Grief for sin, xii. 253.

Grievce the Spirit, how we may, ii. 149. We must not, the Holy Spirit, ii. 264, iv. 378, 413; when we do, vii. 459; consequences if we do, viii. 366.

Growning under present infirmities, i. 354.

Grotius, annotations of, reviewed, xii. 617. Digestion on his interpretation of Isaiah xiii., xii. 455. Lectures out of, considered, xvi. 410.

Ground and pillar of the truth, the church is the, ix. 30.


Growth in grace, means of, i. 118. And increase of spiritual life, i. 438. In grace and wisdom, how ascribed to Christ, iii. 379. Of the new creature, iii. 214. In holiness enjoined and required, iii. 387. In holiness, compared to that of plants and trees, iii. 396. In holiness secret and indiscernible, iii. 396. In holiness an object of faith, iii. 401. And increase of spiritual graces, iii. 503, vi. 23. In holiness an advance towards glory, iii. 582. And progress in knowledge, how attained, iv. 206. Means of spiritual, vii. 284. In grace slow and imperceptible, vii. 440.

Guests, thoughts about spiritual things, compared to, iv. 297.


Guide, the Holy Spirit our, iii. 553. Safe, the church of Rome, 451.

Guides, false, in religion, mischief done by, iii. 553. In religion, defects of, viii. 182. Spiritual, when to be consulted, vii. 239. The soul, how faith, ix. 493.


Guilty, before God, all are, v. 23. The meaning of the word in Scripture, v. 197. Whether those ought to be called, for whom Christ made satisfaction, x. 599.

Gust and relish of spiritual things, vii. 270, 471.


Habitude of God towards man, x. 454.

Hamilton, Patrick, death of, viii. 181.

Hands and tongues of the prophets guided by the Holy Spirit, xiii. 354. Laying on of, iv. 446.


Happy fault, what so called, ii. 89, viii. 35.

Hardening, judicial, ix. 160; the reasons of it, ix. 595.

Hardness, judicial, of heart, vi. 48, vii. 42, ix. 190.

Heart of, what it is, vi. 534.


Head of the church, Christ the, i. 362, vii. 586, viii. 506, xiv. 365, xiv. 475. Of the new creation, work of the Spirit with respect to the, ii. 199. Of influence, Christ is a, i. 514. Of all spiritual supplies, Christ the, vi. 299. As, worship of an, xiv. 477.

Healing, spiritual, i. 400. Of backsliding, i. 457. Gift of, iv. 433, 462.


Heartlessness to duty, vi. 243.


Heaven please, xiv. 14.

Heaven, state of Christ in, i. 233; the continued
Indices.

Ignatius, a remarkable saying of, ii. 137.

Ignominious, the death of Christ was, xii. 456.

Ignominy, the nature of God, i. 296. Taken for simple nescience, how ascribed to the human nature of Christ, iii. 170. Of the true nature of holiness, iii. 450. Of divine things, causes and reasons of, iv. 174. In prayer, how taken away, iv. 271. Of indwelling sin dang-rous, iv. 167, 153.


Istances, always in influence, vii. 196.

Ignominious, ignorance, xii. 167.

Imagination, in imagery, iii. 167.

Imagery, of the Spirit, ii. 10.

Illicit, a saying of, xiii. 361.

Image of God, Christ is the, i. 63, 74, 294, xii. 322; its transforming power, i. 76; in Christ, represented to us in the gospel, i. 171; in what it consists, ii. 102, 430, 523; man created in the, iv. 417, x. 86, xii. 186; defaced by sin, iii. 418; in the soul, how repaired, iv. 469; wrought in us, evidence of, vii. 552.

Imagery in the church of Rome, its origin, viii. 553.

Images, and their worship, controversy about, viii. 179. Used as representations of Christ, viii. 552.

Of, xiv. 123, 235, 426.

Image-worship, evil of, iii. 185.

Imagination, faith of miracles not a strong fixing of, the, iv. 496. The, fixed upon evil objects, vi. 109. Corruption of, the, vii. 101, vii. 520.

Imaginations, foolish, iii. 254. Sinful, vi. 243.

Of the heart evil, vii. 298. Improper, about the heavenly state, vi. 335.

Initiation of Christ necessary, iii. 512, ix. 437.

Immaculate works of God, i. 473.

Immaculate, in Christ, cl. 622, xii. 372, xii. 35.

Immaculacy, and its name, vi. 498.

Immanence of God, vi. 622, xii. 372, xii. 35.

Immanency of God, vi. 622, xii. 372, xii. 35.

Immanence of faith, how not properly regarded, vi. 510. He ascribed to man in innocence, xii. 160. Way to a blessed, xii. 190.

Immutability of the decrees of God, x. 14.

Impatience in spiritual things, nature and evil of, vi. 423.

Impertinence of personal righteousness, v. 235.

Impeachment, nature of, iii. 558, x. 223. And application, the distinction of, x. 223; the abuse of it opposed, x. 224, 232.

Implantation into Christ, i. 396. Of spiritual principles, iii. 551. Of spiritual habits and principles in the mind, iv. 153.

Importance of the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, ii. 29. Of the doctrine of sanctification, iii. 309.

Importunity of sin, vi. 198. In prayer, vi. 357.

Imposture of names by a prophetic spirit, ii. 128.

Of hands, iv. 465. Of the officer of mediator, x. 194.

Ofurgories, vi. 3. 33. Of terms of communion, x. 156.

Impostures, arbitrary, in religion, iv. 245.

Imposture, or changing of names, vi. 353.

Impunity of sinning in some cases, vi. 272.

How the word is used in Scripture, x. 558. Moral, xi. 565.

Impunity of man through sin, ii. 97. Of the mind to receive spiritual things, ii. 339, 296; 388; how taken away, iii. 327, 490. For obedience, vi. 533.

Impressions of sin,丢失 the, iv. 415.

The law makes no, on some men, vi. 317. Of God in his promises, i. 640.


Improvement of mind, and growth in grace, i. 175. Wise and unwise, iv. 396. Of the ministry, ix. 406.

Impulse of actual grace, ii. 143. Sinful, vi. 237.


Imbility, distinction between natural and moral, iv. 160.

Imbecility in duty, vi. 296, 242. As it regards sin, vi. 253.

Imbecue, mutual, between Christ and believers, i. 367.

Inexactitudes, all, removed from us in heaven, i. 381.

Inexactly, of Christ, i. 539, 478, xii. 283; why denied, v. 47.

Indecision of the mind to vanity, causes of, iv. 176. Of the mind to spiritual things, vii. 270. To persevere, when wrought in believers, xii. 444.

Indecoration of sin, viii. 223. Holy, in a gracious soul, iii. 491. Sinful, to be watched against, iii. 545. Gracious, how wrought in believers, iv. 239.

Incomprehensibility of God, i. 65.

Incredibility to God, ii. 427, 378.

Inconvenience of sinning; vi. 273.

Incorruption of temptation with lust, vi. 113.

Into Christ, ix. 541. Of spiritual food, ix. 574.

Of Christ in us, ix. 591.


Incursion of actual sin, vi. 259. Of vain thoughts to be guarded against, vii. 535, 386.

Indible character, ix. 493.

Independency of the will of God, xi. 147.

Independency, of, xiii. 232.

Indications of divine displeasure, how we should be affected by them, vii. 536.

Indifference to the things of religion, vii. 126. To ordinances, ix. 512.

Indiscernible of God against sin, ix. 94. Of God against compliance with Antichristianism, ix. 506.

Indiscriminate admission to the Lord’s table not to be allowed, xv. 172.

Indulging a good matter, meaning of the expression, ix. 472.

Inducement, moral, xi. 507.


Indwelling of the Holy Spirit, ii. 123, xii. 329. Sin, nature of, ii. 541; always abides, vi. 10; its nature, decays, prevalence, and prevention, vi. 155, 322; influence of, vi. 342; makes use of every occasion, vi. 107; facility with which it acts, vi. 167.

Infant baptism, xvi. 238.

Inferior, of sin in, iii. 338. Corruption of, x. 70. How far innocent and guilty, xi. 554. To be baptized, xvi. 258.

Infallibility of revelation, i. 94. As to the event of the operation of the Holy Spirit, iii. 317. Of divine faith, iv. 15. Of the effect of grace, x. 419. Of the pope, xii. 233. Of the church, xiv. 300.

Infection of national vice to be guarded against, vii. 295.
Indisputable. 555.

Infinity of the mercy of God, x. 551. Of God, xii. 105.

Infirmities, how Christ was subject to our, ill. 167. Bearing with each other's, xii. 76.

Influence of sin, vii. 316.


Influences, comforting, how restrained from Christ in his agony, ix. 533.

Information, false, effect of, vii. 473.

Injurious,气息, of divine life, in regeneration, iii. 409. Of a gracious ability to understand the truth, iv. 167. Of gifts, extraordinary, not to be expected, iv. 518. Of the habit of grace, xl. 97.

Ingratitude, xi. 429.

Inguinity, filial, iv. 298.

Ingeniousness in the acknowledgment of sin, vi. 572, 573.

Ingratitude the highest sin against God, i. 165. Of rejecting Christ, i. 425.

Inhabitation, how the idea of, has been applied to the person of Christ, i. 231. Of the Spirit, ii. 232, iii. 546, iv. 383, xi. 329. Of God in Christians, ix. 259.

Inherent righteousness, nature of, iii. 218, 527. Sin, x. 71. Holiness, xi. 118.

Inheritance over all things lost in Adam, i. 290; recovered in Christ, i. 213. The heavenly, how secured against a second forfeiture, i. 213. Heavenly, title to, ii. 218. The heavenly, forfeited by sin, iv. 499. Of the people of God known by, viii. 94; dangerous to encroach upon it, viii. 94.

Iniquity cleaves to our holy things, i. 258. Mystery of, vii. 71.


Initiation into covenant with God, iii. 72.


Initiation into Christ, i. 560. Entertaining the heart and conduct by Christ, i. 93.

Of spiritual things, iv. 120.

Inspiration the original of prophecy, iii. 129. The nature of, i. 131. Of the prophets, iii. 132. Adjuncts of, iii. 134. Of the Scriptures, iv. 35. Immediate, iv. 159.


Instated in new relations, how believers are, ix. 496.

Institution of God, preaching an, iii. 306. Of the church a cause of thanksgiving, ix. 528. Of the Lord's supper, ix. 583, 616.

Institutions of worship under the law, i. 135. Of the law could not purge away sin, iii. 433. Of worship, delight in, vii. 450. Of Christ, chief things to be aimed at in observing, xv. 455. Of the new testament not ceased, xv. 465; why to be read, xv. 471. Of the gospel, the principal, xv. 477.

Instruction, one end of preaching, iii. 303. Mutual, necessary as to the things of God, iv. 13. Of Adam, vocal, xiii. 9. In the worship of God, xv. 449.

Instruments, the gospel an, in the hand of God, iv. 476.

Instrumental cause of purification, iii 446; of justification, v. 103; of spiritual freedom, vii. 554.

Instrumentality of the word, iii. 235.

Instruments provided for the work of God, lii. 16. Of God never wanting, to execute his anger, vii. 92. Mean and low, used by God for great purposes, viii. 528. Musical, who first used them in the worship of God, ix. 463.


Integrity and uprightness, importance of, vi. 412. Of the Hebrew and Greek text, xvi. 545. Of the Scriptures, xvi. 555.

Inteuctive knowledge of God, x. 23.

Intelligence, simple, belongs to God, xii. 127.

Intention of mind in the exercise of grace, i. 448; in attendance on the means of grace, iii. 210; in the exercise of prayer, iv. 285.

Intention of Christ at his death, according to the Universalists, vain and fruitless, x. 288.

Intentions, whatever divine, can be frustrated, x. 43.

Intercession of Christ, ii. 195, iv. 357, xi. 565; a cause of our holiness, iii. 506, 631. Of the Spirit, iv. 288. Of Christ secures the covenant, iv. 419; wherein it consists, x. 179. Its nature, x. 184; how represented by the high priest entering into the holiest place, x. 183; how distinguished before and after his incarnation, x. 184, 185; proved to be of equal compass with his obligation, x. 186; vindicated from objections, x. 187.

Intercision of faith, how attempted, xi. 86. Of Christianitv, whether Judaism was an, xiii. 7.

Intercourse of love between Christ and the church, i. 159. With God, holiness necessary to our, iii. 573. Of soul with God, iv. 328.

Interest, mutual, between Christ and his people, i. 334. In Christ, necessity of, i. 421. In God, our first, how best, ii. 6. Of faith, obedience, and worship, in principles of truth, iii. 64. In sanctification not always known, iii. 375. In the blood of Christ, how obtained, iv. 477. In election evidenced by holiness, iii. 555. In Christ, how obtained, iv. 410. Regeneration not previous to, in forgiveness, vi. 597. Of God's people dear to him, viii. 412. In Christ, the general work of faith, ix. 406. In the promises, xi. 233.

Intermission, there must not be any in opposing sin, vi. 174.


Interpositions between us and Christ, i. 577.


Interpreter, duty of a faithful, iv. 204.

Intimations of the love of Christ, how obtained, i. 393; of the love of God, signal, vi. 557. Of Providence, xvi. 555.

Introduction of spiritual light into the mind, iv. 172. Of grace by Christ, v. 44.

Intuitive notions of the divine essence not possible, i. 65. The view of Christ in heaven will be, i. 578. Knowledge of God, x. 23. xi. 142.

Invisible life, how given to the church, iv. 428. State, the soul enters by death, ix. 551.
INDICES.

Invitations, condescension of Christ in his, i. 422.
 Invocation of God, i. 22. Of Christ, i. 110.
 Iota, and little, every, of Scripture, sacred, iv. 213.
 Irresistibility of the power of God, why denied, x. 12. Of grace, x. 134.
 Isaac, sacrifice of, x. 531.
 Israel and God, who are the, vi. 643. Their appellations and distributions, ix. 131. Or the Jews, types of the church, in their deliverances and ordinances, x. 257.
 Issue of the death of Christ, x. 457.
 Issues of entering into temptation, vi. 102.
 James and Paul, no contradiction between, on the subject of justification, v. 334.
 Jephthah, pagan account of the sacrifice of, x. 531.
 Jeroboam, how he was hardened, vii. 331.
 Jews, trick of the, i. 431.
 John Baptist, why superior to the prophets, iv. 436.
 Joseph of Arimathaea, said to have brought the gospel into Britain, xiv. 95.
 Joy, spiritual, ii. 252. Connected with the love of Christ, ix. 465.
 Judah, how ruling with God, viii. 93.
 Judah, Rabbi, author of the Mishna, the text of the Talmud, xvi. 378.
 Judge, the, before whom we are to appear, to be duly considered, x. 35. God is, of all, vi. 839. We must not, xv. 136.
 Judging self, v. 452. Self, for sin, vi. 375. The state of others, how far we may do it, vi. 591. Of doctrines, the rule for, xii. 608, 611.
 Julian the apostate, his conduct, vii. 48.
 Justiciary, self, Romanists, xiii. 155.
 Keys of the kingdom of heaven, iv. 441. Power of the, xvi. 63.
 Killing of sin, what it is, iii. 544.
 Kindness and benignity an evidence of holiness, iii. 586. Required towards believers, iii. 593. Towards God, how the heart may be kept full of, v. 418. Of Christ as our High Priest, vi. 81. And love of God, a check to sin, vi. 240. Acts of God is more willing to do, than to punish, x. 594.
 Kingdom of Satan erected on darkness, i. 297. Of Christ, nature of, ii. 72; to what it is compared, viii. 5; how carried on, viii. 230, 575; glorious things belonging to it, viii. 334; wherein it consists, viii. 371; within us, vii. 374.
 Knowledge of the withdrawal of Christ, how it may be obtained, i. 392. Self, importance of, i. 94, vi. 131. Of divine things, by their operations and effects, iii. 38. Of our sanctification, iii. 490. The word of, iv. 459. Of the word of Christ, x. 339. Of indwelling sin, important, vi. 18). Should be followed by practice, vi. 301. Of God, how obtained, vi. 428. Of our state, whether attainable, v. 198. Inquisitory for the ministry, iii. 450. Of God, intuitive and intellective, x. 23. And possession of deliverance, x. 475. Conceit of our own, a cause of divisions, xv. 135.
 Labour, necessary in the work of the ministry, vii. 183.
 Lamentations a part of prayer, iv. 259.
 Land, cultivation of, emblematical, vii. 281. When filled with sin, ix. 7. Signs and evidences of it, ix. 9. When not forsaken of God, ix. 12. What to be done that reformation may be obtained in the land, ix. 201.
 Language of Scripture, xvi. 431.
 Languages, original, of the Scriptures, study of, vi. 216.
 Latin service of the, xiv. 128, 457.
honour, vi. 106. And kindness of God, a check to
sin, vi. 240. Of the world, vi. 579; evil of, vii. 189. To spiritual things because God is in them, vii.
421. In mercies realized by faith, viii. 100. Of God
to his people, seen in the ruin of their enemies, viii. 163. Christian, the bond of perfection, ix.
238. Faith in, ix. 258; how to be exercised, ix.
261. Why called a new commandment, ix. 264. The
communion of saints lies in, ix. 266. The glory of a church, ix. 268. Its hinderances, ix.
270. To the person of Christ, growing, ix. 283. Between Christ and believers, none like it, ix.
406. To Christ inexplicable, ix. 406. Brotherly
want of, ix. 408. Pledged to thorough satisfaction,
x. 274. The eternal, into what state the elect are put by it, x. 275. Unchangeable, x. 276. The
case of sending Christ, x. 321. How promised,
x. 356. Its nature, x. 554. To sinners, x. 556. Brotherly, xiii. 62. And peace, of evan
gelical, xv. 59.
Loveliness of Christ, lii. 77, xi. 398.
Lowliness of mind necessary in order to learn the
mind of God, iv. 179.
Lucius of Britain, the first potentate on the earth
that owned the gospel, viii. 28.
Lukewarmness, evil of, ix. 498.
Lust, power of, iv. 66. To be brought to the gospel
for conviction, vi. 58. How the flesh is said to,
against the Spirit, vi. 189. When habitually prevalent, ix. 351. Whether consistent with the
truth of grace, ix. 884. The fountain of sin, xi.
511.
Lustrations of the heathen, iiii. 429.
Lusts of the mind, iiiii. 747, 547. Sensual, why men
are given up to, vii. 43. Of men disquiet their
minds, viii. 390. Of men, unhonored fruits of,
xii. 50.
Luther, his boldness and resolution, iv. 462.
Lutherans, their sentiments as to justification, v. 84.
Macabonian heresies about the Holy Spirit, iii. 68.
Macabonian, the spiritual assistance they required,
viii. 9.
Made sin, how Christ was, v. 35, 347.
Madness of indwelling sin, vii. 206.
Magistracy, its use in the world, vi. 209. How
supported by God, vii. 149.
Magistrates, duty of, about religion, viii. 41, 163,
169, 213, 651, 646, xiii. 374, 509, xiv. 378, xv.
42. Their duty and power to propagate the gospel,
viii. 386. Promises to the church respecting, viii.
for determining their duty and power as to re
ligion, viii. 384. Power over their subjects, x.
507. Alleged power of the, over the conscience,
more than is ascribed to Christ, xiii. 377. Their power in matters of morality, xiiii. 409.
Maintenance, public, of ministers, viii. 101, xiiii.
59, 515.
Majesty of God, meditation on, vi. 63, 624.
Majestas, how treated by the Druids, x. 529.
Malice, sins of, xi. 558.
Malignity of final unbelief, i. 211.
Man, a mere, not qualified to be a Saviour, i. 201.
His nature capable of relation to God, i. 277. A
good, is a common good, ii. 315, iv. 455. Creati
on of, iii. 69, xii. 134. How a middle crea
93.
Management of things for his own glory, the wis
dom of God, in, ii. 88. The deceitful, of indwell
ing sin, vi. 214.
Manifestation of the glory of God, i. 262. Of the
glory of Christ, i. 343; our present inability to
bear the full, i. 350.
Manifestations of the love of God, ii. 30. Of God,
when made to his people, viii. 89.
Manuscript copies of the New Testament, various
readings of, xvi. 362.
Marginal readings in the Hebrew Bible, xvi. 401.
Marriage of divine promises, i. 267.
Marriage after divorce, xiiii. 224.
Martyr at Bagdad, story of, xiii. 336.
Martyrs, sufferings of the, iv. 36. How they are to
sit on thrones of judgment, viii. 65.
Mary, of the Virgin, xiv. 120, 428.
Masons, Fiberian, supposed by some to have been
the authors of the Hebrew points, xvi. 375.
Mass, of the popish, viii. 564, xiv. 118, 411.
Matter of holiness, in what it consists, iiiii. 499. Of
prayer, how supplied by the Spirit, iv. 271. Of
duty must be full and complete, vi. 234. Of holy
thoughts, how provided, viii. 377. Of the cove
nunt, iv. 347. Of the satisfaction of Christ, x.
445. And subject of the promises, Christ is the,
xiiii. 228.
Mauricius, the Cappadocian, saying of, x. 521.
Means for the recovery of fallen man, i. 16. Due
to the use of the obtaining the knowledge of Christ,
iii. 159; false, rejected, iiiii. 199. Of regenera
tion, various, xiii. 213. Of moral suasion, ii. 302.
For understanding the mind of God in Scripture,
v. 199. Of grace, subduction of, from a people,
vii. 417. Of obtaining the knowledge of forgive
ness, vi. 869. Use of, in waiting on God, vii.
515. Of the word, viii. 254. And wayward,wards,
whereby spiritual affections are expressed, vi.
468. The nature of them, and how they conduct to
the end, x. 160. Used in the work of redemption,
x. 179.
Measure, the Spirit not given to Christ by, xii. 172.
And rule of conviction, no certain, iii. 361.
And rule of obedience, ii. 469. And rule of hol
liness in the word, iiiii. 507. Of spiritual affections,
vi. 469. Of work, how it depends on the mea
sure of gifts, iv. 440.
Meditating on spiritual things by carnal, evil of, xiiii.
227.
Meditation of Christ the only procuring cause of
holiness, iiii. 506. Of Christ confined to his offices,
iiii. 629. And intercession of Christ, meditation on,
iv. 322. Of Christ, a check to sin, vi. 241.
Meditation, a, in heaven, iiii. 265, 252. Glory of
Christ as, i. 338. All grace comes through Christ
as, iiiii. 514. What Christ did as, x. 160.
For whom Christ died as, x. 249.
Meditation on the mediation of Christ, i. 164. On
Christ and his glory, i. 236. How faith is exer
cised in, ii. 197. On the word of God necessary,
v. 191. On God's glorious excellencies, iv. 422.
On the mediation and intercession of Christ, iv.
322. On the example of Christ, iv. 438. Useless
ness of, vii. 63. Efficacy of, vii. 244. Solemn and
stated, viii. 394. When specially necessary, ix.
558, 669.
Mediation of the promises, Christ the, xi. 230.
Meetings of Christians, of private, xiii. 47.
Meetness for heaven, how promoted, i. 221. To re
ceive the influential assistance of the Spirit in
prayer, iv. 398.
Melchior Canus, quotation from, iv. 114.
Member of the church, the duty of each, ivi. 157.
Memorial of the deliverance of Essex, vi. 77.
Merkies, signal, losing the impression of, iv. 415.
Great, sin committed against, viii. 290. Common,
iv. 409. In men that want the gospel, viii. 328.
Consequence of abusing them, viii. 193. The church's, have their appointed season, viii.
54.
Merry, false views of, vii. 395. Stores of, inextran
ciable, vii. 647. Unchangeable and free, vision of,
vii.5. The proper work of God, viii. 53. No encouragement in what is called the general, ix. 39, 44. Of God, sparing, x. 561. Infinite, x. 574. 

Ministry, not required of us, iii. 370. Inconsistent with grace, iii. 390. Destructive of holiness, iii. 575. Of Christ, efficacy of, x. 57. Wherein it consists, x. 256. The same with impetration, x. 225. Of Christ, secured whatever is bestowed on us, x. 233, 256. The importance and original of the word, x. 257. Of Christ, its efficacy, x. 462. Of good works, xiv. 200, 201. 

Merits, ecclesiastical, the storehouse of the pope, x. 43. 

Messengers of the nations, how answered, viii. 419. 

Messiah, his definition of faith, v. 75. 

Metaphorical expressions of the glory of Christ, i. 351. The sacrifice of Christ falsely said to be, ii. 429. Expressions about justification, v. 12. 

Metaphors of Scripture, iii. 80, 111. 

Meteors, when created, iii. 97. 

Method of the work of the Spirit in regeneration, iii. 225. Of divine revelations to be believed, iii. 595. How and why not observed in Scripture, iv. 183. 

Metropolitan churches, xiii. 108. 

Militant and triumphant church, communion of, i. 299, 288. The church, what meant by, i. 485. 


Mindful, to be spiritually, what, iii. 454. 


Ministry of the Spirit, how is said to, iii. 112. 


Ministers, how called by the Holy Ghost, iii. 86. Duty of, to spread the gospel, viii. 40. Public maintenance of, viii. 191. The duty of, viii. 632. Should preach to their own hearts, ix. 456. What rule they should follow, x. 300. Ignorance and disability of, xv. 173. 

Ministration of the Spirit, iii. 26, 112; the gospel ix. 3191. 

Ministrations, spiritual, iv. 424. There are only two, ix. 445. 


Miracle of the gift of tongues, iv. 212. 


Miscarriages, we should be humbled for, ii. 272. 


Miseries of sinners, iii. 106, iii. 449, 614, vi. 235, 268. Of resisting conviction, vii. 516. What, are the fruit of sin, x. 618. Of a sinful state, xii. 518. 

Missal, the Roman, progressively composed, iv. 211. 


Mixture, no, of properties in the two natures of Christ, i. 234. Of revelation and philosophy, art of, v. 10. 

Moth, king of, his sacrifices, x. 536. 


Mohammedanism, its opposition to the person of Christ, i. 41. 

Monastic life useless, ix. 171. 

Monuments and testimonies, foreign, applied to the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 222. 

Morals, their manner of teaching compared with that of Christ, iii. 630. 

Morality taught by the gospel, ii. 211. Improved by grace, iii. 218. 

Morrow, taking thought for, the, vii. 303. 


Moses the first person who committed divine revelations to writing, iii. 143. The sight he had of God, vi. 64. How he was a deliverer, xii. 511. 

Motion, no local, in sending the Spirit, iii. 111. 

Motions of the Holy Spirit, regularity of, xi. 263. 

Move to obedience, love the, ii. 215. To holiness, election a, iii. 591. 

Motives to the love of Christ, i. 101. To religious worship taken from what God is to us, iii. 65. Of the word of God, iii. 387. Of Holy influence by faith, iii. 446. To the purification of sin, iii. 446. In the example of Christ, iii. 512. Of credibility in the Scriptures, iv. 29. To believing, their nature, vii. 307. To obedience, whence derived, vii. 534. Against sin not supplied by the law, vii. 550. 

To obedience, xiv. 357. 

Mountains, everlasting, how scattered, viii. 94. 

Mourning for the sins of others, v. 444. On account of the declension of religion, vi. 249. For sin, vii. 527, viii. 614. For the sins of a nation, a duty and privilege, ix. 396. Occasioned by the state of the general correspondence of God, ix. 515. 

Multiplication of tongues part of the curse on man, xi. 112. Of the commands of God, reason of, iii. 625. Of churches, xiii. 173.
Indisputable thoughts in the mind, vii. 268. 
Music, instruments of, who first used them in the worship of God, ix. 463. 
Mutations, local, revelations to the prophets accompanied with, iii. 139. 
Mutations of the heart, and the Son, i. 144. 
Necessity, of the nature of Christ, i. 522, 233. 
Interest between Christ and his people, i. 354. 
Communication of good, ii. 8. Instruction necessary to as things of God, iv. 13. 
Barbarism, viii. 57. 
Love between Christ and his church, i. 365. 
Love among believers, how testified, xv. 401. 

Myth, the word of Christ compared to, ii. 76. 
Mysteriousness of the reception of Christ, ix. 621. 
Mystery of the person of Christ, i. 29. 
Of the gospel, why objected to, iii. 277. 
Of holiness, iii. 372. 
Of Scripture, iv. 194. 
Of the gospel, vii. 60. 

Mystical account of the love of Christ in the Old Testament, i. 349. 
Conjunction between Christ and the church, i. 356. 
Body of Christ, the church, iii. 207, 366, 518, x. 598. 
Person, Christ and the church one, v. 175. 

Name of Christ to be invoked, i. 113. 
Of the Spirit, its significance, iii. 47. 
Of the Spirit, how peculiar to the third person in the Trinity, iii. 54. 
Of God, denoting his being and authority, proper to each exalted in the Trinity, iii. 72. 
Authority of God, the Scripture speaks in the, iv. 26. 
Of the Holy Spirit, iv. 359. 
Of spiritual gifts, imparted, iv. 422. 
Of God an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 473. 
Of God the support of faith, ix. 38. 
Sake, God's regard to his own, xi. 256. 
Of God plural, viii. 45. 
And credit, how Christ suffered in his, xii. 401. 
Of Christ, paying in, xii. 577. 
Of God, sanctification of, xv. 456. 

Names of things, suitable to their nature, imposed by Adam, ii. 112. 
And titles, false appropriation of, vii. 196. 
Of the officers of the church, their double significance, ix. 452. 
Of God given to Christ, xii. 245. 
Nation, how its preservation may be secured, vii. 464. 
Its prosperity promoted by the gospel, vii. 464. 
Its opposition to the people of God, promulgating it, vii. 294. 
Nations, all, the inheritance of Christ, viii. 21. 
God's dealing with sinful, viii. 507. 
Not acquainted with the gospel, x. 229. 

Nature, the, that sinned, the same used in our recovery, i. 197. 
Human, assumed by Christ, i. 224. 
Exalted in Christ, i. 279. 
Human, of Christ glorified, i. 345. 
Of man corrupted, i. 477. 
Knowledge of, possessed by Adam, ii. 112. 
Of God the foundation of all religion, iii. 64. 
Of prophecy, iii. 128. 
Human, of Christ, purity of, iii. 168. 
Divine, of Christ, acted not as his soul, iii. 169. 
Divine, iii. 222. 
Of the common work of the Spirit, iii. 236. 
Of holiness incomprehensible, iii. 372. 
Depraved, not able to recover itself, iii. 382. 
Of decays in holiness, iii. 404. 
Inbred light of, iii. 470. 
Of God the fountain of holiness, iii. 515, 565. 
Light of, iii. 535. 
Of spiritual gifts, iv. 423. 
Of the light discovered, vi. 356. 
Of God, forgiveness expected from the, vii. 408. 
Preternatural operation of, monitory, viii. 623. 
Corruption of, x. 68. 
Of God, xii. 86. 

Nearness to God, i. 52. 
Of indwelling sin, xi. 106. 
Necessary and useful things, how distinguished, i. 178. 
Things plainly revealed, i. 157. 
Causes, x. 24. 

Necesories of saints to be relieved, xiii. 74. 
Necessity of righteousness, conviction of, ii. 187. 
Of holiness, iii. 556, 606, 604, 628. 
Fatal, iv. 56. 
Of an interest in Christ, ignorance of, vii. 148. 

Of spiritual gifts, ix. 449. 
Distinctions of, x. 586. 
Conditional, x. 586. 
Nestle and loadstone, a simile from the, i. 385. 
Neglect of making religion our principal business, i. 401. 
Of duty ruinous, iii. 265. 
Of the spirit of prayer, iv. 161. 
In the gospel, how God reveales it, vi. 110. 
Of mortification of sin, vi. 526. 
Of the duty of prayer, vii. 531. 
In churches as to duty a cause of division, xv. 104. 
Negligence in duty does not result from the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 203. 
In religion, how produced, vi. 296. 
Of churches and professors, vii. 64. 

Neighbours, evil, who they are, ix. 265. 
Nemisses, his testimony to the Scriptures, iv. 112. 
Nero, his speech before death, x. 621. 
Nousion of the human nature of Christ, iii. 170. 
Nestorian heresy, the, i. 11, 40. 
Nicolaitanes, doctrine of, to be hated, viii. 58; what they taught, viii. 59. 
Night with a believer, when it is, ii. 123. 
Visions and dreams of the, iii. 138. 
The darkest, through the strain of the gospel, viii. 35. 
Noth, a preacher of righteousness, ix. 133. 
Noturious visions and dreams, iii. 136. 
Nunconformists, vindication of, xiii. 305. 
Distresses on, xiii. 579. 
Nunconformity, reasons of, xv. 141. 
Nunconformity, a sign of sin contrary to the glory of God's justice, x. 554. 
Non-toleration, viii. 58. 
Notions, false, of truth, not to be rested in, viii. 113. 
Nourishment, spiritual, ix. 574. 
Noratians, the severities of the, vii. 14. 
Novel opinions, we are not to be inclined to, ix. 459. 
Novelty of Hebrew points denied, xvi. 388. 

Oath of God an evidence of forgiveness, vi. 475; an encouragement to faith, ix. 41; secures the covenant, ix. 419. 
Of canonic olbligations, vi. 184. 
Oaths of the tribes, what, viii. 112. 
And blasphemous execrations, ruinous to any nation, viii. 612. 
Obduracy, judicial, viii. 619. 
Obedience to Christ, its nature and causes, i. 134. 
A state of, how glorified, i. 211. 
Of Christ to the law, the insufficiency of, for salvation, ii. 96. 
Of Christ, ii. 135, 156, i. 177. 
Of Christ for us, does not supersede our obedience, i. 190. 
How connected with comfort, ix. 261. 
Nature of, i. 314, v. 240. 
Without merit, iii. 575. 
Rule and measure of, iii. 496. 
Facility in, iii. 498. 
With respect to rewards not servile, iii. 614. 
Sinless and perfect, not attainable, iii. 621. 
Practical, iv. 206. 
Of Christ, imputation of, v. 203. 
Not obstructed but promoted by free justification, v. 372. 
Mortification, an act of, vi. 20 Universal, necessary, vi. 40. 
The enmity of the mind to, vi. 224. 
What is necessary to, vi. 533. 
What renders it acceptable to God, vi. 533. 
Delight in, an evidence that we have chosen Christ, ix. 594. 
Of Christ in his death, ix. 534. 
Of Christ, how pleasing to God, x. 267. 
Gospel, nature of, xii. 353. 
Perfection of, how attainable, xii. 564. 

Objections against the progressive nature of holiness answered, ii. 309. 
Against the necessity of holiness from the decree of election removed, iii. 594. 
To imputed righteousness, v. 54. 
To justification answered, vi. 219. 
Of the Jewish law, xvi. 87. 

Objects of the life of innocence and the life of grace in Christ different, iii. 186. 
Proposed for the increase of graces, iii. 389. 
Of sin sometimes removed by God, vi. 268. 

Oblation of Christ, i. 451. 
How Christ sanctified
himself to be an, iii. 178. Of Christ voluntary and meritorious, iii. 179.

Obligation to holiness under the gospel, iii. 607. Of believing the Scriptures, whence it arises, iv. 109. Of obedience, v. 240. And satisfaction of Christ the same, x. 446.


Observation and consideration of ourselves in reference to prayer, iv. 329. Of men's ways to be attended in public prayer, iv. 326.

Obsequiousness in the upper, Christ is present by way of, ix. 574.

Obstacles, all removed by effectual grace, iii. 318. 

Obliquity of the heart by nature, iii. 327. vii. 534. In sin, effect of, iv. 416.

Obstructions to the growth of holiness, iii. 400. Of knowledge, iv. 190.

Ocassions of decays in grace, iii. 404. Particular, for prayer, iv. 294. Of sin, watching against, vi. 61. Of temptation, how to be regarded, vi. 373. Prayer, not to be intertrenched on, ix. 536. Occurrences, providential, how to be regarded, ix. 555.

Ocean, the love of Christ an unfaithable, ix. 468. Offence, readiness to take, x. 104.

Offences, how we are secured from, vii. 490. The evil and danger of, ix. 552. The seasons of, ix. 553. Taken only, and not given, ix. 553. Given, and also taken, ix. 553. 

Offer of Christ, how made to all, x. 300, 312; the intention of God in the, x. 309, 383. Offering of Christ, how acceptable to God, iii. 180.

Office, what constitutes an, iv. 355. In the church, the appointment of Christ, ix. 426. Officers, church, iv. 492, xv. 449. Officers of Christ, i. 489; efficacy of, from his person, i. 83; end and design of, iii. 629. Extraordinary, iv. 435.

Oil and fruit to our lusts, what gives, vi. 110. Of the sanctuary not to be imitated, ix. 288. Olive branches, emblematical use of, iv. 257.

Omission, sins of, iii. 455. Of duty, danger of, vi. 121, 244. Of any one duty, evangelical holiness will not admit of, the vi. 176. Of duties, particular case of, xv. 165.


Omnipresence and omniscience of God, vii. 373, 375. Of God, xii. 92, 96.

Opening of the heavens, what it signifies, iii. 75. Of the eyes, the act of God, iv. 130. The eyes of the sinner, v. 70.


Option of Armilarians about the end of the death of Christ, x. 265, 252.


Opposition to the church, i. 5, 6; as built upon the person of Christ, i. 55. To all sin necessary, i. 174. To the work of the Holy Spirit, iii. 28, 38. To the church of God suppressed by the Holy Spirit, iii. 104. No, between the commands and grace of God, iii. 264. Between sin and grace, iii. 522. Between grace and works, vi. 24. To temptation, how prevented, vii. 113. Of indulging sin to good, vi. 161. Of the mind to God, vi. 182. Of God to sinners, vi. 265. To holiness, vi. 601. To the ways of God vain and foolish, viii. 152. To those engaged in the work of God vain and foolish, viii. 163. To the doctrine of the Trinity, by whom carried on, xii. 12.

Oppositions, whence to be expected, vi. 421.

Oppression a detectable crime, viii. 143.

Optic glass, sight by an, i. 375.

Order of the holy persons in the Trinity in their operations, i. 219. Of divine communications glorious, i. 365. And beauty of the graces of Christ, ii. 75. Of subsistence of the persons in the Trinity, iii. 91. Outward, of the church useless without the Holy Spirit, iii. 193. Of the mind in its first creation, iii. 253. Of the gospel inverted by prejudice, iii. 279. Of the acts of sanctification, iii. 468. Of the church, how connected with spiritual gifts, iv. 421. Church, gathering into, iv. 496. And precedence of regeneration, vi. 597. How God compels to a disobedient creature, x. 592. In divine worship, preservation of, xv. 467.

Ordinance of God for the recovery of man, Christ is the, v. 59.


Ordination of Cecilius, xiii. 158. From the church of Rome of no value, xiii. 72. Succession in, right and lawful, xiii. 219.

Origen, character of his writings, iv. 228. His answer to Celsus, xiv. 15.

Origin of all spiritual gifts, Christ is the, iv. 422. Of evil, x. 86.

Original of expiatory sacrifices, i. 122. Authority of the Father, i. 16. Sin, ii. 64, vi. 155, x. 68. Text, necessity of searching the, iii. 50. Of all things, iii. 95. Sin, denial of, iii. 223, x. 13, xli. 104. Righteousness of man, iii. 471, x. 85. And authority of the Scriptures, iv. 93. Of churches, xv. 233, 230. Divine, of the Scriptures, xvi. 257.

Copy of the Pentateuch, xvi. 253.

Ornaments of churches, iv. 245.

Orphans, how believers are, like, iv. 301.

Outbalance of outward evils by inward peace, i. 299.

Pagan writers, the evidences they give to the justice of God, x. 518.

Paganism, who make religion a, i. 167.

Paganum in the worship of God a substitute for its spiritual glory, vii. 558.

Pains of death, how looked towards Christ, iii. 181. Papists, their doctrine that Christ is the rock, i. 31. Do not keep the unity of the faith, xiii. 103.

Paradise, the name of the Holy Spirit, ii. 225, iv. 390.

Parr, what it is, viii. 98.

Paraphrase, Chaldee, xvi. 387, 463.

Pardoning, none for the sin against the Holy Ghost, iii. 28. Cause of, vi. 8. Of sin, x. 299. Nature of, x. 444.

Parents, obedience of children to, xi. 477.
INDEXES.

520. Of our own performances to be renounced, viii. 6. A cause of schisms, xv, 138.

Priest, signification of the name, xiii. 20.

Priesthood of Christ, i. 99, 481, iii. 629, x. 282, vi. 290, xiii. 397. Of all Christians, xiii. 19.

Prisoners, some faults of, xiii. 252.

Prince of the apostles, Peter not, xiii. 161.

Princes in all lands, who were, iv. 441.


Prisiclians, why put to death, viii. 181.

Prisoners, how sinners are, xii. 515.

Privation of spiritual life, iii. 257.

Privilege, greatest in this life, to behold the glory of Christ, i. 566. Of those who receive the Holy Spirit, x. 119. Of one above another, as to holiness, iii. 581. To be delivered from sin, vii. 552.

Prives, of believers, i. 458, ii. 207. Not to be trusted in, vii. 249, viii. 35, 645.

Process of the Spirit, ii. 226, iii. 61, 116, 118.

Prosers, Jewish, circuits of, xii. 521.


Prophets, empty, how they differ from believers, ii. 58. Dignity of, iii. 551. False, their vexation to the church of God, ix. 274. Unholiness of, not to be charged on religion, xi. 493.

Profitability of the children of professors accounted for, vii. 353.

Profundity of speech, iv. 459.

Proper care to rest and blessings, i. 353.


Projection of the covenant was in the wisdom and love of God, ix. 418.

Propaganda of Walton's Biblia Polyglotta examined, xvi. 347.

Promise, the first, considered, i. 121; all the promises confirmed by, i. 124; a revolution of forgiveness, vi. 433. How prayer should be regulated by, the ii. 123. Of the Holy Ghost, to whom made, iii. 25, 154. Of the presence of Christ, iii. 195. Comfort of, when we may take the, vi. 77. What is included in every, vii. 141.

Promises of the new covenant, who is, xii. 501.

Promises of sanctification, iii. 382. Of God, when duly respected, iii. 385. How to be mixed with faith, iii. 457. How they promote holiness, ii. 625. Special, annexed to special duties, iii. 627. How to be used in prayer, iv. 275. On what their as-
Queen of heaven, what, and why so called, iii. 56.

Questioning the promises of God, vi. 560. 

Questions, numerous, proposed by the schoolmen, as to unity of faith, xiv. 201.

Quickening, spiritual, an act of almightly power, iii. 529, xi. 341.

Quietness of conscience, when false, vi. 57. In waiting on God, vii. 611.

Rabbinical Bibles, xvi. 359.

Rage against the Spirit of God, ill. 42. And predominance of lust, to what owing, vi. 42. Of indwelling sin, vi. 206.

Rahab, Egypt why called, viii. 57.

Raisable, the dead will be, by the power of Christ, iv. 490.

Rasom, Christ our, xii. 419. Redemption as a price of, xii. 508.

Raptness and ecstasies in the church of Rome, i. 132. In prayer, iv. 352.

Rate of faith, high, when enjoyed, vi. 250. 

Rate of obedience, iv. 409.

Relatifieation, evil of framing rules of, regarding Scripture, iv. 224.

Readiness to die, i. 251. Of Christ to be a Saviour, i. 335. Of Christ to receive sinners, i. 424. To obedience, iii. 496, 529. To receive impressions from truth, vi. 205. To part with all for Christ, v. 436. To join with temptation, vi. 193. Of Christ to succour his people, vi. 258. Of Christ to his work, ix. 535. To take offence, xv. 104.


Readings, various of Scripture, xvi. 392.

Readiness of offenders into church communion, vii. 13.

Reality of the vision of heaven, i. 378. Of divine things, spiritual sense of, iv. 64.


Reasoning, methods of, in Scripture, skill in, need of, iv. 191, iv. 223.

Reasonings, corrupt, sin takes advantage from, vi. 290.

Reasons proving the Scriptures to be the word of God, iv. 20.

Reformation against grace, vi. 195. Against the light of the mind, vii. 412.

Rebels, who are light's, xvi. 520.

Rebukes and checks to sin, vi. 293.

Recapitulation of all things in Christ, i. 147, 367.

Receiving supplies of spiritual strength, i. 436. And giving, communion in, ii. 22. The love of God, ii. 34. The nature of it, ii. 58, v. 111. The Holy Spirit, ii. 231, iii. 108. Spiritual things in a spiritual manner, iii. 100, 290. The Spirit antecedent to faith, iii. 496. How faith is, v. 291. Sinners into love and favour, God's, x. 453. The atonement, xi. 304.

Reconnoiter from the truth, cause of, vii. 145.


Recollection of the family of God, i. 371. Of all things in Christ, i. 373.

Recompense of God, what is required in consequence of the disobedience of man, i. 208. Of reward, relief obtained from the prospect of, ix. 504. Of evil by God, xii. 439.

Reconciliation, potential and conditionate, x. 94. Twofold, x. 251, 292, 293. All men in the same condition before actual, x. 277. To God, xii.

631. To the church of Rome, danger of, xiv. 645.

Recovery of man suited to the holy perfections of the divine nature, i. 188. From sin, man would not attempt his own, i. 193. Of fallen man, its peculiar objects, i. 210. To communion with God, vi. 59. Of lost pledges of divine love to be sought, vi. 594. From backsliding difficulty, vii. 453. From evil, one end of punishment, xii. 457.

Redivuism, original of human nature, iii. 102, 427.

And perfection of nature, how attained, v. 432. And holiness of the law proves the guilt of sin, vi. 57. Of the nature of God, x. 485. Of divine government, x. 593.

Redtor and governor of all, God is the, ii. 424.

Redemption plenteous, vi. 642, 644. Nature of, vi. 644, x. 295. Spiritual, excellency of, v. 259. Spiritual and civil, wherein they agree and differ, x. 290. Why in, we are not delivered from God, but brought nigh to him, x. 260. Universal, where many perish, a contradiction, x. 261. Effectual, the merit of Christ exalted by, x. 570. As a price, xiv. 508.

Reflection on the honour of God, sin is a, i. 131.

Reflections of the glory of God on his works, sources of our knowledge, i. 67.


Reformers, conduct of the, as it regarded the Scriptures, iv. 68. Character of the, xiv. 32, xv. 266.

Refreshing pledges of the love of God, how obtained, v. 439.

Refreshment, spiritual, how obtained from Christ, i. 397. Great, in godly sorrow, vi. 294.

Refreshments and comforts of believers, xiv. 101.

Refuge, fleeing to Christ for, v. 294.


Of divine warnings, viii. 643.


Regulation of our thoughts about Christ, i. 223.

Regain of sin, xi. 513.

Reraration, none in regeneration, xi. 551.

Rejection of Christ by the Jews, ii. 44. Final of sinners, by what produced, ii. 492.

Relapses into sin, vi. 74. We must beware of, vii. 146.

Relation of truth to Christ, i. 82. Of our nature to God secured by Christ, i. 276. To God, i. 554. Conjugal, of Christ to his church, ii. 64. Gracious, to God, v. 45. Of obedience to reward and sin to punishment not the same, x. 540. To Christ, how believers hold it, xi. 549.

Relations, how believers are brought into new, iv. 404.

Relaxation of the law, v. 248, x. 440.

Reliance on the blood of Christ, iii. 445.

Relic of weakened conscience, i. 53. Of conscience under conviction, v. 7. Expectation of, from Christ, vi. 80. Seeking, from God, vi. 350. For believers under distress, ix. 414.

Relics of the papal church, vanity of, iii. 434.

Against sin, false, vi. 246.

Religion, pretences of false, to mystery, i. 49. In-


Relish and sense of spiritual things, vi. 322, 471.

Reluctancy of corrupt nature to spiritual duties, vii. 151.

Re Abd of corruption in believers, iii. 488.

Remains of great and good men, why they should be preserved, ix. 529.

Remedies against apostasy, vii. 1.

Remediless sin under the gospel is that which is against the Holy Ghost, iii. 58.

Remorse against sin, iii. 443. Against religious differences, iv. 249. Against temptation to be known, vii. 316. Of religious differences, falsely proposed by Papists, xiv. 35.


Remission of watchfulness dangerous, vi. 244. With, the, no satisfaction, note possible, x. 564. Of sin, xii. 347.

Removal of the candlestick of the gospel, vii. 142. Of the habit of grace, xi. 98.


Repentency or contrary actions of the will, vii. 204. Of the will against sin, xi. 559.


Renunciation of God, causes of, vi. 312. Of help from all created things, ix. 425. Of right, whether it may be done, x. 586.

Repair our spiritual decays, how God will, i. 456. The glory of God by suffering, how Christ did, ix. 594.

Repentation made by redemption, i. 371. Of nature, iii. 418. Of the image of God in man, ii. 473, ix. 483. To the justice of God by the death of Christ, x. 466.


Repetition of regeneration, absurdity of, vi. 549.

Repining against God, xii. 495.


Repositories of sacred truth, the person of Christ, i. 79. Of grace, Christ the, i. 392. The word of God a sacred, ix. 129. Of all graces, the affections are, vii. 471.


Representations of God, why interdicted, i. 76. Of the glory of Christ, how made to the church, i. 315. Of the glory of Christ under the old testament, i. 348.

Representative of God, Christ the, i. 60.

Reproach and overcoming convictions, vi. 513.

Reproach of sin, i. 212. Cast on Christ by the Jews, xvi. 529.

Reproaches, use of faith under, ix. 498.

Reprobate, who is, xi. 635.

Reprohation, xii. 530. Cause of, i. 475, 474.


Reprouls, how they may be duly received, viii. 451.

Revealed, how to be received as a privilege, viii. 498. Mutual, the prime dictate of the law of nature, viii. 488 ; God’s command for them, viii. 489. The advantage of them, viii. 490. How we may improve them, viii. 490.

Reprover, his qualifications, viii. 481.

Reputans, his condemnation taken away by grace, iii. 524. To sin, what it procures, vii. 515.

Regulation, some graces not in, vi. 189. For devotion, effect of, vi. 423. And glory of religion, how lost, vi. 452.

Ripente of learning, false, vii. 29.

Reserve of known sins, effect of, vi. 533.


Residue of the Spirit is with God, ix. 514.

Reignation of our souls to Christ in death, i. 280. To the will of God, iii. 599, vii. 310. Of soul to God, vii. 418.

Resolution and constancy in actions, vii. 171. In sin, stubborn, vii. 211.


Respect to the commands of God, iii. 354. To the law of God in repentance, vi. 570. To the love of God in repentance, vi. 571. Of faith to the authority of Christ, ix. 621.

Resplendency of justice and mercy in Christ, i. 359.

Rest and satisfaction in beholding the glory of Christ, i. 292. And blessedness, progress of nature to, i. 372. And complacency, love of, ii. 25. And peace, why sought, iv. 590. In sin, the believer does not, v. 431. Obtained from God by prayer, vi. 294. Of dismissed saints, vii. 359.

Resting in love, God, ii. 25. Improperly in means, iii. 354. In duties to be avoided, iii. 478. In the covenant of God, ix. 429.

Restitution of all things, i. 61.

Restoration of man, what is requisite to it, i. 155. Of the authority of the law by Christ, iii. 632. To church fellowship after its forfeiture, x. 542.

Restraining grace, vi. 270, vii. 418.

Restrains of the law, temporary, vi. 317.

Restrains of natural corruption, iii. 643.

Resurrection of Christ, iii. 151, x. 182, 352, xii. 561. Of believers, how distinguished from that of others, x. 352. Of the dead, xii. 531. From the dead, a miracle, xvi. 317.

Retaliation for crimes, x. 415.

Retirements and solitudes, v. 455, vii. 375.

Retiring into ourselves, vii. 296.

Retreat, a safe and sweet, for believers, ii. 57. To God in distress, ix. 424.

Retrieve from decays of grace, what alone will, i. 398.

Return to obedience, man could not of himself, i. 192. Of love to God, ii. 24.

Returns of Satan to be watched against, vii. 294.

Revalecesence of the churches, vii. 72.

Revelation, pretences to divine, Satan’s design in them, iii. 373. The real and measure of all religion, ii. 65, 489. Supernatural, the objective cause and means of illumination, iv. 7. Immediate, not to be expected, iv. 59.

Revelations, outward manner of, iii. 134. Divine, different kinds of, viii. 7.

Revenge, how God does, the neglect of the gospel,
vi. 110. Taken on three sorts of persons, when Christ sets up his kingdom, viii. 223.

Receivability, fear of, how generated, iv. 322.

Necessity of, vii. 365. For the ministry, loss of, vii. 540. Of God, a means of walking humbly with him, ix. 120.

Receivational fear of God, how produced, ix. 493.

Estimation of ministers, xiii. 68.

Access of the soul, when obtained, i. 265.

Reactivation of all things, i. 61.

Revolving from principles of religion, viii. 145.

Rewards and punishments, how connected with obedience, ii. 633. And punishments, the sanction of a law, vi. 164. In religion, xi. 411. Reward on the saints of bounty, unt of justice, xi. 583.

Riddle, Christ known as in, i. 376.

Right to temporal things, what, believers have, ii. 219. And authority of preaching, iv. 443. The gospel has a, to be preached in all nations, vii. 390. Of those for whom Christ died, before believing, x. 465. How God vindicates his, x. 601. Of God, its nature, x. 663. And title to the kingdom of God twofold, xi. 542. Observation of worship, xv. 471.

Righteous judgment of God, what, i. 567.


Rule of God as a governor, x. 567.

Rugor of the law, liberty from the, ii. 212. Of the law, how softened by the gospel, x. 697. In the execution of the law, x. 461. In church discipline, when useless, xiii. 504.

Rugitance of heroes, who have been the, iv. 150.

Rite and spring of spiritual thoughts, vii. 396. Rites, imposition of, condemned by the fathers, xiv. 225. And ceremonies, the church has no power to institute, xv. 467.

River, indwelling sin like a, xii. 191.

Rock, upon which, the church is built, i. 32, iv. 513. Rites, iii. 502. A type of Christ, viii. 120. God the saints', ix. 237.

Romans, how they boasted of their religion, iv. 40.

Sanguinary games of the, x. 630.

Rome, injurious conduct of church of, as it respects the Scriptures, iv. 67; schismatical, xiii. 144; religion asserted to be received from, xiv. 18, 296, 527; no safe guide, xiv. 451; its treatment of the Scriptures, xvi. 253.

Root or principle of indwelling sin, iii. 541.

Rogians, account of the, x. 537.

Ruin of Satan and his kingdom, on what it depends, i. 310. Eternal, the effect of sinning against the Holy Ghost, ii. 28. Of body and soul, how to be avoided, vi. 308. Of the enemies of God, what is seen in it, viii. 103. When sin is ripe for, viii. 138. What tends to, viii. 635. Of churches, how hastened, ix. 513. Of churches, causes of, viii. 153. Rule and power of Christ as a king, i. 98. Of self-judging, i. 405. And measure of obedience, iii. 490. And measure of holiness, what, iii. 507. Of duty, gospel, iii. 635. Directive, a law is a, iv. 158. Of duty must be universally regarded, vi. 234. Of the law, vi. 308. Of the word, when to be attended to, vii. 493. Of spiritual affections, vii. 498. In the soul, sin has no right to, vii. 503. Of sin to be cast off, vii. 569. Golden, to be observed. See Sciences. Of grace in the soul, xi. 514. Of church communion fixed by Christ xv. 143.


Rules for obtaining gospel peace and comfort, vii. 542. Of our own, evil of reducing the conduct of God to, viii. 122. For the interpretation of Scriptures, xiv. 145.

Ruling affection, love the, i. 159. Power of Christ, i. 400. Faculty of the soul, the mind is the, iii. 230. Elders in the church, xv. 504, xvi. 106. Ruminating on the things of the gospel, iv. 451.

Sacred总监 office of Christ, how to be regarded, i. 95, v. 117. Act of Christ, the first, iii. 177.

Sacrament of the Lord's supper designed for communion with Christ, viii. 509; the actions of faith in it, viii. 562.

Sacramental tender of Christ, ix. 565.

Sacrifice, the death of Christ a, ii. 159, xii. 421. Of Christ, its object, iii. 440. Of Christ, perpetual virtue of, iii. 440.

Sacrifices, expiatory, i. 121. Of the law, inefficacy of, vii. 55. End of, ii. 167. How connected with the oblation of Christ, ii. 441. Institution of, its design, viii. 553. Their origin and nature, x. 553. Propitiatory, x. 523. Human, x. 525.

Safety in fellowship with Christ, ii. 45. From temptation, means of, vi. 165. Of the way of salvation, vii. 333.

Sains, the communion of, i. 492. Love to, the effects of, vi. 146. Their failings, vi. 279. Their privileges, dangerous for any to encroach on, viii. 94. How purged, vii. 524. Dismissed to rest, viii. 359. Filled with perplexity about providence, vii. 671. Their access to God in one spirit, ix. 76. How Christ pleads with them, ix. 145. Their communion with Christ in providential changes, ix. 151. How different from the men of the world, ix. 100. Their usefulness in the world, iv. 252. Who are, xi. 88. Of, in the Romish church, xiv. 151.

Salvation, the covenant of grace, perseverance is the, x. 78.

Salvation, what things accompany, vii. 17. Effected instrumentally by the gospel, viii. 15. Not attainable without knowledge and faith, x. 163. How obtained by the ancient people of God, x. 169. By Christ, xii. 345.

Samaritan letters, xvi. 385. Pentateuch, the, xvi. 413.


Sanctuary, Christ a, i. 331.

Agency of, in afflictions, vi. 580. The head of the first apostasy, vii. 139. Delivering up to the power of, vii. 143. Exhortations of, against the truth, x. 429.

Satisfaction to divine justice, man could not make, i. 194. Of holy desires only in heaven, i. 244. Of Christ, ii. 419, xii. 419. Of Christ a motive to holiness, iii. 571. Of this life outweighed by trouble, iv. 251. Spiritual, v. 453. Undue, in worldly things, vii. 531. In a state of sin, vii. 525. The necessity of, ix. 252. Of Christ for the travail of his soul, ix. 576. Of Christ incompatible with the general ransom, x. 88, 273. Of Christ not for all, x. 247. Of Christ, a triple difference observed, x. 248. How made by Christ for them who were saved before his sufferings, x. 248. The word, not in the Latin or English Bible, x. 265. Christ in his, paid the very sum that was required of us, x. 267. Of Christ, arguments for, x. 279. Of Christ the ground of consolation, x. 283. A twofold, x. 438.

Saul, how he prophesied, iii. 142.

Savour, sweet, of the graces of Christ, ii. 75. Of spiritual things, vii. 483.

Scandal of the cross, how taken away, iv. 455. And offence, what is required of those who have given, v. 441. Sins which occasion, dangerous, vi. 347. Of Christ, how to be, vii. 537. Freedom from, evil of resting in, ix. 498.

Scandalous sins, how to be treated, xv. 177.

Scarcely, of the word, xiv. 54, ix. 59.

Sceptics in religion, origin of, vii. 106.

Schism, nature of, xiii. 91, xiv. 29, 212, xv. 364.

Scholasticized learning, insufficiency of, iv. 192.

Shkoomen, the, their character, xiv. 49, 523.

Science, faith more certain than, iv. 101.

Sciences and arts, use of, in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 120.

Sealing at spiritual things, iii. 204. Scope and end of the Scriptures to be considered, iv. 500.

Scriptum and Lectum, xvi. 401.


See, a comparison from the, vi. 289.

Seal, the spirit a, li. 242, iv. 399.

Sealing, the nature and end of, to confirm, li. 242. The commission of the apostles, iv. 441. The destruction of a sinful people, viii. 155. The covenant, our, ix. 575. Of the Holy Spirit, xi. 323.


Season for doing good, vi. 161. Appointed, of deliverance, viii. 84.

Seasons of entering into temptation to be watched, li. 127. Proper, for spiritual thoughts, vii. 305.

Secrecy in an occasion of temptation, viii. 374.

Secrets, Christ reveals his, to his people, lii. 119.

Secrets in religion, inconveniences of, xiii. 458.


Selshful sumptuously improperly charged on men, viii. 66. When falsely charged, xiii. 570.

Selwv, the case of, the, vii. 185.


Seluction to be guarded against, vi. 234.

Seluctions, pernicious, preservation from, iv. 147.

Sedulity necessary in ministers, vii. 189.

Seed of the woman and seed of the serpent compared, ix. 316. Of the woman, who, x. 230. Of the serpent, who, x. 261. Of God in believers, vii. 576.

Seer, prophets so called, xiii. 190.

Seloth, what meant by, viii. 80.

Self-abominations of Romanists, vanity of, i. 142.


Selfish men unlike God, iii. 587. Frame of spirit displeasing to God, vi. 425. How faith and love may be preserved from being, ix. 475.

Selfishness, how connected with duty, vi. 601.

Self-judicatures, xiii. 124.


Sence, abiding, of our want of grace, i. 117. Of sin, how impressed on the mind, iii. 351. True, of the commands declared by Christ, iii. 622. Spiritual, of the reality of divine things, iv. 64. And judgment, spiritual, iv. 152. Of our true condition necessary to be acquired, iv. 176. Of God's relation to us as a Father, iv. 292. Of our apostasy from God, v. 20. Of the guilt of sin, why necessary, v. 23. Of sin, char and abiding, necessary, v. 50. Vigorous, of pardoning mercy, vii. 281. Of the love of God, vi. 254. The deep, we should have of spiritual concerns, vi. 355. Spiritual, and faith distinguished, vi. 561. Spiritual, its discerning power, vi. 288. Of divine love, how communicated to the soul, vii. 437. Of indications of divine displeasure, want of, a, vii. 530. And reason, deliverances often beyond, viii. 151. Punishment of, xiv. 94.


Sensibility of the love of Christ, i. 167. Of sin necessary, vi. 221. Of the power of sin, vii. 513.

Sensuality of life, vii. 182, 521.

Separation of persons and things to the service of God, iii. 370. Of the body and blood of Christ, ix. 526. Between God and man by sin, xii. 531. From the world, xiii. 67. From a church, on which accounts justifiable, xlii. 194. From corrupt churches, xv. 77; when allowed to be just, xv. 425.

Septuagint, its character and history, xvi. 416. Serpent, tradition of the Jews about the, iv. 453. Serpents's head, what it is, ix. 316. Serpent, poured in the form of a, xili. 257.

Servants of God, ready to faint under dark providences, xili. 140. Of God often cut off before the accomplishment of the great things about which they have been employed, xii. 356.

Service of God, man made for the, i. 266. Of Christ, how valued, i. 267. Of Christ in heaven, i. 267. Spiritual, principles of, lii. 213. Latin, of the, xiv. 129, 457.

Sesostris, king of Egypt, his law about idle persons, viii. 197.

Seth, men in the truth, Scripture sufficient to, xiv. 439.

Seventy, the ministry of the, temporary, iv. 445.

Seven, number of, as under contempt, i. 427. Of the, xili. 349. Of the, vii. 256.


Shape and visible figure of God, xili. 98.

Shielding abroad the love of God in the heart, liii. 240.

Sheep, the people of God are called, lixi. 251.

Shelter from storms, viii. 18.

Shigmonoth, what it means, vii. 79.

Ship, similitude of a, xili. 81.

Skewer of rain, a simile, vii. 282.

Shewing forth the death of Christ, lixiv. 538.

Sick, directions of Ansehm for visitation of the, xvi. 16.

Sickness, what sinners will do in, xili. 544.

Signs and tears, occasion of, xili. 453.

Sight in heaven, beholding the glory of Christ by, i. 9. Present, of Christ obscure, liii. 375. Bodily of Christ a privlege, lii. 383. And faith, lii. 389. Of God which Moses had, lii. 64. Present, of God obscure, vi. 65. Heaven a state of, iii. 357.

Sign, visible, of the Holy Ghost, xili. 74.

Signification, great, depending on a single letter, iii. 145. Double, of the names of the officers of the church, xii. 452.

Signs and wondrous no infallible testimony of prophecy, xiii. 35. Miraculous works called, xii. 146. Of the Holy Spirit, xii. 147. And tokens of regeneration, xii. 216.

Silent, the peculiar use of the word in Scripture, xii. 221.

Siloam, fall of the tower in, viii. 601.

Simony, the nature of, iv. 423.

Simple intelligence belongs to God, xii. 127.

Simplicity of believing, iv. 71. Of the gospel, corruption of, vi. 293. Of the gospel, danger of rejecting, xiv. 221.


Sinner, convinced, state of, vi. 98. Sinners, their extremities make them see their need of Christ, vi. 120. The promises made to, xii. 229.

Sins, splendid, what, iii. 293. When duties are said to be, iii. 263. Under or after great afflictions, aggravation of, vi. 345. What, endanger the removal of the gospel, viii. 32. Mortal and venial, a false distinction, viii. 554. Of others, mourning for, viii. 634. Of others, how far we are concerned in them, ix. 365. Which have procured judgments, we should examine what share we have had in them, ix. 497. Of churches and professors, ix. 498. In what sense debts, x. 574.

Skill in the original text necessary to the exposition of Scripture, xili. 90. In dividing the word, iv. 519, ix. 445.

Slavery, slighting, difference between, vi. 214. Sleep of present satisfaction, how God awakens his people from, ix. 413.


Slow progress in knowledge, why many make, iv. 100. Of heart to believe, vii. 69.
Strength, nothing to be attempted in our own, i. 494. For walking with God necessary, ii. 199. Bodily, obtained from the Holy Spirit, iii. 141. Supernatural, not imparted by moral sanc-

tion, iii. 309. Spiritual aids and supplies of, how obtained, vii. 523, 546. Of God's people, how proved, vi. 19. Of faith, the, ix. 19. An all-
sufficiency of, in God, ix. 450.

Strike and debate, evil of, vi. 117.

Subduing divinity, effect of doing so improperly, iv. 183.

Style, variety of, in Scripture, iii. 114. And manner of the sacred writers, iv. 35.

Susception, moral, iii. 301, 302, 303.

Subjection of the means of grace from a people, iv. 417.

Subjection, bringing the body into, vi. 61. Due to bishops, xiii. 181. To Christ, how professed, xv. 459.

Subject-matter of a gospel church, xvi. 11. Of Scripture, xvi. 34.

Submission to the will of God by Christ, iii. 178. To the will of God, how promoted, iii. 599. To the sovereignty of God, want of, a spring of apostasy, vi. 157. Of Christ In his sufferings, ix. 556. Canonical, required, xv. 160.

Subordination of one church to another not possible, xiii. 141.

Subscription to a confession of faith, whether the magistrate may compel, xiii. 614.

Submission of persons, ii. 446. Of Jesus Christ, ix. 558; in respect of guilt, x. 588.

Subject of dispute, iv. 72.


Successors of sin, vi. 205.

Successors of the apostles, iv. 443. Of Peter, no, xiv. 294.

Succour from Christ, vi. 53. Peculiar, against indwelling sin, vi. 288.

Suffering patiently for Christ, iii. 648. For Christ, how to be endured, ix. 551. Conformity to Christ in, ix. 581. To the glory of Christ, ix. 581.

Sufferings and glory of Christ, how connected, i. 343. Of Christ, ii. 97, x. 172; how he was supported under, iii. 174. Of the martyrs, iv. 26. Great, why God brings them on his people, vi. 94, turg, on account of our sins, vi. 684. How to be prepared for, vii. 323. Improper frame under, viii. 349. For religion, viii. 568. Of Christ, extremity of, ix. 524; how they answer the law of God, ix. 567. Of Christ, remembrance of, ix. 567. Of Christ in his soul, private and positive, ix. 587. Of Christ proved the justice of God, x. 647. Of Christians under the Roman emperors, xii. 555.

Sufficiency for obedience from God, iii. 532. Of divine revelation, iv. 8. Of knowledge to be obtained from the Scriptures, iv. 166. Self, of God to be considered, iv. 452, ix. 429; seen in the co-

Suffrage of the people in the choice of a minister, xv. 495.


Sun, moon, and stars, the host of heaven, iii. 95.

Supererogation, works of, iii. 580.

Superficial knowledge of divine things, i. 229.


Supper, Lord's, i. 491, vii. 30; commemorative, ix. 326; a federal ordinance, ix. 328; of preparation for, ix. 585; when and to whom to be administered, xv. 512.

Supplication, the Spirit of, ii. 249, iv. 257. When specially necessary, iv. 502.

Supplies of spiritual life, how obtained, i. 357. Of grace, all from Christ, i. 458. Of grace, when given, ii. 144. And assistance of grace, why imparted, iii. 553. Of the Spirit, how to be obtained, iv. 294. Of grace, how communicated, iv. 517. Of grace to subdue indwelling sin, vi. 286. What, are received from Christ by faith, ix. 503.

Supremacy of Christ from communion with Christ, ii. 45. Derived from forgiveness, vi. 416. From the Holy Spirit, xi. 546.

Supposition of a state of grace liable to abuse, iii. 406.

Supremacy, papal, nature of, xiv. 229.

Suretyship of Christ, nature of, v. 175.

Surely, for whom Christ was, x. 258, 558.

Surprised into sin, i. 442, vi. 433. And disappointment, ix. 411.

Surprised, unexpected, of indwelling sin, vi. 191. The deceit of sin operates by, vi. 243. Of sin, xi. 549.

Suspension of the office of mediator by Christ, i. 323.

Suspending of the rigorous execution of the law, x. 461.

Sustentation of all things by God, x. 34.

Sustained in actions, how enjoined the prophets, iii. 138.

Symptoms of lust to be considered, vi. 43.

Synagogue, a copy of the Scriptures without points preserved in the, xvi. 391.

Synod of Dort, vii. 74, 75.

Synopsis of baptism, iii. 75. Translation of the Scriptures, xvi. 412.

System, the Scriptures not composed as, iv. 185.

Tabernacle and temple of old, wisdom of God in the institutions of the, i. 250.

Table of the Lord, provisions of, ix. 570.

Taint of sin and liableness to guilt, how avoided by the Redeemer, i. 199.

Talents, what, are given to ministers, iv. 504.

Variously given, iv. 448.

Talmuds, the Jewish, xvi. 379.

Taste of the love of Christ in the heart, i. 588. Of the excellency of the gospel lost, vii. 231. Experimental, of religion, viii. 549. How we are said to, spiritual things, xi. 630.

Tasting the powers of the world to come, ii. 246.

Of the heavenly gift, vii. 24.

Teacher, the Holy Spirit, v. 247.


Índices.

Teman, what meant by it, viii. 56.

Tempers of men, various and different, iii. 643.

Tempest, a quotation from, ix. 50.

Tempest of the wrath of God, Christ alone a convert from, ix. 50.

Temple-work of Christ in heaven, i. 253. Heaven a glorious, i. 256. Of God, a believer the, ix. 285, xi. 335.

Temper, acquaintance with the nature of, a qualification for the ministry, iv. 511. Its nature and power, vi. 91. In what sense by God, vi. 93. Hour of, who are kept from the, vi. 192. To enter into, the great danger of any soul, vi. 124. Provision against approach of, vi. 133. Early discovery of, important, vi. 134. Aim of, to be discovered, vi. 135. How to fortify the heart against, vi. 144. Readiness to join with, vi. 193. Times of, how sin argues in, vi. 220. Power and prevalency of, vi. 243. Distinguishing the time of, vi. 357. Difference between that of God and man, vii. 198.

Temptations of Satan interrupt the work of faith, i. 404. Pity of Christ to his people in, i. 141. Falling under the power of, iii. 312. How they hinder and promote the growth of holiness, iii. 402. Belief from, iv. 65. When they come from Satan singly, vi. 55. Allurements of, vi. 100. Public, vii. 110. Of Christ, vi. 113. Special, why they should be considered, vii. 312. Of Satan, how repelled, vii. 371.

Tempting the Spirit, what it is, viii. 87.

Tendency unto living to God, what, iii. 206. Of quiet and solemn, iii. 602. Tender of Christ in the ordinance of the supper, ix. 564.


Tenders of gospel righteousness, ii. 175.

Terms used by the ancient church to describe the hypostatical union, i. 227. Of peace, vi. 517. Upon which we enter into covenant with God, ix. 426. Used to express the punishment of sin, x. 449. Of communion, imposition of, xv. 168.

Territory of God, how made known to his own people, vi. 631. The, which accompanies death, ix. 531.

Tertullian's remarkable saying with respect to the Scriptures, viii. 331.

Testimonies to the excellency of the Scriptures from the fathers, iv. 111. Of the ancients, x. 422.


Text, original of Scripture, necessity of skill in, iii. 50. Abuse of, iv. 217. Hebrew and Greek, integrity of, xvi. 347.

Thankfulness for grace received, vi. 502. In remembrance of mercies, vii. 57. For the ministry, ix. 67.

Thanksgiving to Christ, i. 320. Communion with the Spirit in, i. 271.

Themistius, a quotation from, vii. 191. His counsel to the Emperor Valens, vii. 186.

Theodotus the emperor, a declaration of, vii. 236. Things represented in vision to the prophets, iii. 137. Against the light of nature not enjoined the prophets, iii. 139. Of the Spirit of God, iii. 299. Spiritual, to whom they are foolishness, iii. 278. Of Christ, what they are, iv. 359. Third, spiritual influence, vi. 139. Thoughtfulness about the state of the soul, vi. 356. Thoughts about Christ, regulation of, i. 223. Our, should be fixed on the person of Christ, i. 512. Frequent, of Christ, i. 405. Of heavenly things, how excited, iv. 296. The purveyors of the soul, vi. 22. Vain, vi. 62. See Powerless, of spiritual things, vi. 292. Hard, of God, how engendered, vi. 371; how removed, xi. 300. And meditations, spiritual, vii. 275. Evil, injection of, vii. 524.

Thrasileus, story of, xiii. 168.

Threatenings, and the punishment of sin appointed, x. 618. Of God, nature of, xi. 168. Design of God in them, xi. 467. And communications conditional, x. 446.

Three in one, God has revealed himself as, iii. 63. Sorts of lives, vi. 74.

Thriving of grace at the end of life, i. 433.


Tigranes, son of the king of Armenia, story of, x. 632.

Time of death appointed by God, i. 253. A, of affliction and calamity, effect of on the mind, vi. 27. Some portion of, to be specially devoted to spiritual thoughts, vii. 391. Of public calamity, use of faith in, ix. 490. The, when the Lord's supper should be observed, ix. 543. Times of great distresses in conscience, we should invoke Christ in, i. 113. Perils, ix. 320.

Tiresias, ghost of, vi. 67.

Tithe, payment of, xiii. 515.

Title, what, the children of God enjoy, ii. 215. Special name and, of God evidence forgiveness, vi. 478. Right and, to the Kingdom of God, xi. 542.

Tithe and lota of Scripture, every, sacred, iv. 213.

Tolusus, infallible, of being moved by the Holy Ghost, iii. 133.


Tongue, worshipping God in an unknown, xiv. 504.

Tongues, multiplication of, part of the curse on man, ii. 112. Flery, what they signified, iii. 76. And hands of the prophets guided by the Holy Ghost, iii. 134. Speaking with, iv. 472. Gift of, xiii. 49.

Touching Christ, the means of deriving virtue from him, iii. 562.

Touchstone of love, i. 163. Of holiness, what it is, iii. 508. Of gospel light, vi. 219.

Tread, a metaphor from, applied to religion, vii. 283. Persecution injurious to, xiii. 368.

Tradition, oral, insufficiency of, iv. 10. Its proper use in the interpretation of Scripture, iv. 223. Scripture not received by tradition, xvi. 329.

Traditions of the Jews, xvi. 300. Authority of, xvi. 329.

Transaction of things in heaven by Christ, i. 254.

Transmitter of the sacred writings, xvi. 355.

Transformation of the affections, vii. 448.

Transgression of the law, sin is the, v. 292.

Translation of punishment by divine dispensation, i. 553. Of believers into the family of God, ii. 297. Of darkness into light, iv. 163. Of punishment to Christ, x. 564.

Translations of Scripture, weakness of, iv. 214; use of, xvi. 466. Of the New Testament, xvi. 418.
Transposition of letters in Scripture, xvi. 291.

Transubstantiation, xiv. 411; why invented, viii. 563.

Transvitil, xvi. 576.

Trescheries of the heart of man, vi. 174.

Tresure, good, of the heart, vi. 275, 276.

Trewsin, words compared to, iii. 355. High and green, what they signify, viii. 319. Low and dry, what meant by, viii. 319.

Trembling of heart, viii. 82.

Triad of prophets and prophecy, iii. 34. What circumstances men are placed in for their, viii. 563.

Tribe, great, permitted to prevent sin, vi. 293.

And temptations, why they should be considered, vi. 312.

Trusting with temptation, vi. 99.

Trinity, order of the holy persons in the, in their operations, i. 279. Of the, i. 472. The doctrine of the, vindicated, ii. 377. How spiritual operations, derived from each person in, iii. 20. Doctrine of, the foundation of all religion, iii. 66. The, revealed in the new creation, iii. 158. The peculiar work of each person of the, in redemption, iii. 159.

Doctrine of, why denied, v. 47.

Trouble, every man exposed to, iv. 380. Depths of, vi. 332. Sin is a cause of, to believers, xi. 558.

Troubles and distresses, lightness of, i. 279. Different sorts of, i. 214. Which render consolation necessary, i. 411. Preservation from, vi. 491.


Truth, sacred, the person of Christ the repository of, i. 79. What renders it useless, i. 84. Power of, i. 307. God is the spring and fountain of, iii. 5. A grace of the Spirit, and an evidence of holiness, iii. 589. Spirit of, iv. 142. How it is lost in words, v. 19. First deposited in the person of Christ, vi. 106. Assurance of its certainty, vi. 458. Repositories of, vii. 187. Suffering for, viii. 65. Of God makes good his promises, viii. 114, 221. Of God engaged to protect righteous zeal, vii. 151. We are not to be ashamed of, the, ix. 255. What graces peculiarly respect, in a perilous time, ix. 229. It is incumbent on pastors to preserve the, ix. 458. Love of, why necessary, ix. 459. How it may be lost, ix. 459. How it is to be received, xi. 359. And innocence vindicated, xiii. 545.

Tumult of the soul from conviction, iii. 357.

Tunefulting of indwelling sin, vi. 663. Of lust, xii. 555.

Turning from the way of righteousness, vi. 311.

Twilight in the church, i. 296.

Twist, his sentiments on the justice of God, x. 584.

Types of Christ, expiatory sacrifices were, i. 121. And allegories of Scripture out, iv. 197. Of the oblation of Christ, xi. 356.

Ubiquity of God, xii. 91.

Umpire, Christ an, li. 69.

Unable, we are at present, to bear the full manifestations of the glory of Christ, i. 360.

Unequalized with our mercies, a sin, ii. 32.

With God, our, vi. 63.

Unaffected with the sins of others, viii. 593.


Uncertainty of mere moral precepts, iii. 655. Of worldly things, v. 446, vi. 492.

Unction, the security of his promises, vii. 229. Of God, xi. 120.

Uncleanness, habitual, iii. 431. Abounding of, vii. 613.


Useations in the Judicial church, the use of, ii. 236.

Understanding of Christ, the human, i. 93. Ascribed to the Holy Spirit, iii. 75. The directive faculty of the soul, ii. 253. The depravation of, lii. 232, 339. How given by Christ, iii. 201. The mind of the, as to his word, uses, ways, and means of, iv. 117. The giving of us an, iv. 164. In the mysteries of the gospel given to ministers by the Spirit, iv. 509. Right, of forgiveness, iv. 424.

Undervaluation of duties, the evil of, i. 479. Of danger from temptation, vii. 112.

Unframing the soul, how it is done, vii. 222.

Unkindness of professors not to be charged on religion, vi. 455.

Uniformity, enforcement of, xii. 96.


Universe, the good of, the consulted in the dispensations of God, i. 156.

Unkindness, how we may be guilty of, towards God, iv. 414. Towards God, sense of, vi. 334.

Unreadiness to receive instruction, iii. 256. To obedience, how overcome, i. 497. Of grace for exercise, vi. 497. To prayer, vi. 530.

Unspiritualness for duty, vi. 337.


Unwearyedness in the spiritual conflict necessary, vii. 387.

Unwillingness of men to turn to God, iv. 165. Spiritual, vi. 243. For duty, vii. 531.


Urging occasions of life, sin takes advantage from, xii. 213.

Usages, civil, how they may be connected with religion, xiii. 472.

Use of spiritual gifts, li. 10. Of promises, exhor-
Of the Spirit in regeneration, iii. 307. Of the Spirit in sanctification, iii. 387, 456. Of holiness secret and mysterious, iii. 401. Of grace variously carried on, iii. 444. Of the ministry, what it is, iv. 497. Of the Lord in our generation, how known, viii. 274.

*Workings* of the Spirit of God in and upon worthy men, iii. 103.


*Worm*, the, that never dies, xii. 492.


*Wrangling* science, who make the Scriptures a, iv. 180. Captions, in what it consists, v. 11.

*Wrath* of God, Christ lying under the, i. 341; effects of lying under the, x. 277; Christ underwent the, x. 293. All men by nature the children of, xv. 455.

*Wretched*, sin makes men, vi. 205.

*Writers*, the sacred, their knowledge of facts and doctrines, iv. 32.

*Writing* of the Scriptures, iii. 143.

*Writings*, sacred, their uniform importance, v. 59. Of the apostles, nature of, xv. 434.

*Yoke* of the Spirit renounced, vi. 208. Of sin, shaking it off, viii. 544.

*Young*, natural love of the, vi. 304.

*Zeal* of Christ, iii. 178. False, the cause of cruel persecutions, vii. 96. Righteous, encouraged, viii. 133. For the glory of God, viii. 655. For Christ, ix. 458. For the glory of God necessary in ministers, ix. 456.

VI.—INDEX TO THE PRINCIPAL WORDS AND PHRASES IN OTHER LANGUAGES CITED OR EXPLAINED.

N.B.—In this Index, as in the Index of Texts, the letters f or ff denote that the remarks on the word or text extend to the page or pages following the one mentioned.

I.—HEBREW, CHALDEE, OR RABBINICAL.

| בָּשָׂע, | xvi. 291. |
| בָּשׁ, | vi. 611. |
| בָּשָׂה, | xii. 475. |
| בָּשְׂמִי | xii. 478. |
| בָּשָׂה, | v. 197. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 100. |
| בָּשָׂה | xvi. 56. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 251. |
| בָּשָׂה | xvi. 299. |
| בָּשָׂה | viii. 477. |
| בָּשָׂה | iv. 390. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 444. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 123. |
| בָּשָׂה | i. 107. |
| בָּשָׂה | xiv. 455. |
| בָּשָׂה | xiv. 119, 421. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 299, 291. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 470. |
| בָּשָׂה | iii. 181. |
| בָּשָׂה | x. 207. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 479. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 171, 199, 202. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 34, 346, f, x. 172, xii. 446. |
| בָּשָׂה | i. 376. |
| בָּשָׂה | xiii. 411, f. |
| בָּשָׂה | iv. 256, f. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 311. |
| בָּשָׂה | viii. 477, xii. 523. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 641. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 243. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 478. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 286. |
| בָּשָׂה | viii. 103. |
| בָּשָׂה | x. 533. |
| בָּשָׂה | v. 165. |
| בָּשָׂה | xii. 459, xvi. 266. |
II.—GREEK.

INDEXES.

άεεζα, iv. 267, f.
άγαλλος, ii. 25.
άγασθής, ii. 26.
άγατη, ix. 256.
άγάττον τον πατέρα, ii. 12.
άγιαβός, άγιαμως, x. 367.
άγιορερ, v. 349.
άγοράς, x. 368.
άδεικνυς, xi. 271.
άδέχεσθαι, xi. 418, f. 635, f.
άδεδοκαντον, vii. 11.
άείμιται, ιν αείμιται, i. 375, f. vi. 65.
αείσθε, xiii. 109, xiv. 220.
αείτια, v. 114.
αείπε, xii. 239, 271, f.
αείκονις, ix. 96.
αεικοστατικα, viii. 382.
αείκοτα, xi. 33.
αλλ’ μεταφεν καλ, v. 368.
αλλακμα, xii. 420, f.
αλλακτις, i. 235.
αλματράν το, ιβ. 3127.
αλματία, v. 348, 349, viii. 158, x. 172, 267.
αλός, xi. 551, f.
αλωκοτις, xii. 358.
αλωκοτιςς, xi. 351.
αλωκοτιςμ το χαρίσμα, iv. 320.
αλώχη, xii. 447.
αλωχικημικα, vii. 38.
αλωχικημικας, i. 62.
αλωχημεν, ix. 349.
αλωχημενως, v. 7.
αλωχημενως, xiv. 363.
αλωματικα, xii. 592.
αλωρδας, i. 61.
αλωρδας ελληνικα, xv. 371.
αλωρδας εν διε, xii. 295, f., 299.
αλωρδας αμαρτιας, xii. 621, f.
αλωρδαιχ, x. 212, 266.
αλωρδαιχμα, xii. 420.
αλωρδας, x. 289, 289, xiii. 530, 549.
αλωρδας τοιο, xii. 419, 421, 500, 542, 527, 530, 543.
αλωρδαςτατικης, v. 195.
αλωρδαςχος, v. 203, xiii. 549.
αλωρδαςτατα, xii. 197, 386.
αλωρδαςτατος, ii. 329, 333.
αλωρδας, xi. 552.
αλωρας, v. 114.
αλωρας το τιν ημων, xiii. 411.
αλωρας εν εστι ημων, xiii. 549.
αλωριτος, xii. 96.
αλωριτοτιτος, xii. 485.
αλωριτοτατος, xii. 96.
αλωριτος, xvi. 6.
αλωρικνυς, iv. 134.
αλωρικνυς εν αείμιται, i. 386, vi. 607.
αλωρικυκλος, xii. 535.
αλωρικυκλος τα των ημων, i. 61.
αλωρικυκλος, x. 259, xii. 509, 518.
αλωρικυκλος παραβας, xiv. 520, 527, 543.
αλωρικυκλος, xiv. 443, xvi. 267.
αλωρικυκλος, xiv. 420.
αλωρικυκλος, xiv. 220.
αλωρικυκλος, xi. 560.
αλωρικυκλος, xii. 51, 433, v. 255, xiv. 431.
αλωρικυκλος, vii. 40.
αλωρικυκλος, vii. 49, xi. 548.
αλωρικυκλος, xii. 412.
αλωρικυκλος αντικυκλος, xii. 521, 540, 547.
αλωρικυκλος, xiv. 311.
αλωρικυκλος αντικυκλος, xii. 521.
αλωρικυκλος αντικυκλος, vii. 31.
αλωρικυκλος αμαρτιας, xii. 501, f.
αλωρικυκλος αμαρτιας, xii. 501.
αλωρικυκλος αμαρτιας, xii. 501.
βατος, βαπτις, xvi. 266.
βατος, vi. 163.
βατος, xii. 454.
βατος, xii. 491.
βατος, ix. 391 and f.
βατος, xii. 425.
βατος (λέγος), iv. 459, f.
βατος, xvi. 300.
βατος, xii. 514.
βατος, ix. 555, f.
βατος, xii. 51.
βατος, xii. 53.
βατος, xii. 25.
βατος, x. 362, f., xii. 257.
βατος, xii. 432, f.
βατος, xii. 499.
βατος, ii. 234, 238.
βατος, xii. 123, 244.
βατος, xii. 26.
βατος, xii. 424.
βατος, xii. 20.
διακρίνομαι, vii. 217.
διαιτος, iii. 252, vii. 269.
διαιτος, v. 110, 111.
διαιτος, xii. 220, f.
διαιτος, xvi. 99.
διαιτος, xii. 522, 526.
διαιτος, xii. 524.
διαιτος, x. 125, 128, xii. 480, 458.
διαιτος, xii. 271, 274, 328, 329, 332, 333.
διαιτοσατα, xii. 108.
διαιτος, v. 339.
διαιτος, xii. 442.
διαιτος, iv. 422, f.
διαιτος, xii. 291.
διαιτος, vii. 51.
διαιτος, ii. 122, vii. 32.
διαιτος, xii. 508, xiii. 55, xvi. 453.
διαιτος, iv. 194, 196.
διαιτος, iv. 194, f.
διαιτος, v. 328, xii. 22.
διαιτος της δικαιωματος, v. 329.
διαιτος, xii. 524, f.
διαιτος της ιατρου, v. 310, f.}

"ΓΕΩΡΓΙΑ."
INDICES.

582.

ιάρος, vi. 65.
μετάθεσις, viii. 257.
μεταφράσματα, i. 222.
μετανάστεια, vii. 35.
μετάφρασις, xvi. 446.
μεταφορές, xiii. 105.
μετάφρασις, xii. 47.
μετάφρασμα, xii. 283, ff.
μεταφρασμός, xii. 470.

νά, ix. 335, f.
νέως, xii. 266.
νουτσά, xii. 437, 442.
νοῦς, i. 250.

οικονομία, xii. 74.
οικογένεια, x. 335.
οί λόγοι, xii. 216.
οίμισία, xii. 74.
οιμωρία, xii. 291.
ομοιότητα, vii. 67, xv. 27.
οποία, viii. 8.
ομοίωμα, viii. 8.
ομορφία, xii. 191, f.
ομοίωσις, xv. 24, 296.
ομολογείται, ii. 25.
ομολογήθηκε, xi. 195.
ομολογείται, ii. 12.
ομολογείται, xii. 256, f.
ομολογείται, xii. 514.
ομολογείται, xii. 514.
ομολογείται, v. 197.

ο οίνος της θεραπείας, xii. 358.

οιονόματισμός, xvi. 103.
παιδία, xii. 442.
παιδιστικός, xii. 551.
παιδιστικός, xvi. 3.
παιδιστικές, xii. 442.
παιδιστικότητα, vii. 49.
παιδιστής, ii. 226, iv. 390, ff.
παιδιστικότητα, ii. 338, f.
παιδιστικότητα, ix. 610, n.
παιδιστικότητα, xi. 111.
παιδιστικότητα, vii. 34, f.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 275, 327, 355.
παιδιστικότητα, xiii. 514.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 109.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 498.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 230.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 104, f.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 105.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 74.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 105.
παιδιστικότητα, iv. 293, 311, 512.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 308, ff.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 446.
παιδιστικότητα, xii. 420, f.

παράμορφος, xii. 74.
παράστασις, vii. 35.
παράθυρον, Πτέρυγα τῶν ἄγλων, xiii. 356.
παράθυρον, viii. 214.
παράθυρον, νύμφης, v. 273.
παράθυρον, Πτέρυγα τῶν ἄγλων, iv. 266.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, Πτέρυγα τῶν ἄγλων, xii. 287.
παράθυρον, xii. 100.
παράθυρον, xii. 100, ff.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίῳ, vii. 355.
παράθυρον, πτερύγων, xii. 168.
παράθυρον, ταμία, xii. 186.
παράθυρον, τάσις, xvi. 7.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 358.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xi. 107.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xi. 115.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xiii. 504, n.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 68, 102.
παράθυρον, xii. 321, xii. 465.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
παράθυρον, πτερυγίων, xii. 69.
### Indices

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>583</td>
<td><em>χαλεπιστεια</em> vi, 502.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>590</td>
<td><em>χαπί, i.</em> ii, 190, iv, 256, f, v, 329, vi, 381.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>180</td>
<td><em>χάριμα, v.</em> 327, f, 332.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>190</td>
<td><em>χάριμα, ii.</em> 228, iv, 423.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>228</td>
<td><em>χάριμπια, vi.</em> 381.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>317</td>
<td><em>χαριστια, xvi.</em> 61.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>462</td>
<td><em>χαριστις, xvi.</em> 61, f, 317.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>390</td>
<td><em>χρίμα, iv.</em> 440.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>352</td>
<td><em>γονιμιοτης, iii.</em> 181.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### III.—Latin

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>adoro</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelus Jehovah</td>
<td>xiii. 234.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>apostasis</td>
<td>xiv. 221.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astinangulus</td>
<td>xiv. 479.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asinungulus</td>
<td>xiv. 479.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astaplueum</td>
<td>xiv. 113.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>attinctive</td>
<td>xii. 93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>auferre peccata</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beneplaciti, et amicitiae (amor)</td>
<td>ii. 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>causa sine qua non</td>
<td>v. 119.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conditio</td>
<td>v. 111.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conservativae</td>
<td>xii. 93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dulia</td>
<td>xiv. 440.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ethico-physica (impotence)</td>
<td>xi. 443.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>evangelium nigrum</td>
<td>xiv. 352.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ferre peccata</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fidejussor</td>
<td>v. 184, 187.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>immensivae</td>
<td>xii. 93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>implevitae</td>
<td>xii. 93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imputare</td>
<td>v. 165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>innoratio obligationis</td>
<td>xii. 445.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>justifico, justificatio</td>
<td>v. 124.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>justitia operum</td>
<td>v. 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>latria</td>
<td>xiv. 440.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liberatio a jugo peccati</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>manifestativae</td>
<td>xii. 93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masora, Masoreth</td>
<td>xvi. 332.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>morosa cogitatio</td>
<td>xii. 539.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>morosa delectatio</td>
<td>xii. 557.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nostri causa, nostra vice, nostro loco</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>offerre seipsum in coelo</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>offerre seipsum in cruce</td>
<td>xii. 627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Onochoetes</td>
<td>xiv. 478.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Onochoerites</td>
<td>xiv. 479.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ononychites</td>
<td>xiv. 478, 479.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paldabaoth</td>
<td>xiv. 113.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pareohia, pareochia</td>
<td>xii. 105.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>peccatum originans,—originatum, xii. 166.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>perseverantia, xi. 19.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>persevero</td>
<td>xi. 19.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>persona, xii. 68.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pertinacia, xii. 19.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>placulum</td>
<td>v. 549, xii. 417.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pignus</td>
<td>iv. 407.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prae, v. 187.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pres, v. 187.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prosopopeia, xiv. 425.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reatus</td>
<td>v. 198.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reatus culpa,—penae, v. 199.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>redempio a reatu peccati, xii. 627.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>repletivae, xii. 93.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reus, v. 197.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reus alienus culpa, v. 201.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scindo, xiii. 100.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sigilla appensa, xiii. 323.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>soluto tantum, soluto ejusdem, x. 437, et ib. seplus.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sponsor, v. 184, 187.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subire ononas simpliciter, xii. 627.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subire ononas nobis debitas, xii. 627.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>substracter capax justificationis</td>
<td>v. 74, 119.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>substantia, xii. 68.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>superdulia, xiv. 440.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>superexcedentor, xii. 93.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>theologia atramentaria, xiv. 352.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vas, v. 187.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vinculum Trinitatis, xii. 338.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vindicta noxae, xii. 442.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The asterisk prefixed to some texts indicates that they form the subjects of sermons.

Chap. GENESIS. Vol. 
I. 5, vii. 11, 15, 20, 25; xi. 356, 448; x. 250; xi. 305, 47. 
IV. 40, vi. 103, 47; vii. 275. 
v. 1, 2, 3, ix. 414, 425. 
v. 17, vii. 3, 9; ix. 551. 
vii. 1, 9, ii. 93; ix. 05, 410; xi. 402. 
vii. 7, vi. 255, 42. 
vii. 29, x. 314. 
vii. 3, 4, ix. 421. 
vii. 9, 12, ix. 422, 423. 
viii. 6, 9, x. 170, 42. 
xiv. 16, xi. 127. 
xiv. 62, xii. 170. 
Exodus. 
I. 2, 6, i. 311. 
I. 14, i. 308. 
VI. 3, vi. 470. 
xx. 2, 5, xv. 37, 47. 
xx. 6, x. 314. 
xxii. 7, ix. 427. 
xxii. 23, 21, x. 138. 
xxiii. 19 (18-23), i. 59, 566; vi. 451, ix. 31. 
xxiii. 22, vi. 81. 
xxiv. 5, 7, x. 513. 
xxiv. 6, x. 513. 
Leviticus. 
X. 1-3, xv. 38, 42. 
*lv. 21, ix. 567. 
vii. 21, 22, xi. 54. 
Numbers. 
XIV. 33, i. 354, 355. 
Deuteronomy. 
IV. 2, xv. 37, 42. 
v. 4, lii. 381. 
x. 32, xv. 37, 47. 
xii. 1-3, i. 335. 
xii. 1-9, vi. 34. 
xvii. 1, vi. 125. 
xxvi. 29, xii. 208. 
xxvi. 16-18, xii. 134. 
xxviii. 16, i. 311. 
Joshua. 
i. 5, x. 249, 49. 
xxii. 10, etc., xv. 38, 47. 
xxii. 11, xvi. 225. 
xxiv. 10, x. 513. 
viii. 24, etc., xv. 38, 47. 
x. 39, 63, 94, 38, x. 535, 47. 
xiv. 6, i. 154. 
1 Samuel. 
ii. 30, xi. 162, 47. 
xxii. 22, xi. 252, 47, 475, 47. 
xvi. 14, iii. 118. 
xvi. 14, 15, iii. 57. 
xix. 10, iii. 57. 
xxix. 9, iii. 57. 
2 Samuel. 
vii. 18, 19, ix. 412. 
vii. 4, v. 129. 
xv. 25, 26, vi. 408; ix. 317. 
xix. 9, 14, i. 535. 
xix. 5, 4, ix. 406, 47. 
xix. 6, 4-6, ix. 410, 47. 
*xxix. 5, ix. 469, 420. 
xxix. 6, 7, ix. 411. 
xxv. 15-17, i. 354. 
1 Kings. 
I. 21, v. 171, 169, 262. 
viii. 27, xii. 95, 47. 
viii. 31, 48, xii. 127. 
xlii. 2, xii. 135. 
xlii. 29, xii. 554. 
xlii. 6-19-23, i. 554. 
xlii. 23, xii. 555. 
xliii. 34, ix. 56. 
2 Kings. 
ii. 36, 27, x. 537. 
xvi. 11, 12, xv. 38, 47. 
1 Chronicles. 
v. 10, ix. 593. 
v. 21-23, ix. 412. 
xv. 13, xv. 38, 47. 
2 Chronicles. 
*cv. 2, viii. 431. 
xxvii. 15, ix. 129. 
Nehemiah. 
x. 17, vi. 478. 
Job. 
v. 1, vi. 453. 
vii. 17, 18, vi. 580. 
ix. 11, ix. 139. 
x. 4, x. 100. 
x. 7-13, ix. 413. 
xii. 15, vi. 577. 
xvii. 23-27, vi. 556. 
xix. 25, xii. 580, 47. 
xxi. 4, vi. 184. 
Chap. Vol. 
xxvi. 13, iii. 96. 
xxvii. 5, v. 127. 
xxviii. 12 to end, i. 212. 
xxix. 18, ix. 412. 
xxx. 8, iv. 172. 
xxxi. 8-11, ix. 116. 
xxxi. 8-13, ix. 426, 47. 
xxxi. 22, 23, vi. 540. 
xxxi. 24, vi. 403. 
xxxi. 18, 19, 31-33, ix. 116. 
xxv. 6-8, ix. 429. 
xx. 3-5, v. 15, 48. 
xxii. 1. 4-6, v. 15, 48. 
Psalms. 
I. 1-6, ix. 315. 
v. 3, vi. 614. 
v. 4-6, v. 514. 
vii. 1-3-6, i. 313. 
xxi. 4-5, ix. 98. 
xxiv. 6, ix. 119. 
xxv. 2, ix. 429. 
xxvi. 5-11, ix. 339. 
xxvii. 15, i. 406. 
xxviii. 11, ix. 114. 
xxix. 23, i. 121, 47. 
xvi. 1-3, iv. 84. 
xix. 12, 13, vi. 203; ix. 494, 47. 
xxx. 4-6, x. 258. 
xvi. 21, vi. 550. 
xxvi. 9-14, ix. 422. 
xxvii. 10-15, ix. 415. 
xxviii. 3, vi. 373. 
xxix. 3, ix. 550. 
xxvii. 8, ix. 99, 49. 
xxvii. 9-11, x. 145. 
xxviii. 9, i. 459. 
xxvii. 15, ix. 100. 
xxvii. 7-9, vii. 96. 
xxvii. 4, vi. 100. 
xxvii. 1-10, i. 443. 
xxviii. 6, vi. 635. 
xvi. 8, i. 207. 
xvi. 7, 8, xii. 498, 505. 
xv. 8, x. 383. 
*xxv. 1-3, vi. 462, 476. 
xvii. 2, vi. 470. 
*xxv. 2, ix. 470. 
*xxv. 3, vi. 454. 
xxv. 1, i. 248. 
xxv. 9, i. 251. 
*xxvii. 12-14, ix. 307. 
li. 3, vi. 31. 
l. 11, vii. 151; xii. 531. 
l. 6, ix. 171. 
l. 6, vi. 286. 
*lix. 2, ix. 257, 248. 
xxiii. 3, ii. 28.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xvi.</td>
<td>1st Cor. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi.</td>
<td>2nd Cor. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi.</td>
<td>2 Thess. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi.</td>
<td>Phil. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii.</td>
<td>Rom. 9:24, 23:58-60, 34:8-12, 55:4, 60-61, 196.196</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
;; ;;

INDICES.

590

VIII.—INDEX OF

EEFERENCES TO AUTHORS, OPINIONS,

AND SAYINGS.

COUNCILS,

Several

Works are referred

to

without the Authors' Names.

Abbot, ad Thorn., xi. 31, 497.
Abtlardus, ii. 375; xii. 28, 402.
Ezra, xii. 457 ; xvi.36l, 392, 394, 399.

Appianns, xii. 435.
Aquila, vii. 19 ; xii. 631 ; xvi. 357, 420.
Arabic version of NewTestament,v. 134; xii. 297,293.

Rost. (Rabbi), xii. 127.
xii. 456; xvi. 388.
Acosla, X. 110, 526.

Aratus, xii. 98.
Arethas, iii. 93.
Aretine, iv. 228.
Arians and Arianism, vii. 70 ; xii. 13, 632, 633.
Arias Montanus, viii. 257 xii. 251, 443, 472, 474;

Aben
Aben

Abrabanel,

;

Aristides, xiii. 92.

Ado, xiv. 396.
Adrian, x. 520.
Adrianus, Ferrariensis, xvi. 353,
.^lian, X. 519 xiii. 359.
.ffilius Spartianus, viii. 186.
.ffilurus, XV. 260.

Aristophanes,

.ffischylus, viii. 109, 603; xii. 107, 123.

634 xiii. 281, 295, 412 ; xiv. 186, 195, 216, 220, 315,
329; xvi. 442.
Arius, i. 13; xi. 489; xii. 16, 67, 72.
Arminians, viii. 10; x. 6, and throughout the

Aristotle,

;

viii.

;

Al varus, xiv. 389.
xvi. 285, 289, 360.
i.

20.

13, 21, 26

;

iii.

16, 17, 50, 53, 73, 93, 111,

113, 117, 170, 208, 209; iv. 228; v. 348; viii. 5, 44,
80, 118; X. 423,533; xi. 58; xii. 259, 297, 298; xui. 7;

xiv. 228, 437; xv. 26, 196, 198; xvi. 149.

Amelius, xvi. 432.
Amesius, iv. 353;

viii.

167; x. 27, 409, 462, 498; xvi.

2S5.

Animianus Marcellinus, vii. 211;
Amsdorfius,

Amyialdus,

xiii.

565; xv. 205.

xiii. 361.
ii.

369

;

Ill

treatise

Alcinous, xii. 107.
Alcoran, xvi. 348.
Alcuinus, XV. 20.
Alexander (of Alexandria), i. 13; xiv. 165.
Alexander Alensis, i. 22 ii. 18.
Alscliech, Rabbi, xii. 273.
Alstedius, xvi. 285.
Altaie Christianuni, viii. 29.
Altingius, ii. 369; xii. 28, 43, 67.
Alvarez, x. 52, 73, 86, 107; xi. 21, 71, 72; xii. 130.

Ambrose,

xiii.

359; xiv. 16; xvi.

ii.
;

7, 8, 25, 28, 82, 94, 118,

343; v. 12, 56;
; xi. 20

X. 262, 497, 5j1, 503, 519, 541, 542

;

Agricola, xiv. 315.

Amatorius, xv.

420;

xii. 60, 64, 107, 112, 113, 139, 438, 621, 596, 620,

Albertus Magnus, 1. 23.
Albinus, i. 23; xiv. 237.
Albo, Joseph, Rabbi, xii. 316.

Amama,

xii. 200,

62, 488.

iv. 261; x. 148, 222, 229,

230 ;

xii.

;

222,

xi. 78, 491,

and throughout the

496

;

xii.

674

;

treatise

;

685

xiii. 40.

Arminii Filii, x. 16, 125, 129.
Arminius, viii. 167 ; x. 7, 15,

16, 21, 22, 25, 27, 30,

39, 43, 50, 58, 61, 62, 66, 67, 77, 84, 87, 94, 99, 109,

113, 117, 118, 130, 131, 133, 205, 228, 250, 317, 345,
452, 498, 584, 585 ; xi. 86, 518 ; xiii. 8.

Arnobius,

viii. 66,

176, 177; xi. 494; xiii. 5C3; xiv.

236, 437, 438.

Arnoldus, ii. 369; x. 95 ; xii. 7, 28, 371.
Arriaga, Rod. de, xiir 140.
Arrian, ii. 88.
Arrowsmitli, xvi. 441.
" Articles of Church of England," x. 110.
Athanasius,

i. 10; iii. 93,161, 162, 306; v. 177; viii.
183; X. 420; xi. 24; xii. 171, 307, 389; xiv. 165,
227, 234, 3S4, 437, 478; xv. 354.
Atheists, xi. 492.

Athenagoras, vii. 68 ; xvi. 430.
Audaeus, xii. 106.
Augustine, i. 7, 10, 16, 21, 22,

23, 25, 27, 227, 228;

25, 26, 33, 81, 82, 88, 99, 114, 119;

iii. 26, 64,
94, 117, 132, 137, 143, 212, 213, 221, 203, 241, 249,
258, 260, 262, 2S9, 297, 307, 311, 315, 316, 317, 319,

ii. 6,

and

49 xiii 138, 195.
Anabaptists, xiii. 218, 268.
Andradius, xiv. 202, 265, 352,/., 354; xvi. 285, 373.
Annotations on the Bible, viii. 168.

320, 321, 323, 326, 327, 331, 332, 334, 336, 337,

Anonymous,

11, 13, 15, 19, 21, 31, 34, 44, 45, 61, 165, 167, 173,

;

iv.

332; v. 98, 163, 188; xi. 170, 214, 2S7;

throughout the chapter, 420;
330

;

V. 19, 22, 23, 36,

vi. 331, 608,

643;

iv. 4], 112, 22S, 286,

124, 176, 280, 2S9, 325, 347

vii. 69,

74, 75, 76,

425;

viii.

9,

xii. 138, 183, 592, 593, 594, 598, 601, 603, 604, 605,

183, 187, 248, a59, 486, 532; x.

606, 607, 609;

36, 40, 48, 52, 68, 65, 66, 71, 73, 86, 103, 104, 106,
107, 116, 152, 205, 423, 432, 466, 488, 536, 560; xi.

xiii. 5, 93, 290, 291, 343, 348,

526;

xiv. 52, 177, 191, 208, 295, 305, 306, 315, 318, S23,
324, 326, 328, 349, 410, 433; xv. 220; xvi. 440, 487.
Anselm, i. 23; v. 16; x.466.

Anthorinus, xv. 200.
Anthropomorphites, x. 303, 309;

" Anlidot. Animffi,"
Antinomians, v. 73,
Anliphanes,

v. 17.

145.

xii. 350.

Antitagma Coloniense, v.
Antwerp Bible, xvi. 361.
Apion,

viii.

177.

Apollinarius,

i.

15.

68.

7,

11, 23, 27, 28, 32,

19. 21, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 72, 431, 494,
497, 558 ; xii. 12, 27, 82, 131, 142, 150, 202, 433, 435
xiii. 8, 11, 31, 91, 109, 128,

xii.

99,103.

154, 201, 296, 414; xiv.
165, 176, 219, 236, 271, 292, 334, 399, 437; xv. 212,
417; xvi. 18, 64, 173, 369, 416.

Augustinus Triumphus, xiv. 389, 390.
Augustus, viii. 74; xii. 591.
Aus. Pop. xii. 593.
Averroes, viii. 166 ; xiv. 217.
Azarias, Rabbi, xvi. 384, 392, 39a
Azorius, xiv. 235, 416, 439, 447.


Enjedinus, 455.

Epagoras, 183.

Ephodius, 110.

Epaphroditus, 390.

Epaphroditus, 296.

Epaphroditus (Johan.), 110.

Epaphroditus (Johan.), 66.

Ephraim Syrus, 447.

Epicharmus, 523.

Epictetus, vi. 33; xii. 107; xiii. 251.

Epicles, 129.

Epimenides, xi. 45.

Epimachus, 256.

Epimachus, 278.

Epimachus, 221.

Eplhantius, i. 7; ii. 22; iii. 32; iii. 132; vii. 69; vii. 45, 177; x. 150, 556; xii. 12, 13, 82, 99, 106, 337, 373; xiv. 223, 237, 236, 436, 437, 479; xv. 307, 308, 354, 415, 443, 442; xvi. 357.

Epiphanes, 415; v. 105, 319; vii. 74; x. 18, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 25, 29, 30, 50, 53, 56; xii. 39, 53, 137, 183, 194, 612.

Epistle to the Walach. (By Epiphanes), x. 94, 124.


Erasmus, i. 21; v. 22; vii. 11, f; viii. 44, 257; x. 422, 558; xi. 213, 431; xii. 9, 239, 261, 259, 257, 307, 375, 630; xiv. 118, 315, 421; xvi. 60, 248, 255, 287, 290, 362, 307.

Erasmus, Johannes, 232.

Erasmus, xvi. 105, 117.

Essienus, i. 329; xii. 27, 345, 638.

Estius, vi. 458.


Eudosius, xvi. 259.

Eugubinus de Prima Philos., xii. 70.

Eunomius, xii. 505.

Euripides, ii. 28, 94, 446; x. 495, 496, 497, 618, 530, 532, 533, 530; xiv. 5.

Eusebius, i. 7, 14, 16, 19, 23; i. 127; v. 177, 357; vii. 67; viii. 9, 17, 65, 110, 171, 153, 187, 245, 254, 531; x. 112, 425, 550; xi. 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 33, 55; xii. 13, 52; xii. 7, 43, 149; xiv. 175, 226, 234, 262, 259, 437, 447; xv. 22, 201, 206, 293, 216, 290, 282, 259, 257, 293, 394, 397, 414, 432; xvi. 377, 375, 359, 431, 452.

Eustathius, iv. 215; x. 527; xvi. 415, f; xvi. 266.

Evagrius, viii. 18; xii. 76.

Eyres, xii. 496.

Eyre, xvi. 259.

Eusebius, v. 41; vi. 633.


Eusocius, xv. 239.


Eusebius, xii. 385.

Ethiopic, viii. 278.

Eusebius, xiv. 239, 348. See also Ward.

Firmianus, xiv. 542.

Firmicus, xii. 107.

Flaccus Illyricus, viii. 54; xiii. 361; xvi. 572.

Fleodoardus, xii. 169.

Florus, xii. 67; xvi. 486.

Formalistis, xii. 583.

Forsterus, xii. 477.

Francis, xii. 559.

Franken, xii. 31, 41, 376, 304, 305, 206.

Franzius, ii. 259; xii. 49, 252, 456.

Fulgentius, i. 15; iii. 220, 235; vii. 14; x. 432; xi. 61, 443.

Fuller, xii. 293, 392.

Functickus Com., viii. 17.

Gabriel, v. 12.

Galen, xii. 302.

Galgaecus, xii. 31.

Gelasius, xi. 61.

Gellius, Au. xii. 437.

Ginara, xiv. 234.

Genebrard, xii. 42; xvi. 301, 373, 350, 455.

Geoffry of Monmouth, xiv. 396.

Gerardus, xvi. 255, 372, 455.

Gerhard, xii. 256.

Gerson, xii. 255, 459.

Gesternus, viii. 260.

Gilfard, xii. 256.

Gildas, viii. 32; xiv. 100, 210, 332.

Gitichus, x. 506; xii. 7, 24, 345.


Gnapheus, xvi. 259.

Gnostics, v. 388, 389.

"God's Love to Mankind," x. 61.

Gomaras, xii. 299; xvi. 299, 455.

Goodman, Dr. vii. 74, f.

Goodwin, John, xii. throughout the vol.

Goodwin, Thomas, iii. 80; x. 494.

Gotteschalcus, xii. 67.


Gratian, x. 68.

Greenham, xii. 483, 487.

Gregorius Neo-Caesariensis, xiv. 433.

Gregory, xvi. 105.

Gregory de Valentina, iv. 115; vii. 35, 96, 165; xii. 414; xvi. 216, 447; xvi. 255, 372.

Gregory Nazianzen, i. 10, 15, 21; ii. 10, 18, 114; viii. 61; x. 7; xii. 24; xvi. 66, 344, 389; xiii. 363; xvi. 95.

Gregory Nyssen, iii. 94; v. 36.

Gregory of Rome (Greg. the Great, Greg. I.), iii. 318; v. 236; vii. 184; x. 48; xli. 67; xii. 9, 90; xvi. 230, 266; xvi. 29, 28.

Gregory VII, Pape, xvi. 389, 390; xvi. 241.

Gregory, the monk, xvi. 431.

Grevinchovius, x. 15, 17, 21, 53, 55, 61, 67, 95, 96, 98, 100, 123, 124, 129, 132.

Grotius, ii. 156, 361; iii. 84; v. 192, 183, 201, 211; vii. 112, 232; x. 268, 272, 331, 389, 423, 443, 444, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 566; xi. 65; xii. 27, 49, 111, 175, 176, 187, 188, 192, 196, 199, 204, 216, 239, 242, 245, 354, 292, 263, 269, 277, 279, 283.